Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

THE HISTORY OF THE VALOROVS AND WITTIE KNIGHT-ERRANT, DON-QVIXOTE Of the *Mancha*.

Translated out of the Spaniſh.

LONDON

Printed by *William Stansby*, for *Ed. Blount* and *W. Barret*. 1612.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

TO THE RIGHT HONOVRABLE HIS VERIE GOOD LORD, THE Lord of WALDEN, &c.

(* * *)

MIne Honourable Lord; hauing Tranſlated ſome fiue or ſixe yeares agoe, the Hiſtorie of *Don Quixote*, out of the Spaniſh tongue into the Engliſh, in the ſpace of forty daies: being thervnto more then halfe enforced, through the importunitie of a very deere friend, that was deſirous to vnderſtand the ſubiect: After I had giuen him once a view thereof, I caſt it aſide, where it lay long time neglected in a corner, and ſo little regarded by me as I neuer once ſet hand to reuiew or correct the ſame. Since when, at the intreatie of others my friends, I was content to let it come to light, conditionally, that ſome one or other, would peruſe and amend the errours eſcaped;

Digitized by Google

my many affaires hindering mee from vnde[r]
that labour. Now I vnderstand by the Print[er] h[e]
the Copie was presented to your Honour: which di[d]
at the first somewhat disgust mee, because as it must
passe, I feare much, it will proue farre vnworthy, ei-
ther of your Noble view or protection. Yet since it
is mine, though abortiue, I doe humbly intreate, that
your Honour will lend it a fauourable countenance,
there by to animate the parent thereof to produce in
time some worthier subiect, in your Honourable
name, whose many rare vertues haue already rendred
me so highly deuoted to your seruice, as I will
some day giue very euident tokens of the
same, and till then I rest,

Your Honours most affectionate

seruitor,

Thomas Shelton.

Digitized by Google

The Authors Preface to the Reader.

THOV maist beleeue mee (gentle Reader) without swearing, that I could willingly desire this booke (as a child of vnderstanding) to be the most beautifull, gallant, and discreet, that might possibly bee imagined. But I could not transgresse the order of Nature, wherein euery thing begets his like: which being so, what could my sterile and il-tild wit ingender, but the history of a dry-tosted, & humorous son, full of various thoughts & conceits neuer before imagined of any other: much like one who was ingendred within some neyssome prison, where all discommodities haue taken possession, and all dolefull noyses made their habitation? seeing that rest, pleasant places, amenity of the fields, the cheerefulneſse of cleere skie, the murmuring noyse of the Cristall fountaines, and the quiet repose of the spirit are great helpes for the most barren Muses to shew themselues fruitful, and to bring forth into the world such births as may enrich it with admiration and delight. It oft times befals, that a father hath a child both by birth euil-fauoured and quite deuoide of all perfection, and yet the loue that hee beares him is such, as it casts a maske ouer his eies which hinders his discerning of the faults

faults and ſimplicities thereof, and makes him rather to deeme them diſcretions and beauty, and ſo tels them to his friends, for witty ieſts and conceites. But I (though in ſhew a Father yet in truth but a ſtepfather to Don-Quixote) will not be born away by the violent current of the modern cuſtome now a daies, and therefore intreate thee, with the teares almoſt in mine eies as many others are wont to doe, (moſt deare Reader) to pardon and diſſemble the faults which thou ſhalt diſcerne in this my ſonne: for thou art neither his kinſman nor friend, and thou haſt thy ſoule in thy body, and thy free wil therein as abſolute as the beſt, and thou art in thine owne houſe wherein thou art as abſolute a Lord, as the King is of his ſubſidies, and thou knoweſt well the common Prouerbe, that vnder my cloake a fig for the King, all which doth exempt thee and makes thee free from all reſpect and obligation; and ſo thou maiſt boldely ſay of this hiſtory whatſoeuer thou ſhalt think good without feare eyther to be controlled for the euil, or rewarded for the good that thou ſhalt ſpeake thereof.

I would very faine haue preſented it vnto thee pure & naked, without the ornament of a Preface, or the rabblement and Catalogue of the wonted Sonnets, Epigrams, Poems, Elegies &c. which are wont to bee put at the beginning of bookes. For I dare ſay vnto thee that (although it coſt me ſome paines to compoſe it) yet in no reſpect did it equalize that which I tooke to make this preface which thou doſt now reade. I tooke oftentimes my pen in my hand to write it, and as often ſet it downe again, as not knowing what I ſhould write, and being once in a muſe with my paper before me, my pen in mine eare, mine elbow on the table, and my hand on my cheeke, imagining what I might

write,

Digitized by Google

write, there entred a friend of mine vnexpectedly, who was a very discret & pleasantly witted man: who seeing me so pensatiue, demanded of me the reason of my musing: and not conceuling it from him, said, that I bethought my selfe on my preface I was to make to Don-Quixotes *history, which did so much trouble me, as I neither meane to make any at all, nor publish the history of the acts of so noble a knight. For how can I chuse (quoth I) but bee much confounded at that which the old legislator (the Vulgar) will saie, when it sees that after the end of so many yeeres (as are spent since I first slept in the bosome of oblivion) I come out loaden with my gray haires, and bring with me a booke as dry as a kexe, void of inuention, barren of good Phrase, poor of conceipts, and altogether empty both of learning & eloquence: without quotations on the margents, or annotations in the end of the booke, wherwith I see other books are still adorned be they neuer so idle, fabulous, and prophane: so full of sentences of* Aristotle *and* Plato *and the other crew of the Philosophers, as admires the Readers, & makes them beleeue that these Authors are very learned and eloquent. And after whē they cite* Plutarch *or* Cicero, *what can they say, but that they are the sayings of* S. Thomas *or other Doctors of the Church: obseruing herein so ingenious a Methode, as in one line they will paint you an inamoured gull, and in the other will lay you downe a little seeming deuout sermon, so that it is a great pleasure and delight to reade or heare it, all which things must bee wanting in my booke, for neither haue I any thing to cite on the margent, or note in the end, and much lesse doe I know what Authors I follow, to put them at the beginning as the custome is, by the letter of the* A.B.C. *beginning with*

Aristotle, *and ending in* Xenophon, *or in* Zoylus *or* Zeuxis. *Although the one was a Railer, and the other a Painter. So likewise shall my booke want sonnets at the beginning, at least such sonnets, whose Authors bee Dukes, Marquesses, Earles, Bishops, Ladies or famous Poets. Although if I would demand them of two or three Artificers of mine acquaintance I know they would make mee some such, as those of the most renowned in* Spaine, *would in no wise be able to equall or compare with them.*

Finally good sir, and my very deer friend, (quoth I) I do resolue that Sir Don-Quixote *remain intombed among the old records of the* Mancha, *vntill heauen ordaine some one to adorne him with the many graces that are yet wanting: for I finde my selfe wholy vnable to remedy them, through mine insufficiency and little learning: and also because I am naturally lazye and vnwilling to goe searching for authors to say that, which I can say well enough without them. And hence proceeded the perplexity and extasie wherin you found me plunged. My friend hearing that, and striking himselfe on the fore head, after a long and lowd laughter said: In good faith friend, I haue now at last deliuered my selfe of a long and intricate error wherwith I was possessed all the time of our acquaintance, for hither to I accounted thee euer to be discreet and prudent in all thy actions, but now I see plainely that thou art as farre from that I tooke thee to bee, as Heauen is from the Earth.*

How is it possible, that things of so small moment, and so easie to bee redressed, can haue force to suspend and swallow vp so ripe a wit as yours hath seemed to be, and so fitted to break vp and trample ouer the greatest difficulties that

Digitized by Google

can

can be propounded. This proceeds not in good ſooth from defect of will, but from ſuperfluity of ſlouth, and penury of diſcourſe, wilt thou ſee whether that I ſay bee true or no? Liſten then attentiuely a while, and thou ſhalt perceiue how in the twinkling of an eye, I will confound all the difficulties, and ſupply all the wants which do ſuſpend, and affright thee from publiſhing to the world the History of thy famous Don Qui-xote, the light and mirrour of all Knighthood Errant.

Say I pray thee quoth I (hearing what hee had ſaid,) after what manner doſt thou thinke to repleniſh the vacuity of my feare, and reduce the Chaos *of my confuſion to any cleereneſſe and light? and he replied: the firſt thing whereat thou ſtopſt, of Sonnets, Epigrams, Eglogues &c. (which are wanting for the beginning, and ought to bee written by graue and noble perſons) may bee remedied, if thou thy ſelfe wilt but take a little paine to compaſſe them, and thou maiſt after name thē as thou pleaſeſt, and father them on* Preſter Iohn *of the* Indians, *or the Emperor of* Trapiſonde *whom I know were held to be famous Poets, and ſuppoſe they were not, but that ſome pedantes & preſumptuous fellowes would backebite thee, and murmure againſt this truth, thou needſt not waigh them two ſtrawes for although they could proue it to be an vntruth, yet cannot they cut off thy hand for it.*

As touching Citations in the margent, and authors out of whom thou mayſt collect ſentences and ſayings, to inſert in thy hiſtory, there is nothing elſe to be done, but to bobbe into it ſome latine ſentences, that thou knoweſt already by rote, or mayſt get eaſily with a litle labour: as for example, when thou treateſt of liberty and thraldome, thou mayſt

cite that, non bene pro toto libertas venditur auro: *& presently quote* Horace, *or he whosoeuer els that said it on the margent. If thou shouldst speak of the power of death, haue presently recourse to that, of* Pallida mors æquo pulsat pede pauperum tabernas, Regumque turres. *If of the instability of friends, thou hast at hand* Cato *freely offering his distichon.* Donec eris fœlix multos numerabis amicos. Tempora si fuerint nubila, solus eris. *If of riches,* quantum quisque sua nummorum seruat in arca tantum habet et fidei. *If of loue,* hei mihi quod nullis amor est medicabilis herbis. *And so with these latine authorities and other such like, they will at least account thee a good Grammarian, & the being of such a one is of no little honour and profite in this our age. As touching the addition of annotations in the end of thy booke thou maist boldly obserue this course. If thou nameſt any Giant in thy booke procure that it bee the Giant Goliah, and with this alone (which almost will cost thee nothing) thou hast gotten a faire annotation, for thou maiest say, The Giant* Golias *or* Goliat *was a* Philistine, *whom the shepheard* Dauid *slew with the blow of a stone in the vale of* Terebintho, *as is recounted in the booke of Kings, in the Chapter wherein thou shalt finde it written.*

After all this, to shew that thou art learned in humaine letters and a Cosmographer, take some occasion to make mention of the riuer Tagus, *and thou shalt presently finde thy selfe stored with an other notable notation, saying the riuer* Tagus *was so called of a king of* Spaine, *it takes it beginning from such a place, and dies in the* Ocean *Seas, kissing first the Walles of the famous Citie of* Lisborne: *And some are of opinion, that the sands there-*

thereof are of gold, &c. If thou wilt treate of theeues, I will recite the Historie of Cacus *to thee, for I know it by memorie. If of Whoores or Curtezans, there thou hast the Bishop of* Mondonnedo, *who will lend thee* Lamia, Layda, *and* Flora, *whose annotation will gaine thee no small credit. If of cruell persons,* Ouid *will tender* Medea. *If of Inchaunters or Witches,* Homer *hath* Calipso, *and* Virgil Circe. *If of valorous Captaines,* Iulius Cæsar *shall lend himselfe in his Commentaries to thee, and* Plutarch *shall giue thee a thousand* Alexanders. *If thou dost treate of loue, and hast but two ounces of the* Thuscane *language, thou shalt incounter with* Lion *the* Hebrew, *who will repleniſh thy vessels with store in that kind, but if thou wilt not trauaile for it into strange Countries, thou hast here at home in thy house* Fonseca *of the loue of God, wherein is deciphered all that either thou, or the most ingenious capacitie can desire to learne of that subiect. In conclusion, there is nothing else to be done but that thou only indeauour to name those names, or to touch those Histories in thine owne which I haue here related, and leaue the adding of Annotations & citations vnto me, for I doe promise thee that I will both fill vp the margent, and also spend foure or fiue sheetes of aduantage at the end of the Booke.*

Now let vs come to the citation of Authors, which other Bookes haue, and thine wanteth, the remedie hereof is very easie, for thou needest doe nought else but seeke out a Booke that doth quote them all from the Letter A. *vntill* Z. *as thou saidst thy selfe but euen now, and thou shalt set that very same Alphabet to thine own Booke. For although the little necessitie that thou hadst to vse their assistance*

in thy work, will presently conuict thee of falshood, it maks no matter, and perhaps there may not a few bee found so simple, as to beleeue that thou hast holpe thy selfe in the Narration of thy most simple and sincere Historie, with all their authorities. And though that large Catalogue of Authors doe serue to none other purpose; yet will it at least giue some authoritie to the Booke at the first blush: and the rather, because none will bee so mad as to stand to examine whether thou dost follow them or no, seeing they can gaine nothing by the matter. Yet if I doe not erre in the consideration of so waightie an affaire, this Booke of thine needes none of all these things, for as much as it is onely an inuectiue against Bookes of Knighthood, a subiect whereof Aristotle *neuer dreamed, Saint* Basil *said nothing,* Cicero *neuer heard any word. Nor doe the punctualities of trueth, nor obseruations of* Astrologie *fall within the Sphcare of such fabulous Ieslings. Nor doe Geometricall dimensions impart it any thing, nor the confutation of arguments vsurped by Rhetoricke, nor ought it to Preach vnto any the mixture of holy matters with prophane, (a motley wherewith no* Christian *well should be attyred,) onely it hath neede to helpe it selfe with imitation, for by how much the more it shall excell therein, by so much the more will the worke bee esteemed. And since that thy labour doth ayme at no more then to diminish the authoritie and acceptance that Bookes of Chiualrie haue in the world, and among the vulgar, there is no occasion why thou shouldest goe begging of sentences from Philosophers, fables from Poets, Orations from Rhetoritians, or myracles from the Saints, but onely endeauour to deliuer with significant, plaine, honest, and welordered words thy*

Iouiall

Iouiall and cheerefull discourse, expressing as neere as thou maiest possibly thy intention, making thy conceites cleare, and not intricate or darke; and labour also that the melancholy Mare by the reading thereof, may bee vrged to laughter, the pleasant disposition increased, the simple not cloyed; and that the iudicious may admire thy inuention, the graue not despise it, the prudent applaude it. In conclusion let thy proiect be to ouerthrow the ill compiled Machina *and bulke of those Knightly Bookes, abhorred by many, but applauded by more. For if thou bring this to passe, thou hast not atchieued a small matter.*

I listned with very great atention to my friends speech, and his reasons are so firmely imprinted in my minde, as without making any replie vnto them, I approued them all for good, and framed my preface of them. Wherein (sweete Reader) thou maiest perceiue my friends discretion, my happinesse to meete with so good a Councellour at such a pinch, and thine owne ease, in finding so plainely and sincerely related, the Historie of the famous Don Quixote *of the* Mancha, *of whom it is the common opinion of all the inhabitants bordring on the fields of* Montiel, *that he was the most chaste enamoured, and valiant Knight, that hath beene seene, read, or heard of these many ages. I will not indeere the benefit and seruice I haue done thee by making thee acquainted with so Noble and Honourable a Knight, but onely doe desire that thou gratifie me for the notice of the famous* Sancho Pancha *his Squire, In whom in mine opinion are deciphered all the Squirelike graces dispersed throughout the vaine route of Knightly Bookes. And here withall I bid thee farewell, and doe not forget me.* Vale.

Digitized by Google

Certaine Sonnets, written by Knights Errant, Ladies, Squires, and *Horses, in the praise of* DON QVIXOTE, his Dame, his Squire, and STEEDE.

AMADIS of Gaule in praise of *Don-Quixote.*

THou that my dolefull life didst imitate,
When absent, and disdained it befell,
Deuoide of Ioy, I a repentant state
Did leade, and on the *Poore Rock's* top did dwell,
Thou that the streames, so often from thine eyes
Didst sucke of scalding teares disgustfull brine:
And without Peuter, Copper, Plate, likewise,
Wast on the bare earth, oft constrain'd to dine.
Liue, of one thing secure eternally,
That whilst bright *Phœbus* shall his Horses spurre,
Through the fourth Spheares dilated Monarchie,
Thy name shall be renowmed, neere and furre.
And as'mongst Countries, thine is best alone,
So shall thine author, Peeres, on Earth haue none.

Digitized by Google

DON

Don Belianis of Greece to Don *Quixcte of the Mancha.*

Tore, I hackt, abolisht, said and did,
More then Knight Errant else on Earth hath done,
I dextrous, valiant, and so stout beside,
Haue thousand wrongs reueng'd, millions vndone.
I haue done acts, that my fame eternize:
In Loue I courteous and so Peereles was;
Giants, as if but dwarfs, I did despise:
And yet no time of Loue plaints, I let passe.
I haue held Fortune prostrate at my feete,
And by my wit ceasd on occasions top,
Whose wandring steps, I led, where I thought meete,
And though beyond the *Moore* my soaring hope.
Did crowne my hap, with all felicitie:
Yet *Great Quixote*, doe I enuie thee.

The Knight of the Sunne Alphebo, *to Don-Quixote.*

MY sword could not at all compare with thine,
Spanish Alphebo! full of curtesie:
Nor thine armes valour, can be matcht by mine,
Though I was fearde, where dayes both spring and die.
Empires I skorn'd, and the vast Monarchie,
Of th'orient ruddie (offred me in vaine)
I left, that I the soueraigne face might see,
Of my *Aurora*, faire *Claridiane*.
Whom, as by miracle I surely lou'd:
So banisht by disgrace, euen very hell,
Quak't at mine armie; that did his furie tame:
But thou, illustrious, *Gothe, Quixote!* hast prou'd,

Thy

Thy valour for *Dulcineas* ſake, ſo well,
As both on earth haue gaind eternall fame.

ORLANDO FVRIOSO, Peere of France, to *Don-Quixote of the Mancha.*

THough thou art not a *Peere*, thou haſt no peere,
Who might among ten thouſand *Peeres* be one;
Nor ſhalt thou neuer any *Peere* haue heere,
Who euer conquering, vanq'uiſht waſt of none.
Quixote I'me *Orlande*, that caſt-away
For faire *Angelica*, croſt remoteſt ſeas,
And did ſuch *Trophies* on *Fames* altar lay,
As paſſe obliuious wretch, many degrees.
Nor can I bee thy *Peere*, for *Peerleſneſſe*,
Is to thy prowes dew and great renoune,
Although I left, as well as thou my wit:
Yet mine thou maiſt be, if thy good ſucceſſe
Make thee, the proud *Moore* tame, and ſchite that
Vs equals in diſgrace, and being fit. (crowne

SOLIS DAN, to Don-Quixote of *the Mancha.*

MAugre the rauings, that are ſet abroach,
And rumble vp and downe thy troubled braine:
Yet now thine acts *Quixote* can reproach
Or thy proceedings, taxe as vile, or vaine.
Thy feates ſhalbe, thy faireſt ornament
(Seeing wrongs to'ndoe, thou goeſt thus about)
Although, with blowes, a thouſand times y-ſhlut
Thou wert, well nigh, yee'uen by the miſcreant route.

And

And if thy faire *Dulcinea*, ſhall wrong
By miſregard, thy fairer expectation,
And to thy cares will lend no lightning eare.
Then let this comfort all thy woes out weare
That *Sancho* faild in brokers occupation,
He fooliſh, cruell ſhee: thou, without tongue.

The Princes ORIANA of Great Brittaine, *to Lady Dulcinea de Toboſo.*

HAppie thoſe which, for more commoditie
And eaſe *Dulcinea* faire! could bring to paſſe,
That *Greene Witch*, where *Toboſo* is might bee
And *London* chang'd, where thy Knights village was.
Happie ſhe that might body and ſoule adorne
With thy rich liuery, and thy hie deſire:
And ſee thy happie Knight by honour borne
In cruell combat, broaching out his Ire.
But happieſt ſhe, that might ſo cleanly ſcape
From *Amadis*, as thou haſt whilome done
From that well manered Knight, Curteous *Quixote:*
O! were I ſhee, Id'een'uy now once hap,
And had beene merry, when I moſt did moane
And tane my pleaſure, without paying ſhot.

Gandaline, Amadis of Gaules Squire; to Sancho *Panca, Don-Quixotes Squire.*

HAile famou's man! whom fortune hath ſo bliſt
When firſt in Squirelike trade, it thee did place
As thou didſt ſoft, and ſweetly paſſe diſgrace,
Or thou thereof the threatning danger wiſt.

The

The Shouell or Sickle little doe reſiſt
The wandring exerciſe; for nowe's in grace,
Plaine Squirelike dealing, which doth quite deface,
His pride, that would the *Moore* boare with his fiſt.
Thine Aſſe I Iointly enuie and thy name,
And eke thy Wallet I doe emulate;
An argument of thy great prouidence:
Haile once againe; who, cauſe ſo good a man,
Thy worthes, our Spaniſh *Ouid* does relate,
And louely chaunts them, with all reuerence.

A Dialogue betweene BABIECA, Horſe to the CID *a famous Conquerour of Spaine: and* ROZINANTE DON-QVIXOTES *Courſer.*

Ba. HOw haps it *Rozinant*, thou art ſo leane?
Ro. Becauſe I trauaile ſtill, and neuer eate:
Ba. Thy want of Barley and Straw, what doe's it meane?
Ro. That of my Lord, a bit I cannot get.
Ba. Away ſir Iade! you are ill mannered,
Whoſe Aſſes tongue, your Lord does thus abaſe:
Ro. If you did ſee how hees enamoured,
You would conclude, that hee's the greater Aſſe.
Ba. Is loue a folly? (*Roz*) ſure it is no wit.
Ba. Thou art a Metaphiſitian, (*Roz*) for want of meate.
Ba. Complaine vpon the Squire. (*Roz.*) what profits it?
Or how ſhall I my woſull plaints repeate!
Since though the world impuges ſlowneſſe to me,
Yet greater Iades, my Lord and *Sancho* be.

The

Digitized by Google

The Table of the first part of the delightfull *Historie of Don-Quixote.*

CHAPTER. I.

WHerein is rehearsed the calling and exercises of the renowned Gentleman Don-Quixote *of the Mancha*

CHAPTER. II.

Treating of the first sally that Don-Quixote *made to seeke aduentures.*

CHAPTER. III.

Wherein is recounted the pleasant manner obserued in the Knighting of Don-Quixote.

CHAPTER. IIII.

Of that which befell to our Knight, after hee had departed from the Inne.

CHAPTER. V.

Wherein is prosecuted the former narration of our Knights misfortunes.

CHAPTER. VI.

Of the pleasant and curious search and inquisition made by the Curate and Barber of Don-Quixotes *Librarie.*

CHAPTER. VII.

Of the second departure that the good Knight Don-Quixote *made from his House to seeke aduentures.*

CHAPTER. VIII.

Of the good successe Don-Quixote *had in the dreadfull and neuer imagined aduenture of the Wind-mils, with other accidents worthy to be recounted.*

Digitized by Google

The

The Table of the second Part of the delightfull *Historie of Don-Quixote of Mancha.*

CHAPTER. I.

THerein is concluded and finished the fearefull battaile with the gallants. Biscanie *fought with* Don-Quixote.

CHAPTER. II.

Of that which befell to Don-Quixote *after hee had left the Ladies.*

CHAPTER. III.

Of that which passed betweene Don-Quixote *and certaine Goatheards.*

CHAPTER. IIII.

Of that which one of the Goatheards recounted to those that trauailed with Don-Quixote.

CHAPTER. V.

Wherein is finished the Historie of the Pastora Marcella, *with other accidents.*

CHAPTER. VI.

Wherein are rehearsed the dispairing Verses of the dead Shepheard, with other vnexpected events.

The Table of the third Part of the delightfull *Historie of Don-Quixote of Mancha.*

CHAPTER. I.

VVHerein is rehearsed the vnfortunate aduenture happned to Don-Quixote, *by encountering with certaine Ganguesian Carriers.*

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER. II.

Of that which befell the ingenious Knight within the Inne, which he supposed to be a Castle.

CHAPTER. III.

Wherein are laide downe the innumerable misfortunes that Don-Quixote *and his good Squire* Sancho *passed in the Inne, the which he to his dammage supposed to be a Castle.*

CHAPTER. IIII.

Specifying the discourses passed betweene Sancho *and his Lord* Don Quixote, *with other occurrents worthy therecit all.*

CHAPTER. V.

Of the discreete discourses had betweene Sancho *and his Lord, with the succeeding aduentures of a dead body, and other notable things.*

CHAPTER. VI.

Of a wonderfull aduenture atchieued with lesse hazard, then euer any other Knight did any, by the valorous Don-Quixote *of the Mancha.*

CHAPTER. VII.

Of the high aduenture and rich prize of the Helmet of Mambrino, *with other successes befallen the inuincible Knight.*

CHAPTER. VIII.

Of the libertie that Don-Quixote *gaue to many wretches, that were a carrience perforce to a place they desired not.*

CHAPTER. IX.

Of that which befell the famous Don-Quixote *in* Sierra Morena, *and was one of the rarest aduentures, which in this authenticall Historie is recounted.*

CHAPTER. X.

Wherein is prosecuted the aduenture of Sierra Morena.

CHAPTER. XI.

Which treates of the strange aduentures that hapned to the Knight of the Mancha in Sierra Morena: *and of the Penance he did there in imitation of* Beltinibros.

CHAPTER. XII.

Wherein are prosecuted the prankes played by Don-Quixote

Digitized by Google

ote *in his amorous humours in the mountaines of* Sierra Morena.

CHAPTER. XIII.

How the Curate and Barber put their designe in practise, with many other things worthy to bee recorded in this famous Historie.

The Table of the fourth Part of the delightfull Historie of Don-Quixote.

CHAPTER. I.

WHerein is discoursed the new and pleasant aduenture that happened to the Curate and Barber in Sierra Morena.

CHAPTER. II.

Which treates of the discretion of the beautifull Dorotea: *and of the artificiall manner vsed to disswade the amorous Knight from continuing his penance, and how hee was gotten away, with many other delightfull and pleasant occurrences.*

CHAPTER. III.

Of many pleasant discourses passed betweene Don-Quixote *and those of his companie, after that he had abandoned the rigorous place of his penance.*

CHAPTER. IIII.

Of the pleasant discourses continued betweene Don-Quixote *and his Squire* Sancho Panca, *with other aduentures.*

CHAPTER. V.

Treating of that which befell all Don-Quixotes *traine in the Inne.*

CHAPTER. VI.

Wherein is recounted the nouell of the Curious Impertinent.

CHAPTER. VII.

Wherein is prosecuted the nouell of the Curious Impertinent.

CHA-

THE DELIGHTFVLL HISTORIE OF THE MOST INGENIOVS Knight *Don-Quixote* of the MANCHA.

The first Part.

CHAP. I.

Where in is rehearsed the calling, and exercises of the renowmed Gentleman Don-Quixote *of the Mancha.*

THere liued not long since in a certaine vilage of the *Mancha*, the name whereof I purposely omit, a Yeoman of their calling that vse to pile vp in their hals olde Launces, Halbards, Morrions, and such other armours and weapons. He was besides master of an ancient Target, a leane Stallion, and a swift Grey-hound. His pot consisted daily of somewhat more Beefe then Mutton,

Digitized by Google

Mutton, a little minced meate euery night, griefes and complaints the Saturdayes, Lentils on Fridayes, and now and then a Pigeon of reſpect on Sundayes; did conſume three parts of his rents: the reſt and remnant thereof was ſpent on a Ierkin of fine puke, a paire of veluet hoſe, with pantofles of the ſame for the holly-dayes, and one apparell of the fineſt veſture; for therewithall he honored and ſet out his perſon on the worke dayes. Hee had in his houſe a woman-ſeruant, of about ſome forty yeares old, and a nieſe not yet twenty, and a man that ſerued him both in fielde and at home, and could ſaddle his horſe, and likewiſe manage a pruning hooke. The Maſter himſelfe was about fifty yeares olde, of a ſtrong complexion, drie fleſh, and a withered face: he was an early riſer, and a great friend of hunting. Some affirme that his ſurname was *Quixada* or *Queſada* (for in this there is ſome variance among the authours that write his life) although it may be gathered by very probable coniectures, that hee was called *Quixana*. Yet all this concernes our hiſtoricall relation but little; let it then ſuffice, that in the narration thereof we will not vary a iot from the truth.

You ſhall therefore wit, that this Yeoman abouenamed the ſpirts that he was idle (which was the longer part of the yeare) did apply himſelfe wholly to the reading of bookes of Knight-hood, and that with ſuch guſts and delights, as he almoſt wholly neglected the exerciſe of hunting, yea and the very adminiſtration of his houſehould affaires: and his curioſity and folly came to that paſſe, that he made away many acres of arable land to buy him bookes of that kind; and therefore he brought to his houſe as many as euer he could get of that ſubiect: and among them all none pleaſed him better then thoſe which famous *Felician* of *Silua* compoſed. For the ſmoothneſſe of his proſe, with now and then ſome intricate ſentence medled, ſeemed to him peerleſſe; and principally when he did reade the loue dalliances, or letters

Digitized by Google

of

of challenge, that Knights sent to Ladies, or one to another; where, in many places he found written the reason of the vnreasonablenesse, which against my reason is wrought, doth so weaken my reason, as with all reason I doe iustly complaine on your beauty. And also when he read The high Heauens, which with your diuinity doe fortifie you diuinely with the starres, and make you deseruerefse of the deserts that your greatnesse deserue, &c. With these and other such passages the poore Gentleman grew distracted, and was breaking his braines day and night to vnderstand and vnbowell their sense. An endles labor, for euen *Aristotle* himselfe would not vnderstand them, though he were againe resuscitated onely for that purpose. He did not like so much the vnproportionate blowes that *Don Belianis* gaue and tooke in fight; for, as he imagined, were the Surgeons neuer so cunning that cured them, yet was it impossible but that the patient his face & all his body must remaine full of scars, and tokens: yet did he praise notwithstanding in the authour of that History, the conclusion of his booke, with the promise of the endlesse aduenture, and many times he himselfe had a desire to take pen and finish it exactly as it is there promised; and would doubtlesly haue performed it, and that certes with happy successe, if other more vrgent and continuall thoughts had not disturbed him.

Many times did he fall at variance with the Curate of his village (who was a learned man, graduated in *Ciguenca*) touching who was the better Knight *Palmerin* of England, or *Amadis de Gaule*: but Master *Nicholas* the Barber of the same towne would affirme, that none of both arriued in worth to the Knight of the Sun; and if anyone Knight might paragon with him, it was infallibly *Don Galaor*, *Amadis de Gaules* brother, whose nature might fitly be accommodated to any thing; for hee was not so coy and whyning a Knight as his brother, and that in matters of valour, he did not bate him an ace.

Digitized by Google

In reſolution, he plunged himſelfe ſo deepely in his reading of theſe bookes, as he ſpent many times in the lecture of them whole dayes and nights; and in the end through his little ſleepe and much reading, he dryed vp his braines in ſuch ſort as he loſt wholly his iudgement. His fantaſie was filled with thoſe things that he read, of enchantments, quarrels, battels, challenges, wounds, woings, loues, tempeſts, and other impoſſible follies. And theſe toyes did ſo firmly poſſeſſe his imagination with an infallible opinion, that all that Machina of dreamed inuentions which he read was true, as he accounted no Hiſtory in the world to be ſo certaine and ſincere as they were. He was wont to ſay that the * *Cid Ruydiaz* was a very good Knight, but not to be compared to the Knight of the burning ſword, which with one thwart blow cut aſunder two fierce and mighty Giants. He agreed better with *Bernardo del Carpio*, becauſe he ſlew the enchanted *Rowland* in *Roncesuales*. He likewiſe liked of the ſhift *Hercules* vſed when he ſmothered *Anteon* the ſonne of the earth betweene his armes. He prayſed the Gyant *Morgant* maruellouſly, becauſe though hee was of that monſtrous progenie, who are commonly all of them proude and rude, yet he onely was affable and courteous. But he agreed beſt of all with *Reinauld* of *Mount alban*; and moſt of all then, when he ſaw him ſallie out of his Caſtle to rob as many as euer hee could meete: and when moreouer he robd the Idoll of *Mahomet* made al of gold, as his Hiſtory recounts, and would be content to giue his ſoule, yea and his Niece alſo, for a good oportunity on the traytor *Galalon*, that he might lamb-skin and trample him into powder.

Finally, his wit being wholly extinguiſhed; he fell into one of the ſtrangeſt conceits that euer mad-man ſtumbled on in this world, to wit, it ſeemed vnto him very requiſite and behouefull, as well for the augmentation of his honours, as alſo for the benefite of the Common-wealth,

* *A famous Captaine of the Spaniſh nation.*

Digitized by Google

wealth, that he himselfe should become a Knight errant, and goe throughout the world, with his horse and armor to seeke aduentures, and practise in person all that he had read was vsed by Knights of yoare; reuenging of all kinds of iniuries, and offering himselfe to occasions and dangers: which being once happily atchieued, might gaine him eternall renowne. The poore soule did already figure himselfe crowned, through the valour of his arme, at least with the Empire of *Trapesonda*: and ledde thus by these soothing thoughts, and borne away with the exceeding delight he found in them, he hastened all that he might, to effect his vrging desires.

And first of all he caused certaine olde rusty armes to be scoured, that belonged to his great Grand-father, and lay many ages neglected, and forgotten in a by-corner of his house; he trimmed them and dressed them the best he mought, and then perceiued a great defect they had; for they wanted an helmet, and had only a plain morrion: but he by his industry supplied that want, and framed with certaine papers pasted together, a Beauer for his Morrion. True it is, that to make tryall whether his pasted Beauer was strong enough, and might abide the aduenture of a blow, he out with his sword, and gaue it a blow or two, and with the very first did quite vndoe his whole weekes labour: the facility wherewithall it was dissolued liked him nothing; wherefore to assure himselfe better the next time from the like danger, he made it anew, placing certaine iron barres within it, in so artificiall manner, as he rested at once satisfied, both with his inuention, and also the sollidity of the worke; and without making a second tryall, he deputed and held it in estimation of a most excellent Beauer. Then did he presently visit his horse, who though he had more corners then a Spanish Reall, and more faults then *Gonellas*, hauing nothing on him but skin and bone; yet he thought that neyther *Alexanders Bucephalus*, nor the *Cid* his horse *Babieca*,

Digitized by Google

Balieca, were in any reſpect equall to him. He ſpent foure dayes deuiſing him a name: for (as he reaſoned to himſelfe) it was not fit that ſo famous a Knights horſe, and chiefly being ſo good a beaſt, ſhould want a knowne name; and therefore he endeuoured to giue him ſuch a one, as ſhould both declare what ſometime he had been, before he pertayned to a Knight errant, and alſo what preſently he was: for it ſtood greatly with reaſon, ſeeing his Lord and Maſter changed his eſtate and vocation, that he ſhould alter likewiſe his denomination, and get a new one, that were famous and altiſonant, as becommed the new order and exerciſe which he now profeſſed: and therefore after many other names which he framed, blotted out, reiected, added, vndid, and turned again to frame in his memory and imagination, he finally concluded to name him *Rozinante*, a name in his opinion, lofty, ful, and ſignificatiue of what he had beene when he was a ſimple horſe, before he was exalted to his new dignity; being as he thought, the beſt carriage beaſt of the world. The name being thus giuen to his horſe, and ſo to his minde, he reſolued to giue himſelfe a name alſo, and in that thought he laboured other eight dayes; and in concluſion, called himſelfe *Don-Quixote*; whence (as is ſaid) the Authours of this moſt true Hiſtory deduce, that he was vndoubtedly named *Quixada*, and not *Queſada* as others would haue it. And remembring that the valorous *Amadis* was not ſatisfied onely with the dry name of *Amadis*, but added thereunto the name of his Kingdome and Country, to render his owne more redoubted, terming himſelfe *Amadis de Gaula*; ſo he, like a good Knight would adde to his owne, that alſo of his Prouince, and call himſelfe *Don-Quixote* of the *Mancha*, wherewith it appeared, that he very liuely declared his linage and countrey, which he did honour, by taking it for his ſurname.

A horſe of labor or carriage in Spaniſh is called Rozin, *and the word* Ante, *ſignifies* Before: *ſo that* Rozinante *is a horſe that ſometime was of carriage.*

His armour being ſcoured, his morrion transformed into

Digitized by Google

into an helmet, his horse named, and himselfe confirmed with a new name also; he forthwith bethought himselfe that now he wanted nothing but a Lady, on whom hee might bestow his seruice and affection; for the Knight errant that is loueleſſe, resembles a tree that wants leaues and fruit, or a body without a soule: and therefore hee was wont to say, If I should for my sinnes, or by good hap encounter there abroad with some Giant (as Knights errant doe ordinarily) and that I should ouerthrow him with one blow to the ground, or cut him with a stroke in two halues, or finally ouercom, & make him yeeld to me, would it not be very expedient to haue some Lady, to whom I might present him? And that he entring in her presence do lay himself on his knees before my sweet Lady, and say vnto her with an humble & submissiue voyce: Madam! I am the Giant *Caraculiambro*, Lord of the Iland called *Malindrania*, whom the neuer-too-much-prayſed Knight *Don-Quixote de la Mancha* hath ouercome in single combat; and hath commaunded to present my selfe to your greatneſſe, that it may pleaſe your Highneſſe to dispose of me according vnto your liking. O! how glad was our Knight when he had made this discourse to himselfe, but chiefly when he had found out one, whom he might call his Lady. For, as it is imagined, there dwelled in the next village vnto his Mannor, a young handsome wench, on whom he was sometime in loue, although as is vnderstood, she neuer knew or tooke notice thereof. She was called *Aldonca Lorenco*, and her he thought fittest to intitle with the name of Lady of his thoughts, and searching a name for her that should not vary much from her owne, and yet should draw and aueere somewhat to that of a Princeſſe or great Lady, he called her *Dulcinea del Toboſo* (for there she was borne) a name in his conceit harmonious, strange and significatiue, like to all the others that he had giuen to his things.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. II.

Of the first sally that Don-Quixote *made to seeke aduentures.*

THese preuentions being made, he would deferre the execution of his desygnes no longer, being spur'd on the more vehemently, by the want which he esteemed his delayes wrought in the world, according to the wrongs that he resolued to right, the harmes he meant to redresse, the excesses he would amend, the abuses that he would better, and the debts he would satisfie. And therefore without acquainting any liuing creature with his intention, he vnseene of any, vpon a certaine morning, somwhat before the day (being one of the warmest of Iuly) armed himselfe Cap a pie, mounted on *Rozinante*, laced on his il-contriued Helmet, imbraced his Target, tooke his Launce, and by a posterne doore of his base-court issued out to the field, marueilous iocund and content to see with what facility he had commenced his good desires. But scarce had he sallied to the fields when he was suddenly assaulted by a terrible thought, and such a one as did welnigh ouerthrow his former good purposes; which was, he remembred that he was not yet dub'd Knight, and therefore by the lawes of Knighthood neyther could nor ought to combat with any Knight. And though he were one, yet ought he to weare white armour like a new Knight, without any deuice in his shield, vntill he did win it by force of armes.

These thoughts did make him stagger in his purposes; but his follies preuayling more then any other reason, he purposed to cause himselfe to be Knighted by the first he met, to the imitation of many others, that did the same, as he had read in the bookes which distracted him. As touching white armour, he resolued with the first oportuni-

Digitized by Google ty

ty to scoure his owne so well, that they should rest whiter then Ermines: and thus he pacified his mind, and prosecuted his iourney, without chusing any other way then that which his horse pleased, beleeuing that therein consisted the vigor of Knightly aduentures. Our flowrishing aduenturer trauelling thus onward, did parle with him-
" selfe in this manner: Who doubts in the ensuing ages,
" when the true History of my famous actes shall come
" to light, but that the wiseman who shall write it will
" begin it when he comes to declare this my first sally so
" early in the morning, after this manner. *Scarce had the*
" *ruddy* Apollo *spread ouer the face of the vast and spacious*
" *earth, the golden twists of his beautifull hayres, and scarce*
" *had the little enameld birds with their naked tongues sa-*
" *luted with sweet and* * *mellifluous harmony, the arriuall of*
" *Rosie Aurora,* when abandoning her iealous husbands
" soft couch, shee shewes her selfe to mortall wights
" through the gates and windowes of the * *Manchegall*
" *Orizon.* When the famous Knight *Don-Quixote* of the
" *Mancha,* abandoning the slouthfull plumes, did mount
" vpon his renoumed horse *Rozinante*, and began to tra-
" uell through the auncient and notorious fields of *Mon-*
" *tiel,* (as indeede he did) and following still on with his
" Discourse, he said: O! happy the age, and fortunate
" the time, wherein my famous feats shall be reuealed,
" feats worthy to be grauen in brasse, carued in marble
" & deliuered with most curious arte in tables, for a future
" instruction and memory. And thou wise enchanter,
" whosoeuer thou beest, whom it shall concerne to be
" the Chronicler of this strange History, I desire thee not
" to forget my good horse *Rozinante*, mine eternall and
" inseparable companion in all my iournies and courses.
And then as if hee were verily enamoured, he said,
" O Princesse *Dulcinea*, Lady of this captiue heart, much
" wrong hast thou done me by dismissing me, and repro-
" ching me with the rigorous decree & commandement
not

* Melodious.

* His country the Mancha.

Digitized by Google

" not to appeare before thy beauty : I pray thee sweete " Lady deigne to remember thee of this poore subiected " heart, that for thy loue suffers so many tortures. And with these words he inserted a thousand other rauings all after the very same manner that his bookes taught him, imitating as neere as he could their very phrase and language, and did ride therewithall so slow a pace, and the Sunne did mount so swiftly, and with so great heate as it was sufficient to melt his braines if he had had any left.

He trauelled almost all that day, without encountring any thing worthy the recitall, which made him to fret for anger, for he desired to encounter presently some one vpon whom he might make trial of his inuincible strength. Som authors write that his first aduenture was that of the *Lapiceau* straites, others, that of the Winde-mils; but what I could only find out in this affaire, and that which I haue found written in the Annals of the *Mancha* is, that he trauelled all that day long, and at night both he and his horse were tyred, and marueilously prest by hunger, and looking about him on euery side, to see whether he could discouer any Castle or Sheepe-fold, wherein he might retire himselfe for that night, & remedy his wants; he perceiued an Inne, neare vnto the high way wherein he trauelled; which was as welcome a sight to him, as if he had seene a starre, that did addresse him to the porch, if not to the Pallace of his redemption. Then spurring his horse, he hyed all he might towards it, and arriued much about night fall. There stood by chance at the Inne dore, two young women aduenturers likewise, which trauelled toward *Simil* with certaine Carriers, and did by chance take vp their lodging in that Inne the same euening; and for as much as our Knight errant esteemed all which he thought, saw, or imagined, was done or did really passe in the very same forme, as he had read the like in his bookes: forthwith as soone as he espied the Vent

Digitized by Google

he

he fained to himselfe that it was a Castle with foure Turrets, whereof the Pinacles were of glistring siluer, without omitting the draw-bridge, deepe fosse, and other adherents belonging to the like places: And approching by little and little to the Vent, when he drew neere to it, checking *Rozinante* with the bridle, he rested a while to see whether any dwarfe would mount on the battlements to giue warning with the sound of a Trumpet, how some Knight did approach the Castle: but seeing they stayed so long, and also that *Rozinante* kept a coile to goe to his stable, he went to the Inne dore, and there beheld the two distracted wenches, that stood at it, whom hee presently supposed to be two beautifull damzels or louely Ladies, that did solace themselues before the Castle gates. And in this space it befell by change, that a certaine Swine-heard as he gathered together his hogges, blew the horne, whereat they are wont to come together; and instantly *Don-Quixote* imagined it was what he desired, to wit, some dwarfe who gaue notice of his arriuall; and therefore with marueilous satisfaction of minde he approched to the Inne and Ladies; who beholding one armed in that manner to draw so neere, with his Launce and Target, they made much haste being greatly affrighted, to get to their lodging. But *Don-Quixote*, perceiuing their feare by their flight, lifting vp his pasted Beauer, and discouering his withered and dusty countenance, did accost them with gentle demeanoure & graue "words in this manner: Let not your Ladiships flie, nor "feare any outrage, for to the order of Knighthood "which I doe professe, it toucheth nor appertayneth not "to wrong any body, and least of all such worthy dam-"zels as your presences denote you to be. The wenches looked on him very earnestly, and did search with their eyes for the visage, which his il-fashioned Beauer did conceale: but when they heard themselues termed damzels, a thing so farre from their profession, they could not con-

Digitized by Google

containe their laughter, which was so loude, as *Don-Quixote* waxed ashamed thereat, and therefore said to "them: Modesty is a comely ornament of the beautifull, "and the excessiue laughter that springs from a light oc-"casion, must be reputed great folly: but I do not obiect "this vnto you to make you the more ashamed, or that "you should take it in ill part: for my desire is none o-"ther then to do you all the honour and seruice I may. This he spake vnto them in such vncouth words, as they could not vnderstand him, which was an occasion, ioyned with his owne vncomelinesse, to encrease their laughter and his wrath, which would haue past the bounds of reason, if the In-keeper had not come out at the instant; being a man who by reason of his exceeding fatnesse, must needes haue beene of a very peaceable condition, who beholding that counterfeit figure, all armed in so vnsutable armour, as were his Bridle, Lance, Target, and Corslet, was very neare to haue kept the damzels company in the pleasant showes of his merriment: but fearing in effect the *Machina* and bulke contriued of so various furnitures, he determined to speake him fairely, and therfore began to him in this maner: If your worship (Sir Knight) doe seeke for lodging, you may chalke your selfe a bedde (for there is none in this Inne) wherein you shall finde all other things in abundance. *Don-Quixote* noting the lowlinesse of the Constable of that Fortresse (for such the Inne & In-keeper seemed vnto him) answered, any thing Sir * Constable, may serue me; for mine armes are mine ornaments, and battels mine ease, &c. The Hoste thought he had called him a *Castellano* or Constable, because hee esteemed him to be one of the sincere and honest men of Castile, whereas he was indeede an *Andaluzian*, and of the commarke of S. *Lucars*, no lesse thieuish then *Cacus*, nor lesse malicious and crafty then a student or page; and therefore he answered him thus: If that be so, your bedde must be hard rockes, and your sleepe a perpetuall watching:

* *Here the Spanish is* Castellano, *that is in the Spanish tongue eyther a Constable of a Castle, or one borne in Castile.*

Digitized by Google

ings: and being such, you may boldly allight, and shall finde certainly here occasion and opportunitie to holde you waking this twelue-moneth, more for one night: and saying so, laid hand on *Don-Quixotes* stirrop, who did forthwith allight, though it was with great difficulty and paine (as one that had not eaten all that day one crumme) and then he requested the Hoste to haue speciall care of his horse, saying, he was one of the best pieces that euer eate bread. The In-keeper viewed and reuiewed him, to whom he did not seeme halfe so good as *Don-Quixote* valued him; and laying him vp in the stable, he turned to see what his Guest would command, who was a disarming by both the damzels (which were by this time reconciled to him) who though they had taken off his brest-plate and backe parts, yet knew they not how, nor could any wise vndo his gorget, nor take off his counterfeit Beauer, which he had fastened on with greene ribbands; and by reason the knots were so intricate, it was requisite they should be cut, whereunto he would not in any wise agree; and therfore remained all the night with his helmet on, and was the strangest and pleasantest figure thereby that one might behold. And as he was a disarming (imagining those light wenches that holpe him, to be certaine principall Ladies and dames of that Castle) he said vnto them with a very good grace: Neuer was any Knight so well attended on, and serued by Ladies as was *Don-Quixote*; when he departed from his village, damzels attended on him, and Princesses on his horse. O *Rozinante*, for (Ladies) that is the name of my horse, and *Don-Quixote de la Mancha* is mine owne. For although I meant at the first not to haue discouered my selfe, vntill the acts done in your seruice and benefite should manifest me, yet the necessity of accómodating to our present purpose, the olde Romaunce of Sir *Launcelot* hath beene an occasion that you should know my name before the right season: but the time will come wherein your Ladiships

Digitized by Google

may

may commaund me, and I obey, and then the valor of mine arme shall discouer the desire I haue to doe you seruice.

The wenches being vnaccustomed to heare so rhetoricall termes, answered neuer a word to him, but onely demaunded, whether he would eate any thing? That I would, replied *Don-Quixote*, for as much as I thinke the taking of a little meate would be very behouefull for me. It chanced by hap to be on Friday, and therefore there was no other meat in the Inne, then a few pieces of a fish called in Castile *Abadexo*, in Andaluzia *Bacallao*, and in some places *Curadillo*, and in others *Truchuela*, and is but poore-Iohn. They demanded of him therfore whether he would eate thereof, giuing it the name vsed in that place of *Truchuela* or little Troute, for there was no other fish in all the Inne to present vnto him but such? Why then quoth *Don-Quixote* bring it in, for if there be many little Trouts, they may serue me in stead of a great one; it being all one to me to be paide my money (if I were to receiue any) in eight single Reals, or to be paide the same in one Reall of eight. And moreouer those little Trouts are perhaps like vnto Veale, which is much more delicate flesh then Beefe or the Kid, which is better then the Goat: but be it what it list, let it be brought in presently; for the labour and weight of armes cannot be well borne, without the well supplying of the guttes. Then was there straight laid a table at the Inne dore, that he mought take the aire: and the Host brought him a portion of euil watered, and worse boyled poore-*Iohn*, and a loafe as blacke and hoary as his Harnesse: but the onely sport was to behold him eate: for by reason his helmet was on, and his Beauer lifted, he could put nothing into his mouth himselfe, if others did not helpe him to finde the way; and therefore one of those Ladies serued his turne in that: but it was altogether impossible to giue him drinke after that manner, and would haue remayned

Digitized by Google so

so for euer, if the In-keeper had not boared a Cane, and setting the one end in his mouth, poured downe the wine at the other: all which he suffered most patiently, because he would not breake the ribbans of his helmet. And as he sate at supper, there arriued by chance a Sow-gelder, who as soone as he came to the Inne did sound foure or fiue times a whistle of Canes, the which did confirme *Don-Quixote* that he was in some famous Castle, where he was serued with musicke, and that the poore-Iohn was Trouts, the bread of the finest flower, the whoores Ladies, and the In-keeper Constable of that Castle: Wherefore he accounted his resolution and departure from his owne house very well imployed. But that which did most afflict him, was, that he was not yet dubbed Knight; for as much as he was fully perswaded that he could not lawfully enterprise or follow any aduenture, vntill he receiued the order of Knight-hood.

CHAP. III.

Wherein is recounted the pleasant manner obserued in the Knighting of Don-Quixote.

AND being thus tossed in minde, he did abreuiat his Tauernely and limited supper; which being finished, hee called for his horse, and shutting the Stable dore very fast, he laid himselfe down vpon his knees in it before him, saying, I will neuer rise from the place where I am valorous Knight, vntill your curtesie shall graunt vnto me a boone that I meane to demand of you, the which will redound vnto your renowne, and also to the profite of all humane kinde. The In-keeper seeing his guest at his feete, and hearing him speake those words, remayned confounded beholding him,

Digitized by Google

him, not knowing what he might doe or say, and did studie and labour to make him arise: but all was in vaine, vntill he must haue promised vnto him, that he would graunt him any gift that he sought at his handes. I did neuer expect lesse (replied *Don-Quixote*) from your great magnificence my Lord, and therefore I say vnto you that the boone which I demaund of you, and that hath beene graunted vnto me by your liberality, is, that to morrow in the morning you wil dubbe me Knight, and this night I will watch mine armour in the Chappell of your Castle, and in the morning, as I haue said, the rest of my desires shall be accomplished, that I may goe in due manner throughout the foure parts of the world to seeke aduentures, to the benefit of the needy, as is the duety of Knight-hood and of Knights errant, as I am, whose desires are wholly inclined and dedicated to such atchieuements. The Hoste, who, as we noted before, was a great giber, & had before gathered som argumēts of the defect of wit in his guest, did wholly now perswade himself that his suspicions were true, when he heard him speake in that manner: and that hee might haue an occasion of laughter, he resolued to feed his humour that night, and therefore answered him, that he had very great reason in that which he desired and sought, and that such proiects were proper and naturall to Knights of the garbe and worth he seemed to be of: and that he himselfe likewise in his youthfull yeares had followed that honourable exercise, going through diuers parts of the world to seeke aduentures, without eyther omitting the * dangers of Malaga, the Isles of Riaran, the compasse of Siuill, the * Quicke-siluer-house of Segouia, the Oliue-field of Valencia, the Circuit of Granada, the wharfe of S. *Lucar*, the Potro or Cowlt of Cordoua, and the little Tauernes of Toledo; and many other places, wherein he practised the dexterity of his handes, doing many wrongs, solliciting many widdowes, vndoing certaine maydens, and deceiuing

* *Perchales.*
* *Azoguejo.*
* *The Potro of Cordoua is a certaine fountaine wherein stands a Pegasus: and to that fountaine resort a number of cunny-catching fellowes, as Duke Humfrey at Paules.*

Digitized by Google

uing many pupils, and finally making himselfe knowne and famous in all the Tribunals and Courts almost of all Spaine, and that at last he had retired himselfe to that his Castle, where he was sustained with his owne and other mens goods; entertayning in it all Knights errants, of whatsoeuer quality and condition they were, onely for the great affection he bore towards them, and to the end they might diuide with him part of their winnings in recompence of his good will: he added besides, that there was no Chappell in his Castle, wherein he might watch his armes, for he had broken it downe to build it vp anew: but notwithstanding he knew very well that in a case of necessity, they might lawfully be watched in any other place, and therefore hee might watch them that night in the base Court of the Castle; for in the morning, and pleased God, the ceremonies requisite should bee done in such sort, as he should remaine a dubbed Knight, in so good fashion, as in all the world he could not be bettered. He demaunded of *Don-Quixote* whether he had any money? who answered that he had not a blanck, for he had neuer read in any History of Knights errants, that any one of them euer caried any money. To this his Hoste replied, that he was deceiued; for admit that Histories made no mention thereof, because the authours of them deemed it not necessary to expresse a thing so manifest, and needfull to be carried as was money and cleane shirts: it was not therefore to be credited, that they had none; and therefore he should hold for most certaine and manifest, that all the Knights errant, with the story of whose acts so many bookes are replenished and heaped, had their purses well lined for that which might befall, and did moreouer carie with them a litle Casket of oyntments and salues, to cure the wounds which they receiued; for they had not the commodity of a Surgeon to cure them, euery time that they fought abroad in the fields and desarts, if they had not by chaunce some wise En-

Digitized by Google

Enchanter to their friend, who would preſently ſuccour them, bringing vnto them in ſome cloude through the ayre ſome damzell or dwarfe, with a Violl of water of ſo great vertue, as taſting one droppe therof, they remained as whole of their ſores and wounds, as if they had neuer receiued any. But when they had not that benefite, the Knights of times paſt held it for a very commendable and ſecure courſe, that their Squires ſhould be prouided of money and other neceſſary things, as linte, and oyntments for to cure themſelues: and when it befell that the like Knights had no Squires to attend vpon them (which hapned but very ſeldome) then would they themſelues carie all this prouiſion behinde them on their horſes, in ſome ſlight and ſubtile wallets, which could ſcarce be perceiued, as a thing of very great conſequence. For if it were not vpon ſuch an occaſion, the cariage of wallets was not very tollerable among Knights errãt. And in this reſpect he did aduiſe him, ſeeing he might yet commaund him as one that by receiuing the order of Knight-hood at his hands, ſhould very ſhortly become his God-childe, that he ſhould not trauell from thence forward without money, and other the preuentions he had then giuen vnto him; and he ſhould perceiue himſelfe how behooueſull they would proue vnto him, when he leaſt expected it.

Don-Quixote promiſed to accompliſh all that he had counſelled him to doe, with all punctuality; and ſo order was forthwith giuen how he ſhould watch his armes in a great yard that lay neere vnto one ſide of the Inne: wherefore *Don-Quixote* gathering all his armes together, laid them on a Ciſterne that ſtood neer vnto a Well: and buckling on his Target, he laid hold on his Launce and walked vp and downe before the Ciſterne very demurely; and when he began to walke the night likewiſe, began to looke vp the ſplendor of the day. The In-keeper in the meane ſeaſon recounted to all the reſt that lodged in the Inne the folly of his gueſt, the watching of his

Digitized by Google

his armes and the Knighthood which he expected to receiue. They all admired very much at so strange a kinde of folly, and went out to behold him from a farre off, and saw that sometimes he pranced too and fro with a quiet gesture; other times leaning vpon his Launce he looked vpon his armour, without beholding any other thing saue his armes for a good space.

The night being shut vp at last wholly, but with such cleerenesse of the Moone, as it might well compare with his brightnesse that lent her her splendor, euery thing which our new Knight did, was easily perceiued by all the beholders. In this season one of the Carriers that lodged in the Inne resolued to water his Mules, and for that purpose it was necessary to remooue *Don-Quixotes* armour that lay on the Cesterne; who seeing him approach, said vnto him with a loude voice: O thou! whosoeuer thou beest, bold Knight, that commest to touch the armour of the most valorous aduenturer that euer gyrded sword, looke well what thou dost, and touch them not if thou meanest not to leaue thy life in payment of thy presumption. The Cartier made no account of those words (but it were better he had, for it would haue redounded to his benefite) but rather laying hold on the leatherings, threw the armour a prettie way off from him: which being perceiued by *Don-Quixote*, he lifted vp his eyes towards heauen, and addressing his thoughts (as it seemed) to his "Lady *Dulcinea* he said, Assist me deere Lady in this first "dangerous scorne and aduenture offered to this breast, "that is inthralled to thee, and let not thy fauor and pro-"tection faile me in this my first Traunce. And vttering these and other such words, he let slip his Target, and lifting vp his Launce with both hands, he paide the Carrier so round a knocke therewithall on the pate, as he ouerthrew him to the ground in so euill taking, as if he had seconded it with another, he should not haue needed any Surgeon to cure him. This being ended, he gathered vp

his armour againe, and laying them where they had been before, he walked after vp and downe by them, with as much quietneſſe as he did at the firſt.

But very ſoone after, another Carrier without knowing what had hapned (for his companion lay yet in a trance on the ground) came alſo to giue his Mules water, and comming to take away the armes, that he might free the Ceſterne of encumbrances, and take water the eaſier: *Don-Quixote* ſaying nothing, nor imploring fauor of his Miſtris or any other, let ſlip againe his Target, and lifting his Lance, without breaking of it in pieces, made more then three of the ſecond Carriers noddle; for he broke it in foure places. All the people of the Inne, and amongſt them the Hoſt likewiſe repaired at this time to the noiſe: which *Don-Quixote* perceiuing, imbracing his Target, "and laying hand on his ſword, he ſaid: O Lady of all "beauty, courage, and vigour of my weakned heart, it is "now high time that thou doe conuert the eyes of thy "greatneſſe to this thy Captiue Knight, who doth expect "ſo marueilous great an aduenture. Saying thus, he recouered as he thought ſo great courage, that if al the Carriers of the world had aſſayled him, he would not go one ſteppe backward. The wounded mens fellowes, ſeeing them ſo euill dight, from a farre off began to raine ſtones on *Don-Quixote*, who did defend himſelfe the beſt hee might with his Target, and durſt not depart from the Ceſterne, leaſt he ſhould ſeeme to abandon his armes. The Inkeeper cryed to them to let him alone; for he had already informed them that he was madde, and for ſuch a one would ſcape ſcot-free although he had ſlaine them all. *Don-Quixote* likewiſe cryed out louder, terming them all diſloyall men and traytors, and that the Lord of the Caſtle was a treacherous and badde Knight, ſeeing he conſented that Knights errant ſhould be ſo baſely vſed; and that if he had not yet receiued the order of "Knighthood, he would make him vnderſtand his trea-

"ſon.

"son, but of you base and rascally Kenell (quoth he) "I make no reckoning at all: throw at me, approach, "draw neare, and doe me all the hurt you may, for you "shall ere long perceiue the reward you shall carie for "this your madnesse and outrage. Which wordes hee spoke with so great spirit and boldnesse, as hee stroke a terrible feare into all those that assaulted him: and therfore moued both by it, and the Inkeepers perswasions, they left off throwing stones at him, and he permitted them to carie away the wounded men, and returned to the guard of his armes, with as great quietnesse and grauity, as he did at the beginning.

The Inkeeper did not like very much these jests of his guest, and therfore he determined to abbreuiate, and giue him the vnfortunate order of Knighthood forthwith, before some other disaster befell: and with this resolution comming vnto him, he excused himself of the insolencies those base fellowes had vsed to him, without his priuity or consent, but their rashnesse, as he said, remayned well chastised: He added how he had already told vnto him, that there was no Chappel in his Castel, and that for what yet rested vnperfected of their intention, it was not necessary, because the chiefe point of remayning Knighted, consisted chiefly in blowes of the necke and shoulders, as he had read in the ceremoniall booke of the order, and that, that might be giuen in the very midst of the fieldes; and that he had already accomplished the obligation of watching his armes, which with only two houres watch might be fulfild; how much more after hauing watched foure, as he had done. All this *Don-Quixote* beleeued, and therfore answered, that he was most ready to obey him, & requested him to conclude with al the breuity possible: for if he saw himselfe Knighted, and were once againe assaulted, he meant not to leaue one person aliue in all the Castle, except those which the Constable should command, whom he would spare for his sake.

Digitized by Google The

The Conſtable being thus aduertiſed, and fearefull that he would put this his deliberation in execution, brought out a booke preſently, wherein he was wont to write downe the accounts of the ſtraw and Barley, which he deliuered from time to time, to ſuch Carriers as lodged in his Inne, for their beaſts: and with a but of a candle which a boy held lighting in his hand before him, accompanied by the two damzels aboue mentioned, he came to *Don-Quixote*, whom he commanded to kneele vpon his knees, and reading in his *Manual* (as it ſeemed ſome deuoute Oriſon) he held vp his hand in the midſt of the Lecture, and gaue him a good blow on the necke, and after that gaue him an other trimme thwacke ouer the ſhoulders with his owne ſword (alwayes murmuring ſomething betweene the teeth as if he prayed) this being done, he commaunded one of the Ladies to gyrd on his ſword which ſhe did with a ſingular good grace and dexteritie, which was much, the matter being of it ſelfe ſo ridiculous, as it wanted but little to make a man burſt for laughter at euery paſſage of the Ceremonies: but the proweſſe which they had already beheld in the new Knight, did limit and contain their delight at the gyrding on of his ſword, the good Lady ſaid, God make you a fortunate Knight, and giue you good ſucceſſe in all your debates. *Don-Quixote* demaunded then how ſhe was called, that he might thenceforward know to whom he was ſo much obliged for the fauour receiued? And ſhe anſwered with great buxomnes, that ſhe was named *Toloſa*, and was a butchers daughter of *Toledo*, that dwelt in the Rewes of *Sancho Benega*, and that ſhe would euer honour him as her Lord. *Don-Quixote* replied, requeſting her for his ſake to call her ſelfe from thence forth the Lady *Toloſa*, which he promiſed him to performe. The other Lady buckled on his ſpurre, with whom hee had the very like conference; and asking her name, ſhee told him ſhee was called *Molinera*, and was daughter

to

Digitized by Google

to an honeſt Miller of *Antequera* : here likewiſe our Knight intreated to call her ſelfe the Lady *Molinera*, profering her new ſeruices and fauours. The new and neuer-ſeene before Ceremonies being thus ſpeedily finiſhed, as it ſeemed with a gallop, *Don-Quixote* could not reſt vntill he were mounted on horſe-backe, that hee might goe to ſeeke aduentures; wherefore cauſing *Rozinante* to be inſtantly ſadled, he leaped on him, and imbracing his Hoſte, he ſaid vnto him ſuch ſtrange things, gratifying the fauour hee had done him in dubbing him Knight, as it is impoſſible to hit vpon the manner of recounting them right. The Inkeeper that hee might be quickly rid of him, did anſwere his wordes with others no leſſe rethoricall, but was in his ſpeech ſomwhat briefer; and without demanding of him any thing for his lodging, he ſuffered him to depart in a forrunate houre.

CHAP. IIII.

Of that which befell to our Knight, after he had departed from the Inne.

AVrora began to diſplay her beauties about the time that *Don-Quixote* iſſued out of the Inne, ſo content, liuely, and jocund to behold himſelfe Knighted, as his very horſe gyrts were ready to burſt for ioy: but calling to memory the counſels that his Hoſte had giuen him, touching the moſt needfull implements that he was euer to carie about him, of money and cleane ſhirts, he determined to returne to his houſe, and to prouide himſelfe of them, and alſo of a Squire; making account to intertaine a certaine labourer his neighbour, who was poore, and had children, but yet one very fit for this purpoſe, and Squirely function, belonging to

Digitized by Google

Knighthood. With this determination he turned *Rozinante* towards the way of his owne village, who knowing in a manner his will, began to trotte on with ſo good a will, as he ſeemed not to touch the ground. He had not trauelled farre, when hee thought that he heard certaine weake and delicate cryes, like to thoſe of one that complayned to iſſue out from the thickeſt of a wood that ſtood on the right hand. And ſcarce had he heard them "when he ſaid: I render infinite thankes to heauen for "the fauour it doth me, by profering me ſo ſoone occa- "ſions, wherein I may accompliſh the duety of my pro- "feſſion, and gather the fruits of my good deſires: theſe "plaints doubtleſly be of ſome diſtreſſed man or wo- "man, who needeth my fauour and ayde. Then turning the raynes, he guided *Rozinante* towards the place from whence he thought the complaints ſallied; and within a few paces after he had entred into the thicket, he ſaw a Mare tyed vnto an *Holme Oake*, and to another was tied a young youth all naked from the middle vpward of about the age of fifteene yeares, and was he that cried ſo pittifully: and not without cauſe; for a certaine Countriman of comely perſonage did whip him with a girdle, and accompanied euery blow with a reprehenſion and counſell, for he ſaid, the tongue muſt peace, and the eyes be warie: and the boy anſwered, I will neuer doe it againe, good Maſter; for the paſſion of God, I will neuer doe it againe. And I promiſe to haue more care of your things from henceforth.

But *Don-Quixote* viewing all that paſſed, ſaid with an "angry voyce: Diſcourteous Knight, it is very vncomely "to ſee thee deale thus, with one that cannot defend "himſelfe, leape therefore a horſe-backe, and take thy "Launce (for the Farmer had alſo a Launce leaning to "the very ſame tree, whereunto his Mare was tied) for I "will make thee know, that it is the vſe of Cowards to "doe that which thou doſt. The other beholding ſuch

Digitized by Google

an

an Anticke to houer ouer him, all laden with armes, and brandiſhing of his Launce towards his face, made full account that hee ſhould be ſlaine, and therefore he anſwered with very milde and ſubmiſſiue wordes, ſaying, Sir Knight, the boy which I chaſtiſe is mine owne ſeruant, and keepeth for me a flocke of ſheepe in this Commarke; who is growne ſo negligent, as hee looſeth one of them euery other day, and becauſe I correct him for his careleſneſſe and knauery, he ſayes I doe it through couetouſneſſe and pinching, as meaning to defraude him of his wages; but before God and in conſcience he belies "me. What? The lie, in my preſence raſcally clowne? "Quoth *Don Quixote* by the Sunne that doth kindle "this world, I am about to runne thee thorow and "thorow with my Launce baſe Carle; pay him inſtant-"ly without more replying, or elſe by that God which "doth mannage our ſublunar affaires, I will con-"clude thee, and annihilate thee in a moment; "looſe him forthwith. The Countrey-man hanging downe of his head, made no replie, but looſed his ſeruant; of whom *Don-Quixote* demaunded how much did his Maſter owe vnto him? hee ſaid, one moneths hire, at ſeuen Reals a moneth. *Don-Quixote* made then the account, and found that all amounted to ſeuenty and three Reals, and therefore commaunded the Farmer to pay the money preſently, if hee meaned not to die for it. The fearefull Countrey-man anſwered, that by the trance wherein he was then, and by the oath he had made (which was none at all, for hee ſwore not) that hee ought not ſo much: for there ſhould bee deducted out of the accounts three paire of ſhoes hee had giuen vnto him, and a Reall for twiſe letting him bloud, being ſicke. All is well, quoth *Don Quixote*, but let the price of the ſhoes and letting bloud, goe for the blowes which thou haſt giuen him without a-

Digitized by Google ny

my desert; for if he haue broken the leather of those shoes thou hast bestowed on him, thou hast likewise torne the skinne of his body; and if the Barber tooke away his bloud being sicke, thou hast taken it out, he being in health; so as in that respect he owes thee nothing. The damage is Sir Knight, replied the boyes Master, that I haue no money here about me. Let *Andrew* come with me to my house, and I will pay him his wages, one Reall vpon another. I goe with him, quoth the boy. Euill befall me then. No Sir, I neuer meant it; for as soone as euer he were alone, he would flay me like S. *Bartholomew*. He will not dare to do it, quoth *Don-Quixote*, for my commaund is sufficient to make him respect me, and so that he will sweare to me to obserue it by the order of Knighthood which he hath receiued, I will set him free, and assure thee of the payment. Good Sir, quoth the youth, marke well what you say, for this man my Master is no Knight, nor did euer receiue any order of Knighthood; for he is *Iohn Haldudo* the rich man, a dweller of *Quintanar*. That makes no matter, quoth *Don-Quixote*, for there may be Knights of the *Haldudos*: and what is more, euery one is sonne of his workes. That's true, quoth *Andrew*, but of what workes can this my Master be sonne, seeing he denies me my wages, and my sweate and labour? I doe not denie thy wages friend *Andrew*, quoth his Master; doe me but the pleasure to come with me, and I sweare by all the orders of Knighthood that are in the world, to pay thee as I haue said, one Reall vpon another, yea and those also perfumed. For the perfuming I thanke thee, quoth *Don-Quixote*, giue it him in Reals, and with that I will rest satisfied; and see that thou fulfillest it as thou hast sworne: if not, I swear againe to thee by the same oath to returne and search thee, and chastise thee, and I will finde thee out, though thou didst hide thy selfe better then a *Lizarde*: and if thou desirest to note who commaunds thee this, that thou

Digitized by Google

"thou mayeſt remaine more firmely obliged to accom-
"pliſh it, know that I am the valorous *Don-Quixote* of
"the *Mancha*, the righter of wrongs and vndoer of in-
"iuries, and ſo farewell: and doe not forget what thou
"haſt promiſed and ſworne on paine of the paines alrea-
"dy pronounced. And ſaying theſe wordes, he ſpurred *Rozinante*, and in ſhort ſpace was got farre off from them. The Countrey-man purſued him with his eye, and perceiuing that he was paſt the wood and quite out of ſight, he returned to his man *Andrew*, and ſaid to him come to me childe, for I will pay thee what I owe thee, as that righter of wrongs hath left me commanded. That I ſweare, quoth *Andrew*, and you ſhall deale diſcreetely in fulfilling that good Knights commaundement, who I pray God may liue a thouſand yeares: for ſeeing he is ſo valorous and ſo iuſt a Iudge I ſwear by *Rocque*, that if you pay me not, he ſhall returne and execute what he promi-ſed. I alſo doe ſweare the ſame quoth the Farmer, but in reſpect of the great affection I beare vnto thee, I wil aug-ment the debt, to increaſe the payment; and catching the youth by the arme, he tied him againe to the Oake, where he gaue him ſo many blowes as he left him for dead. Call now Maſter *Andrew* (quoth he) for the righter of wrongs, and thou ſhalt ſee that he cannot vndo this, although I beleeue it is not yet ended to be done. For I haue yet a deſire to flea thee aliue, as thou didſt thy ſelfe feare. Not withſtanding all theſe threats, he vntied him at laſt, and gaue him leaue to goe ſeeke out his Iudge; to the end he might execute the ſentence pronounced. *Andrew* de-parted ſomewhat diſcontent, ſwearing to ſearch for the valorous *Don-Quixote* of the *Mancha*, and recount vn-to him point by point all that had paſt, and that he ſhould pay the abuſe with vſury: but for all his threats he depar-ted weeping, and his Maſter remained behinde laughing; and in this manner the valorous *Don-Quixote* redreſſe that wrong.

Digitized by Google Who

Who glad aboue meaſure for his ſucceſſe, accounting himſelfe to haue giuen a moſt noble beginning to his feats of armes, did trauell towards his village, with very great ſatisfaction of himſelfe, and ſaid in a low tune theſe "wordes enſuing: Well maiſt thou call thy ſelfe happy a- "boue all other women of the earth, O! aboue all beau- "ties beautifull *Dulcinea* of *Toboſa*, ſince thy good for- "tune was ſuch, to hold ſubiect and proſtrate to thy will "and deſire ſo valiant and renouned a Knight as is, and "euer ſhall be, *Don-Quixote* of the *Mancha*: who, as all "the world knowes, receiued the order of Knighthood "but yeſterday, and hath deſtroyed to day the greateſt "outrage and wrong that want of reaſon could forme, "or cruelty commit. To day did he take away the whip "out of that pittileſſe enemies hand, which did ſo cruel- "ly ſcourge without occaſion the delicate infant.

In this diſcourſe he aimed to a way which diuided it ſelfe into foure, and preſently theſe thwarting croſſe wayes repreſented themſelues to his imagination, which oft-times held Knights errant in ſuſpence, which way they ſhould take; and that hee might imitate them hee ſtood ſtill a while, and after he had bethought himſelfe well, he let ſlip the raines to *Rozinante*, ſubiecting his will to that of his horſe, who preſently purſued his firſt deſigne, which was to returne home vnto his owne ſtable: and hauing trauelled ſome two miles, *Don. Quixote* diſcouered a great troupe of people, who as it was after knowne, were certaine Merchants of *Toledo*, that rode towards *Murcia* to buy ſilkes: they were ſixe in number, and came with their * *Quitaſoles* or ſhadowes of the Sunne, foure Seruing men a horſe-backe, and three Lackeyes. Scarce had *Don-Quixote* perceiued them, when he ſtraight imagined them to be a new aduenture: and becauſe he would imitate as much as was poſſible the paſſages which he read in his bookes, he repreſented this to himſelfe to be iuſt ſuch an aduenture as hee purpoſed to atchieue.

* *A thing made like a Canopy, and is vſed by Trauellers to keepe away the Sunne.*

Digitized by Google

atchieue. And so with comely gesture and hardinesse, setling himselfe well in the stirrops, he set his Launce into his rest; and imbraced his Target, and placing himselfe in the midst of the way, he stood awayting when those Knights errant should arriue; for now hee iudged and tooke them for such: and when they were so neare as they might heare and see him, he lifted vp his voyce, and "said: Let all the world stand and passe no further, if all "the world will not confesse, that there is not in all the "world a more beautifull damzell then the Empresse of "the *Mancha*, the peereles se *Dulcinea* of *Toboso*. The Merchants stayed at these wordes to behold the maruellous and ridiculous shape of him that spake them, and by his fashion and them ioynd, did incontinently gather his folly and distraction, and notwithstanding would leisurely behold to what tended that confession which he exacted of them; and therefore one of them who was somwhat giuen to gibing, and was withall very discreete, said vnto him, Sir Knight, we doe not know that good Lady of whom you speake; shew her therefore to vs, and if she be so beautiful as you affirme, we will willingly and without any compulsion confesse the truth, which you now demaund of vs. If I did shew her to you, replied *Don-Quixote*, without mattrie were it then for you to acknowledge a truth so notorious? The consequence of mine affairs consists in this, that without beholding her, you doe beleeue, confesse, affirme, sweare and defend it; which if you refuse to performe, I challenge you all to battell, proude and vnreasonable folke, and whether you come one by one (as the order of Knighthood requires) or all at once, as is the custome and dishonourable practise of men of your broode: here will I expect and awaite you all, trusting in the reason which I haue on my side. Sir Knight, replied the Merchant, I request you in all these Princes names, as many as we be here, that to the end we may not burden your consciences, confessing a thing which

which we neuer beheld nor heard, and chiefly being so preiudiciall to the Empresses and Queenes of the Kingdomes of *Alcarria* and *Estremadura*, you will please to shew vs some portraiture of that Lady, although it be no bigger then a graine of Wheate; for by one thread wee may iudge of the whole clew, and we will with this fauor rest secure and satisfied, and you likewise remaine content and appaide. And I doe beleeue moreouer that we are already so inclined to your side, that although her picture shewed her to be blinde of the one eye, and that Vermillion distilled from the other were brimstone, yet we would notwithstanding to please you say in her fauour all that you listed. There drops not infamous Kenell! quoth *Don-Quixote*, all inflamed with choler; there drops not, I say, from her that which thou sayest, but *Amber* and *Ciuet* among bombase; and she is not blinde of an eye, or crooke-backt, but is straighter then a spindle of *Guadarama*: but all of you together shall pay for the great blasphemy thou hast spoken against so immense a beautie, as is that of my Mistresse. And saying so, he abased his Launce against him that had answered with such furie and anger, as if good fortune had not so ordayned it, that *Rozinante* should stumble, and fal in the midst of the Carrier, it had gone very ill with the bolde Merchant. *Rozinante* fell in fine, and his Master reeled ouer a good piece of the field: and though he attempted to arise, yet was he neuer able, he was so encumbred by his Launce, Target, Spurs, Helmet, and his weighty olde armour. And in the meane while that he striued to arise and could not, he cried, flie not cowardly folke, abide base people, abide, for I lie not here through mine owne fault, but through the defect of my horse.

One of the Lackeyes which came in the company, and seemed to be a man of none of the best intentions, hearing the poore ouerthrown Knight speake such insolent words, could not forbeare them, without returning him an

Digitized by Google

an answere on his ribbes: and with that intention approaching to him he tooke his Launce, and after he had broken it in pieces, he gaue *Don-Quixote* so many blows with one of them, that in despite of his armour he threshed him like a sheafe of wheate. His Masters cried to him, commaunding him not to beate him so much, but that he should leaue him: but all would not serue, for the youth was angry, and would not leaue off the play vntill he had auoyded the rest of his choler. And therefore running for the other pieces of the broken Launce, he broke them all on the miserable false Knight, who for all the tempest of blowes that rained on him, did neuer shut his mouth, but threatned heauen and earth, and those * Murderers; for such they seemed to him. The Lackey tyred himselfe at last, and the Merchants followed on their way, carying with them occasion enough of talke of the poore belaboured Knight: who when he saw himselfe alone, turned againe to make tryall whether he might arise; but if hee could not doe it when he was whole and sound, how was it possible he being so bruised and almost destroyed? And yet he accounted himselfe very happy, perswading himselfe that his disgrace was proper and incident to Knights errant, and did attribute all the fault to his horse, and could in no wise get vp, all his body was so * bruised and loaden with blowes.

* *Malandrines.*

* *Brumado.*

CHAP. V.

Wherein is prosecuted the former Narration of our Knights misfortunes.

BVt seeing in effect that he could not stirre himselfe, he resolued to haue recourse to his ordinary remedy, which was to think on some passage of his Histories, & in the instant his folly presented to his memory that of *Valdouinos*, and the Marquesse of

Digitized by Google

of *Mantua*, then when *Carclote* had left him wounded in the mountaine. A History knowne by children, not hidden to young men, much celebrated, yea, and beleeued by many olde men; and is yet for all that no more authenticall, then are *Mahomets* miracles. This History as it seemed to him, was most fit for the traunce wherein hee was, and therefore he began with signes of great paine to tumble vp and downe, and pronounce with a languishing breath the same that they faine the wounded Knight to haue said in the wood:

Where art thou Lady deere! that griev'st not at my smart?
Or thou dost it not know, or thou disloyall art.

And after this manner he did prosecute the olde song vntill these verses that say: O noble Marquesse of *Mantua*, my carnall Lord and vncle. And it befell by chance that at the very same time there past by the place where he lay a man of his owne village, who was his neighbor, and returned after hauing caried a loade of wheate to the mill: who beholding a man stretched on the ground, he came ouer to him, and demaunded what he was, and what was it that caused him to complaine so dolefully? *Don-Quixote* did verily beleeue that it was his vncle the Marquesse of *Mantoua*; and so gaue him no other answere, but only followed on in the repetition of his old Romaunce, wherein he gaue him account of his disgrace, and of the loue the Emperours sonne bore to his Spouse, all in the very same manner that the Ballad recounts it. The labourer remained much astonished, hearing those follies; and taking off his vizard which with the Lackeyes blowes was broken all to pieces, he wiped his face that was full of poulder; and scarce had he done it when he knew him, to whom he said; Master *Quixada*, for so he was probably called when he had his wits, before he left the state of a staide-Yeoman, to become a wandring Knight) who hath vsed you after this manner? But he continued his Romance, answering out of it, to euery

Digitized by Google

uery queſtion that was put to him. Which the good man perceiuing diſarmed him the beſt hee could, to ſee whether hee had any wound, but he could ſee no bloud, or any token on him of hurt. Afterward hee endeuoured to raiſe him from the ground; which hee did at laſt with much adoe; and mounted him on his Aſſe, as a beaſt of eaſieſt cariage. He gathered then together all his armes, and left not behinde as much as the ſplinters of the Launce, and tied them all together vpon *Rozinante*, whom hee tooke by the bridle, and the Aſſe by his halter, and ledde them both in that equipage faire and eaſily towards his village, being very penſatiue to heare the follies that *Don-Quixote* ſpoke. And *Don-Quixote* was no leſſe melancholy, who was ſo beaten and bruiſed, as he could very hardly holde himſelfe vpon the Aſſe; and euer and anon he breathed forth ſuch grieuous ſighes, as he ſeemed to fixe them in heauen; which moued his neighbour to intreat him againe to declare vnto him the cauſe of his griefe. And it ſeemes none other, but that the very Diuell himſelfe did call to his memorie, Hiſtories accommodated to his ſucceſſes. For in that inſtant, wholly forgetting *Valdouinos*, hee remembred the Moore *Abindaraez* then, when the Conſtable of *Antequera Rodericke Narnaez* had taken him, and caried him priſoner to his Caſtle. So that when his neighbour turned againe to aske of him how hee did, and what ailed him, he anſwered the very ſame wordes and ſpeech that Captiue *Abencerraſe* ſaid to *Narnaez*, iuſt as hee had read them in *Diana* of *Montemayor*, where the Hiſtory is written; applying it ſo properly to his purpoſe, that the labourer grew almoſt madde for anger to heare that Machina of follies: by which hee collected that his neighbour was diſtracted, and therefore hee hied as faſt as poſſible hee could to the village, that ſo

hee might free himselfe from the vexation that *Don-Quixotes* idle and prolixe discourse gaue vnto him. At the end whereof the Knight said, *Don Rodericke of Naruaez*, you shall vnderstand that this beautifull *Xarifa*, of whome I spoke, is now the faire *Dulcinea* of *Toboso*, for whom I haue done, I doe, and will doe such famous actes of Knighthood, as euer haue beene, are, and shall be seene in all the world. To this his neighbour answered, doe not you perceiue Sir, sinner that I am, how I am neyther *Don Rodericke de Naruaez*, nor the *Marquesse of Mantua*, but *Peter Alonso* your neighbour; nor are you *Valdouinos*, nor *Abindaraez*, but the honourable Yeoman Master *Quixada*. I know very well who I am quoth *Don-Quixote*, and also I know that I may not onely be those whome I haue named, but also all the twelue Peeres of *Frances*, yea and the nine worthies since mine actes shall surpasse all those that euer they did together, or euery one of them apart.

With these and such other Discourses they arriued at last at their village about Sunne-set; but the labourer awayted vntill it waxed somewhat darke, because folke should not view the Knight so simply mounted. And when he saw his time, he entred into the towne, and went to *Don-Quixotes* house, which hee found full of confusion. There was the Curate and the Barber of the village, both of them *Don-Quixotes* great friends. To whom the olde woman of the house said in a lamentable manner; What doe you thinke Master Licenciate *Pero Perez* (for so the Curate was called) of my Masters misfortune? These sixe dayes, neyther hee, nor his horse haue appeared, nor the Target, Launce, or Armour: vnfortunate woman that I am, I doe suspect, and I am as sure it is true, as that I shall die; how those accursed bookes of Knight-

Digitized by Google

Knighthood which he hath, and is wont to reade ordinarily, haue turned his iudgement; for now I remember that I haue heard him say oftentimes, speaking to himselfe, that hee would become a Knight errant, and goe seeke aduentures throughout the world. Let such bookes bee recommended to *Sathan* and *Barrabas*, which haue destroyed in this sorte the most delicate vnderstanding of all the *Mancha*. His Niese affirmed the same, and did adde, moreouer you shall vnderstand good Master *Nicholas* (for so hight the Barber) that it many times befell my vncle to continue the Lecture of those vnhappy bookes of disuentures two dayes and two nights together. At the ende of which throwing the booke away from him, hee would lay hand on his sword; and would fall a slashing of the walles: and when hee were wearied, hee would say that hee had slaine foure Giants, as great as foure Towers, and the sweate that dropped downe through the labour hee tooke, hee would say was bloud that gushed out of those woundes which he had receiued in the conflict, and then would hee quaffe off a great potte full of colde water, and straight hee did become whole and quiet, saying, that water was a most precious drinke, which the wise man *Esquife*, a great Inchanter or Sorcerer, and his friend had brought vnto him. But I am in the fault of all this, who neuer aduertised you both of mine Vncles rauing, to the end you might haue redrest it, ere it came to these termes, and burnt all those excommunicated bookes; for hee had many that deserued the fire as much as if they were Hereticall. That doe I likewise affirme, quoth Master Curate, and in sooth to morrow shall not passe ouer vs, without making a publique processe against them, and condemne them to bee burned in the fire, that they may not minister

niſter occaſion againe to ſuch as may reade them, to doe that which I feare my good friende hath done.

The labourer and *Don-Quixote* ſtood hearing all that which was ſaid, and then hee perfectly vnderſtood the diſeaſe of his neighbour; and therefore hee began to crie aloude: open the doores to Lord *Valdouinos*, and to the Lord *Marqueſſe of Mantua*, who comes very ſore wounded and hurt, and to the Lord Moore *Abindaraez*, whom the valorous *Rodericke of Narnaez* Conſtable of *Antequera* brings as his priſoner. All the houſholde ran out hearing theſe cries, and ſome knowing their friend; the others their Maſter and Vncle, who had not yet alighted from the Aſſe, becauſe hee was not able, they ranne to embrace him; but he forbad them, ſaying, ſtand ſtill and touch me not, for I returne very ſore wounded and hurt through default of my horſe: carie me to my bedde, and if it be poſſible ſend for the wiſe *Viganda*, that ſhee may cure and looke to my hurts. See in an ill houre (quoth the olde woman ſtraight way) if my heart did not very well foretell me on which foote my Maſter halted: come vp in good time, for wee ſhall knowe how to cure you well enough, without ſending for that *Vrganda* you haue mentioned. Accurſed ſay I once againe, and a hundred times accurſed may thoſe bookes of Knighthood bee which haue brought you to ſuch eſtate. With that they bore him vp to his bedde, and ſearching for his wounds could not finde any; and then he ſaid all was but bruiſing, by reaſon of a great fall hee had with his horſe *Rozinante*, as he fought with ten Giants, the moſt vnmeaſurable and boldeſt that might bee found in a great part of the earth. Hearken, quoth the Curate, we haue alſo Giants in the dance; by mine honeſty I will burne them all before to morrow at night. Then did they aske a thouſand queſtions of *Don-Quixote*,

Digitized by Google

but hee would answere to none of them; and onely requested them to giue him some meate, and suffer him to sleepe, seeing rest was most behouefull for him. All which was done, and the Curate informed himselfe at large of the labouring man: in what sort hee had found *Don-Quixote*; which hee recounted to him, and also the follies hee said, both at his finding and bringing to towne; which did kindle more earnestly the Licenciats desire to doe what he had resolued the next day; which was to call his friend the Barber M. *Nicholas*, with whom he came to *Don-Quixotes* house.

CHAP. VI.

Of the pleasant and curious search made by the Curate and the Barber, of Don-Quixotes *Library.*

WHo slept yet soundly. The Curate sought for the keyes of the Library, the onely authors of his harme: which the Gentlem. ns Niese gaue vnto him very willingly. All of them entred into it, and among the rest the olde woman, wherein they found more then a hundred great volumes, and those very well bound, beside the small ones. And as soone as the olde woman had seene them, she departed very hastily out of the chamber, and eftsoones returned with as great speed, with a holy water pot and a sprinckler in her hand, and said, Hold M. Licenciat and sprinckle this chamber all about, least there should lurke in it some one Inchanter of the many which these bookes containe, and bewitch vs in reuiling of the many paines wee meane to inflict on these bookes, by banishing them out of this world. The simplicity of the good olde woman

Digitized by Google

woman, cauſed the Licentiat to laugh: who commanded the Barber to fetch him downe the bookes from their ſhelues, one by one, that he might peruſe their arguments; for it might happen ſome to be found, which in no ſort deſerued to be chaſtiſed with fire. No, replyed the Nieſe, no, you ought not to pardon any of them, ſeeing they haue all beene offendors; it is better you throw them all into the baſe court, and there make a pile of them, and then ſet them a fire; if not, they may be carried into the yard, and there make a bon-fire of them, and the ſmoake will offend no body. The olde woman ſaid as much, both of them thirſted ſo much for the death of theſe innocents, but the Curate would not condiſcend thereto, vntill he had firſt read the titles at the leaſt of euerie booke.

The firſt that Maſter *Nicholas* put into his hands, was that of *Amadis* of *Gaule*; which the Curate peruſing a while, this comes not to me firſt of all others, without ſome myſterie: for as I haue heard tolde, this is the firſt booke of Knighthood that euer was printed in *Spaine*, and all the others haue had their beginning and originall from this; and therefore me thinkes that we muſt condemne him to the fire, without all remiſſion, as the *Dogmatizer* and head of ſo badde a ſect. Not ſo, fie quoth the Barber, for I haue heard that it is the very beſt contriued booke of all thoſe of that kinde, and therefore he is to be pardoned as the onely complete one of his profeſſion. That is true, replied the Curate, and for that reaſon we doe giue him his life for this time. Let vs ſee that other which lies next vnto him. It is, quoth the Barber, *The* * *Aduentures of Splandian Amadis of Gaules* lawfully begotten ſonne: Yet on mine honeſty, replyed the Curate, his fathers goodneſſe ſhall nothing auaile him, take this booke old Maſters, and opening the window throw it downe into the yard, and let it lay the foundation of our heape for the fire we meane to make. She did what

* *Las Sergas.* pag. 73.

Digitized by Google

what was commaunded with great alacrity, and so the good *Splandian* fledde into the yard, to expect with all patience the fire which he was threatned to abide. Forward, quoth the Curate. This that comes now, said the Barber, is *Amadis of Greece*, and as I coniecture all those that lie on this side, are of the same linage of *Amadis*. Then let them go all to the yard, quoth the Curate, in exchange of burning Queene *Pintiquinestra*, and the sheepheard *Darinel*, with his Eglogues, and the subtile and intricate Discourses of the Author, which are able to intangle the father that ingendred me, if he went in forme of a Knight errant. I am of the same opinion, quoth the Barber, and I also said the Niese. Then since it is so, quoth the olde wife, let them come, and to the yard with them all. They were rendred all vp vnto her, which were many in number: wherefore to saue a labour of going vp and downe the staires, she threw them out at the window.

What bundle is that, quoth the Curate? This is, answered Master *Nicholas*, *Don Olinante of Laura*. The author of that booke, quoth the Curate, composed likewise *The Garden of flowres*, & in good sooth I can scarce resolue which of the two workes is truest, or to speake better, is lesse lying: onely this much I can determine; that this must goe to the yard, being a booke fooliſh and arrogant. This that followes is *Florismarte* of *Hircania*, quoth the Barber. Is Lord *Florismarte* there? then replied the Curate, then by mine honesty hee shall briefly make his arrest in the yard, in despite of his wonderfull birth and famous aduentures; for the drouth and harshnesse of his stile deserues no greater fauour. To the yard with him, and this other, (Good Masters) with a very good will Sir, quoth olde *Mumpsimus*; and straightway did execute his commaundement with no small gladnesse. This is Sir *Platyr* (quoth the Barber). It is an ancient booke, replyed the Curate, wherein I finde nothing meriting pardon, let him without any replie keepe company with the rest.

Forthwith it was done. Then was another book opened, and they saw the title thereof to be *The Knight of the Crosse*. For the holy title which this booke beareth, quoth the Curate, his ignorance might be pardoned: but it is a common saying: *The Diuell lurkes behinde the Crosse*: wherefore let it goe to the fire. The Barber taking another booke, said: this is *The Mirrour of Knighthood*. I know his Worship well, quoth the Curate. There goes among those bookes I see the *Lord Raynald of Montalban* with his friends and companions, all of them greater theeues then * *Cacus*, and the twelue Peeres of Fraunce, with the true Historiographer *Turpin*. I am in truth about to condemne them only to exile, for as much as they containe some part of the famous Poet *Matthew Boyardo* his inuention. Out of which the Christian Poet *Lodouicke Arioſto* did likewise weaue his worke, which if I can find among these, and that hee speakes not his owne natiue tongue, I'le vse him with no respect, but if he talke in his owne language, I will put him for honours sake on my head. If that be so quoth the Barber, I haue him at home in the Italian, but cannot vnderstand him. Neither were it good you should vnderstand him, replied the Curate, and here we would willingly haue excused the good Captaine that translated it into Spanish from that labour, or bringing it into *Spaine* if it had pleased him'e'se. For he hath depriued it of much naturall worth in the translation; a fault incident to all those that presume to translate Verses out of one language into another: for though they imploy all their industry and wit therein, they can neuer arriue to the height of that Primitiue conceit, which they bring with them in their first birth. I say therefore that this booke, and all the others that may be found in this Library to treate of French affaires be cast and depositted in some drie Vault, vntill we may determine with more deliberation what we should doe with them: alwayes excepting *Bernardo del Carpio*, which

* *A thiefe that vsed to steale cattell and pull them backeward by the tayles, that none might trace them.*

Digitized by Google

which must be there among the rest, and another called *Ronceſualles*; for these two comming to my handes, shall be rendred vp to those of the old guardian, and from hers into the fires, without any remission. All which was confirmed by the Barber, who did ratifie his sentence, holding it for good and discreete, because he knew the Curate to be so vertuous a man, and so great a friend of the truth, as he would say nothing contrary to it for all the goods of the world.

And then opening another booke, he saw it was *Palmerin de Oliua*, neere vnto which stood another, intituled *Palmerin of England*: which the Licenciat perceiuing, said, let *Oliua* be presently rent in pieces, and burned in such sort, that euen the very ashes thereof may not be found: and let *Palmerin of England* be preserued, as a thing rarely delectable, and let such another boxe as that which *Alexander* found among *Darius* spoyles, and deputed to keepe *Homers* workes, be made for it: for gossip this booke hath sufficient authority for two reasons; the first, because of it selfe it is very good and excellently contriued: the other for as much as the report runnes, that a certain discreete King of *Portingal* was the author thereof. All the aduentures of the Castle of *Miraguarda*, are excellent and artificiall. The discourses very cleere and courtly, obseruing euermore a *decorum* in him that speakes, with great propriety and conceit, therefore I say Master *Nicholas*, if you thinke good, this and *Amadis de Gaule* may be preserued from the fire: and let all the rest without further search or regard perish. In the diuels name do not so, gentle gossip (replyed the Barber) for this which I hold now in my hand is the famous *Don Bellianis*: What he? quoth the Curate, the second, third, & fourth part thereof haue great need of some *Ruybarbe* to purge his excessiue choler, and we must moreouer take out of him all that of the *Castell of Fame*, and other impertinencies of more consequence. Therefore wee giue them a

terminus

terminus Vltramarinus, and as they ſhall be corrected, ſo will we vſe mercy or iuſtice towards them: and in the meane ſpace goſſip, you may keepe them at your houſe, but permit no man to reade them. I am pleaſed, quoth the Barber, and being vnwilling to tire himſelfe any more by reading of Titles, he bad the olde woman to take all the great volumes, and throw them into the yard; the wordes were not ſpoken to a Mome or deafe perſon, but to one that had more deſire to burne them then to weaue a piece of linnen, were it neuer ſo great and fine. And therefore taking eight of them together, ſhe threw them all out of the window, and returning the ſecond time, thinking to carie away a great many at once, one of them fell at the Barbers feete, who deſirous to know the title, ſaw that it was *The Hiſtory of the famous Knight Tirante the white*. Good God, quoth the Curate with a loud voyce, is *Tirante the white* here? Giue me it goſſip, for I make account to haue found in it a Treaſure of delight, and a copious Mine of paſtime. Here is *Don Quireleiſon of Montalban*, a valiant Knight, and his brother *Thomas of Montalban*, and the Knight *Fonſeca*, and the combat which the valiant *Detriante* fought with *Alano*, and the witty conceits of the damzell *Plazerdemiuida*, with the loue and guiles of the widow *Repoſada*, and of the Empreſſe enamoured on her Squire *Ipolito*. I ſay vnto you goſſip, that this booke is for the ſtile, one of the beſt of the world: in it Knights doe eate and drinke and ſleepe, and die in their beds naturally, and make their teſtaments before their death: with many other things, which all other bookes of this ſubiect doe want, yet notwithſtanding, if I might be judge, the authour thereof deſerued, becauſe he purpoſely penned and writ ſo many follies, to be ſent to the Gallies for all the dayes of his life. Carie it home and read it, and you ſhall ſee all that I haue ſaid thereof to be true. I beleeue it very well, quoth the Barber. But what ſhall we doe with theſe little bookes

Digitized by Google

that

that remaine? These as I take, said the Curate are not bookes of Knighthood, but of Poetry; and opening one, he perceiued it was *The Diana of Montemayor*, and beleeuing that all the rest were of that stampe, he said, these deserue not to be burned with the rest, for they haue not, nor can do so much hurt as bookes of Knighthood, being all of them works full of vnderstanding and conceits, and doe not preiudice any other. O good Sir, quoth *Don-Quixote* his Niese, your reuerence shal likewise do wel to haue them also burned, least that mine vncle after he be cured of his Knightly disease, may fall by reading of these in an humour of becomming a Shepheard, and so wander through the woods and fieldes, singing of Roundelayes, and playing on a Croude. And what is more; dangerous then to become a Poet, which is as some say, an incurable and infectious disease. This maiden saies true, quoth the Curate, & it will not be amisse to remoue this stumbling block and occasion out of our friends way: and since we begin with the *Diana of Montemayor*, I am of opinion that it be not burned, but onely that all that which treates of the wise *Felicia*, and of the inchanted water be taken away, and also all the longer verses, and let him remaine with his proses, and the honour of being the best of that kinde. This that followes, quoth the Barber is the *Diana* called the second, written by him of *Salamanca*, & this other is of the same name, whose author is *Gil Polo*. Let that of *Salamanca* answered M. Parson, augment the number of the condemned in the yard, & that of *Gil Polo* be kept as charily, as if it were *Apollo* his own work: & go forward speedily good gossip, for it grows late. This booke, quoth the Barber, opening of another, is *The twelue bookes of the fortunes of loue*, written by *Anthony Lofraso*, the *Sardinicall* Poet. By the holy Orders which I haue receiued, quoth the Curate, since *Apollo* was *Apollo*, and the *Muses Muses*, and *Poets Poets*, was neuer written so delightfull and extrauagant a worke as this; and that

Digitized by Google

that in his way and vaine, it is the onely one of all the bookes that haue euer iſſued of that kinde to view the light of the world: and he that hath not read it may make account that he hath neuer read matter of delight. Giue it to me goſſip, for I doe prize more the finding of it, then I would the gift of a Caſſocke of the beſt Sattin of *Florence*. And ſo with great ioy he laid it aſide, and the Barber proſecuted, ſaying, theſe that follow be, *The ſheepheard of Iberia*: *The Nimphes of Enares*, and the *Vndeceiuing of Iealouſies*. Then there's no more to be done, but to deliuer them vp to the ſecular arme of the olde wife, and doe not demaund the reaſon, for that were neuer to make an end. This that comes is *The Sheepheard of Filida*. That is not a Sheepheard, quoth the Curate, but a very complete Courtier, let it be reſerued as a precious jewell. This greate one that followes, is, ſaid the Barber, intituled *The treaſure of diuers Poems*. If they had not bin ſo many, replied the Curate, they would haue been more eſteemed. It is neceſſary that this booke be carded and purged of certaine baſe things, that lurke among his high conceits. Let him be kept, both becauſe the author is my very great friend, and in regard of other more Heroicall and loftie workes he hath written. This is, ſaid the Barber, *The ditty booke of Lopez Maldonado*. The author of that worke is likewiſe my great friend, replied the Parſon, and his lines pronounced by himſelfe doe aduiſe the hearers, and ſuch is the ſweetneſſe of his voyce when hee ſings them, as it doth inchant the eare. He is ſomewhat prolix in his *Eglogues*, but that which is good, is neuer ſuperfluous: let him be kept among the choyſeſt. But what booke is that, which lies next vnto him? *The Galatea of Michel Ceruantes* quoth the Barber. That *Ceruantes*, ſaid the Curate is mine olde acquaintance this many a yeare. And I know he is more practiſed in misfortunes then in verſes. His booke hath ſome good inuention in it, hee intends and propounds ſomwhat, but concludes nothing:

Digitized by Google

there-

therefore we must expect the second part, which he hath promised, perhaps his amendement may obtaine him a generall remission, which vntill now is denied him, and whilst we expect the sight of his second worke, keep this part closely imprisoned in your lodging. I am very well content to doe so good gossip, said the Barber, and here there come three together, *The Awracana of Don Alonso de Ercilla*, *The Austriada of Iohn Ruffo*, one of the Magistrates of *Cordona*, and *The Monserrato of Christopher de Virues a Valentian* Poet. All these three bookes, quoth the Curate are the best that are written in heroicall verse in the *Castilian* tongue, and may compare with the most famous of *Italy*. Reserue them as the richest pawnes that *Spaine* enioyeth of Poetry. The Curate with this grew wearie to see so many bookes, and so hee would haue all the rest burned at all aduentures. But the Barber ere the sentence was giuen, had opened by chance one intituled *The Teares of Angelica*. I would haue shed those teares my selfe, said the Curate, if I had wittingly caused such a booke to be burned; for the authour thereof was one of the most famous Poets of the world, not onely of *Spaine*: and was most happy in the translation of certaine fables of *Ouid*.

CHAP. VII.

Of the second departure which our good Knight Don-Quixote *made from his house to seeke aduentures.*

WHile they were thus busied, *Don Quixote* began to crie aloude, saying, Heere heere valorous Knights, heere it is needfull that you shew the force of your valiant armes; for the Courtiers begin to beare away the best of the Tourney. The folke repayring to this rumour

mour and noyſe, was an occaſion, that any farther ſpeech and viſitation of the bookes was omitted, and therefore it is to be ſuſpected, that *The Carolea* and *Lion of Spaine*, with the actes of the Emperour *Charles the fift*, written by *Don Luis de Auila* were burned, without being euer ſeene or heard; and perhaps if the Curate had ſeene them, they ſhould not haue paſt vnder ſo rigorous a ſentence. When they all arriued to *Don-Quixote* his chamber, he was riſen already out of his bedde, and continued ſtil his out-cries, cutting and ſlaſhing on euery ſide, being as broadly awake, as if he neuer had ſlept. Wherfore taking him in their armes, they returned him by maine force into his bedde, and after he was ſomewhat quiet and ſetled, he ſaid, turning himſelfe to the Curate. In good ſooth L. Archbiſhop *Turpin*, it is a great diſhonor to vs that are called the twelue Peeres, to permit the Knights of the Court to beare thus away the glory of the Tournay without more adoe; ſeeing that we the aduenturers haue gained the prize thereof the three formoſt dayes. Hold your peace good goſſip, quoth the Curate, for fortune may be pleaſed to change the ſucceſſe, and what is loſt to day, may be wonne againe to morrow: Looke you to your health for the preſent, for you ſeeme at leaſt to be very much tyred, if beſides you be not ſore wounded. Wounded, no, quoth *Don-Quixote*, but doubtleſſe I am ſomewhat bruiſed: for that baſtard *Don Rowland* hath beaten me to pouder with the ſtocke of an Oake-tree, and all for enuy, becauſe he ſees that I onely dare oppoſe my ſelfe to his valour: but let me be neuer againe called *Raynold of Montealban*, if he pay not deerely for it, as ſoone as I riſe from this bedde in deſpite of all his inchantment. But I pray you call for my breakefaſt, for I know it will doe me much good, and leaue the reuenge of this wrong to my charge. Preſently meat was brought, and after he had eaten he fell a ſleepe, and they remained aſtoniſhed at his wonderfull madneſſe. That night the old woman burned

all

all the bookes that she found in the house and yard, and some there were burned as that deserued for their worthinesse to be kept vp in euerlasting Treasuries, if their fortunes and the lazinesse of the visiters had permitted it. And so the prouerbe was verified in them, That the Iust pay es sometimes for Sinners. One of the remedies which the Curate and Barber prescribed for that present, to help their friends disease, was, that they should change his chamber, and damme vp his study, to the end that when he arose, he might not finde them: for perhaps by remouing the cause, they might also take away the effects: and moreouer they bad them to say, that a certaine inchanter had caried them away Study and all; which deuice was presently put in practise. And within two dayes after *Don-Quixote* got vp, and the first thing he did, was to go and visite his bookes; and seeing he could not finde the chamber in the same place, where he had left it, hee went vp and downe to finde it. Sometimes he came to the place where the doore stood, and felt it with his hands, and then would turne his eyes vp and downe, heere and there to seeke it, without speaking a word. But at last after deliberation, he asked of the olde woman the way to his bookes? Shee as one well schooled before what shee should answere, said, What Study, or what nothing is this you looke for? There is now no more Study nor bookes in this house; for the very Diuell himselfe caried all away with him. It was not the Diuell said his Niese, but an Inchanter that came here one night vpon a cloude, the day after you departed from hence; and alighting downe from a Serpent vpon which he rode, he entred into the Studie, and what he did therein I know not; and within a while after he fledde out at the roofe of the house, and left all the house full of smoake: and when we accorded to see what he had done, we could neyther see booke or Studie: only this much the olde woman. And I do remember very well, that the naughty olde man at his departure,

Digitized by Google

parture ſaid, with a loude voyce, that he for hidden enmitie that he bore to the Lord of thoſe bookes had done all the harme to the horſe that they might perceiue when he were departed, and added that hee was named the wiſe *Munaton Freſton*, you would haue ſaid, quoth *Don-Quixote*. I know not quoth the olde woman, whether he hight *Freſtron* or *Friton*, but well I wot, that his name ended with *Ton*. That is true quoth *Don-Quioxte*, and he is a very wiſe Inchanter, and my great aduerſary, and lookes on me with a ſiniſter eye, for he knows by his arte and ſcience, that I ſhal in time fight a ſingle combat with a Knight his very great friend, and ouercome him in battell without being able to be by him aſſiſted, and therfore he labours to doe me all the hurt he may; and I haue ſent him word that he ſtriues in vaine to diuert or ſhunne that which is by heauen already decreed. Who doubts of that quoth his Nieſe, but I pray you good vncle ſay, what need haue you to thruſt your ſelfe into theſe difficulties & brabbles? were it not better to reſt you quietly in your owne houſe, then to wander through the world, ſearching bread of * blaſted corne? Without once conſidering how many there goe to ſeeke for wooll, that returne againe ſhorne themſelues. O Nieſe, quoth *Don-Quixote*, how ill doſt thou vnderſtand the matter? before I permit my ſelfe to be ſhorne, I will pill and plucke away the beards of as many as ſhall dare or imagine to touch but a haire onely of me. To theſe words the woman would make no replie, becauſe they ſaw his choler increaſe.

* *Buſcardo part de Traſtrigo p. 47.*

Fifteene dayes he remained quietly at home, without giuing any argument of ſeconding his former vanities: in which time paſt many pleaſant encounters betweene him & his two goſſips, the Curate and Barber, vpon that point which he defended, to wit, that the world needed nothing ſo much as Knights errant, and that the erraticall Knighthood ought to be againe renewed therein. Maſter Parſon would contradict him ſomtimes, and other times

Digitized by Google

yeelde

yeeld vnto that he vrged; for had they not obserued that manner of proceeding, it were impossible to bring him to any conformity. In this space *Don-Quixote* dealt with a certaine labourer his neighbour, an honest man (if the title of honesty may be giuen to the poore) but one of a very shallow wit; in resolution he said so much to him, and perswaded him so earnestly, and made him so large promises, as the poore fellow determined to goe away with him, and serue him as his Squire. *Don-Quixote* among many other things bad him to dispose himselfe willingly to depart with him, for now and then such an aduenture might present it selfe, that in as short space as one would take vp a couple of strawes, an Island might be won, and he be left as gouernour thereof. With these and such like promises *Sancho Panca*, for so he was called, left his wife and children, and agreed to be his Squire. Afterward *Don-Quixote* began to cast plots how to come by some money, which he atchieued by selling one thing, pawning another, and turning all vpside downe. At last he got a prettie summe, and accommodating himselfe with a buckler which he had borrowed of a friend, and patching vp his broken Beauer again as wel as he could, he aduertised his Squire *Sancho* of the day and houre wherein he meant to depart, that hee might likewise furnish himselfe with that which he thought needfull; but aboue all things he charged him to prouide himselfe of a Wallet; which he promised to performe, and said that he meant also to carie a very good Asse, which he had of his owne, because he was not wont to trauell much a foot. In that of the Asse *Don-Quixote* stood a while pensiue, calling to minde whether euer he had read, that any Knight errant carried his Squire Assisht mounted, but he could not remember any authority for it: yet notwithstanding he resolued that he might bring his beast, with intention to accommodate him more honourably when occasion were offered, by dismounting the first discurteous

Digitized by Google

curteous Knight they met from his horse, and giuing it to his Squire, he also furnished himselfe with shirts, and as many other things as hee might, according vnto the Inkeepers aduice. All which being finished, *Sancho Panca* without bidding his wife or children farewell; or *Don-Quixote* his Niese and olde seruant, they both departed one night out of the village vnknowne to any person liuing; and they trauelled so farre that night, as they were sure in the morning not to be found, although they were pursued. *Sancho Panca* rode on his beast like a *Patriarke* with his Wallet and Bottle, and a maruellous longing to see himselfe gouernour of the Iland which his master had promised vnto him.

Don-Quixote tooke by chance the same verycourse & way that he had done in his first voyage through the field of *Montiel*, wherein he trauelled then with lesse vexation then the first; for by reason that it was early, and the Sunne beames stroke not directly downe, but athwart, the heat did not trouble them much. And *Sancho Panca* seeing the oportunity good, said to his Master, I pray you haue care good Sir Knight, that you forget not that gouernment of the Iland which you haue promised me, for I shall be able to gouerne it were it neuer so great. To "which *Don-Quixote* replied, You must vnderstand "friend *Sancho Panca* that it was a custome very much "vsed by auncient Knights errant, to make their Squires "gouernours of the Islands and Kingdomes that they "conquered, and I am resolued that so good a custome "shall neuer be abolished by me, but rather I will passe "and exceed them therein: for they sometimes, and as I "take it, did for the greater part expect vntill their "Squires waxed aged, and after they were cloyed with "seruice, and had suffered many bad dayes and worse "nights, then did they bestow vpon them some title of "an Earle, or at least of a * Marqueste of some valley or "Prouince, of more or lesse account. But if thou liuest, and

* *The title of a Marqueste is lesse then that of an Earle in Spaine.*

Digitized by Google

and I withall, it may happen that I might conquer such a Kingdome within sixe dayes, that hath other Kingdomes adherent to it, which would fall out as iust as it were cast in a mould for thy purpose, whom I would crowne presently King of one of them. And doe not account this to be any great matter, for things and chances doe happen to such Knights aduenturers as I am, by so vnexpected and wonderfull wayes and meanes as I might giue thee very easily a great deale more then I promised. After that maner said *Sancho Panca*, if I were a King through some miracle of those which you say, then should *Ioan Gutierez* my wife become a Queene, and my children Princes. Who doubts of that, said *Don-Quixote*? That doe I, replied *Sancho Panca*, for I am fully perswaded, that although *God* would raine Kingdomes downe vpon the earth, none of them would sit well on *Mary Gutierez* her head. For Sir, you must vnderstand that shee's not worth a Dodkin for a Queene. To be a Counteſſe would agree with her better, and yet I pray God shee be able to discharge that calling. Commend thou the matter to God, quoth *Don-Quixote*, that hee may giue her that which is most conuenient for her. But do not thou abase thy minde so much, as to content thy selfe with lesse then at least to be a Vice-Roy. I will not good Sir, quoth *Sancho*, especially seeing I haue so worthy a Lord and Master as your selfe, who knowes how to giue me all that may turne to my benefit, and that I shall be able to discharge in good sort.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. VIII.

Of the good ſucceſſe Don Quixote *had, in the dreadfull and neuer imagined aduenture of the Windemils, with other accidents worthy to be recorded.*

AS thus they diſcourſed, they diſcouered ſome thirty or forty Windemils, that are in that field: and as ſoone as *Don-Quixote* eſpied them he ſaid to his Squire; Fortune doth addreſſe our affaires better then wee our ſelues could deſire; for behold there, friend *Sancho Panca*, how there appeares thirty or forty monſtrous Giants, with whom I meane to fight, and depriue them all of their liues; with whoſe ſpoyles we will begin to be rich; for this is a good warre, and a great ſeruice vnto God, to take away ſo bad a ſeede from the face of the earth. What Giants? quoth *Sancho Panca*. Thoſe that thou ſeeſt there, quoth his Lorde, with the long armes: and ſome there are of that race, whoſe armes are almoſt two leagues long. I pray you vnderſtand, quoth *Sancho Panca*, that thoſe which appeare there, are no Giants but Windemils: and that which ſeemes in them to be armes, are their Sayles, that are ſwinged about by the Winde, doe alſo make the Mill goe. It ſeemes well, quoth *Don-Quixote*, that thou art not yet acquainted with matter of aduentures: they are Giants, and if thou beeſt a feard, goe aſide and pray whilſt I enter into cruell and vnequall battell with them. And ſaying ſo, he ſpurd his horſe *Rozinante*, without taking heed to his Squire *Sanchos* cryes, aduertiſing him how they were doubtleſly Windemils that he did aſſault, and no Giants; but he went ſo fully perſwaded that they were Giants, as he neither heard his Squires out-cries, nor did diſcerne what they were, although he drew very neere to them, but rather

Digitized by Google

ther ſaid as loude as he could: Flie not ye cowards and vile creatures, for it is onely one Knight that aſſaults you. With this the Winde increaſed, and the Mill Sailes began to turn about; which *Don-Quixote* eſpying, ſaid, although thou mouedſt more armes then the Giant *Briareo*, thou ſhalt ſtoope to me; and after ſaying this, and commending himſelfe moſt deuoutly to his Lady *Dulcinea*, deſiring her to ſuccour him in that trance, couering himſelfe well with his buckler, and ſetting his Launce on his reſt, he ſpurred on *Rozinante*, and encountred with the firſt Mill that was before him, and ſtriking his Lance into the Saile, the winde ſwinged it about with ſuch furie, that it broke his Launce into ſhiuers, carrying him and his horſe after it, and finally tumbled him a good way off from it on the field in very euill plight. *Sancho Panca* repayred preſently to ſuccour him as faſt as his Aſſe could driue: and when he arriued, he found him not able to ſtirre, hee had gotten ſuch a cruſh with *Rozinante*. * Good God! quoth *Sancho*, did I not foretell vnto you that you ſhould looke well what you did, for they were none other then Windemils, nor could any thinke otherwiſe, vnleſſe hee had alſo Windemils in his braines. Peace *Sancho*, quoth *Don-Quixote*, for matters of warre are more ſubiect then any other thing to continuall change: how much more ſeeing I doe verily perſwade my ſelfe, that the wiſe *Freſton* who robbed my Studie and bookes, hath transformed theſe *Giants* into Mils, to depriue me of the glory of the victory; ſuch is the enmity hee beares towards me. But yet in fine, all his bad arts ſhall but little preuaile againſt the goodneſſe of my ſword. God grant it, as he may, ſaid *Sancho Panca*, and then helpt him to ariſe, and preſently he mounted on *Rozinante*, who was * halfe ſhoulderpitcht by rough encounter; and diſcourſing vpon that aduenture, they followed on the way which guided towards the paſſage or gate of *Lapice*, for there as *Don Quixote* auouched, it was not poſ-

* *This word* (loue) *will haue no grace in the worke, ſeeing the actions are preſumed tobe Chriſtian, although otherwiſe diſtracted in minde, as was* Don-Quixote.

* *Medio ſpaldado.* *A paſſage through the mountaines.*

poſſible, but to finde many aduentures, becauſe it was a through-fare much frequented, & yet he affirmed that he went very much grieued becauſe he wanted a Lance, and telling it to his Squire he ſaid, I remember how I haue read that a certaine Spaniſh Knight called *Diego Peres* of *Vargas*, hauing broken his ſword in a battaile, tore off a great branch, or ſtock from an Oak tree, & did ſuch maruailes with it that day, and battered ſo many Moores, as he remained with the ſurname of *Machuca*, which ſignifies a ſtampe, and as well he, as all his progenie were euer after that day called *Vargas* and *Machuca*, I tell thee this, becauſe I meane to teare another branch, ſuch, or as good at leaſt as that, from the firſt Oake, we ſhall encounter, and I meane to atchieue ſuch aduentures therwithall, as thou wilt account thy ſelfe fortunate, for hauing merited to behold them, and be a witneſſe of things almoſt incredible. In Gods name quoth *Sancho*, I doe beleeue euery word you ſaid: but I pray you ſit right in your ſaddle, for you ride ſideling which proceeds as I ſuppoſe of the bruiſing you got by your fall, thou ſayeſt true quoth *Don Quixote*, and if I doe not complaine of the griefe, the reaſon is, becauſe Knights errant vſe not to complaine of any wound, although their guts did iſſue out thereof. If it be ſo (quoth *Sancho*) I know not what to ſay, but God knowes that I would be glad to heare you to complaine when any thing grieues you. Of my ſelfe I dare affirme, that I muſt cõplaine of the leaſt griefe that I haue, if it be not likewiſe meant that the Squires of Knights errants muſt not complaine of any harme. *Don Quixote* could not refraine laughter, hearing the ſimplicitie of his Squire; and after ſhewed vnto him that he might lawfully complaine both when he pleaſed, & as much as he liſted, with deſire, or without it, for he had neuer yet red any thing to the contrary, in the order of Knighthood. Then *Sancho* ſaid vnto him, that it was dinner time, to whom he anſwered that he needed no repaſt, but if he had will

Digitized by Google

to

to eate, he might beginne when he pleased, *Sancho* hauing obtained his licence, did accommodate himselfe on his Asse backe, the best he might, taking out of his wallet some belly munition, he rode after his Master truailing and eating at once, and that with great leasure, and euer anone he lifted vp his bottle with such pleasure, as the best fed Tapster of *Malaga* might enuy his state, and whilst he rode multiplying of quaffes in that manner, he neuer remembred any of the promises his Master had made him, nor did he holde the fetch of aduentures to be a labour, but rather a great recreation and ease, were they neuer so dangerous. In conclusion they past ouer that night vnder certaine trees, from one of which *Don Quixote* tore a withered branch, which might serue him in some sort for a lance, and therfore he set thereon the yron of his owne, which he had reserued when it was broken. All that night *Don Quixote* slept not one winke, but thought vpon his Ladie *Dulcinea* that he might conforme himself to what he had read in his bookes of aduentures, when knights passed ouer many nights without sleepe in forrests and fields, onely intertained by the memory of their Maistresses: but *Sancho* spent not his time so vainely, for hauing his stomacke well stuffed, and that not with *Succorie* water, he carried smoothly away the whole night in one sleepe: and if his Master had not called him vp, neither the sunne-beames which strucke on his visage, nor the melodie of the birds which were many, and did cheerfully welcome the approach of the new day, could haue bene able to awake him, at his arriuing he gaue one assay to the bottle, which he found to bee somewhat more weake then it was the night before, whereat his heart was somewhat grieued, for he mistrusted that they tooke not a course to remedy that defect so soone as he wished: nor could *Don-Quixote* breake his fast, who, as we haue said meant onely to sustaine himselfe with pleasant remembrances. Then did they returne to their commenced

Digitized by Google

way towards the Port of *Lapice*, which they diſcouered about three of the clocke in the after-noone: heere (ſaid *Don-Quixote*) as ſoone as he kend it, may we (friend *Sancho*) thruſt our hands vp to the very elbows in that, which is called aduentures. But obſerue well this Caueat which I ſhall giue thee, that although thou ſeeſt me in the greateſt dangers of the world, thou muſt not ſet hand to thy ſword in my defence, if thou doſt not ſee that thoſe which aſſault me be baſe and vile vulgar people; for in ſuch a caſe thou maiſt aſſiſt me. Marry if they be Knights, thou maiſt not doe ſo in any wiſe, nor is it permitted by the lawes of armes that thou maiſt helpe me, vntill thou beeſt likewiſe dubd Knight thy ſelfe. I doe aſſure you Sir, quoth *Sancho*, that herein you ſhal be moſt punctually obeyed: and therefore chiefly, in reſpect that I am of mine owne nature a quiet and peaceable man, and a mortall enemy of thruſting my ſelfe into ſtirres or quarrels: yet is it true that touching the defence of mine owne perſon, I wil not be altogether ſo obſeruant of thoſe lawes, ſeeing that both Diuine and Humane allow euery man to defend himſelfe, from any one that would wrong him. I ſay no leſſe, anſwered *Don-Quixote*, but in this of ayding me againſt any Knight, thou muſt ſet bounds to thy naturall impulſes. I ſay that I will doe ſo, quoth *Sancho*, and I will obſerue this commandement as punctually, as that of keeping holy the Saboth day.

Whilſt thus they reaſoned, there appeared in the way two Monkes of S. *Benets* order, mounted on two *Dromedaries*; for the *Mules* whereon they rode were but little leſſe. They wore masks with Spectacles in them, to keepe away the duſt from their faces, and each of them beſides bore their Vmbriiles, after them came a Coach, and foure or fiue a horſe-backe accompanying it, and two Lackeyes that ranne hard by it. There came therein, as it was after knowne, a certaine *Biſcaine* Lady, which trauelled towards *Siuil*, where her husband ſoiourned at the preſent

preſent, and was going to the *Indies*, with an honourable charge: the Monkes rode not with her, although they trauelled the ſame way. Scarce had *Don-Quixote* perceiued them, when he ſaid to his Squire, either I am deceiued or elſe this will proue the moſt famous aduenture, that euer hath beene ſeene. For theſe two great blacke bulkes which appeare there, are queſtionleſſe Inchanters that ſteale or carrie away perforce ſome Princeſſe in that Coach; and therefore I muſt with all my power vndoe that wrong. This will be worſe then the aduenture of the Windemils, quoth *Sancho*. Doe not you ſee Sir, that thoſe are Fryers of S. *Benets* Order? and the Coach can be none other, then of ſome trauellers. Therefore liſten to mine aduice, and ſee well what you doe, leaſt that the diuell doe deceiue you. I haue ſaid already to the *Sancho*, that thou art very ignorant in matter of aduentures. What I ſay is true, as now thou ſhalt ſee: and ſaying ſo, he ſpurd on his horſe, and placed himſelfe iuſt in the midſt of the way, by which the Friars came, and when they approched ſo neere as he ſuppoſed they might heare him, hee "ſaid with a loude voyce: Diuelliſh and wicked people, "leaue preſently thoſe high Princeſſes which you vio-"lently carie away with you in that Coach, or if you will "not prepare your ſelues to receiue ſuddaine death, as a "iuſt puniſhment of your bad workes. The Friers held their horſes, and were amazed both at the ſhape and words of *Don-Quixote*. To whom they anſwered, Sir Knight we are neither diuelliſh nor wicked, but religious men of S. *Benets* Order, that trauell about our affaires, and we know not whether, or no, there comes any Princeſſes forced in this Coach. With me faire wordes take no effect, quoth *Don-Quixote*. For I know you very well treacherous knaues; and then without expecting their replie, he ſet ſpurs to *Rozinante*, and laying his Launce on the thigh, charged the firſt Friar with ſuch fury and rage, that if he had not ſuffered himſelfe willingly to fall off his

Mule,

Digitized by Google

Mule, he would not onely haue ouerthrowne him against his will, but likewise haue slaine, or at least wounded him very ill with the blow. The second religious man seeing how vgly his companion was vsed, made no wordes, but giuing the spurs to that Castell his *Mule*, did flie away through the field, as swift as the winde it selfe. *Sancho Panca* seeing the Monke ouerthrowne, disinounted very speedily off his Asse, and ran ouer to him, and would haue ransackt his habites. In this arriued the Monkes two Lackeyes, and demaunded of him, why he thus dispoyled the Friar? *Sancho* replied, that it was his due by the law of armes, as lawfull spoyles gained in battell by his Lord *Don-Quixote*. The Lackeyes which vnderstood not the jest, nor knew not what wordes of battell or spoyles meant, seeing that *Don-Quixote* was now out of the way, speaking with those that came in the Coach, set both at once vpon *Sancho*, and left him not a haire in his beard but they pluckt, and did so trample him vnder their feete, as they left him stretched on the ground without eyther breath or feeling: the Monke cutting off all delayes, mounted againe on horse-backe, all affrighted, hauing scarce any droppe of bloud left in his face through feare. And being once vp, he spurd after his fellow, who expected him a good way off, staying to see the successe of that assault; and being vnwilling to attend the end of that strange aduenture, they did prosecute their iourney, blessing and crossing themselues if the Diuell did pursue them.

Don-Quixote, as is rehearsed, was in this season speaking to the Lady of the Coach, to whom he said, Your beauty deere Lady, may dispose from henceforth of your person, as best ye liketh; for the pride of your robbers lies now prostrated on the ground, by this my inuincible arme. And because you may not be troubled to know your deliuerer his name, know that I am called *Don-Quixote de la Mancha*, a Knight errant and ad-

"aduenturer, and Captiue to the Peereleſſe and beautiful "Ladie *Dulcinea* of *Toboſo*: and in reward of the bene-"fite which you haue receiued at my handes, I demaund "nothing elſe, but that you returne to *Toboſo*; and there "preſent your ſelues in my name before my Lady, and "recount vnto her, what I haue done to obtaine your li-"bertie. To all theſe words which *Don-Quixote* ſaid, a certaine Biſcaine Squire that accompanied the Coach gaue eare, who ſeeing that *Don-Quixote* ſuffered not the Coach to paſſe onward, but ſaid that it muſt preſently returne backe to *Toboſo*, he drew neere to him, and laying hold on his Launce, he ſaid in his bad Spaniſh and worſe Baſquiſh; get thee away Knight in an ill houre, by the God that created me, if thou leaue not the Coach, I will kill thee, as ſure as I am a *Biſcaine*. *Don-Quixote* vnderſtanding him, did anſwere with great ſtaidneſſe, if thou wereſt a *Knight as thou art not, I would by this haue puniſhed thy folly and preſumption, caytife creature. The Biſcaine replied with great furie, Not I a Gentleman? I ſweare God thou lieſt as well as I am a Chriſtian. If thou caſt away thy Launce, and draw thy ſword, *thou ſhalt ſee the water as ſoone as thou ſhalt carie away the Cat: A *Biſcaine* by land, and a Gentleman by Sea, a Gentleman in deſpite of the Diuell, and thou lieſt if other things thou ſayeſt. Straight thou ſhalt ſee that, ſaid *Agrages*; replied *Don-Quixote*, and throwing his Launce to the ground, he out with his ſword, and tooke his Buckler, and ſet on the *Biſcaine*, with reſolution to kill him. The *Biſcaine* ſeeing him approach in that manner, although he deſired to alight off his *Mule*, which was not to be truſted, being one of thoſe naughty ones which are wont to be hired, yet had he no leiſure to do any other thing then to draw out his ſword: but it befell him happily to be neere to the Coach, out of which he ſnatched a cuſhion that ſerued him for a ſhield, and preſently the one made vpon the other like mortall enemies. Thoſe that were preſent laboured

*Caualiero *in Spaniſh is taken as well for a Gentleman, as for a Knight.*

Pag. 58.

Digitized by Google

red all that they might, but in vaine to compound the matter betweene them; for the *Biscaine* swore in his bad language, that if they hindred him from ending the battell, he would put his Lady, and all the rest that dared to disturbe him to the sword.

The Ladie astonished and fearefull of that which shee beheld, commaunded the Coach-man to goe a little out of the way, and sate aloofe, beholding the rigorous conflict. In the progresse whereof the *Biscaine* gaue *Don-Quixote* ouer the Target a mighty blow on one of the shoulders, where if it had not found resistance in his armour, it would doubtlesly haue cleft him downe to the girdle. *Don-Quixote* feeling the waight of that vnmeasurable blow, cried with a loude voice, saying, O *Dulcinea*, Lady of my soule, the flowre of all beauty, succour this thy Knight, who to set forth thy worth, finds himself in this dangerous trance. The saying of these words, the griping fast of his sword, the couering of himselfe wel with his Buckler, and the assayling of the *Biscaine*, was done all in one instant, resoluing to venter all the successe of the battell on that one only blow. The *Biscaine* who perceiued him come in that manner, perceiued by his doughtinesse his intention, and resolued to doe the like; and therefore expected him very well couered with his Cushion, not being able to manage his *Mule* as hee wished from one part to another, who was not able to go a steppe, it was so wearied, as a beast neuer before vsed to the like toyes. *Don-Quixote*, as wee haue said, came against the weary *Biscaine*, with his sword lifted aloft, with a full resolution to part him in two, and all the beholders stood with great feare suspended, to see the successe of those monstrous blowes wherwithall they threatned one another. And the Lady of the Coach with her Gentlewomen made a thousand vowes, and offerings to all the deuoute places of *Spaine*, to the end that God might deliuer the Squire, and themselues out of that great danger wherein they were.

Digitized by Google

But

But it is to be deplored how in this very point and tearme, the author of this Hiſtory leaues this battell depending, excuſing himſelfe that he could finde no more written of the actes of *Don-Quixote*, then thoſe which he hath already recounted. True it is, that the ſecond writer of this worke would not beleeue that ſo curious a Hiſtory was drownd in the jawes obliuion, or that the wits of the *Mancha* were ſo little curious as not to reſerue among their treaſuries or records, ſome papers treating of this famous Knight: and therefore encouraged by this preſumption, he did not diſpaire to finde the end of this pleaſant Hiſtory; which heauen being propicious to him he got at laſt after the manner that ſhall be recounted in the ſecond Part.

THE

Digitized by Google

THE DELIGHTFVLL HISTORY OF THE WITTY KNIGHT DON-QVIXOTE of the *MANCHA*.

THE SECOND PART.

CHAP. I.

Wherein is related the euents of the fearefull battell which the gallant Biſcaine fought with Don-Quixote.

WEe left the valorous *Biſcaine*, and the famous *Don-Quixote* in the firſt part, with their ſwords lifted vp and naked in termes to diſcharge one vpon another two furious Cleeuers, and ſuch, as if they had allighted rightly, would cut and diuide them both from the top to the toe, and open them like a *Pomgranat*. And that in ſo doubtfull a taking the delightfull Hiſtory ſtopped and remained diſmembred, the authour thereof leauing vs no notice where we might finde the reſt of the narration. This grieued me not a little, but wholly turned the pleaſure I tooke in reading the beginning thereof,

of, into disgust, thinking how small commodity was offered, to finde out so much as in mine opinion wanted of this so delectable a tale. It seemed vnto me almost impossible, and contrary to all good order, that so good a Knight should want some wise man, that would vndertake his wonderfull prowesses and feats of Chiualrie. A thing that none of those Knights errant euer wanted, of whom people speake; for each of them had one or two wise men of purpose, that did not only write their actes, but also depainted their very least thoughts and toyes, were they neuer so hidden. And surely so good a Knight could not be so vnfortunate as to want that, wherewith *Platyr* and others his like abounded; and therfore could not induce my selfe to beleeue, that so gallant a Historie might remaine maimed and lame, and did rather cast the fault vpon the malice of the time, who is a consumer and deuourer of all things, which had eyther hidden or consumed it. Me thought on the other side, seeing that among his bookes were found some moderne works, such as the *Vndeceiuing of Iealousie*, and *The nymphs and Sheephers of Henares*. That also his owne History must haue bin new; & if that it were not written, yet was the memory of him fresh among the dwellers of his owne village, and the other villages adioyning. This imagination held me suspended and desirous to learne really and truely all the life and miracles of our famous Spaniard *Don Quixote of the Mancha*, the light and mirrour of all *Manchicall* Chiualrie; being the first who in this our age and time so full of calamities did vndergo the trauels and exercise of armes errant; and vndid wrongs, succourd widdowes protected damzels that rode vp and downe with their whips and Palfrayes, and with all their virginity on their backes from hill to hill, and dale to dale; for if it hapned not that some lewd miscreant, or some Clowne with a hatchet and long haire or some monstrous Giant did force them, damzels there were in times past that at

the

the end of fourescore yeares olde, all which time they neuer slept one day vnder a roofe, went as intire and pure maydens to their graues, as the very mother that bore them. Therefore I say, that as well for this as for many other good respects, our gallant *Don-Quixote* is worthy of continuall and memorable prayses; nor can the like be iustly denied to my selfe, for the labour and diligence which I vsed to finde out the end of this gratefull History; although I know very well, that if Heauen, Chance, and Fortune had not assisted me, the world had been depriued of the delight and pastime, that he may take for almost two houres together, who shall with attention reade it. The manner therefore of finding it was this:

Being one day walking in the Exchange of *Toledo* a certain boy by chance would haue sold certain old quires & scroules of bookes to a Squire that walked vp & down in that place, and I being addicted to reade such scroules, though I found them torne in the streets, borne away by this my naturall inclination, tooke one of the quiers in my hand, and perceiued it to be written in Arabicall characters, and seeing that although I knew the letters, yet could I not read the substance, I looked about to view whether I might perceiue any more translated Spaniard thereabouts that could read them: nor was it very difficult to finde there such an interpreter, for if I searched one of an other better and more ancient *language, that place might easily affoord him. In fine my good fortune presented one to me, to whom telling my desire, and setting the booke in his hand, he opened it, and hauing read a little therein, began to laugh. I demaunded of him why he laughed? and he answered, at that marginall note which the booke had. I bad him to expound it to me, and with that tooke him a little aside: and he continuing still his laughter said, there is written here on this margin these words. *This Dulcinea of Toboso so many times spoken of in this historie, had the best hand for powdring of Porkes, of*

* To wit, a Iew.

any woman in all the Mancha. When I heard it make mention of *Dulcinea of Toboſo*, I reſted amazed and ſuſpended, and imagined forthwith that thoſe quiers contained the *Hiſtorie of Don Quixote*, with this conceit I haſtned him to read the beginning which he did, & tranſlating the *Arabicall* into *Spaniſh* in a trice, he ſaid that it began thus, *The Hiſtorie of Don Quixote of the Mancha, written by Cyde Hamete Benengeli, an Arabicall Hiſtiographer.* Much diſcretion was requiſite to diſſemble the content of mind I conceiued, when I heard the title of the booke, and preuenting the Squire, I bought all the boyes ſcroles and papers for halfe a Riall, and were he of diſcretion, or knew my deſire, he might haue promiſed himſelfe eaſily, and alſo borne away with him more then ſixe Reals for his Merchandize. I departed after with the Moore, to the Cloyſter of the great Church, and I requeſted him to turne me all the *Arabicall* ſheetes that treated of *Don-Quixote* into Spaniſh, without adding or taking away any thing from them, and I would pay him what he liſted for his paines: he demaunded fifty pounds of Reaſons and three buſhels of Wheate, and promiſed to tranſlate them ſpeedily, well, and faithfully. But I, to haſten the matter more, leaſt I ſhould loſe ſuch an vnexpected and welcome treaſure, brought him to my houſe, where he tranſlated all the worke in leſſe then a moneth and a halfe, euen in the manner that it is here recounted.

There was painted in the firſt Quier very naturally the battell betwixt *Don-Quixote* and the *Biſcaine*; euen in the ſame manner that the Hiſtory relateth it, with their ſwords lifted aloft, the one couered with his Buckler, the other with the Cuſhion: and the *Biſcaines Mule* was deliuered ſo naturally, as a man might perceiue it was hired; although he ſtood farther off then the ſhot of a Croſbow: the *Biſcaine* had a title written vnder his feete that ſaid *Don Sancho de Azpetia*, for ſo belike he was called: and at *Rozinante* his feete there was another that ſaid,

Don-

Don Quixote. *Rozinante* was maruellous well pourtrated, so long and lanke, so lanke and leane, so like one labouring with an incurable consumption, as he did shew very cleerely with what consideration and propriety hee had giuen vnto him the name *Rozinante*. By him stood *Sancho Panca*, holding his Asse by the halter; at whose feete was another scroule, saying, *Sancho Cancas*: and I thinke the reason thereof was, that as his picture shewed, he had a great belly, a short stature, and thick legges. And therfore I iudge he was called * *Panca* or *Canca*, for both these names are written of him indifferently in the History. There were other little things in it worthy the noting, but all of them are of no great importance, nor any thing necessary for the true relation of the Historie, for none is ill if it be true. And if any obiection be made against the truth of this, it can be none other then that the author was a Moore, and it is a knowne propriety of that nation to be lying: yet in respect that they hate vs so mortally, it is to be coniectured that in this History there is rather want and concealment of our Knights worthy actes, then any superfluity; which I imagine the rather, because I finde in the progresse thereof many times, that when he might and ought to haue aduanced his penne in our Knights prayses, he does as it were of purpose passe them ouer in silence. Which was very ill done, seeing that Historiographers ought and should be very precise, true, and vnpassionate, and that neither profite, or feare, rancor or affection should make them to treade awry from the truth, whose mother is History, the Emulatresse of Time, the depository of actions, the witnesse of things past, and aduertiser of things to come. In this Historie I know a man may finde all that he can desire in the most pleasing maner; and if they want any thing to be desired, I am of opinion that it is through the fault of that vngratious knaue that translated it, rather then through any defect in the subiect. Finally the second part thereof (ac-

Digitized by Google

cording to the tranſlation) began in this manner:

The trenchant ſwords of the two valorous and inraged combattants being lifted a loft, it ſeemed that they threatned Heauen, the earth, and the depths. Such was their hardines and courage: and the firſt that diſcharged his blow was the *Biſcaine*, which fell with ſuch force and fury, as if the ſword had not turned a little in the way, that onely blow were ſufficient to ſet an end to the rigorous contention, and all other the aduentures of our Knight. But his good *Fortune* which reſerued him for greater affaires, did wreſt his aduerſaries ſword awry in ſuch ſort, as though he ſtroke him on the left ſhoulder, yet did it no more harme, then diſarme all that ſide, carying away with it a great part of his Beauer, with the halfe of his eare; all which fell to the ground with a dreadfull ruine, leauing him in very ill caſe for a good time. Good God! who is he that can well deſcribe at this preſent the fury that entred in the heart of our *Manchegan*, ſeeing himſelfe vſed in that manner? Let vs ſay no more, but that it was ſuch, that ſtretching himſelfe againe in the ſtirrops, and griping his ſword faſt in both his handes, he diſcharged ſuch a terrible blow on the *Biſcaine*, hitting him right vpon the Cuſhion, & by it on the head, that the ſtrength and thickeneſſe thereof ſo little auailed him, that as if a whole mountaine had falne vpon him, the bleed guſhed out of his mouth, noſe, and eares, all at once, and he tottered ſo on his Mule, that euery ſteppe he tooke he was ready to fall off, as he would indeede, if he had not taken him by the necke: yet neuertheleſſe he loſt the ſtirrops, and looſing his gripe of the Mule, it being likewiſe frighted by that terrible blow, ranne away as faſt as it could about the fields, and within two or three winches, ouerthrew him to the ground. All which *Don Quixote* ſtood beholding with great quietneſſe, and as ſoone as he ſaw him fall he leapt off his horſe, and ranne ouer to him very ſpeedily, and ſetting the point of his ſword on his eyes, he

bad

bad, him yeeld himselfe or else he would cut off his head. The *Biscaine* was so amazed as hee could not speake a word, and it had succeeded very ill with him, considering *Don-Quixotes* fury, if the Ladies of the Coach, which vntill then had beheld the conflict with great anguish, had not come where he was, and earnestly besought him to doe them the fauour to pardon their Squires life. *Don-Quixote* answered with a great loftinesse and grauity; "Truely faire Ladies I am well appaid to graunt your re-"quest, but it must be with this agreement and conditi-"on, that this Knight shall promise me to goe to *Toboso*, "and present himselfe in my name to the Peerelesse La-"die *Dulcinea*, to the end she may dispose of him as shee "pleaseth. The timerous and comfortlesse Lady with-out considering what *Don-Quixote* demaunded, or as-king what *Dulcinea* was, promised that her Squire should accomplish all that he pleased to commaund. Why then quoth *Don-Quixote*, trusting to your promise, I'le do him no more harme, although he hath well deserued it at my handes.

CHAP. II.

Of that which after befell vnto Don-Quixote, *when he had left the Ladies.*

BY this *Sancho Panca* had gotten vp, though somewhat abused by the Friars Lackeyes, and stood attentiuely beholding his Lords combate, and prayed to God with all his hart, that it would please him to giue him the victory; and that he might therein winne some Island, whereof he might make him gouernour, as he had promised. And seeing the controuersie ended at last, and that his Lord remounted vp-

Digitized by Google

pon *Rozinante*; he came to holde him the ſtirrop, and caſt himſelfe on his knees before him ere he got vp, and taking him by the hand, he kiſt it, ſaying, I deſire that it will pleaſe you good my Lorde *Don-Quixote*, to beſtow vpon me the gouernement of that Iſland which in this terrible battell you haue wonne; for though it were neuer ſo great, yet doe I finde my ſelfe able enough to gouerne it, as well as any other whatſoeuer that euer gouerned Iſland in this world. To this demand *Don-Quixote* anſwered, thou muſt note friend *Sancho*, that this aduenture, and others of this kind are not aduentures of Iſlands but of thwartings and high wayes, wherein nothing elſe is gained but a broken pate, or the loſſe of an eare. Haue patience a while, for aduentures will be offered, whereby thou ſhalt not only be made a gouernour, but alſo a greater man. *Sancho* rendred him many thankes, and kiſſing his hand againe, and the skirt of his Habergeon, hee did helpe him to get vp on *Rozinante*, and he leapt on his Aſſe, and followed his Lord: who with a ſwift pace, without taking leaue, or ſpeaking to thoſe of the Coach, he entred into a wood that was hard at hand. *Sancho* followed him as faſt as his beaſt could trotte, but *Rozinante* went off ſo ſwiftly, as he perceiuing he was like to be left behinde, was forced to call aloude to his Maſter that he would ſtay for him. Which *Don-Quixote* did by checking *Rozinante* with the bridle, vntill his wearied Squire did arriue, who as ſoone as he came, ſaid vnto him: Me thinkes (Sir) that it will not be amiſſe to retire our ſelues to ſome Church; for according as that man is ill dight with whom you fought, I certainly perſwade my ſelfe that they will giue notice of the fact to the *holy brotherhood*, and they will ſeeke to apprehend vs; which if they doe, in good faith before we can get out of their clawes, I feare me we ſhall ſweate for it. Peace, quoth *Don-Quixote*, where haſt thou euer read or ſeene that Knight errant that hath been brought before the Iudge, though

though hee committed neuer so many homicides and slaughters. I know nothing of Omicilles, quoth *Sancho*, nor haue I cared in my life for any, but well I wote that it concernes the *holy brotherhood* to deale with such as fight in the fields, & in that other I wil not intermedle. Then be not afraid frieñd, quoth *Don-Quixote*, for I wil deliuer thee out of the hands of the *Caldeans*, how much more out of those of the *brotherhood*. But tell me in very good earnest whether thou didst euer see a more valorous Knight then I am, throughout the face of the earth? Didst thou euer reade in Histories of any other that hath, or euer had more courage in assayling, more breath in persceuering, more dexterity in offending, or more arte in ouerthrowing then I? The truth is, quoth *Sancho*, that I haue neuer read any History, for I can neither reade nor write, but that which I dare wager is, that I neuer in my life serued a bolder Master then you are, and I pray God that we pay not for this boldnes, there where I haue said. That which I request you is, that you will cure your selfe, for you loose much bloud by that eare; and here I haue linte and a little *Vnguentum Album* in my Wallet. All this might be excused, quoth *Don-Quixote*, if I had remembred to make a Violl full of the *Balsamum* of *Fierebras*, for with one drop of it we might spare both time, and want well all those other medicines. What Viall, and what *Balsamum* is that, said *Sancho Panca*? It is, answered *Don-Quixote*, a *Balsamum* whereof I haue the receit in memory, which one possessing he needes not feare death, nor ought he to thinke that he may be killed by any wound: and therefore after I haue made it, and giuen it vnto thee, thou hast nothing else to doe, but when thou shalt see that in any battell I be cleuen in twaine (as many times it happens) thou shalt take faire and softly that part of my body that is falne to the ground, and put it vp again with great subtilty on the part that rests in the saddle, before the blood congeale, hauing euermore great care that thou place it iust

iuſt and equally; then preſently after thou ſhalt giue me two draughts of that *Balſamum*, which I haue ſaid, thou ſhalt ſee me ſtreight become ſounder then an apple. If that be true, quoth *Sancho*, I doe preſently here renounce the gouernement of the Iſland you promiſed, and will demand nothing elſe in recompence of my ſeruices of you, but onely the receit of this precious liquor; for I am certaine that an ounce thereof will be worth two Reals in any place, and when I haue it I ſhould neede nothing elſe to gaine my liuing eaſily and honeſtly. But let me know, is it coſtly in making? With leſſe then three Reals, quoth *Don-Quixote*, a man may make three gallons of it. But I meane to teach thee greater ſecrets then this, and do thee greater fauours alſo. And now let me cure my ſelfe, for mine eare grieues me more then I would wiſh. *Sancho* then tooke out of his wallet his linte and oyntment to cure his Maſter. But when *Don-Quixote* ſaw that the vizar of his helmet was broken, he was ready to run mad; and ſetting his hand to his ſword, and lifting vp his eyes to heauen, he ſaid, I vow to the creator of all things, and to the foure Goſpels where they are largeſt written, to leade ſuch another life as the great *Marqueſſe of Mantua* did, when he ſwore to reuenge the death of his Néphew *Valdouinos*, which was, not to eate on Table-cloth, nor ſport with his wife, and other things, which although I doe not now remember I giue them heere for expreſſed, vntil I take complete reuenge on him that hath done me this outrage. *Sancho* hearing this, ſaid, you muſt note Sir *Don-Quixote*, that if the Knight hath accompliſhed that which you ordained, to goe and preſent himſelfe before my Lady *Dulcinea of Toboſo*, then hath he fully ſatiſfied his debt, and deſerues no new puniſhment, except he cõmit a new fault. Thou haſt ſpoken wel & hit the marke right, ſaid *Don-Quixote*, and therfore I diſanull the oath in that of taking any new reuenge on him: but I make it, and confirme it againe, that I wil leade the life I haue ſaid, vntill

vntill I take another helmet like, or as good as this perforce from some Knight. And do not thinke *Sancho*, that I make this resolution lightly, or as they say, with the smoake of strawes; for I haue an authour whom I may very well imitate herein, for the very like in euery respect past about *Mambrinos* helmet, which cost *Sacripante* so deerly. I would haue you resigne those kinde of oathes to the Diuel, quoth *Sancho*, for they wil hurt your health, and preiudice your conscience. If not, tell me now, I beseech you, if we shal not these many daies encounter with any that weares a helmet, what shall we doe? Will you accomplish the oath, in despite of all the inconueniences and discommodities that ensue thereof? to wit, to sleepe in your clothes: not to sleepe in any dwelling, & a thousand other penitencies, which the oath of the madde olde man, the *Marquesse of Mantua* contained, which you meane to ratifie now? Doe not you consider that armed men trauell not in any of these wayes, but Carriers and Waggoners, who not onely carie no helmets, but also for the most part neuer heard speake of them in their liues. Thou dost deceiue thy selfe saying so, replied *Don-Quixote*, for we shall not haunt these wayes two houres, before we shall see more armed Knights then were at the siege of *Albraca*, to conquer *Angelica the faire*. Well then, let it be so, quoth *Sancho*, and I pray God it befall vs well; whom I deuoutly beseech that the time may arriue of gaping that Island which costs me so deere, and after let me die presently and I care not. I haue already said to thee *Sancho*, quoth his Lord, that thou shouldst not trouble thy selfe in any wise about this affaire; for when an Island were wanting, we haue then the Kingdome of *Denmarke* or that of *Sobradisa*, which will come as fit for thy purpose as a ring to thy finger, and principally thou art to reioyce, because they are on the continent. But omitting this till his owne time, see whether thou hast any thing in thy wallet, and let vs eate it, that afterward we may go

Digitized by Google

search

ſcarch out ſome Caſtle, wherin we may lodge this night, and make the *Balſamum* which I haue tolde thee. For I vow to God that this eare grieues me maruellouſly. I haue here an Onion, replied the Squire, a peece of Cheeſe and a few cruſtes of bread, but ſuch groſſe meates are not befitting ſo noble a Knight as you are. How ill doſt thou vnderſtand it, anſwered *Don-Quixote*? I let thee to vnderſtand *Sancho*, that it is an honour for Knights errant not to eate once in a moneths ſpace; and if by chaunce they ſhould eate, to eate onely of that which is next at hand. And this thou mighteſt certainely conceiue, hadſt thou read ſo many bookes as I haue done. For though I paſt ouer many, yet did I neuer finde recorded in any that Knights errant did euer eate, but by meere chance and aduenture, or in ſome coſtly banquets that were made for them, and all the other daies they paſt ouer with hearbs and rootes: and though it is to be vnderſtood that they could not liue without meate, and ſupplying the other needes of nature, becauſe they were in effect men as wee are: it is likewiſe to bee vnderſtood that ſpending the greater part of their liues in Forreſts and deſarts, and that too without a Cook, that their moſt ordinary meats were but courſe and ruſticall, ſuch as thou doſt now offer vnto me. So that friend *Sancho*, let not that trouble thee which is my pleaſure, nor goe not thou about to make a new world, or to hoiſt Chiualrie errant off of her hinges. Pardon me good Sir, quoth *Sancho*; for by reaſon I can neyther reade nor write, as I haue ſaid once before, I haue not ſaine rightly in the rules and la wes of Knighthood; and from henceforth my wallet ſhall be well furniſhed with all kindes of drie fruits for you, becauſe you are a Knight: and for my ſelfe ſeeing I am none, I will prouide fowles and other things, that are of more ſubſtance. I ſay not *Sancho*, quoth *Don-Quixote* that it is a forcible law to Knights errant, not to eate any other things then ſuch fruits, but that their moſt ordinary ſuſtenance could be

Digitized by Google

none

none other then those; and some hearbes they found vp and downe the fields, which they knew very well, and so doe I also. It is a vertue, quoth *Sancho*, to know those hearbes; for as I imagine that knowledge will some day stand vs in stead: and saying so, he tooke out the prouision he had, which they both eate together with good conformity. But being desirous to search out a place where they might lodge that night, they did much shorten their poore dinner, and mounting anone a horse-backe, they made as much hast as they could, to finde out some dwellings, before the night did fall, but the Sunne and their hopes did faile them, at once they being neare the Cabins of certaine Goat-heards; and therefore they concluded to take vp their lodging there for that night; for though *Sanchoes* griefe was great to lie out of a village, yet *Don-Quixotes* ioy exceeded it farre, considering hee must sleepe vnder open heauen, because he made account as oft as this befell him, that he did a worthy acte, which did facilitate and ratifie the practise of his Chiualry.

CHAP. III.

Of that which past betweene Don-Quixote *and certaine Goat-heards.*

HEe was intertained very cheerefully by the Goat-heards, and *Sancho* hauing set vp *Rozinante* and his Asse, as well as hee could, he presently repaired to the smell of certain peeces of Goat-flesh that stood boyling in a Kettle, ouer the fire, and although he thought in that very moment to trie whether they were in season to be translated out of the Kettle into the stomach, he did omit it, because he saw the Heards take them off the fire, and spreading certaine Sheepskins, which

Digitized by Google

which they had for that purpose on the ground, lay in a trice their rusticall table, and inuited the Master and man with very cheerefull minde to come and take part of that which they had. There sate downe round about the skinnes sixe of them, which were all that dwelled in that Foulde, hauing first (vsing some course complements) placed *Don-Quixote* vpon a trough, turning the bottom vp. *Don Quixote* sate downe and *Sancho* stood, to serue the cuppe, which was made of horne. His Master seeing him a foote, said, *Sancho*, to the end that thou mayest perceiue the good included in wandring Knighthood, and also in what possibility they are, which exercise themselues in any ministery thereof to arriue briefely to honour and reputation in the world. My will is, that thou dost sit here by my side, and in company with this good people, and that thou beest one and the very selfe same thing with me, who am thy Master and naturall Lord, that thou eate in my dish, and drinke in the same cup wherein I drinke: for the same may be said of Chiualrie that is of Loue, to wit, that it makes all things equall. I yeelde you great thankes, quoth *Sancho*, yet dare I auouch vnto you, that so I had wherewithall to eate well, I could eate it as well or better standing and alone, then if I sate by an *Emperour*. And besides, if I must say the truth, me thinkes that which I eate in a corner without ceremonies, curiosity, or respect of any, though it were but bread and an Onion, smackes a great deale better, then Turkey-Cockes at other tables, where I must chaw my meat leisurely, drinke but litle, wipe my handes often, must not neese nor cough though I haue a desire or be like to choake, nor doe other things that solitude and liberty bring with them. So that, (good Sir) I would haue you conuert these honours that you would bestow vpon me in respect that I am an adherent to Chiualry, as I am being your Squire, into things more essentiall and profitable for me then these; and though I remaine as thankefull for them, as if they were receiued,

Digitized by Google

receiued, yet doe I here renounce from this time vntil the worlds end. For all that, thou shalt sit, for the humble shall be exalted; and so taking him by the arme, he forced him to sit downe neere himselfe.

The Goatherds did not vnderstand that *Gibbrish* of *Squires* and *Knights errant*, and therefore did nothing else but eate, and hold their peace, and looke on their guests, that tossed in with their fish whole flies, with good grace and stomacks. The course of flesh being ended, they serued in on the rugges a great quantity of sheld Akorns, and halfe a cheese harder then if it were made of rough-casting. The horne stood not the while idle, for it went round about so often now full, now empty much like a conduit * of Noria. And in a trice it emptied one of the two wine bags that lay there in the publike view. After that *Don-Quixote* had satisfied his appetite well, he tooke vp a fish full of Acornes, and beholding them earnestly, "he began to discourse in this manner. Happy time, "and fortunate ages were those, whereon our ancestors "bestowed the title of Goulden, not because Gould "(so much prized in this our yron age) was gotten in "that happy time, without any labours, but because "those which liued in that time, knew not these two "words *Thine* & *Mine*, in that holy age all things were "in common: No man needed for his ordinarie sustie-"nance to doe ought else then lift vp his hand, and take "it from the strong Oke, which did liberally inuite them, "gather his sweete and sauory fruite. The cleare foun-"taines and running riuers did offer them these sauorie "and transparent waters in magnificent abundance. In "the clists of rocks and hollow trees did the carefull and "discreete *bees* erect their commonwealth, offering to "euery hand without interest, the fertile croppe of their "sweetest trauailes. The softie Corke tree did dismisse of "themselues without any other art then that of their natiue "liberalitie, their broad and light rindes. Wherewithall horses

* *Arcaduzed Noria. p. 76.*

" horſes were at firſt couered, being ſuſtained by ruſticall
" ſtakes, to none other end, but for to keepe backe the
" inclemencies of the Ayre. All then was peace, all ami-
" tie, and all concord: as yet the plowſhade preſumed
" not with rude encounter to open and ſearch the com-
" paſſionate bowels of our firſt mother; for ſhe without
" compulſion offered vp through all the parts of her fer-
" till and ſpacious boſome all that which might ſatisfie,
" ſuſtaine, and delight thoſe children which it then had:
" yea it was then that the ſimple and beautifull young
" Sheepheardeſſes went from valley to valley, and hill to
" hill, with their haires ſometimes plaited, ſometimes di-
" ſheueld, without other apparrell then that which was
" requiſite to couer comelily that which modeſty wils
" and euer would haue concealed. Then were of no re-
" queſt the attires and ornaments which are now vſed,
" by thoſe that eſteem the purple of Tyre and the ſo-ma-
" ny-waies-martyrized Silke ſo much: but onely certaine
" greene leaues of *Burdocks* and *Iuie* intertexed and wo-
" uen together, wherewithall perhaps they went as gor-
" geouſly and comely deckt, as now our Court-dames
" with all the rare and out-landiſh inuentions that idle-
" neſſe and curioſity hath found out. Then, were the a-
" morous conceits of the minde, ſimply and ſincerely de-
" liuered and imbelliſhed in the very forme and manner
" that ſhe had conceiued them, without any artificiall
" contexture of wordes to indeere them; fraude, deceit,
" or mallice had not then medled themſelues with plain-
" neſſe and truth: Iuſtice was in her proper termes, fauor
" daring not to trouble or confound her, or the reſpect of
" profite which do now proſecute, blemiſh, and diſturbe
" her ſo much. The law of corruption or taking bribes
" had not yet poſſeſt the vnderſtanding of the Iudge; for
" then was neither Iudge nor perſon to be iudged. May-
" dens and honeſtly wandred then I ſay where they liſted,
" alone ſignioriziug ſecure, that no ſtranger liberty or la-

ſciuious

"sciuious intent could preiudice it, or their owne natiue
"desire or will any way endamage it. But now in these
"our detestable times no damzel is safe, although she be
"hid and shut vp in another new Labyrinth, like that of
"*Creete*; for euen there it selfe the amorous plague
"would enter, eyther by some cranie, or by the ayre, or
"by the continuall vrgings of cursed care, to infect her.
"For whose protection and security was last instituted.
"By succesſe of times the order of Knighthood; to de-
"fend damzels, protect widows, and assist Orphans and
"distressed wights. Of this order am I, friends Goat-
"heards, whom I doe heartily thanke for the good inter-
"tainement which you giue vnto me and my Squire: for
"although that euery one liuing is obliged by the law of
"nature to fauour Knights errant; yet notwithstanding,
"knowing that you knew not this obligation, and yet did
"receiue and make much of me, it stands with all reason
"that I doe render you thankes with all my heart.

Our Knight made this long Oration (which might haue beene well excused,) because the Acornes that were giuen vnto him, called to his minde the golden world: and therefore the humour tooke him to make the Goat-heards that vnprofitable discourse, who heard him all amazed and suspended with very great attention all the while. *Sancho* likewise held his peace, eating Acornes, and in the meane while visited very often the second wine bagge, which because it might be fresh, lay hanged vpon a Corke tree. *Don-Quixote* had spent more time in his speech then in his supper; at the end whereof one of the Goat-heards said, to the end that you may more assuredly know, Sir Knight errant, that we doe intertaine you with prompt and ready will, we will likewise make you some passime, by hearing one of our companions sing, who is a Heard of good vnderstanding, and very amorous withall, and can besides reade and write, and playes so well on a Rebecke, that there is nothing to be de-

desired. Scarce had the Goat-heard ended his speech, when the sound of the Rebecke touched his eare, and within a while after he arriued that played on it, being a youth of some twenty years olde, and one of a very good grace and countenance. His fellowes demaunded if he had supped, and answering that he had; he which did offer the curtesie, said; then *Anthony* thou mayst doe vs a pleasure by singing a little, that this Gentleman our guest may see, that we enioy amidst these groues and woods, those that know what musicke is: we haue tolde him already thy good qualities, and therefore we desire that thou shew them, to verifie our wordes. And therefore I desire thee by thy life, that thou wilt sit and sing the Dittie which thy vncle the Prebendary made of thy loue, and was so wel liked of in our village. I am content, quoth the youth, and without further intreaty, sitting downe on the truncke of a lopped Oake, hee turned his Rebecke, and after a while began with a singular good grace to sing in this manner.

I Know Olalia! thou dost me adore,
Though yet to me, the same thou hast not said:
Nor showen it once, by one poore glaunce or more
Since loue is soonest, by such tongues bewrayde.
Yet cause I euer held thee to be wise
It me assures, thou beareſt me good will:
And he is not vnfortunate that sees
How his affections are not taken ill.
Yet for all this, Olalia! tis true
I by obseruance gather to my woe:
Thy minde is framde of brasse, by art vndew
And flint thy bosome is, though it seemes snow.
And yet amidst thy rigor's Winter-face
And other shifts thou vseſt to delay mee,
Sometime hope peeping out, does promise grace
But woe is mee, I feare tis to betray mee.

Digitized by Google

Sweeteſt!

Sweeteſt! once in the ballance of thy minde
Poyſe with iuſt waights my faith, which neuer yet
Diminiſht though diſfauor it did finde;
Nor can increaſe more, though thou fauourd'ſt it
If loue be courteous, as ſome men ſay;
By thy humanity, I muſt collect:
My hopes, how's euer thou doſt vſe delay
Shall reape at laſt, the good I doe expect.
If many ſernices be of eſteeme
Or power to render a hard heart benigne:
Such things I did for thee, as make me deeme,
I haue the match gainde, and thou ſhalt be mine.
For if at any time, thou haſt tane heede
Thou more then once might view, how I was clad,
To honour thee, on Mundayes with the weede,
Which worne on Sundayes, got me credit had,
For loue and brauery ſtill themſelues conſort,
Becauſe they both ſhoote euer at one end:
Which made me when I did to thee reſort,
Still to be neat and fine I did contend.
Heere I omit the daunces I haue done
And Muſiques I haue at thy window giuen:
When thou didſt at Cockcrow liſten alone,
And ſeemd'ſt hearing my voyce, to be in heauen.
I doe not eke, the prayſes here recount
Which of thy beauty I ſo oft haue ſaid:
Which though they all were true, were likewiſe wont
To make the enuious mee, for ſpight vpbraide.
When to Tereſa *ſhee of* Berrocal,
I of thy worthes diſcourſe did ſometime ſhape:
Good God! quoth ſhee, you ſeeme an Angels thrall,
And yet for Idoll, you adore an Ape.
Shee to her bugles, thankes may giue and chaines,
Falſe haires, and other ſhifts that ſhe doth vſe,
to mend her beauty, with a thouſand paynes
And guiles; which might loues very ſelfe abuſe.

Wroth at her words, I gaue her ſtreight the lie,
Which did her and her couſen ſo offend:
As me to fight, he challeng'd preſently,
And well thou knowſt of our debate the end:
I meane not thee, to purchaſe at a clap,
Nor to that end, doe I thy fauour ſue:
Thereby thine honour either to intrap,
Or thee perſwade, to take courſes vndue.
The Church hath bands, which doe ſo ſurely hold,
As no ſilke ſtring for ſtrength comes to them neere:
To thruſt thy necke once in the yoake be bold,
And ſee if I to follow thee will feare.
If thou wilt not, here ſolemnly I vow
By holieſt Saint, enwrap't in precious ſhrine,
Neuer to leaue thoſe hils where I dwell now,
If't be not to become a Capucine.

Heere the Goat-heard ended his ditty, and although *Don-Quixote* intreated him to ſing ſomewhat elſe, yet would not *Sancho Panca* conſent to it; who was at that time better diſpoſed to ſleepe then to heare muſicke: and therefore ſaid to his Maſter, you had better prouide your ſelfe of a place wherein to ſleepe this night, then to heare muſicke, for the labour that theſe good men indure all the day long, doth not permit that they likewiſe ſpend the night in ſinging. I vnderſtand thee well enough *Sancho*, anſwered *Don-Quixote*, nor did I thinke leſſe, but that thy manifold viſitations of the wine bottle, would rather deſire to be recompenced with ſleepe then with muſicke. The wine liked vs all well, quoth *Sancho*: I doe not denie it, replied *Don-Quixote*, but goe thou and lay thee downe where thou pleaſeſt, for it becomes much more men of my profeſſion to watch then to ſleepe. Yet notwithſtanding it will not be amiſſe to lay ſomwhat againe to mine eare; for it grieues me very much. One of the Goat-heards beholding the hurt, bad him be of good cheere,

cheere, for he would apply a remedie that should cure it easily. And taking some Rosemary leaues of many that grew thereabouts, he hewd them, and after mixed a little salt among them, and applied this medicine to the eare, he bound it vp well with a cloth; assuring him that hee needed to vse no other medicine, as it proued after in effect.

CHAP. IIII.

Of that which one of the Goat-heards recounted to those that were with Don-Quixote.

ABout this time arriued another youth, one of those that brought them prouision from the Village, who said; Companions, doe not you know what passeth in the Village? How can we know it being absent? saies another of them. Then wit, quoth the youth, that the famous Sheepheard, and Student *Chrisostome* died this morning, and they murmure that he died for loue of that diuelliſh lasse *Marcela*, *William* the rich his daughter, she that goes vp and downe these plaines and hils among vs in the habite of a *Pastora*. Dost thou meane *Marcela*, quoth one of them? Euen her, I say, answered the other; and the jest is, that he hath commaunded in his Testament, that he be buried in the fields as if he were a Moore; and that it be at the foote of the Rocke, where the fountaine stands of the Corke tree. For that according to fame, and as they say, he himselfe affirmed, was the place wherein he viewed her first. And he hath likewise commaunded such other things to be done, as the auncienter sort of the Village doe not allow, nor thinke fit to be performed; for they seeme to be ceremonies of the Gentiles. To all which obiections his great

great friend *Ambrosio* the Student, who likewise apparrelled himselfe like a Sheepheard, at once with him answers, that all shall be accomplished, without omission of any thing, as *Chrisostome* hath ordayned, and all the Village is in an vprore about this affaire, and yet it is said that what *Ambrosio* and all the other Sheepheards his friends doe pretend, shall in fine be done: and to morrow morning they will come to the place I haue named, to burie him with great pompe. And as I suppose it will be a thing worthy the seeing: at leastwise I will not omit to go and behold it, although I were sure that I could not return the same day to the Village. We will all doe the same, quoth the Goat-heards, and will draw lots who shall tarry here to keepe all our Heards. Thou sayest well *Peter*, quoth one of them, although that labour may be excused; for I meane to stay behinde for you all; which you must not attribute to any vertue, or little curiosity in me, but rather to the forke that prickt my foot the other day, and makes me vnable to trauell from hence. We doe thanke thee notwithstanding, quoth *Peter*, for thy good will. And *Don-Quixote*, who heard all their discourse, intreated *Peter* to tell him who that dead man was, and what the Sheepheardesse of whom they spoke.

Peter made answer, that what he knew of the affaire was, that the dead person was a rich Gentleman of a certaine Village, seated among those mountaines, who had studied many yeares in *Salamanca*, and after returned home to his house, with the opinion to be a very wise and learned man: but principally it was reported of him, that he was skilfull in Astronomie, and all that which passed aboue in heauen, in the Sunne and the Moone; for he would tell vs most punctually the clips of the Sunne and the Moone. Friend, quoth *Don-Quixote*, the darkening of these two greater *Luminaries* is called an *Eclipse*, and not a *Clipse*: but *Peter* stepping not at those trifles, did prosecute his History, saying, he did also prognosticate

Digitized by Google

when

when the yeare would be abundant or *Estil*. Thou wouldest say *Sterril*, quoth *Don-Quixote*: *Sterril* or *Estil*, said *Peter*, all is one for my purpose: & I say, that by his words, his father and his other friends, that gaue credite to him became very rich. For they did all that hee counselled them, who would say vnto them: sow Barley this yeare and no Wheate. In this you may sow Pease and no Barley. The next yeare will be good for Oyle. The three ensuing you shall not gather a drop. That science is called *Astrologie*, quoth *Don-Quixote*. I know not how it is called, replied *Peter*; but I know well, he knew all this and much more. Finally, a few moneths after he came from *Salamanca*, he appeared one day apparrelled like a Sheepheard with his flocke, and leather coat; hauing laid aside the long habites that hee wore, being a scholler, and ioyntly with him came also a great friend of his, and fellow Student called *Ambrosio*, apparrelled like a Sheepheard. I did almost forget to tell how *Grisostome* the dead man was a great maker of verses; insomuch that he made the Carrols of Christmas day at night, and the playes for *Corpus Christi* day, which the youthes of our Village did represent, and all of them affirmed, that they were most excellent. When those of the Village saw the two schollers so suddenly clad like Sheepheards, they were amazed and could not ghesse the cause that moued them to make so wonderfull a change. And about this time *Grisostomes* father died, and he remained possessed of a great deale of goods, as well moueable as immoueable; and no little quantity of cattell great and smal; and also a great summe of money; of all which the young man remained a dissolute Lord. And truely he deserued it all; for hee was a good fellow, and a charitable and a friend of good folke, and he had a face like a blessing. It came at last to be vnderstood, that the cause of changing his habite was none other, then for to goe vp and downe through these desarts after the *Pastora Marcela*, whom our Heard named before;

before, of whom the poore dead *Grisostome* was become enamoured. And I will tell you now, because it is fit you should know it, what this wanton lasse is, perhaps, and I think without perhaps you haue not heard the like thing in all the dayes of your life, although you had lued more yeares then *Sarna*. Say *Sarra*, quoth *Don-Quixote*, being not able to heare him any longer to change one word for another. The *Sarna* or scabbe, quoth *Peter*, liues long enough too. And if you go this Sir, interrupting my tale at euery pace, we shall not be able to end it in a yeare. Pardon me friend, quoth *Don-Quixote*, for I speake to thee by reason there was such difference betweene *Sarna* and *Sarra*. But thou didst answere well; for the *Sarna* or scabbe liues longer then *Sarra*. And therefore prosecute thy Historie: for I will not interrupt thee any more. I say then deere Sir of my soule, quoth the Goatheard, that there was in our Village a farmer that was yet richer then *Grisostomes* father, who was called *William*, to whom fortune gaue in the end of his great riches a daughter called *Marcela*, of whose birth her mother died, who was the best woman that dwelled in all this circuit. Me thinkes I doe now see her quicke before me, with that face, which had on the one side the Sunne, and on the other the Moone, and aboue all she was a thriftie housewife, and a great friend to the poore. For which I beleeue that her soule is this very houre enioying of the God in the other world. For griefe of the losse of so good a wife her husband *William* likewise died, leauing his daughter *Marcela* young and rich in the custody of his Vncle, who was a Priest, and Curate of our Village. The childe grew with such beauty, as it made vs remember that of her mother, which was very great. And yet notwithstanding they iudged that the daughters would surpasse hers, as indeed it did: for when shee arriued to the age of fourteene or fifteene yeares olde, no man beheld her, that did not bleese God for making her so faire: and

Digitized by Google

and moſt men remained enamoured and caſt-away for her loue. Her Vncle kept her with very great care and cloſeneſſe: and yet neuertheleſſe the fame of her great beautie did ſpread it ſelfe in ſuch ſort, that as well for it as for her great riches, her Vncle was not onely requeſted by thoſe of our Village, but alſo was prayed, ſollicited, and importuned by all thoſe that dwelled many leagues about, and that by the very beſt of them, to giue her to them in marriage. But he (who is a good Chriſtian euery inch of him) although he deſired to marrie her preſently as ſoone as ſhe was of age, yet would hee not doe it without her good will; without euer reſpecting the gaine and profite he might make by the poſſeſſion of her goods, whilſt he deſired her marriage. And in good ſooth this was ſpoken of, to the good Prieſt his commendation, in more then one meeting of the people of our Village. For I would haue you to wit, Sir errant, that in theſe little Villages they talke of all things, and make account, as I doe, that the Prieſt muſt haue beene too good, who could oblige his Pariſhioners to ſpeake ſo well of him, and eſpecially in the Villages: thou haſt reaſon, quoth *Don-Quixote*, and therefore follow on, for the Hiſtory is very pleaſant; and thou good *Peter* doſt recount it with a very good grace. I pray God, ſaid *Peter*, that I neuer want our Heards; for it is that which makes to the purpoſe. And in the reſt you ſhall vnderſtand that although her Vncle propounded and told to his Nieſe the quality of euery woer of the many that deſired her for wife, and intreated her to marrie and chuſe at her pleaſure; yet would ſhee neuer anſwer other, but that ſhe would not marry as then, and that in reſpect of her ouer-greene years, ſhe did not finde her ſelfe able enough yet to beare the burden of marriage. With theſe iuſt excuſes which ſhee ſeemed to giue, her Vncle left of importuning of her, and did expect vntill ſhe were farther entred into yeares; and that ſhe might know how to chuſe one that might like her. For he

Digitized by Google

he was wont to ſay, and that very wel, *That Parents were not to place or beſtow their children where they bore no liking*. But ſee here when wee leaſt imagined it, the coy *Marcela* appeared one morning to become a *Paſtora*: and neyther her Vncle nor all thoſe of the Village which diſſwaded her from it could worke any effect, but ſhe would needes goe to the fieldes, and keepe her owne ſheepe with the other young laſſes of the towne. And ſhe comming thus in publike, when her beauty was ſeene without hinderance, I cannot poſſibly tell vnto you, how many rich youthes as well Gentlemen as Farmers haue taken on the array of *Griſoſtome*, and follow woing of her vp and downe thoſe fields. One of which, as is ſaid already, was our dead man, of whom it is ſaid, that leauing to loue her, he had at laſt made her his Idoll. Nor is it to be thought that becauſe *Marcela* ſet her ſelfe in that liberty, and ſo looſe a life, and of ſo little or no keeping, that therefore ſhe hath giuen the leaſt token or ſhadow of diſhoneſty or negligence: nay rather ſuch is the watchfulneſſe wherewithall ſhee lookes to her honour, that among ſo many as ſerue and ſollicite her, not one hath praiſed or caniuſtly vaunt himſelfe to haue receiued at her hands, the leaſt hope that may be to obtaine his deſires. For although ſhe did not flie or ſhunne the company and conuerſation of Sheepheards, and doth vſe them courteouſly & friendlily, whenſoeuer anyone of them begin to diſcouer their intention be it euer ſo iuſt and holy, as is that of *Matrimony*, ſhe caſts them away from her, as with a ſling. And with this manner of proceeding ſhee does more harme in this countrey, then if the plague had entred into it by her meanes: for her affability and beauty doth draw to it the hearts of thoſe which do ſerue and loue her. But her diſdaine and reſolution doe conduct them to termes of deſperation; and ſo they know not what to ſay vnto her, but to call her with a loude voyce cruell & vngratefull, with other titles like vnto this, which

doe

doe cleerely manifeſt the nature of her condition. And Sir, if you ſtaid here but a few daies, you ſhould heare theſe mountaines reſound with the lamentations of thoſe wretches that follow her. There is a certaine place not farre off, wherein are about two douzens of Beech trees, and there is not any one of them in whoſe rinde is not ingrauen *Marcelas* name, and ouer ſome names grauen alſo a crowne in the ſame tree, as if her louer would plainly deuote that *Marcela* beares it away, and deſerues the garland of all humane beauty. Heere ſighes one Sheepheard; there another complaines, in another place are heard amorous ditties, heere in another dolefull and diſpayring laments. Some one there is that paſſeth ouer all the whole houres of the night at the foote of an Oake or a rocke; and there without foulding once his weeping eyes, ſwallowed and tranſported by his thoughts, the Sunne findes him there in the morning. And ſome other there is, who without giuing wade or truce to his ſighes, doth amidſt the feruor of the moſt fallidious heate of the Summer, ſtretcht vpon the burning ſand, breathe his pittifull complaints to heauen: and of this, and of him, and of thoſe, and theſe, the beautifull *Marcela* doth indifferently and quietly triumph: all we that know her, doe awaite to ſee wherein this her loftineſſe will finiſh, or who ſhall be ſo happy as to gaine dominion ouer ſo terrible a condition, and enioy ſo Peereleſſe a beauty. And becauſe all that I haue recounted is ſo notorious a truth, it makes me more eaſily beleeue that our companion hath tolde, that is ſaid of the occaſion of *Griſoſtomes* death: and therefore I doe counſell you Sir, that you doe not omit to be preſent to morrow at his buriall, which will be worthy the ſeeing, for *Griſoſtome* hath many friends, & the place wherein he commaunded himſelfe to bee buried is not halfe a league from hence. I doe meane to be there, ſaid *Don-Quixote*, and doe render thee many thankes for the delight thou haſt giuen me, by the relation of ſo pleaſant

a History. O quoth the Goat-heard, I doe not yet know the halfe of the aduentures succeeded to *Marcelas* louers, but peraduenture we may meete some Sheepheard on the way to morrow that will tell them vnto vs. And for the present you will do well to goe take your rest vnder some roofe, for the ayre might hurt your wound, although the medicine be such that I haue applied toit, that any contrary accidents needes not much to bee feared. *Sancho Panca* being wholly out of patience with the Goat-heards long discourse, did sollicite for his part his Master so effectually as he brought him at last into *Peters* Cabin to take his rest for that night; whereinto after he had entred, he bestowed the remnant of the night in remembrances of his Lady *Dulcinea* in imitation of *Marcelas* louers. *Sancho Panca* did lay himselfe downe betweene *Rozinante* and his Asse, and slept it out, not like a disfauored louer, but like a man stamped and bruised with tramplings.

CHAP. V.

Wherein is finished the History of the Pastora Marcela, *with other accidents.*

BVT scarce had the day begun to discouer it selfe by the Orientall windowes, when fiue of the sixe Goat-heards arising, went to awake *Don-Quixote*, and demanded of him whether he yet intendde to go to *Grisostomes* buriall, and that they would accompany him. *Don-Quixote* that desired nothing more, got vp and commaunded *Sancho* to saddle and empannell in a trice; which he did with great expedition, and with the like they all presently began their iourney. And they had not yet gone a quarter of a league, when

when at the crossing of a path-way they saw sixe Sheepheards comming towards them, apparrelled with blacke skinnes, and crowned with Garlands of *Cypresse* and bitter *Ennla campana*. Euery one of them caried in his hand a thicke truncheon of Elme. There came likewise with them two Gentlemen a horse-backe, very well furnished for the way, with other three Lackeyes that attended on them. And as soone as they encountred, they saluted one another courteously, and demaunded whether they trauelled; and knowing that they all went towards the place of the buriall they began their iourney together. One of the horse-men speaking to his companion, said, I thinke (M. *Vimaldo*) we shal account the time wel imployed that we shall stay to see this so famous an intertainment; for it cannot chuse but be famous according to the wonderfull things these Shephers haue recounted vnto vs, as well of the dead Sheepheard, as also of the murthering *Pastora*. It seemes so to me likewise, quoth *Vimaldo* And I say I would not onely stay one day, but a whole weeke rather then misse to behold it. *Don Quixote* demaunded of them what they had heard of *Marcela* and *Chrisostome*? The traueller answered, that they had encountred that morning with those Sheepheards, and that by reason they had seene them apparrelled in that mournfull attire, they demaunded of them the occasion thereof, and one of them rehearsed it, recounting the strangenesse and beauty of a certaine *Pastora* called *Marcela*; and the amorous pursuits of her by many, with the death of that *Chrisostome*, to whose buriall they rode. Finally, he tolde all that againe to him, that *Peter* had tolde the night before.

This discourse thus ended, another began, and was, that he who was called *Vimaldo*, demaunded of *Don-Quixote* the occasion that moued him to trauell thus armed thorough so peaceable a countrey? To whom *Don-Quixote* answered, the profession of my exercise doth not license

Digitized by Google or

or permit me to doe other: good dayes, cockering and ease were inuented for soft Courtiers; but trauell, vnrest, and armes were only inuented and made for those which the world termes Knights errant, of which number I my selfe (although vnworthy) am one, and the least of all. Scarce had they heard him say this, when they all helde him to be wood. And to finde out the truth better, *Vualdo* did aske him againe, what meant the word *Knights errant*? Haue not you read then, quoth *Don-Quixote*, "the Histories and Annals of England, wherein are treated the famous actes of King *Arthur*, whom we continually call in our *Castilian Romance* King *Artus*? of "whom it is an auncient and common tradition in the "Kingdome of Great *Brittaine* that hee neuer died, but "that he was turned by art of inchantment into a *Crow*, "and that in processe of time he shall returne againe to "raigne, and recouer his Scepter and Kingdome. For "which reason, it cannot be proued that euer since that "time vntill this, any Englishman hath killed a Crow. In "this good Kings time was first instituted the famous or-"der of Knighthood of the Knights of the *Round Ta-"ble*, and the loue that is there recounted, did in euery "respect passe as it is laid down betweene Sir *Launcelot "du Lake*, and Queene *Geneuer* the honourable Ladie "*Quintaniona* being a dealer, and priuie thereto. Whence "spring that so famous a dittie, and so celebrated here in "*Spaine* of, *Neuer was Knight of Ladies so well serued as* "Launcelot *when that he in Britanie arriued*, &c. With "that progresse so sweet and delightfull of his amorous "and valiant actes: and from that time forward the or-"der of Knight went from hand to hand, dilating and "spreading it selfe through many and sundry parts of the "world: and in it were famous and renouned for their "feats of armes, the valiant *Amadis du Gaule*, with all "his progenie vntill the fift generation: and the valo-"rous *Felixmarte* of *Hircania*, & the neuer-duely-prayed

Digitized by Google

"sed *Tirante the white*, together with Sir *Beuis* of *Hamp-*
"*ton*, Sir *Guy* of *Warwicke*, Sir *Eglemore*, with diuers o-
"thers of that nation and age. And almost in our dayes
"we saw, and communed, & heard of the inuincible and
"valiant Knight *Don Belianis of Greece*. This then good
"Sirs is to be a Knight errant, and that which I haue said
"is the order of Chiualry: wherein, as I haue already
"sayd, I although a sinner, haue made profession, and the
"same doe I professe, that those Knights professed, whom
"I haue aboue mentioned; and therefore I trauell tho-
"rough these solitudes and deserts, seeking aduentures,
"with full resolution to offer mine owne arme and per-
"son to the most dangerous that fortune shall present, in
"the aide of weake and needy persons.

By these reasons of *Don-Quixotes* the trauellers perfectly perceiued that he was none of the wisest, and knew the kinde of folly wherewithall he was crossed, whereat those remained wonderfully admired: that by the relation of the others came to vnderstand it; and *Viualdo* who was very discreete, and likewise of a pleasant disposition, to the end they might passe ouer the rest of the way without heauines vnto the rack of the burial, which the Sheepheards said was neere at hand, hee resolued to giue him further occasion to passe onward with his follies, & therfore said vnto him. Me thinkes, Sir Knight, that you haue profest one of the most austere professions in the world. And I doe constantly hold that euen that of the *Charter-*
"*house Monkes* is not neere so straight. It may bee as
"straight as our profession, quoth *Don-Quixote*, but that
"it should be so necessary for the world, I am within the
"breadth of two fingers to call it in doubt. For if wee
"would speake a truth, the souldier that puts in execuți-
"on his Captaines commaund, doth no lesse then the ve-
"ry Captaine that commaunds him. Hence I inferre that
"religious men doe with all peace and quietnesse seeke
"of heauen the good of the earth. But souldiers and we

Knights

"Knights doe put in execution that which they demand,
"defending it with the valour of our armes, and files of
"our swords: not vnder any roofe, but vnder the wide
"heauens, made as it were in Summer a marke to the in-
"supportable Sunne beames, and in Winter to the rage
"of withering frosts. So that wee are the ministers of
"God on earth, and the armes wherewith he executeth
"here his iustice. And as the affaires of warre and things
"therunto pertayning, cannot be put in execution with-
"out sweate, labour and trauell; it followes that those
"which professe warfare take questionlesse greater paine
"then those which in quiet peace and rest doe pray vnto
"God, that he will fauour, and assist those that neede it.
"I meane not therefore to affirme, nor doth it once passe
"through my thought, that the state of a Knight errant
"is as perfect as that of a retyred religious man, but on-
"ly would inferre through that which I my selfe suffer;
"that it is doubtlesly more laborious, more battered,
"hungry, thirsty, miserable, torne and lowsie. For the
"Knights errant of times past did without all doubt suf-
"fer much woe and miserie in the discourse of their life.
"And if some of them ascended at last to Empires, won
"by the force of their armes, in faith it cost them a great
"part of their sweate and bloud: and if those which
"mounted to so high a degree had wanted those inchan-
"ters and wisemen that assisted them, they would haue
"remained much defrauded of their desires, and greatly
"deceiued of their hopes. I am of the same opinion re-
plied the traueller: but one thing among many others
hath seemed to me very ill in Knights errant, which is
when they perceiue themselues in any occasion to begin
any great and dangerous aduenture: in which appeares
manifest perill of losing their liues, they neuer in the in-
stant of attempting it, remember to commend themselues
to *God*, as euery *Christian* is bound to doe in like dan-
gers, but rather doe it to their Ladies with so great desire
and

and deuotion as if they were their Gods; a thing which "in mine opinion smelles of gentility. Sir, quoth *Don.* "*Quixote*, they can doe no lesse in any wise, and the "Knight errant which did any other, would digresse "much from his duety. For now it is a receiued vse and "custome of errant Chiualry, that the Knight aduen-u-"rous, who attempting of any great feate of armes shall "haue his Lady in place, do mildely and amorously turne "his eyes towards her, as it were by them demaunding "that she doe fauour and protect him in that ambiguous "traunce which he vndertakes; and moreouer if none "doe heare him he is bound to say certaine wordes be-"tweene his teeth, by which he shall with all his heart "commend himselfe to her: and of this we haue innume-"rable examples in Histories. Nor is it therefore to be "vnderstood that they do omit to commend themselues "to God, for they haue time and leisure enough to doe "it, in the progresse of the worke.

For all that, replied the trauceller, there remaines in me yet one scruple, which is, that oftentimes as I haue read, some speech begins betweene two Knights errant, and from one word to another their choler begins to be in-flamed, and they to turne their horses, and to take vp a good piece of the fielde, and without any more adoe to runne as fast as euer they can driue to incounter againe; and in the midst of their race, doe commend themselues to their dames, and that which commonly ensues of this incountring is, that one of them fals downe throwne o-uer the crouper of his horse, past thorow and thorow by his enemies Launce, and it befals the other, that if he had not caught fast of his horse mane, he had likewise falne. And here I cannot perceiue how he that is slaine had any leisure to commend himselfe vnto God in the discourse of this so accelerate and hasty a worke? Me thinkes it were better that those words which he spent in his race on his Lady, were bestowed as they ought, and as euery *Christi-*

Digitized by Google

an

an is bound to bestow them. And the rather, because I coniecture that all Knights errant haue not Ladies to whom they may commend themselues, for all of them are not amorous.

" That cannot be answered *Don-Quixote*, I say it can-" not be that there's any Knight errant without a Lady; " for it is as proper and essential to such to be enamored, " as to heauen to haue starres: and I dare warrant that " no History hath yet bin seene, wherin is found a Knight " errant without loues: for by the very reason that hee " were found without them, he wold be conuinced to be " no legitimate Knight, but a bastard, and that he entred " into the Fortresse of *Chivalrie*; not by the gate, but by " leaping ouer the *Staccado* like a robber and a thiefe.

Yet notwithstanding replied the other, I haue read (if I doe not forget my selfe) that *Don Gatuor*, brother to the valorous *Amadis du Gaule*, had neuer any certain Maystresse, to whom he might commend himselfe; and yet for all that he was nothing lesse accounted of, and was a most valiant and famous Knight. To that obiection our *Don-Quixote* answered, one Swallow makes not a Summer. How much more that I know, that the Knight whom you alleage, was secretly very much enamoured: besides that, that his inclination of louing all Ladies well, which he thought were faire, was a naturall inclination, which he could not gouerne so well. But it is in conclusion sufficiently verified, that yet he had one Lady whom he crowned Queen of his will, to whom he did also commend himselfe very often and secretly, for hee did not a little glory to be so secret in his loues.

Then Sir, if it be of the essence of all Knights errant to be in loue, quoth the trauellet, then may it likewise bee presumed that you are also enamoured, seeing that is annext to the profession? And if you doe not prize your selfe to be as secret as *Don Gatuor*, I doe intreate you as earnestly as I may, in all this companies name and mine owne,

owne, that it will please you to tell vs the name, countrey, quality and beauty of your Ladie; for I am sure shee would account her selfe happy to think that all the world doth know shee is beloued and serued by so worthy a Knight as is your selfe. Here *Don-Quixote* breathing "forth a deepe sigh, said, I cannot affirme whether my "sweete enemy delight or no, that the world know how "much she is beloued, or that I serue her. Onely I dare "auouch (answering to that which you so courteously "demaunded) that her name is *Dulcinea*, her countrey "*Toboso*, a Village of *Mancha*: her calling must be at "least of a Princesse, seeing she is my Queene and Lady, "her beauty soueraigne; for in her are verified and giue "glorious lustre to all those impossible and *Chimericall* "attributes of beauty, that *Poets* giue to their Maystres- "ses: that her haires are golde, her forehead the Elisian "fields, her brows the Arkes of heauen, her eyes Sunnes, "her cheekes Roses, her lips currall, her teeth Pearles, her "neck Alablaster, her bosome Marble, Iuorie her hands, "and her whiteneſſe Snow, and the parts which modesty "conceales from humane sight, such as I thinke and vn- "derstand, that the discreete consideration may prize, but "neuer be able to equalize them: her linage, progeny, and pedegree wee desire to know likewise, quoth *Vinaldo*. "To which *Don-Quixote* answered, she is not of the an- "cient Romane *Curcios*, *Cayos*, or *Scipios*, nor of the mo- "derne *Colonnas* or *Vrsinos*, nor of the *Moncadas* or "*Requesenes* of *Catalunia*, and much lesse of the *Rebelias* "and *Villanouas* of *Valencia*, *Palafoxes*, *Nucas*, *Rocaber-* "*tis*, *Corelias*, *Alagones*, *Vrreas*, *Fozes* and *Gurreas* of "*Aragon*, *Cerdas* *Manziquez*, *Mendocas*, and *Guzmanes* "of *Castile*, *Lancasters*, *Palias* and *Meneses* of *Portugal*; "but she is of those of *Toboso* of the *Mancha*; a linage, "which though it be moderne is such as may giue a ge- "nerous beginning to the most noble families of ensuing "ages. And let none contradict me in this, if it be not

Digitized by Google

" with thoſe conditions that *Cerbino* put at the foote of " *Orlandos* armour, to wit:

Let none from hence preſume theſe armes at all to moue,
But he that with Orlando *dares his force for to proue.*

Although my linage be of the *Cachopines* of *Laredo*, replied the traueller, yet dare I not to compare it with that of *Toboſo* in the *Mancha*, although to ſpeake ſincerely, I neuer heard any mention of that linage you ſay vntill now. What, quoth *Don-Quixote*, is it poſſible that you neuer heard of it till now?

All the company trauelled, giuing maruellous attention to the reaſons of thoſe two; and euen the very Goatheards and Sheepeheards began to perceiue the great want of iudgement that was in *Don-Quixote*, only *Sancho Panca* did verily beleeue, that all his Maſters wordes were moſt true, as one that knew what he was, from the very time of his birth. But that wherein his beleefe ſtaggered ſomewhat was of the beautifull *Dulcinea* of *Toboſo*; for he had neuer heard ſpeake in his life before of ſuch a name, or Princeſſe, although hee had dwelled ſo many yeares hard by *Toboſo*.

And as they trauelled in theſe diſcourſes, they beheld diſcending betwixt the clift of two loftie mountaines to the number of twenty Sheepheards, all apparrelled in skinnes of blacke wooll, and crowned with garlands; which as they perceiued afterward, were all of Ewe and Cipreſſe; ſixe of them carried a beare, couered with many ſorts of flowers and boughes. Which one of the Goatheards eſpying, hee ſaid, thoſe that come there are they which bring *Griſoſtoms* body, & the foot of that mountain is the place where hee hath commaunded them to burie him. Theſe wordes were occaſion to make them haſt to arriue in time; which they did iuſt about the inſtant that the others had laid downe the corpes on the ground: and foure of them with ſharpe pickaxes did digge the graue at the ſide of a hard rocke. The one and the others ſalu-

Digitized by Google

ted

ted themselues very courteously, and then *Don-Quixote*, and such as came with him, began to behold the Beare, wherein they saw laid a dead body all couered with flowers, and apparrelled like a Sheepheard of some thirtie years old; and his dead countenance shewed that he was very beautifull and an able bodied man. He had placed round about him in the Beare certaine bookes, and many papers, some open and some shut, and altogether, as well those that beheld this as they which made the graue, and al the others that were present kept a maruellous silence, vntill one of them which had caried the dead man, said to another. See well *Ambrosio*, whether this be the place that *Grisostome* said, seeing that thou wouldest haue all so punctually obserued, which hee commaunded in his Testament? This is it, answered *Ambrosio*, for many times *my* vnfortunate friend recounted to me in it the History of his mishaps: euen there he tolde me that he had seene that cruell enemy of mankinde first; and there it was, wher he first broke his affection to as honest as they were amorous: and there was the last time, wherein *Marcela* did end to resolue, and began to disdaine him, in such sort as she set end to the Tragedie of his miserable life. And here in memory of so many misfortunes, he commaunded himselfe to be committed to the bowels of eternall obliuion, and conuerting himselfe to *Don Quixote*, and to the other trauellers he said: This body Sirs which you do now behold with pitifull eyes, was the depository of a soule wherein heauen had hourded vp an infinite part of his treasures. This is the body of *Grisostome*, who was peereleſſe in wit, without fellow for courtesie, rare for comlinesse, a Phœnix for friendship, magnificent without measure, graue without presumption, pleasant without offence; and finally the first in all that which is good, and second to none in all vnfortunate mischances. He loued well, and was hated; he adored and was disdained; hee prayed to one no lesse sauage then a beast; he importu

ned a heart as hard a Marble; he pursued the winde, he cried to desarts, he serued ingratitude, and he obtayned for reward the spoyles of death in the midst of the Cariere of his life: to which a Sheepheardesse hath giuen end whom he laboured to eternize, to the end she might euer liue in the memories of men: as those papers which you see there might very well proue, had he not commanded me to sacrifice them to the fire, as soone as his body was rendred to the earth.

If you did so quoth *Vivaldo*, you would vse greater rigour and crueltie towards them then their very Lord, nor is it discreete or justly done that his will bee accomplished, who commands any thing repugnant to reason. Nor should *Augustus Cæsar* himselfe haue gained the reputation of wisedome, if he had permitted that to be put in execution which the diuine *Mantuan* had by his will ordeined. So that Seignior *Ambrosio*, now that you commit your friends body to the earth, do not therefore commit his labour to oblivion; for though hee ordeined it as one iniured, yet are not you to accomplish it, as one void of discretion: but rather cause, by giuing life to these Papers, that the crueltie of *Marcela* may liue eternally, that it may serue as a document to those that shall breathe in insuing ages that how they may auoide and shunne the like downefals: for both my selfe and all those that come here in my companie, doe already know the Historie of your enamoured and despairing friend, the occasion of his death, and what he commaunded care hee deceased. Out of which lamentable relation may be collected how great hath beene the crueltie of *Marcela*, the loue of *Grisostome*, the faith of your affection, and the conclusion which those make, which doe rashly runne through that way, which indiscreete loue doeth present to their view. Wee vnderstood yesternight of *Grisostomes* death, and that he should be entred in this place, and therefore wee omitted our intended iournyes both for curiositie and pi-

tie,

tie, and resolued to come and behold with our eyes, that, the relation wherof did so much grieue vs in the hearing; and therefore we desire thee (discreete *Ambrosio*) both in reward of this our compassion, and also of the desire which springs in our brests to remedie this disaster if it were possible; but chiefly I for my part request thee, that omitting to burne these Papers thou wilt licence mee to take away some of them. And saying so without expecting the Shepheards answere, he stretched out his hand and tooke some of them that were next to him. Which *Ambrosio* perceiuing, said, I will consent Sir for courtesies sake, that you remaine Lord of those which you haue ceased vpon, but to imagine that I would omit to burne these that rest, were a very vaine thought. *Vmaldo*, who did long to see what the papers contained which he had gotten, did vnfould presently one of them, which had this title, *A Ditty of dispaire*. *Ambrosio* ouerheard him and said; that is the last paper which this vnfortunate Sheepheard wrote, and because Sir that you may see the termes to which his mishaps conducted him: I pray you to reade it, but in such manner as you may be heard; for you shall haue leisure enough to doe it whilst the graue is a digging. I will doe it with all my heart, replied *Vmaldo*, and all those that were present, hauing the like desire to heare it, they gathered about him, and he reading it with a cleere voyce pronounced it thus:

Digitized by Google

CHAP. VI.

Wherein are rehearsed the dispayring of Verses of the dead Sheepheard, with other vnexpected accidents.

The Canzone of Grisostome.

1 *Since cruell thou (I publish) dost desire,*
From tongue to tongue, & th'one to th'o-
The efficacy of thy rigor sharp (ther pole
I'le hell constram t'assist my soules desire,
And in my brest infuse a tune of dole,
Wheron my voice, as it is wont may harp,
And labour as I wish, at once to carpe,
And tell my sorrowes and thy murdring deedes:
The dreadfull voyce and accent shall agree,
And with them meete for greater torture bee,
Lumpes of my wretched bowels, which still bleedes.
Then Listen, and lend once attentiue eare,
Not well consorted tunes, but howling t'heare,
That from my bitter bosoms depth takes flight:
And by constrayned rauing borne away,
Issues forth for mine ease and thy despight.
2 *The Lions roaring and the dreadfull howles*
Of rauening Waise; and hissing terrible
Of squamy Serpent: and the fearefull bleate
Of some sad monster: of foretelling fooles
The Pies crackling, and rumor horrible
Of the contending winde, as it doth beate
The Sea: and implacable bellowing, yet
Of vanquisht Bull: and of the Turtle sole
The feeling mourning, and the dolefull song
Of th'enuious Owle, with the dyre plaints among,
Of all th'infernall Squadron full of dole,
Sallie with my lamenting soule a round,

Digitized by Google

All

All mixed with so strange vnusuall sound,
As all the senses may confounded bee.
For my fierce torments a new way exact,
Wherein I may recount my miserie.
3 *The dolefull Ecchoes of so great confusion,*
Shall not resound o're father Tagus sands,
Nor touch the Olive-watring Betis eares.
Of my dyre pangs I'le onely make effusion
Mongst those steepe rockes, and hollow bottom lands,
With mortified tongue, but lining teares,
Sometimes in hidden dales where nought appeares,
Or in vnhaunted plaines free from accesse:
Or where the Sunne could ne're intrude a beame,
Amidst the venemous crue of beasts vncleane,
Whose wants with bounty, the free plaines redresse.
For though among those vast and desart downes
The hollow Eccho indistinctly sounds,
Thy matchles rigor, and my cruell paine.
Yet by the priuiledge of my niggard fates,
It will their force throughout the world proclaime.
4 *A disdaine kils; and patience runs a ground,*
By a suspicion eyther false or true:
But iealousie with greater rigour sleese,
A prolixe absence doth our life confound.
Against feare of oblivion to insue,
Firme hope of best successe, giues little ease.
Inevitable death lurkes in all these.
But I (O vnseene miracle) doe still liue
Iealous, absent, disdainde, and certaine too
Of the suspicions that my life vndoo,
Drownde in oblivion which my fire reuiues.
And amongst all those paines I neuer scope
Got, to behold the shadow once of hope:
Nor thus dispaired would I it allow.
But cause I may more aggrauate my moanes,
To liue euer without it, here I vow.

Digitized by Google

5 Can hope and feare at once in one consist?
Or is it reason that it should be so?
Seeing the cause more certaine is of feare.
If before me dyre Iealousie exist,
Shall I deflect mine eyes? since it will show
It selfe by a thousand wounds in my soule there.
Or who will not the gates unto dispaire
Wide open set, after that he hath spide
Murdring disdaine? and noted each suspicion,
To seeming truths transformde, O sowre conuersion!
Whilst verity by falshood is belide?
O Tyrant of Loues state fierce iealousie
With cruell chaines, these hands together tie,
With stubborne cords couple them rough disdaine.
But wo is me with bloudy victory,
Your memory, is by my sufferance slaine.

6 I die in fine, and cause I le not expect
In death or life for the least good successe:
I obstinate will rest in Fantasie.
And say he doth well, that does affect.
And eke the soule most liberty possesse,
That is most thrall to loues old Tyrannie.
And will affirme mine euer enemie.
In her faire shrine, a fairer soule containes:
And her oblivion from my fault to spring,
And to excuse her wrongs will witnesse bring,
That loue by her in peace his state maintaines.
And with a hard knot and this strange opinion,
I will accelerate the wretched summon,
To which guided I am by her scornes rife.
And offer to the axe body and soule,
Without hope or reward of future life.

7 Thou that by multiplying wrongs dost show,
The reason forcing me t'use violence,
Vnto this loathsome life growne to me hatefull,
Since now by signes notorious thou mayst know

Digitized by Google

From my hearts deepeſt wound; how willingly ſenſe
Doth ſacrifice me to thy ſcornes vngrateſull.
If my deſerts haue ſeemde to thee ſo booteſull,
As thy faire eyes cleere heauen ſhou'd be orecaſt,
And clouded at my death: yet doe not ſo,
For I'le no recompence take for the woe
By which, of my ſoules ſpoyles poſſeſt thou waſt.
But rather laughing at my funerals ſad,
Shew how mine end, begins to make thee glad.
But tis a folly to aduiſe thee this,
For I know in my deaths acceleration
Conſiſts thy glory, and thy chiefeſt bliſſe.

8 *Let* Tantalus *from the profoundeſt deepes,*
Come, for it is high time now, with his thirſt:
And Siſifus *with his oppreſsing ſtone:*
Let Ticius *bring his Rauen that neuer ſleepes,*
And Ixion *make no ſtay with wheele accurſt,*
Nor the three ſiſters euer labouring on.
And let them all at once their mortall moane,
Tranſlate into my breſt, and lowely ſound
(If it may be a debt due to diſpaire)
And chaunt ſad obſequies with doleſull ayre,
Ouer a corſe vnworthy of the ground.
And the threefac'd infernall porter grimme,
With thouſand Monſters and Chymæras *dire,*
Reliſh the dolorous deſcant out amaine.
For greater Pompe then this I thinke not fit
That any dying louer ſhould obtaine.

9 *Deſpayring* Canzone *doe not thou complaine,*
When thou my ſad ſociety ſhalt refraine:
But rather ſince the cauſe whence thou didſt ſpring
By my misfortune growes more fortunate,
Euen in the graue, thou muſt ſhunne ſorrowing.

Griſoſtomes Canzone liked wonderfully all the hearers, although the reader thereof affirmed that it was not con

conformable to the relation that hee had receiued of *Marcelas* vertue and care of her selfe. For in it *Grisostome* did complaine of iealousies, suspicions and absence, being all of them things that did preiudice *Marcelas* good fame. To this obiection *Ambrosio* answered (as one that knew very well the most hidden secrets of his friend) you must vnderstand Sir, to the end you may better satisfie your owne doubt, that when the vnfortunate Sheepheard wrote that *Canzone*, he was absent from *Marcela*; from whose presence he had wittingly withdrawn himselfe, to see if he could deface some part of his excessiue passions, procured by absence. And as euery thing doth vexe an absent louer, and euery feare afflict him; so was *Grisostome* likewise tormented by imagined iealousies, and feared suspicions as much as if they were reall and true. And with this remaines the truth in her perfection and point of *Marcelas* vertue, who excepting that she is cruell, and somewhat arrogant, and very disdainefull, very enuy it selfe neyther ought nor can attaint her of the least defect. You haue reason, quoth *Vrualdo*, and so desiring to reade another paper, hee was interrupted by a marueilous vision (for such it seemed) that vnexpectedly offered it selfe to their view. Which was, that on the top of the rocke wherein they made the graue, appeared the Sheepheardesse *Marcela*, so faire, that her beauty surpassed farre the fame that was spread thereof; such as had not beheld her before, did looke on her then with admiration and silence: and those which were wont to view her remained no lesse suspended then the others, which neuer had seene her. But scarce had *Ambrosio* eyed her, when with an iresull & disdayning minde, he spake these words; Com'st thou by chance, O fierce Basiliske of these mountaines, to see whether the wounds of this wretch will yet bleed at thy presence? Or dost thou come to insult and vaunt in the Tragicall feats of thy sterne nature? Or to behold from that height, like another merciles *Nero*, the fire

Digitized by Google

fire of inflamed *Rome*? Or arrogantly to trample this infortunate Carkasse, as the ingratefull daughter did her father *Tarquines*? Tell vs quickly, why thou commest, or what thou dost most desire: for seeing I know that *Grisostomes* thoughts neuer disobeyed thee in life, I will likewise cause that all those his friends shall serue and reuerence thee.

" I come not here good *Ambrosio*, to any of those ends " thou sayest, quoth *Marcela*, but onely to turne for " mine honour, and giue the world to vnderstand how " little reason haue all those which make me the authour " eyther of their owne paines or of *Grisostomes* death; " and therefore I desire all you that bee here present, to " lend attention vnto me; for I meane not to spend much " time, or words to perswade to the discreete, so manifest " a truth. Heauen as you say, hath made me beautifull, & " that so much that my seature moues you to loue, almost " whether you will or no. And for the affection you shew " vnto me, you say, I and you affirme that I ought to loue " you againe: I knowe by the naturall instinct that " *Ioue* hath bestowed on me that each faire thing is ami- " able, but I cannot conceiue, why for the reason of be- " ing beloued, the partie that is so beloued for her beau- " tie, should be bound to loue her louer, although he be " foule. And seeing that foule things are worthy of hate, " it is a bad argument to say I loue thee because faire; " therefore thou must affect me, although vncomely. But " set the case that the beauties occurre equall on both " sides, it followes not therefore that their desires shou'd " runne one way. For all beauties doe not enamour, for " some doe onely delight the sight, and subiect not the " will; for if all beauties did enamour and subiect toge- " ther, mens wils would euer runne confused and stray- " ing, without being able to make any election; for the " beautifull subiects being infinite, the desires must also " perforce be infinite: and as I haue heard, true-loue

brookes

" brookes no diuiſion, and muſt needes be voluntary, and
" not enforced. Which being ſo, as I preſume it is, why
" would you haue me ſubiect my will forcibly, without a-
" ny other obligation then that, that you ſay you loue
" me? If not, tell me, if heauen had made me foule, as it
" hath made me beautifull, could I iuſtly complaine of
" you becauſe you affected mee not? How much more,
" ſeeing you ought to conſider, that I did not chuſe the
" beauty I haue, for ſuch as it is, heauen beſtow it *gratis*,
" without my demaunding or electing it. And euen as
" the Viper deſerues no blame for the poyſon ſhe caries,
" although therewithall ſhee kill, ſeeing it was beſtowed
" on her by nature, ſo doe I as little merite to be repre-
" hended becauſe beautifull; for beautie in an honeſt
" woman is like fire a farre off, or a ſharpe edged ſword,
" for neyther that burnes nor this cuttes any but ſuch as
" comme neere them. Honour and vertues are the orna-
" ments of the ſoule, without which, the faireſt body is
" not to be eſteemed ſuch. And if that honeſty be one of
" the vertues that adorneth and beautifies moſt the body
" and ſoule, why ſhould ſhe that is beloued becauſe faire,
" aduenture the loſſe thereof, to anſwere his intention
" which onely for his pleaſures ſake labours that ſhe may
" loſe it with all his force and induſtry? I was borne free,
" and becauſe I might liue freely, I made election of the
" ſolitude of the fields. The trees of theſe mountains are
" my companions, the cleere water of theſe ſtreames my
" mirrours. With the trees and waters I communicate
" my thoughts and beauty, I am a parted fire, and a ſword
" laid aloofe. Thoſe whom I haue enamoured with my
" ſight, I haue vndeceiued with my wordes: And if de-
" ſires be ſuſtained by hopes, I neuer hauing giuen any to
" *Griſoſtome* or to any other, it may well be ſaid that hee
" was rather ſlaine by his owne obſtinacy, then by my
" cruelty: and if I be charged that his thoughts were ho-
" neſt, and that I was therefore obliged to anſwere vnto
them:

Digitized by Google

"them, I say that when in that very place where you
"make his Sepulchre he first broke his minde vnto mee,
"I told him that mine intention was to liue in perpetuall
"solitude, and that onely the earth should gather the
"fruits of my solitarinesse, and the spoyles of my beauty;
"and if hee would after this my resolution persist obsti-
"linately without all hope, and saile against the winde,
"what wonder is it that he should bee drowned in the
"midst of the gulfe of his rashnesse? If I had intertained
"him, then were I false: if I had pleased him, then should
"I doe against my better purposes and proiects. He stri-
"ued being perswaded to the contrary: he dispaired e're
"he was hated. See then if it be reason that I beare the
"blame of his torment? Let him complaine who hath
"beene deceiued; let him dispaire to whom his promi-
"sed hopes haue failed; let him confesse it whom I shall
"euer call, let him vaunt whom I shall admit. But let
"him not call me cruell or an homicide, whom I neuer
"promised, deceiued, called or admitted. Heauen hath
"not yet ordained that I should loue by destiny, and to
"thinke that I will doe it by election may be excused.
"And loe this generall counsell serue euery one of those
"which sollicite me for his particular benefite: and let it
"be known that if any shall hereafter die for my loue,
"that he dies not iealous or vnfortunate: for whoso-
"euer loues not any, breedes not in reason iealousie in a-
"ny, nor should any resolutions to any be accounted dis-
"dainings. He that calles me a sauage and Basiliske, let
"him shunne me as a hurtfull and preiudiciall thing: he
"that calls me vngrateful, let him not serue me: he that's
"strange, let him not know me: he that's cruell, let him
"not follow me: for this sauage, this Basiliske, this in-
"grate, this cruell and strange one, will neither seeke,
"serue, know or pursue any of them. For if *Grisostomes*
"impatience and headlong desire slew him, why should
"mine honest proceeding and care bee inculped there-
withall?

" withal? if I preſerue mine integrity in the ſociety of theſe
" trees, why would any deſire me to loſe it, ſeeing euery
" one couets to haue the like himſelf, to conuerſe the bet-
" ter among men? I haue, as you all know, riches enough
" of mine own, and therfore doe not couet other mens. I
" haue a free condition, and I doe not pleaſe to ſubiect
" me. Neyther doe I loue or hate any. I do not deceiue
" this man or ſolicite that other; nor doe I jeſt with one,
" and paſſe the time with another. The honeſt conuer-
" ſation of the *Paſtoras* of theſe Villages, and the care of
" my Goats doe intertaine me. My deſires are limited
" by theſe mountaines, and if they doe iſſue from hence,
" it is to contemplate the beauty of Heauen, ſteps where-
" withal the ſoule trauels towards her firſt dwelling. And
ending here, without deſiring to heare any anſwer, ſhee
turned her backe and entred into the thickeſt part of the
wood, that was there at hand, leauing all thoſe that were
preſently maruellouſly admired at her beauty and diſcre-
tion.

Some of the Sheepheards preſent that were wounded
by the powerfull beames of her beautiful eyes, made proffer to purſue her, without reaping any profite out of her manifeſt reſolution made there in their hearing; which *Don-Quixote* noting, and thinking that the vſe of this Chiualry did iump fitly with that occaſion, by ſuccouring diſtreſſed damzels; laying hand on the pommell of his
" ſword, he ſaid in loude and intelligible words: Let no
" perſon of whatſoeuer ſtate or condition he be, preſume
" to follow the faire *Marcela*, vnder paine of falling in-
" to my furious indignation. She hath ſhowne by cleere
" and ſufficient reaſons, the little or no fault ſhe had in
" *Griſoſtomes* death, and how far ſhe liues from meaning
" to condiſcend to the deſires of any of her louers; for
" which reſpect it is iuſt that in ſtead of being purſued
" and perſecuted, ſhe be honored and eſteemed by all the
" good men of the world; for ſhe ſhowes in it, that it is
onely

Digitized by Google

"onely she alone, that liues therein with honest intenti-
"on. Now whether it was through *Don-Quixotes* me-
naces, or whether becauſe *Ambroſio* requeſted them to conclude with the obligation they ought to their good friend; none of the Sheepheards moued or departed from thence vntill the graue being made, and *Griſoſtomes* papers burned, they laid the body into it, with many teares of the beholders. They ſhut the Sepulchre with a great ſtone, vntill a monument were wrought, which *Ambroſio* ſaid he went to haue made, with an Epitaph to this ſenſe.

Heere of a louing Swaine
The Frozen Carkaſſe lies:
Who was a Heard likewiſe,
And died through diſdaine.
Sterne rigour hath him ſlaine,
Of a coy, faire, ingrate,
By whom loue doth dilate
Her Tyrannie amaine.

They preſently ſtrowed on the graue many flowers and boughes, and euery one condoling a while with his friend *Ambroſio*, did afterward bid him farewell and departed. The like did *Vinaldo* and his companion: and *Don-Quixote* bidding his hoſte and the trauellers adieu, they requeſted him to come with them to *Simil*, becauſe it was a place ſo fit, for the finding of aduentures, as in euery ſtreete and corner of it, are offered more then in any other place whatſoeuer. *Don-Quixote* rendred them thankes for their aduice, and the good will they ſeemed to haue to gratifie him, and ſaid, he neyther ought, nor would goe to *Simil*, vntill hee had freed all thoſe mountaines of theeues and robbers, whereof as fame ranne, they were full. The trauellers perceiuing his good intention, would not importune him more, but bidding him againe farewell, they departed, and followed on their iour-

ney:

ney: In which they wanted not matter of diſcourſe, as well of the Hiſtory of *Marcela* and *Griſoſtome*, as of the follies of *Don-Quixote*; who determined to goe in the ſearch of the *Paſtora Marcela*, and offer vnto her all that he was able to doe in her ſeruice. But it befell him not as he thought, as ſhall be rehearſed in the diſcourſe of this true Hiſtorie, giuing end heere to the ſecond

PART.

THE

Digitized by Google

THE DELIGHTFVLL HISTORY OF THE WITTY KNIGHT DON-QVIXOTE of the *MANCHA*.

THE THIRD PART.

CHAP. I.

Wherein is rehearſed the vnfortunate aduenture happned to Don-Quixote, *by encountring with certaine* Yangueſian *Carriers.*

THE wiſe *Cid Hamete Venengeli* recounteth that as ſoone as *Don-Quixote* had taken leaue of the Goatheards his hoſtes the night before, and of all thoſe that were preſent at the buriall of the Sheepheard *Griſoſtome*, he and his Squire did preſently enter into the ſame wood, into which they had ſeene the beautifull Sheepheardeſſe *Marcela* enter before. And hauing trauelled in it about the ſpace of two houres without finding of her, they arriued in fine to a pleaſant meadow, inriched with abundance of flouriſhing graſſe, neere vnto which runnes a delightful and refreſhing ſtreame, which did inuite, yea conſtraine them thereby to paſſe ouer the heat of the day, which did then beginne to enter with great feruour and ve-

vehemencie. *Don-Quixote* and *Sancho* alighted, and leauing the Asse and *Rozinante* to the spaciousnesse of these plaines, to feede on the plenty of grasse that was there, they ransackt their Wallet, where without any ceremony the master and man did eate, with good accord and fellowship, what they found therein. *Sancho* had neglected to tie *Rozinante* sure, that hee knew him to be so sober and little wanton, as all the Mares of the Stood of *Cordoua* could not make him to think the least sinister thought. But fortune did ordaine, or rather the Diuell who sleepes not at all houres, that a troupe of *Galician* Mares belonging to certaine *Yanguesian* Carriers, did feede vp and downe in the same valley: which Carriers are wont with their beasts to passe ouer the heats in places situated neere vnto grasse and water. And that wherein *Don-Quixote* hapned to be, was very fit for their purpose. It therefore befell that *Rozinante* tooke a certaine desire to sollace himselfe with the Ladie Mares, and therefore as soone as he had smelt them, abandoning his naturall pace and custome, without taking leaue of his Master, he began a litle swift trot, and went to communicate his necessities to them. But they, who as it seemed, had more desire to feed then to sollace them, entertained him with their heeles and teeth in such sort, as they broke all his gyrts, and left him in his naked haire, hauing ouerthrowne the Saddle. But that which surely grieued him most was, that the Carriers perceiuing the violence that was offered by him to their Mares, repaired presently to their succours, with clubs and trunchions, and did so belabour him, as they fairely laid him along. Now in this season *Don-Quixote* and *Sancho* (which beheld the bombasting of *Rozinante*) approached breathlesse, and *Don-Quixote* said to *Sancho*; for as much as I can perceiue friend *Sancho*, these men are no Knights, but base rascally people of vile quality: I say it, because thou mayest helpe me to take due reuenge, for the outrage which they haue done before

Digitized by Google

fore our face to *Rozinante*. What a diuell, quoth *Sancho*, what reuenge should we take, if these be more then twentie, and we but two, and peraduenture but one & a halfe. I am worth a hundred, replied *Don-Quixote*, and without making any longer discourse, hee set hand to his sword, and flew vpon the *Tanguesians*, and *Sancho Panca* mooued by his Lords example did the like: when with the first blow *Don-Quixote* piercing a buffe coate that one of them wore, wounded him grieuously in the showlder. The *Tanguesians* seeing themselues so rudely handled by two men onely, they being so many, ran to the stakes and trunchions of their carriage, and hemming in their aduersaries in the midst of them, they laid on them with admirable speede and vehemencie. True it is that at the second peale they strucke *Sancho* downe to the ground, and the like hapned to *Don-Quixote*, his dexterity and courage being nothing auailable in that traunce: and his fate so ordayning he fell iust at his coursers feete, who had not yet gotten vp: by which we may ponder the fury wherewithall trunchions batter, being placed in wrathfull and rusticall fists. The Carriers perceiuing the euill they had committed, trussing vp their loading with all possible speede, followed on their way, leauing both the aduenturers in a bad fashion, and a worse talent. The first that came to himselfe was *Sancho Panca*, who seeing his Lord neere vnto him, said with a weake and pitifull voyce, Sir *Don-Quixote!* O Sir *Don-Quixote!* What wouldest thou haue brother *Sancho*, replied the Knight with the like effeminate and dolefull tune? I would, quoth *Sancho* haue of your worship, a draught or two of the liquor of *Feoblus*, if you haue any of it at hand, perhaps it is good to cure broken bones, as well as it helpes wounds. What would we want vnhappy that I am, replied *Don-Quixote*, if I had it here, but I sweare vnto thee *Sancho Panca*, by the faith of a Knight errant, that before two daies passe (if fortune dispose not otherwise) I will haue it in my power,

Digitized by Google

wer, or it shall hardly escape my hands. I pray you, quoth *Sancho*, within how many dayes thinke you, shall we be able to stir our feete? I can say of my selfe, quoth the crushed Knight, that I cannot set a certaine terme to the dayes of our recouery, but I am in the fault of all, for I should not haue drawne my sword against men that are not Knights, as well as I am, and therefore I beleeue that the God of battels hath permitted that this punishment should be giuen vnto mee, in paine of transgressing the lawes of Knighthood. Wherefore brother *Sancho*, it is requisite that thou beest aduertised of that which I shall say vnto thee now, for it importeth both our goods very much, and is, that when thou beholdest that the like rascally Kenell doe vs any wrong, do not wait till I set hand to my sword against them; for I will not doe it in any sort. But draw thou thine, and chastise them at thy pleasure: and if any Knights shall come to their assistance and succour, I shal know then how to defend thee, and offend them with all my force; for thou hast by this perceiued by a thousand signes and experiences, how farre the valor of this mine inuincible arme extendeth it selfe (so arrogant remained the poore Knight, through the victory he had gotten of the hardy *Biscaine*.) But this aduice of his Lord seemed not so good to *Sancho Panca*, as that hee would omit to answer vnto him, saying, Sir, I am a peaceable, quiet, and sober man, and can dissemble any iniurie, for I haue wife and children to maintaine and bring vp: wherefore let this likewise be an aduice to you (seeing it cannot be a commandement) that I will not set hand to my sword in any wise, be it against Clowne or Knight: and that from this time forward I do pardon before God all the wrongs that they haue done, or shall doe vnto me, whether they were, be, or shall be done by high or low person, rich or poore, Gentleman or Churle, without excepting any state or condition. Which being heard by his Lord, hee said; I could wish to haue breath enough,

Digitized by Google

that

that I might answere thee with a little more ease, or that the griefe which I feele in this ribbe were asswaged euer so little, that I might *Panca* make thee vnderstand the errour wherein thou art. Come here poore foole, if the gale of Fortune hitherto so contrarie, doe turne in our fauour swelling the sayles of our desire in such sort as we may securely and without any hinderance arriue at the Hauen of any of those Ilands, which I haue promised vnto thee what would become of thee, if I conquering it did make thee Lord thereof, seeing thou wouldest disable thy selfe in respect thou art not a Knight, nor desirest to be one, nor wouldst haue valour or will to reuenge thine iniuries, or to defend thy Lordships? For thou must vnderstand that in the Kingdomes and Prouinces newly conquered, the minds of the inhabitants are neuer so thoroughly appeased or wedded to the affection of their new Lord, that it is not to be feared, that they wil worke some noueltie to alter things againe, and turne as men say afresh to trie fortune. And it is therefore requisite that the new possessour haue vnderstanding to gouerne, and valour to offend and defend himselfe in any aduenture whatsoeuer. In this last that hath befallen vs quoth *Sancho*, I would I had had that vnderstanding and valour of which you speake; but I vow vnto you by the faith of a poore man, that I am now fitter for plaisters then discourses. I pray you trie whether you can arise, and wee will helpe *Rozinante*, although he deserues it not, for he was the principall cause of all these troubles; I would neuer haue beleeued the like before of *Rozinante*, whom I euer held to bee as chaste and peaceable a person as my selfe. In fine, they say well, that one must haue a long time to come to the knowledge of bodies; and that there is nothing in this life secure. Who durst affirme that after those mightie blowes which you gaue to that vnfortunate Knight Errant, would succeede so in peste, and as it were in your pursuite this so furious a tempest of staues, that hath

hath diſcharged it ſelfe on our ſhoulders? Thine *Sancho* replied *Don-Quixote* are perhaps accuſtomed to beare the like ſhowers, but mine nurſed betweene * Cottons and Hollands, it is moſt euident that they muſt feele the griefe of this diſgrace. And were it not that I imagine, (but why doe I ſay I imagine?) I know certainely that all theſe incommodities are annext to the exerciſe of armes, I would here die for very wrath and diſpleaſure. To this the Squire anſwered, Sir, ſeeing theſe diſgraces are of the * eſſence of Knighthood, I pray you whether they ſucceede very often, or whether they haue certaine times limited wherein they befall. For mee thinkes that within two aduentures more, we ſhall wholly remaine diſinabled for the third, if the Gods in mercy doe not ſuccour vs. Know friend *Sancho*, replied *Don-Quixote*, that the life of Knights errant is ſubiect to a thouſand dangers and misfortunes; and it is alſo as well in the next degree and power to make them Kings and Emperours, as experience hath ſhowne in ſundry Knights, of whoſe Hiſtories I haue intire notice. And I could recount vnto thee now, (did the paine I ſuffer permit me) of ſome of them which haue mounted to theſe high degrees which I haue ſaid, onely by the valour of their arme. And the very ſame men found them both before and after in diuers miſeries and calamities. For the valorous *Amadis of Gaule* ſaw himſelfe in the power of his mortall enemy *Arcalaus* the inchanter, of whom the opinion runnes infallible, that he gaue vnto him being his priſoner, more then two hundred ſtripes with his horſe bridle, after he had tied him to a piller in his baſe-court. And there is moreouer a ſecret Authour of no little credite, who ſayes that the *Cauallier del Febo*, being taken in a ginne like vnto a ſnatch that ſlipt vnder his feet, in a certaine Caſtell, after the fall found himſelfe in a deep dungeon vnder the earth bound hands and feete; and there they gaue vnto him a gliſter of ſnow water and ſand, which brought him almoſt to the end of his

* *Sinabaſes.*

* *Coſcoba.*

Digitized by Google

his life, and were it not that hee was ſuccoured in that great diſtreſſe, by a wiſe man his very great friend, it had gone ill with the poore Knight. So that I may very well paſſe among ſo many worthy perſons: for the dangers and diſgraces they ſuffred were greater then thoſe which we doe now indure. For *Sancho* I would haue thee to vnderſtand, that theſe wounds which are giuen to one with thoſe inſtruments that are in ones hand by chaunce, doe not diſgrace a man; and it is written in the lawes of ſingle combat in expreſſe termes, that if the Shoe-maker ſtrike another with the Laſt which hee hath in his hand, although it be certainly of wood, yet cannot it be ſaid, that he who was ſtriken got the Baſtanado. I ſay this to the end thou maiſt not thinke, although we remain bruiſed in this laſt conflict, that therefore we be diſgraced; for the armes which thoſe men bore, and wherewithall they belaboured vs, were none other then their packe ſtaues, & as farre as I can remember, neuer a one of them had a tucke, ſword, or dagger. They gaue mee no leiſure, anſwered *Sancho*, to looke to them ſo neerely, for ſcarce had I laide hand on my Truncheon, when they bliſt my ſhoulders with their Pines, in ſuch ſort as they wholly depriued me of my ſight, and the force of my feete together, ſtriking mee downe on the place where I yet lie ſtraught, and where the paine of the diſgrace receiued by our Cudgelling, doeth not ſo much pinch me, as the griefe of the blowes, which ſhall remaine as deepely imprinted in my memorie as they doe in my backe. For all this thou ſhalt vnderſtand brother *Panca*, replied *Don-Quixote*, that there is no remembrance, which time will not end, nor griefe which death will not conſume. What greater misfortune quoth *Sancho* can there be then that, which onely expecteth time and death to end and conſume it? If this our diſgrace were of that kind, which might bee cured by a payre or two of playſters, it would not be ſo euill; but I begin to perceiue, that all the ſalues

Digitized by Google

of an Hoſpitall will not ſuffice to bring them to any good termes. Leaue off *Sancho*, and gather ſtrength out of weakeneſſe, ſaid *Don-Quixote*, for ſo will I likewiſe doe, and let vs ſee how doth *Rozinante*; for me thinks that the leſt part of this miſhap hath not falne to his lot: you ought not to maruell at that, quoth *Sancho*, ſeeing he is likewiſe a Knight errant; that whereat I wonder, is that mine Aſſe remaines there without payment, where wee are come away without ribbes. Fortune leaues alwayes one doore open in diſaſters, quoth *Don-Quixote*, whereby to remedie them. I ſay it, becauſe that little beaſt may ſupply *Rozinantes* want, by caryng of me from hence vnto ſome Caſtell, wherein I may be cured of my wounds. Nor do I hold this kinde of riding diſhonourable; for I remember to haue read that the good old *Silenus* tutor of the merry God of laughter, when hee entred into the Citie of the hundred gates, rode very fairely mounted on a goodly Aſſe. It is like, quoth *Sancho*, that he rode as you ſay vpon an Aſſe; but there is great difference betwixt riding and being caſt athwart vpon one like a Sacke of rubbiſh. To this *Don-Quixote* anſwered, the wounds that are receiued in battell, doe rather giue honour, then depriue men of it. Wherefore friend *Panca* doe not reply any more vnto me, but as I haue ſaid, ariſe as well as thou canſt, and lay me as thou pleaſeſt vpon thy beaſt, and let vs depart from hence, before the night ouertake vs in theſe deſarts. Yet I haue heard you ſay, quoth *Pancia*, that it was an ordinary cuſtome of Knights errant to ſleepe in Downes and deſarts, the moſt of the yeare, and that ſo to do they hold for very good hap. That is ſaid *Don-Quixote*, when they haue none other ſhift, or when they are in loue; and this is ſo true, as there hath beene a Knight that hath dwelt on a rocke expoſed to the Sunne, and the ſhadow, and other annoyances of heauen for the ſpace of two years, without his Ladies knowledge, and *Amadis* was one of that kind, when calling himſelf *Beltinebros*, he

Google

dwelt in the *Poore Rocke*, nor doe I know punctually eight yeares or eight monethes, for I doe not remember the History well; let it suffice that there hee dwelt doing of pennance, for some disgust which I know not, that his Ladie *Oriana* did him. But leauing that apart *Sancho*, dispatch and away before some other disgrace happen like that of *Rozinante* to the Asse. Euen there lurkes the Diuell, quoth *Sancho*, and so breathing thirty sobs and threescore sighes, and a hundred and twenty discontents and execrations against him that had brought him there, he arose, remayning bended in the midst of the way, like vnto a Turkish bow, without being able to addresse himselfe: and notwithstanding all this difficulty, he harnessed his Asse (who had beene also somewhat distracted, by the ouermuch liberty of that day) and after he hoysted vp *Rozinante*, who were he indued with a tongue to complain, would certainly haue borne his Lord and *Sancho* companie. In the end *Sancho* laid *Don-Quixote* on the Asse, and tied *Rozinante* vnto him, and leading the Asse by the halter, trauelled that way which he deemed might conduct him soonest towards the high way. And fortune which guided his affaires from good to better, after he had trauelled a little league, discouered it vnto him, neere vnto which he saw an Inne, which in despite of him, and for *Don-Quixotes* pleasure must needes be a Castle. *Sancho* contended that it was an Inne, and his Lord that it was not, and their controuersie indured so long, as they had leisure before they could decide it, to arriue at the lodging; into which *Sancho* without further verifying of the dispute, entred with all his loading.

Digitized by Google CHAP.

CHAP. II.

Of that which hapned vnto the ingenuous Knight, within the Inne, which he supposed to be a Castle.

THe Inkeeper seeing *Don-Quixote* laid ouerthwart vpon the Asse, demaunded of *Sancho*, what disease he had? *Sancho* answered that it was nothing but a fal down from a rock, and that his ribs were therby somewhat bruised. This Inkeeper had a wife, not of the condition that those of that trade are wont to be, for she was of a charitable nature, and would grieue at the calamities of her neighbours, and did therefore presently occurre to cure *Don-Quixote*, causing her daughter a very comely yong mayden to assist her to cure her guest. There likewise serued in the Inne an *Asturian* wench, who was broad-faced, flat-pated, saddle-nosed, blinde of one eye, and the other almost out; true it is that the comelinesse of her bodie supplied all the other defects. She was not seuen palmes long from her feete vnto her head, and her shoulders which did somwhat burden her, made her look ostner to the ground then she would willingly. This beautifull piece did assist the young mayden, and both of them made a very bad bedde for *Don-Quixote* in an olde wide chamber, which gaue manifest tokens of it selfe, that it had sometimes serued many yeares only to keepe chopt straw for horses; in which was also lodged a Carrier, whose bedde was made a little way off from *Don-Quixotes*, which though it was made of Canuasse, and couerings of his Mules, was much better then the Knights, that onely contained foure boords roughly plained, placed on two vnequall tressels; *A flockebed, which in the thinnesse seemed rather a Quilt*; full of pellets, and had not they shewen that they were wooll, through certaine breaches made

made by antiquity on the Ticke, a man would by the hardneſſe rather take them to be ſtones: a paire of ſheets made of the skinnes of Sargets, and a couerlet whoſe threedes, if a man would number, he ſhould not loſe one onely of the account. In this vngratious bed did *Don-Quixote* lie, and preſently the hoſteſſe and her daughter annoint him all ouer, and *Maritornes* (for ſo the *Aſturian* wench was called) did holde the candle. The Hoſteſſe at the playſtring of him, perceiuing him to be ſo bruiſed in ſundry places, ſhe ſaid vnto him that thoſe ſignes rather ſeemed to proceed of blowes then of a fall. They were not blowes, replied *Sancho*, but the rocke had many ſharpe ends and knobs on it, whereof euery one left behinde it a token; and I deſire you good Maſters, quoth he, to leaue ſome flaxe behinde, and there ſhall not want one that needeth the vſe of them; for I aſſure you my backe doth likewiſe ake. If that be ſo, quoth the Hoſteſſe, it is likely that thou didſt alſo fall: I did not fall, quoth *Sancho Panca*, but with the ſuddaine affright that I tooke at my Maſters fall, my body doth ſo grieue me, as mee thinkes, I haue beene handſomely belaboured. It may wel happen as thou ſaieſt, quoth the Hoſtlers daughter: for it hath befalne me ſundry times to dreame, that I fell downe from ſome high tower, and could neuer come to the ground and when I awaked, I did finde my ſelfe ſo troubled, and broken as if I had verily falne. There is the point Maſters, quoth *Sancho Panca*, that I without dreaming at all, but being more awake then I am at this houre, found my ſelfe to haue very few leſſe tokens and markes then my Lord *Don-Quixote* hath. How is this Gentleman called, quoth *Maritornes* the *Aſturian*? *Don-Quixote of the Manche*, replied *Sancho Panca*, and he is a Knight errant, and one of the beſt and ſtrongeſt that haue beene ſeene in the world theſe many ages. What is that, a Knight errant quoth the wench? Art thou ſo yong in the world, that thou knoweſt it not, anſwered *Sancho Panca*?

Panca? Know then sister mine, that a Knight errant is a thing, which in two words you see wel cudgelled, and after becomes an Emperour. To day he is the most vnfortunate creature of the world, and the most needy; and to morrow he wil haue two or three crowns of Kingdomes to bestow vpon his Squire. If it be so, quoth the Hostesse, why then hast not thou gotten at least an Earledome, seeing thou art this good Knight his Squire? It is yet too soone, replied *Sancho*, for it is but a moneth sithence wee began first to seeke aduentures; and we haue not yet encountred any worthy of the name. And sometimes it befals that searching for one thing we encounter another. True it is that if my Lord *Don-Quixote* recouer of this wound or fall, and that I be not changed by it, I would not make an exchange of my hopes for the best title of Spaine. *Don-Quixote* did very attentively listen vnto all these discourses, and sitting vp in his bedde as well as hee could, taking his Hostesse by the hand, hee said vnto her: "Beleeue me beautifull Lady, that you may count your "selfe fortunate; for hauing harboured my person in this "your Castle, which is such, that if I doe not praise it, it is "because men say, that proper praise stinkes, but my "Squire will informe you what I am: onely this I will "say my selfe, that I will keepe eternally written in my "memory the seruice that you haue done vnto me, to be "gratefull vnto you for it whilst I liue. And I would it "might please the highest heauens that loue held mee "not so inthralled and subiect to his lawes as he doth, "and to the eyes of that ingratefull faire, whose name I "secretly mutter, then should those of this beautifull "damzell presently signiorize my liberty. The Hostesse, her daughter, and the good *Maritornes* remained confounded, hearing the speech of our Knight errant, which they vnderstood as well as if hee had spoken Greeke vnto them, but yet they conceiued that they were wordes of complements and loue, and as people vnused to heare the like

like language, they beheld and admired him, and hee seemed vnto them a man of the other world, and so returning him thankes, with Tauernly phrase for his large offers, they departed. And the *Asturian Maritornes* cured *Sancho*, who needed her helpe no lesse then his Master.

The Carrier and she had agreed to passe the night together, and she had giuen vnto him her word, that when the guests were quiet and her Master sleeping, she would come vnto him, and satisfie his desire, as much as he pleased. And it is said of this good wench, that she neuer passed the like promise, but that she performed it, although it were giuen in the midst of a wood, and without any witnesse; for shee presumed to be of gentle bloud, and yet shee held it to be no disgrace to serue in an Inne, for shee was wont to affirme that disgraces and misfortunes brought her to that state. The hard, narrow, niggard, and counterfait bedde, whereon *Don-Quixote* lay, was the first of the foure, and next vnto it was his Squires, that only contained a matte and a couerlet, and rather seemed to be of thorne Canuasse, then woolle. After these two beddes followed that of the Carrier, made as wee haue said, of the pannels and furniture of two of his best Mules, although they were twelue all in number, faire, fat, and goodly beasts, for he was one of the richest Carriers of *Areualo*, as the Author of this history affirmeth, who maketh particular mention of him, because he knew him very well, * and besides some men say that hee was somewhat a kinne vnto him. Omitting that *Cid Mahamat Benengeli* was a very exact Historiographer, and most curious in all things, as may be gathered very well, seeing that those which are related being so minute and triuiall; he would not ouer slip them in silence.

By which those graue Historiographers may take example, which recount vnto vs matters so short and succinctly; as they doe scarse arriue to our knowledge, leauing the most substantiall part of the works drowned in the

* *Here the Author taxeth some one cunningly to be descended of a Moorish race.*

the inkehorne, either through negligence, malice, or ignorance. Many good fortunes beside the Authour of *Tablante de Ricamonte*, and him that wrote the booke wherein are rehearsed the acts of the *Counte Tomillas*, Lord with what precisenesse doe they describe euery circumstance? to conclude, I say, that after the Carrier had visited his Mules, and giuen vnto them their second ration, he stretched himselfe in his couerlets, and expected the comming of the most exquisite *Maritornes*. *Sancho* was also by this plaistered and laid downe in his bedde, and though he desired to sleepe, yet would not the griefe of his ribbes permit him. And *Don-Quixote* with the paine of his sides, lay with both his eyes open like a hare. All the Inne was drowned in silence, and there was no other light in it, then that of a lampe, which hung lighting in the midst of the entry. This maruailous quietnesse, and the thoughts which alwaies represented to our Knight the memory of the successes, which at euery pace are recounted in bookes of Knighthood (the principall Authours of his mishap) called to his imagination one of the strangest follies that easily may be coniectured, which was, he imagined that he arriued to a famous Castle (for as we haue said, all the Innes wherein he lodged seemed vnto him to be such) and that the Inne-keepers daughter was the Lord of the Castels, who ouercome by his comlinesse and valour, was enamoured of him, and had promised, that shee would come to solace with him for a good space, after her Father and Mother had gone to bedde. And howling all this quimera and fiction, which he himselfe had built in his braine for most firme and certaine, he beganne to be vexed in minde, and to thinke on the dangerous trance, wherein his honesty was like to fall, and did firmely purpose in heart not to commit any disloyaltie against his Lady *Dulcinea of Toboso*, although very *Queene Geneuer* with her Lady *Queintanonia*, should come to sollicite him. Whilest thus hee lay thinking of

these

theſe * follies, the houre approched (that was vnlucky for him) wherein the *Aſturian* wench ſhould come, who entred into the chamber in ſearch of her Carrier, in her ſmocke, barefooted, and her haire truſt vp in a coiſe of fuſtian, with ſoft and wary ſteps. But ſhee was ſcarſe come to the dore, when *Don-Quixote* felt her, and ariſing and ſitting vp in his bedde in deſpite of his [a] plaſters, and with great griefe of his ribbes, he ſtretched forth his armes to receiue his beautifull Damzell, the *Aſturian*, who crouching, and ſilently went groping with her hands, to finde out her ſweet heart, and incountred with *Don-Quixotes* armes, who preſently ſeazed very ſtrongly vpon one of her wreſts, and drawing her towards him (ſhee daring not to ſpeake a word) he cauſed her to ſit vpon his bedde ſide, and preſently groped her ſmocke, and although it was of [b] the ſtrongeſt Canuaſſe, hee thought it was moſt ſubtile and fine holland. Shee wore on her wreſts certaine bracelets of glaſſe, which he eſteemed to be precious, Orientall pearles. Her haire which was almoſt as rough as a horſe taile, he held to be wires of the gliſtringeſt gold of *Arabia*, whoſe brightneſſe did obſcure that of the Sunne. And her breath which certainly ſmelled like to ſtale ſalt fiſh, reſerued from ouer night, ſeemed vnto him a moſt redolent, aromaticall and ſweet ſmell, and finally he painted her in his phantaſie of the ſame very forme and manner; as hee had read in his bookes of Knighthood, of a certaine Princeſſe which came to viſit a Knight who was grieuouſly wounded, being ouercome by his loue, embelliſhed with all the ornaments that here we haue recounted: and the blindneſſe of this poore Gallant was ſuch, as neither the touching, ſauour, or other things that accompanied the good Damzell, could vndeceiue him, being ſuch as were able to make any other, ſaue a Carrier, vomit vp his bowels, but rather he made full account, that he held the Goddeſſe of loue betweene his armes, and holding her ſtill very

* *Deſperates.*

a *Biſmas.*

b *Harpiller.*

Digitized by Google

very fast, hee beganne to court her with a low and amo-
"rous voice in this manner. I could wish to finde my
"selfe in termes most high and beautifull Lady, to be a-
"ble to recompence so great a fauour, as that which
"with the presence of your matchlesse feature you haue
"shewen vnto me: but fortune (who is neuer weary of
"persecuting the good) hath pleased to lay mee in this
"bedde, therein I lie so broken and bruised, that although
"I were desirous to satisfie your will, yet is it impossible;
"specially seeing to thy impossibility may bee added a
"greater, to wit the promised faith which I haue giuen
"to the vnmatchable *Dulcinea of Toboſa*, the only Lady
"of my most hidden thoughts, for did not this let mee,
"doe not hold me to be so senseleſſe and madde a Knight
"as to ouerslip so fortunate an occasion as this, which
"your bounty hath offered to me.

Maritornes remained sweating through anxiety to see her selfe held so fast by *Don-Quixote*, and without either vnderstanding, or giuing attention to his wordes, shee laboured all that shee could to free her selfe from him without speaking a word. The Carrier whose badde intention kept him still waking, did feare his Lady from the time that shee first entred into the roome, and did attentiuely giue care to all *Don-Quixotes* discourses, and iealous that the *Asturian* should breake promise with him for any other, he drew nearer vnto *Don-Quixotes* bedde, and stoode quiet to see whereunto those wordes which hee could not vnderstand tended. But viewing that the wench striued to depart, and *Don-Quixote* laboured to with-hold her, the ieſt seeming euill vnto him, he vp with his arme, and discharged so terrible a blow on the inamoured Knights iawes, as hee bathed all his mouth in bloud, and not content here withall, he mounted vpon the Knight, and did treade on his ribbes, and passed them all ouer with more then a trotte. The bedde which was somewhat * vveake, and not very firme of foundation,

* Endeble.

being

being vnable to suffer the addition of the Carrier, fell downe to the ground, with so great a noise, as it waked the Innekeeper; who presently suspecting, that it was one of *Maritornes* conflicts, because shee answered him not, hauing called her lowdly, hee forthwith arose and lighting of a lampe he went towards the place where he heard the noise. The wench perceiuing that her Master came, and that he was extreme chollericke, did all ashamed and troubled runne into *Sancho Panca's* bedde, who slept all this while very soundly, and there crouched, and made her selfe as little as an egge. Her Master entered crying, whoore where art thou? I dare warrant that these are some of thy doings. By this *Sancho* awaked, and feeling that bulke lying almost wholly vpon him, he thought it was the night Mare, and beganne to lay with his fists here & there about him very swiftly, and among others wraught *Maritornes* I know not how many blows; who grieued for the paine shee indured there casting all honestly aside, gaue *Sancho* the exchange of his blowes so trimly, as shee made him to awake in despite of his sluggishnesse. And finding himselfe to be so abused of an vncouth person, whom he could not behold, he arose and caught hold of *Maritornes* as well as he could, and they both beganne the best fight and pleasantest skirmish of the world.

The Carrier perceiuing by the light which the Innekeeper brought in with him, the lamentable state of his Mistris, abandoning *Don-Quixote*, he instantly repaired to giue her the succor that was requisite, which likewise the Innekeeper did, but with an other meaning, for hee approched with intention to punish the wench, beleeuing that shee was infallibly the cause of all that harmony. And so as men say, the Cat to the Rat, the Rat to the Cord, the Cord to the Post; so the Carrier strucke *Sancho*, *Sancho* the wench, shee returned him againe his liberality with interest, and the Innekeeper laide lode vpon

pon his maide alſo. And all of them did mince it with ſuch expedition, as there was no leaſure at all allowed to any one of them for breathing. And the beſt of all was, that the Innekeepers lampe went out, and then finding themſelues in darkeneſſe, they belaboured one another ſo without compaſſion, and at once, as whereſoeuer the blow fell, it bruſed the place pittifully.

There lodged by chance that night in the Inne one of the Squadron of theſe, which are called of the old * holy brotherhood of *Toledo*, he likewiſe hearing the wonderfull noiſe of the fight, he laid hand on his rodde of office, and the tinne boxe of his titles, and entred into the chamber without light, ſaying, ſtand ſtill to the officer of Iuſtice, and to the holy brotherhood. And ſaying to the firſt whom hee met, was the poore battered *Don-Quixote*, who lay ouerthrowne in his bedde, ſtretched, with his face vpward without any feeling, and taking hold of his beard, he cryed out inceſſantly, helpe the Iuſtice. But ſeeing that hee whom hee held faſt bowed neither hand or foote, hee preſently thought that hee was dead, and that thoſe battaillants that fought ſo eagerly in the roome had ſlaine him; wherefore hee lifted his voice and cryed out lowdly, ſaying, ſhut the Inne dore, and ſee that none eſcape, for here they haue kild a man. This word aſtoniſhed all the combattants ſo much, as euery one left the battaile in the very termes, wherein this voice had ouertaken them. The Innekeeper retyred himſelfe to his chamber, the Carrier to his couerlets, the wench to her couch, and only the vnfortunate *Don-Quixote* and *Sancho*, were not able to moue themſelues from the place wherein they lay. The officer of the holy brotherhood in this ſpace, letting ſlip poore *Don-Quixotes* beard, went out for light, to ſearch and apprehend the delinquents, but he could not finde any, for the Innekeeper had purpoſely quenched the lampe, as hee retyred to his bedde wherefore the officer was conſtrained to repaire to the chimney

* *The holy brotherhood or the Sãcta Hermandad, are a certaine number of men whoſe chiefe office is to free the high way from robbers.*

Digitized by Google

chimney, where with great difficulty, after he had ſpent a long while doing of it, he at laſt lighted a candle.

CHAP. III.

Wherein are rehearſed the innumerable misfortunes which Don-Quixote *and his good Squire* Sancho *ſuffered in the Inne, which he to his harme thought to be a Caſtle.*

BY this time *Don-Quixote* was come to himſelfe againe out of his trance, and with the like lamentable note, as that wherewithall he had called his Squire the day before, when he was ouerthrowne in the value of the Packe-ſlaues, he called to him, ſaying, friend *Sancho* art thou a ſleepe? ſleepeſt thou friend *Sancho*? what I a ſleepe? I renounce my ſelfe quoth *Sancho*, full of griefe and deſpite, if I thinke not all the Diuels in hell haue beene viſiting of mee here this night. Thou maieſt certainly beleeue it replyed *Don-Quixote*, for either I know very little, or elſe this Caſtle is inchanted. For I let thee to wit, but thou muſt firſt ſweare to keepe ſecret that which I meane to tell thee now vntill after my death. So I ſweare, quoth *Sancho*. I ſay it, quoth *Don-Quixote*, becauſe I cannot abide to take away any bodies honour. Why, quoth *Sancho* againe, I ſweare that I will conceale it vntill after your Worſhips daies, and I pray God that I may diſcouer it to morrow. Haue I wrought thee ſuch harme, *Sancho* replied the Knight, as thou wouldeſt deſire to ſee me end ſo ſoone? it is not for that Sir quoth *Sancho*, but becauſe I cannot abide to keepe things long, leſt they ſhould rotte in my cuſtody; let it be for what thou pleaſeſt ſaid *Don-Quixote*,

Google.

" *Quixote*, for I doe truſt greater matters then that to thy
" loue and curteſie. And that I may rehearſe it vnto thee
" briefly, know that a little while ſince the Lord of this
" Caſtels Daughter came vnto me, who is the moſt faire
" and beautifull Damzell, that can bee found in a great
" part of the earth, what could I ſay vnto thee of the or-
" naments of her perſon? what of her excellent wit?
" what of other ſecret things, which, that I may pre-
" ſerue the faith due vnto my Lady *Dulcinea of Toboſo*, I
" paſſe ouer in ſilence? I will only tell thee, that heauen
" enuious of the ineſtimable good that fortune had put
" in my hands. Or perhaps (and that is moſt probable)
" this Caſtell, as I haue ſaid, is inchanted, iuſt at the time
" when wee were in moſt ſweet and amourous ſpeech,
" I being not able to ſee or know from whence it came,
" there arriued a hand ioyned to the arme of ſome migh-
" ty Giant, and gaue mee ſuch a blow on the jawes, as
" they remaine all bathed in bloud, and did after ſo
" thumpe and bruſe mee, as I feele my ſelfe worſe now,
" then yeſterday when the Carriers through *Rozinantes*
" madneſſe, did vſe vs as thou knoweſt. By which I con-
" iecture that the treaſure of this Damzels beauty, is kept
" by ſome inchanted Moore, and is not reſerued for me.
Nor for me quoth *Sancho*, for I haue beene bumbaſted by more then foure hundred Moores, which haue hammered me in ſuch ſort, as the bruſing of the Packe-ſtaues, was gilded bread and ſpice cakes in compariſon of it: but Sir I pray you tell me, how can you call this a good and rare aduenture, ſeeing we remaine ſo pitifully vſed after it? and yet your harmes may be accounted leſſe, in reſpect you haue held, as you ſaid, that incomparable beauty betweene your armes: but I, what haue I had other then the greateſt blowes that I ſhall euer haue in my life. Vnfortunate that I am, and the Mother which bare me, that neither am an errant Knight, nor euer meanes to be any, & yet the greateſt part of our miſhaps ſtil fals to my lot. It

Digitized by Google

ſeemes

seemes that thou wast likewise beaten, replyed *Don-Quixote*, euill befall my linage quoth *Sancho*, haue not I told you I was? be not grieued friend replied the Knight, for I will now compound the precious *Balsamum*, which will cure vs in the twinkling of an eye.

The officer hauing by this time alighted his lampe, entred into the roome to see him, whom he accounted to be dead, and as soone as *Sancho* saw him; seeing him to come in, in his shirt, his head lapt vp in a kerchiffe, the lampe in his hand, hauing withall a very euill fauoured countenance, hee demaunded of his Lord. Sir is this by chance the inchanted *Moore*, that comes anew to torment vs, for somewhat that is yet vnpunished? He cannot be the Moore answered *Don-Quixote*, for Nigromancers suffer not themselues to bee seene by any. If they suffer not themselues to bee seene quoth *Sancho*, they suffer themselues at least to bee felt, if not, let my shoulders beare witnesse. So might mine also said *Don-Quixote*, but notwithstanding this is no sufficient argument to proue him, whom wee see to bee the inchanted Moore; as thus they discoursed, the officer arriued, and finding them to communein so peaceable & quiet maniner, he rested admired. Yet *Don-Quixote* lay with his face vpward as he had left him, and was not able to stirre himselfe, he was so beaten and be plaistered. The officer approching demaunded of him. Well how dost thou good fellow? I would speake more mannerly quoth *Don-Quixote*, if I were but such a one as thou art, is it the custome of this Countrey you bottle-head, to talke after so rude a manner to Knights errant? The other impatient, to see one of so vile presence, vse him with that badde language, could not indure it, but lifting vp the lampe oile and all, gaue *Don-Quixote* such a blow on the pate with it, as he broke his head in one or two places, and leauing all in darkenesse behinde him, departed presently out of the chamber, without doubt (quoth *Sancho* seeing this accident) Sir that

that was the inchanted *Moore*, and I thinke he keepeth the treasure for others, and reserueth only for vs fists, and lampe blowes. It is as thou saiest, quoth *Don-Quixote*, and therefore wee are not to make account of these inchantments, or be wroth and angry at them, for in respect that they are inuisible and fantasticall, wee shall not find him on whom we may take reuenge, though wee labour euer so much to doe it. Arise therefore *Sancho* if thou beest able, and call to the Constable of this Fortresse, and procure me some oile, wine, salt, and vineger, that I make the wholsome *Balsamum*, for verily I beleeue that I doe neede it very much at this time, the bloud runneth so fast out of the wound which the spirit gaue mee euen now. *Sancho* then got vp with griefe enough of his bones, and went without light towards the Innekeepers, and incountred on the way the officer of the holy brotherhood who stood hearkning what did become of his enemy; to whom hee said; Sir whosoeuer thou beest I desire thee, doe vs the fauour and benefit to giue me a little Rosmary, Oile, Wine, and Salt, to cure one of the best Knights errant that is in the earth, who lieth now in that bed sorely wounded by the hands of an inchanted Moore; that is in this Inne. When the officer heard him speake in that manner, hee held him to bee out of his wits, and because the dawning beganne, he opened the Inne dore, and told vnto the Host, that which *Sancho* demanded. The Innekeeper presently prouided all that he wanted, and *Sancho* carried it to his Master, who held his head betweene both his hands, and complained much of the griefe that the blow of his head caused, which did him no other hurt then to raise vp two blisters somewhat great, and that which hee supposed to bee bloud, was only the humour which the anxiety and labour of minde he past in this last darke aduenture, had made him to sweate.

In resolution *Don-Quixote* tooke his simples, of which he made a compound, mixing them altogether, and then

Digitized by Google boiling

boiling of them a good while, vntill they came (as hee thought) to their perfection, he asked for a violl wherein he might lay this precious liquor, but the Inne being vnable to afford him any such, hee resolued at last to put it into * a tinne oilepot, which the Host did make freely giue him, and forthwith he said ouer the pot eighty *Pater nosters*, and as many *Aues*, *Salues*, and *Creedes*, and accompanied euery word with a Crosse, in forme of benediction, at all which ceremonies *Sancho*, the Innekeeper, and the Officer of the holy brotherhood were present, for the Carrier went very soberly to dresse and make ready his Mules.

* *Hoſa de lata.*

The liquor being made, he himselfe would presently make experience of the vertue of that precious *Balsamum*, as he did imagine it to be, and so did drinke a good draught of the ouerplus that could not enter into his pot, being a quart or there abouts, and scarce had he done it; when he began to vomit so extremely, as he left nothing vncast vp in his stomacke, and through the paine and agitation caused by his vomits, hee fell into a very aboundant and great sweate, and therefore commanded himselfe to bee well couered, and left alone to take his ease. Which was done forthwith, and hee slept three houres, and then awaking, found himselfe so wonderfully eased, and free from all brusing and paine, as hee doubted not but that he was throughly whole; and therefore did verily perswade himselfe, that hee had hapned on the right manner of compounding the *Balsamum of Fierabras*: and that hauing that medicine, hee might boldly from thence forth, vndertake any ruines, battailes, conflicts, or aduentures, how dangerous soeuer: *Sancho Panca* who likewise attributed the suddaine eure of his Master to miracle, requested, that it would please him to giue him leaue to sippe vp the remainder of the *Balsamum*, which rested in the kettle, and was no small quantity; which *Don-Quixote* granted, and he lifting it vp between both

Digitized by Google

both handes, did with a good faith, and better talent, quaffe it off all, being little lesse then his Master had drunke. The successe then of the History is, that poore *Sanchos* stomacke, was not so delicate as his Lords, wherefore before hee could cast hee was tormented with so many cruell pangues, loathings, sweats, and disinayes, as hee did verily perswade himselfe, that his last houre was come: and perceiuing himselfe to bee so afflicted and troubled, hee cursed the *Balsamum*, and on the Theefe which had giuen it to him. *Don-Quixote* seeing of him in that pittifull taking, said, I beleeue *Sancho*, all this euill befalleth thee, because thou art not dubbed Knight: for I perswade my selfe, that this liquor cannot helpe any one that is not. If your Worship knew that, quoth *Sancho*, (euill befall mee and all my linage) why did you therefore consent that I should tast it?

In this time the drench had made his operation, and the poore Squire did so swift and vehemently discharge himselfe by both channels, as neither his mat, nor canuasse couering, could serue after to any vse. Hee swet and swet againe with such excessiue swoonings, as not only himselfe, but likewise all the beholders, did verily deeme, that his life was ending. This storme and misshappe endured about some two howres, after which hee remayned not cured as his Master, but so vveary and indisposed, as hee vvas not able to stand.

But *Don-Quixote*, vvho as vvee haue said felt himselfe eased and cured, vvould presently depart to seeke aduentures, it seeming vnto him that all the time vvhich hee aboade there, vvas no other then a depriuing, both of the world and needefull people, of his fauour and assistance; and more through the security and confidence that hee had in his *Balsa-*

Digitized by Google

mum

mum. And carried thus away by this desire, hee himselfe sadled his Horse *Rozinante*, and did empannell his Squires beast, whome hee likewise holpe to apparell himselfe, and to mount vppon his Asse. And presently getting a Horse-backe, hee roade ouer to a corner of the Inne, and laide hand on a Iaueline that vvas there, to make it serue him in steede of a Launce. All the people that were in the Inne stoode beholding of him, vvhich were aboue twenty in number.

The Innekeepers Daughter did also looke vppon him, and hee did neuer withdraw his eye from her, and would euer and anon breathe foorth so dolefull a sigh, as if hee had plucked it out of the bottome of his heart, vvhich all the beholders tooke to proceede from the griefe of his ribbes, but specially such as had seene him playstered the night before. And being both mounted thus a Horse-backe, hee called the Innekeeper and said vnto him with a graue and stayed voyce. Many and great are the fauours, "Sir Constable, vvhich I haue receiued in this "your Castell, and doe remayne most obliged to "gratifie you for them all the dayes of my life. And "if I may pay or recompence them by reuenging "of you vppon any prowde Miscreant, that hath "done you any vvrongs, know that it is mine Office to helpe the weake, to reuenge the wronged, and to chastise Traytours. Call therefore "to memory, and if you finde any thing of this "kinde to commend to my correction, you needc not "but once to say it, for I doe promise vnto you "by the Order of Knighthood, vvhich I haue receiued "to satisfie and appay you according vnto your owne "desire.

The Innekeeper answered him againe with like grauity and stayednesse, saying; Sir Knight, I shall not neede

your

your assistance when any wrong is done to me, for I know very well my selfe, how to take the reuenge that I shall thinke good when the iniury is offered. That only which I require is that you defray the charges whereat you haue beene here in the Inne this night, as well for the Straw and Barly giuen to your two horses, as also for both your beddes. This then is an Inne? quoth *Don-Quixote*. That it is and an honourable one too, replyed the Innekeeper. Then haue I hitherto liued in an errour, quoth *Don-Quixote*, for in very good sooth I tooke it till nowe to bee a Castell, and that no meane one neyther. But since that it is no Castell but an Inne, that which you may doe for the present time is to forgiue me those expences, for I cannot doe ought against the customes of Knights Errants; of all which I most certainely knowe (without euer hauing read vntill this present any thing to the contrarie) that they neuer paide for their lodging, or other thing, in any Inne whersoeuer they lay. For by all Law and right, any good entertainement that is giuen vnto them is their due, in recompence of the insupportable trauels they indure, seeking of aduentures both day and night, in Summer and Winter, a foote and a horsebacke, with thirst and hunger, in heate and cold, being subiect to all the distemperatures of Heauen, and all the discommodities of the earth. All that concernes me nothing replied the Inkeeper, pay vnto me my due, and leaue these tales and Knighthoods apart, for I care for nothing else, but how I may come by mine owne. Thou art a mad and a bad Host, quoth *Don-Quixote*, and saying so he spurd *Roxinante*, and flourishing with his Iaueline, hee issued out of the Inne, in despight of them all, and without looking behind him to see once whether his squire followed, he roade a good way off from it.

The Inkeeper seeing hee departed without satisfying him, came to *Sancho Panca*, to get his money of him

Digitized by Google

him, who answered, that since his Lord would not pay, he would likewise giue nothing, for being, as hee was Squire to a Knight-Errand, the very same rule and reason that exempted his Master from payments in Innes and Tauernes ought also to serue, and be vnderstood as well of him. The Inkeeper grew wroth at these words and threatned him, that if hee did not pay him speedily, hee would recouer it in manner that would grieue him. *Sancho* replied, swearing by the order of Knighthood which his Lord had receiued, that hee would not pay one denier, though it cost him his life, for the good and auncient customes of Knights Errants, should neuer through his default bee infringed, nor should their Squires which were yet to come into the world euer complaine on him, or vpbraide him for transgressing or breaking so iust a duetie. But his bad fortune ordained that there were at the very time in the same Inne fowre Clothiers of *Segouia*, and three Point-makers of the Stewes of *Cordoua*, and two neighbours of the Market of *Sinill*, all pleasant folke, well minded, malicious, and playsome, all which pricked and in a manner moued all at one time and by the very same spirit came neere to *Sancho*, and pulling him downe off his Asse, one of them ranne in for the Inkeepers Couerlet, and casting him into it, they looked vp and seeing the House was somewhat too low for their intended businesse, they determined to goe into the base Court, which was ouer head onely limitted by heauen, and then *Sancho* being laide in the midst of the Blanket, they began to toss him aloft and sport themselues with him, in the maner they were wont to vse Dogges at Shrouetide. The out-cries of the miserable betossed Squire were so many and so lowde, as they arriued at last to his Lords hearing, who standing a while to listen attentiuely what it was, beliefued that some new aduenture did approach, vntill hee perceiued at last that hee which cried was his Squire, where-

Digitized by Google

wherefore turning the Raignes, hee made towards the Inne with a loathsome galloppe, and finding it shut, he rode all about it to see whether hee might enter into it. But scarce was he arriued at the walles of the base court which were not very hie, when he perceiued, the foule play that was vsed towards his Squire, for hee saw him descend and ascend into the ayre againe with such grace and agilitie, that did his choller permit, I certainely perswade my selfe hee would haue burst for laughter. He assayed to mount the wall from his Horse, but hee was so bruised and broken, as he could not doe as much as a light from his backe. Wherefore from his backe he vsed such reprochfull and vile language to those which tossed *Sancha*, as it is impossible to lay them downe in writing. And notwithstanding all his scornefull speech, yet did not they cease from their laughter and labour, nor the flying *Sancho*, from his complaints, now and then medled with threats, now and then with intreaties; but auailed very little, nor could preuaile, vntill they were constrained by wearinesse to giue him ouer. Then did they bring him his Asse againe, and helping him vp vpon it, they lapt him in his * mantle. And the compassionate *Maritornes* beholding him so afflicted and orelaboured, thought it needfull to helpe him to a draught of water, and so brought it him from the well, because the water thereof was coolest. *Sancho* tooke the pot and laying it to his lips, he abstained from drinking by his Lords perswasion, who cryed to him aloud saying, Sonne *Sancho* drinke not water, drinke it not Sonne, for it will kill thee. Behold I haue here with me the most holy *Balsamum* (and shewed him the oile pot of the drenches he had compounded) for with only two drops that thou drinkest, thou shalt without all doubt remaine whole and sound. At those wordes *Sancho* looking behinde him, answered his Master with a lowder voice, haue you forgotten perhaps so soone, how

* *Gaual.*

Digitized by Google

that

that I am no Knight, or doe you desire, that I vomit the remnant of the poore bowels that remaine in mee since yesternight, keepe your liquor for your selfe in the Diuels name, and permit me to liue in peace; and the conclusion of this speech and his beginning to drinke, was done all in one instant, but finding at the first draught that it was water, he would not tast it any more, but requested *Maritornes* that shee would giue him some wine, which shee did streight with a very good will, and likewise paied for it out of her owne purse; for in effect it is written of her, that though shee followed that trade, yet had shee some shadowes and lineaments in her of Christianity. As soone as *Sancho* had drunken, he visited his Asse ribs with his heeles twise or thrise, and the Inne being opened he issued out of it, very glad that he had payed nothing, and gotten his desire, although it were to the cost of his ordinary sureties, to wit, his shoulders. Yet did the Innekeeper remaine possest of his wallets, as a payment for that he ought him, but *Sancho* was so distracted when he departed, as he neuer missed them. After he departed, the Innekeeper thought to haue shut vp the Inne doore againe, but the Gentlemen tossers would not permit, being such folke, that if *Don-Quixote* were verily one of the Knights of the round Table, yet would not they esteeme him two chips.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. IIII.

wherein are rehearsed the discourses passed betweene Sancho Panca, *and his Lord* Don-Quixote, *with other aduentures worthy the recitall.*

SAncho arriued to his Master all-wanne and dismayed, in so much as he was scarce able to spur on his beast. When *Don-Quixote* beheld him in that case, hee said to him, now do I wholly perswade my selfe friend *Sancho*, that that Castle or Inne, is doubtlesly inchanted. For those which made passime with thee in so cruell manner, what else could they be but spirits, or people of an other world: which I doe the rather beleeue, because I saw, that whilest I stoode at the barrier of the yard, beholding the acts of thy sadde Tragedy; I was not in any wise able either to mount it, or alight from *Rozinante*, for as I say, I thinke they held me then inchanted. For I vow to thee by mine honour, that if I could haue either mounted or alighted, I would haue taken such vengeance on those lewde and treacherous Caitifs, as they should remember the iest for euer, though I had therefore aduentured to transgresse the lawes of Knighthood. Which as I haue oftimes said vnto thee permitteth not any Knight to lay hands on one that is not Knighted, if it bee not in defence of his proper life and person, and that in case of great and vrgent necessity. So would I also haue reuenged my selfe, quoth *Sancho*, if I might, were they Knights or no Knights, but I could not: and yet I do infallibly belieue, that those which tooke their pleasure with me, were neither ghosts, nor inchanted men as you say, but men of flesh and bones as we are, and all of them as I heard them cald whilest they tossed mee had proper names, for one was tearmed *Peter Martinez*, and another

Digitized by Google

other *Tenorio Herriander*, and I heard also the Innekeeper called *Iohn Palameque the deafe*, so that for your inability of not leaping ouer the barriers of the yard, or alighting off your horse was only inchauntments in you. Whereby I doe clearly collect this much, that these aduentures which we goe in search of, will bring vs at last to so many disuentures, as wee shall not be able to know which is our right foote. And that which wee might doe best according to my little vnderstanding, were to returne vs againe to our village, now that is reaping time, and looke to our goods, omitting to leape thus as they say, out of the frying pan into the fire.

How little doest thou know *Sancho*, replyed *Don-Quixote*, what appertaineth to *Chiualry*; peace and haue patience, for a day will come wherein thou shalt see with thine owne eyes, how honourable it is to follow this exercise. If not, tell me, what greater content may there be in this world, or what pleasure can equall that of winning a battaile, and of triumphing ouer ones enemy? none without doubt. I thinke it be so, quoth *Sancho*, although I doe not know it; only this I know, that since we became Knights errant, or that you are one (for there is no reason why I should count my selfe in so honourable a number) wee neuer ouercame any battaile, if it was not that of the *Biscaine*, and you came euen out of the very same with halfe your eare and beauer lesse. And euer after that time, we haue had nothing but cudgels, and more cudgels, blowes, and more blowes. I carrying with me besides of ouerplus, the tossing in the blanket, and that, by reason it was done to me by inchanted persons, I cannot be reuenged, and by consequence shall not know that true gust and delight, that is taken by vanquishing mine enemies, whereof you speake euen now. That is it which grieues me, as it should thee also, *Sancho*, quoth *Don-Quixote*: but I will procure hereafter to get a sword, made with such art, that whosoeuer shall weare it, no

Digitized by Google

kinde

kinde of inchantment shall hurt him. And perhaps fortune will present mee the very same which belonged to *Amadis*, when he called himselfe *the Knight of the burning sword*, which was one of the best, that euer Knight had in this world: for besides the vertue that I told, it did also cut like a Razer, and no armour were it euer so strong or inchanted could stand before it. I am so fortunate, quoth *Sancho*, that when this befell, and that you found such a sword, it would only serue and be beneficiall, and stand in stead such as are dubbed Knights, as doth your *Balsamum*, whilest the poore Squires are cramd full with sorrowes. Feare not that *Sancho*, quoth *Don-Quixote*, for fortune will deale with thee more liberally then so.

In these discourses *Don-Quixote* and his Squire roade, when *Don-Quixote* perceiuing a great and thicke dust to arise in the way, wherein he trauailed, turning to *Sancho* said, this is *(Sancho)* the day, wherein shall bee manifest the good which *Fortune* hath reserued for me. This is the day, wherein the force of mine arme must bee shewen as much as in any other whatsoeuer, and in it will I doe such feates, as shall for euer remaine recorded in the books of fame; doest thou see *Sancho* the dust which ariseth there? know that it is caused by a mighty army and sundry and innumerable Nations, which come marching there; if that be so, quoth *Sancho*, then must there be two armies, for on this other side is raised as great a dust. *Don-Quixote* turned backe to behold it, and seeing it was so indeede, he was maruailous glad, thinking that they were doubtlessely two armies, which came to fight one with an other, in the midst of that spacious plaine. For he had his fantasie euer repleniſhed with these battailes, inchantments, successes, rauings, loues, and challenges, which are rehearsed in bookes of Knighthood: and all that euer he spoke, thought, or did, was addrest and applyed to the like things: and the dust which hee had seene was raised by two great flocks of Sheepe, that came through the

Digitized by Google

same

same field by two different wayes, and could not be discerned by reason of the dust, vntill they were very neare. *Don-Quixote* did affirme that they were two armies, with so very good earnest as *Sancho* beleeued it, and demanded of him, Sir what then shall we two doe? What should we do? (quoth *Don-Quixote*) but assist the needfull and weaker side. For thou shalt know *Sancho*, that he who comes towards vs is the great Emperor *Alifamfaron*, Lord of the great Island of *Trapobana*. The other who marcheth at our backe is his enemy the King of the *Garamantes*, *Pentapoline of the naked arme*, so called, because hee still entereth in battayle, with his right arme naked. I pray you good Sir, quoth *Sancho*, to tell me why these two Princes hate one another so much? they are enemies, replyed *Don-Quixote*, because that this *Alifamfaron* is a furious Pagan, and is enamoured of *Pentapolins* Daughter, who is a very beautifull and gracious Princesse, and moreouer a *Christian*. And her Father refuseth to giue her to the Pagan King, vntill first he abandon *Mahomets* false sect, and become one of his religion. By my beard, quoth *Sancho*, *Pentapolin* hath reason, and I will helpe him all that I may. By doing so, quoth *Don-Quixote*, thou performest thy duty; for it is not requisite that one be a Knight, to the end hee may enter into such battailes. I doe apprehend that my selfe, quoth *Sancho*, very well, but where shall we leaue this Asse in the meane time, that we may be sure to finde him againe after the conflict, for I thinke it is not the custome to enter into battaile, mounted on such a beast. It is true, quoth *Don-Quixote*, that which thou maist doe is, to leaue him to his aduentures, and care not whether hee be lost or found, for we shall haue so many horses, after comming out of this battaile victors, that very *Rozinante* himselfe, is in danger, to be changed for another. But be attentiue, for I meane to describe vnto thee the principall Knights of both the armies. And to the end thou

Digitized by Google

"thou maieſt the better ſee and note all things, let vs re-
"tire our ſelues there to that little hillocke, from whence
"both the Armies may eaſily be deſcryed.

They did ſo, and ſtanding on the toppe of a hill, from whence they might haue ſeene both the flocks, which *Don-Quixote* called an army very well, if the cloudes of duſt had not hindred it and blinded their ſight, yet notwithſtanding our Knight ſeeing in conceit that which really hee did not ſee at all, beganne to ſay with a lowde voice.

"That Knight which thou ſeeſt there with the yellow
"armour, who beares in his ſhield a Lyon crownd, crou-
"ching at a Damzels feete, is the valorous *Laurcalio*,
"Lord of the *Siluer Bridge*: the other whoſe armes are
"powdred with flowers of gold, and Beares in an Azure
"field, three Crownes of ſiluer is the dreaded *Micoco-*
"*lembo*, great Duke of *Quirocia*: the other limmed like
"a Giant, that ſtandeth at his right hand, is the vndaun-
"ted *Brandabarbaray of Boliche*, Lord of the three *A-*
"*rabias*: and comes armed with a Serpents skinne, bea-
"ring for his ſhield as is reported one of the gates of the
"Temple, which *Sampſon* at his death ouerthrew, to be
"reuenged of his enemies. But turne thine eyes to this
"other ſide, and thou ſhalt ſee firſt of all, and in the front
"of this other army the euer victor and neuer vanquiſh
"ed *Timonel of Carcaiona*, Prince *of new Biskaye*, who
"comes armed, with armes parted into Blew, Greene,
"White, and Yellow quarters, and beares in his ſhield
"in a field of Tawney a Catte of gold, with a letter that
"ſaies *Miau*, which is the beginning of his Ladies
"name, which is as the report runnes, the peereleſſe
"*Miaulina*, Daughter to Duke *Alfeniquen of Algarue*.
"The other that burdens and oppreſſeth the backe of
"that mighty * Courſer, whoſe armour is as white as
"ſnow, and alſo his ſhield without any deuiſe is a Knight
"nouell of France, called *Pierres Papin*, Lord of the Ba-

Catte.

* *Alfana.*

rony

"rony of *Vtrique*. The other that beates his horſe ſides "with his armed heeles, and beares the armes of pure "*Azure*, is the mighty Duke of *Nerbia Eſpartafilardo* "*of the Wood*. Who beares for his deuiſe a * Harrow, "with a *Motto* that ſaies, *So trailes my Fortune*. And thus he proceeded forward, naming many Knights of the one and the other ſquadron, euen as hee had imagined them, and attributed to each one, his armes, his colours, impreſe, and *Mottoes*, ſuddainly borne away by the imagination of his wonderfull diſtraction. And without ſtam- "mering he proceeded, ſaying. This firſt ſquadron con- "taineth folke of many Nations, in it are thoſe which "taſt the ſweet waters of famous *Xante*. The Mountai- "nous men that treade the *Maſilical fields*. Thoſe that "doe ſift the moſt pure and rare gold of *Arabia Fœlix*. "Thoſe that poſſeſſed the famous and delightfull bankes "of cleare *Termodonte*. Thoſe that let bloud many and "ſundry waies the golden *Pactolus*. The *Numides* vn- "ſteadfaſt in their promiſe. The *Perſians* famous for Ar- "chers. The *Parthes* and *Medes* that fight flying. The "*Arabs* inconſtant in their dwellings. The *Scithes* as "cruell as white. The *Æthiops* of boared lips, and other "infinite Nations whoſe faces I know and behold, al- "though I haue forgotten their denominations. In that "other army come thoſe that taſt the *Chriſtaline* ſtreams "of the *Oline-bearing Betis*, thoſe that dippe and poliſh "their faces with the liquor of the *euer-rich* and golden "*Tagus*. Thoſe that poſſeſſe the profitable fluent of di- "uine *Genile*. Thoſe that trample the *Tarteſian fields* ſo "abundant in paſture. Thoſe that recreat themſelues in "the *Eliſean fields of Xerez*. The rich *Manchegans* crow- "ned with ruddy eares of corne: Thoſe apparelled with "yron, the ancient relikes of the *Gothiſh blond*. Thoſe "that bathe themſelues in *Piſuerga*, renowmed for the "ſmothneſſe of his current. Thoſe that feede their flocks "in the vaſt fields of the wreathing *Guadiana*, ſo cele- "brated

* *Eſparraguera.*

Digitized by Google

"brated for his hidden course. Those that tremble "through the cold of the busty *Pirens*, and the * lofty "*Apennes*. Finally, all those that *Europe* in it selfe con- "tayneth.

* Or white crested.

Good God, how many Prouinces repeated he at that time, and how many Nations did he name, giuing to euery one of them, with maruailous celerity and briefnesse, their proper attributes, being swallowed vp and ingulfed in those things which hee had read in his lying bookes. *Sancho Panca* stood suspended at his speech, and spoke not a word, but only would now and then turne his head to see whether he could marke those Knights and Giants, which his Lord had named; and by reason he could not discouer any, he said. Sir I giue to the Diuell any man, Giant, or Knight, of all those you said that appeareth: at least I cannot discerne them. Perhaps all is but inchantment, like that of the Ghosts of yesternight. How? saiest thou so, quoth *Don-Quixote*? Doest not thou heare the horses neigh, the trumpets sound, and the noyse of the drummes? I heare nothing else, said *Sancho*, but the great bleating of many Sheepe. And so it was indeede, for by this time, the two flocks did approch them very neare. The feare that thou conceiuest *Sancho*, quoth *Don-Quixote*, maketh thee that thou canst neither heare nor see aright, for one of the effects of feare is to trouble the senses, and make things appeare otherwise then they are, and seeing thou fearest so much, retire thy selfe out of the way, for I alone am sufficient to giue the victory to that part which I shall assist, and hauing ended his speech, hee set spurres to *Rozinante*, and setting his Lance in the rest hee flung downe from the hillocke like a thunderbolt. *Sancho* cryed to him as lowd as he could, saying, returne good Sir *Don-Quixote*, for I vow vnto God that all those which you goe to charge, are but Sheepe and Muttons. Returne I say, alas that euer I was borne, what madnesse is this? looke, for there is neither Giant, nor Knight, nor

Cats,

Digitized by Google

Cats, nor Armes, nor Shields, parted, nor whole, nor pure Azures, nor diuelish. What is it you doe wretch that I am? For all this *Don Quixote* did not returne, but rather roade, saying with a lowde voice; On on Knights, all you that serue and march vnder the banners of the valorous Emperour *Pentapolin of thenaked Arme*, follow mee all of you, and you shall see how easily I will reuenge him on his enemy *Alifamfaron of Trapobana*, and saying, so hee entred into the middest of the flocke of Sheepe, and beganne to Launce them with such courage and fury, as if hee did in good earnest encounter his mortall enemies.

The Sheepe-heards that came with the flocke, cryed to him to leaue off, but seeing their wordes tooke no effect, they vnlooſed their ſlings and beganne to ſalute his pate with ſtones as great as ones fiſt. But *Don-Quixote* made no account of their ſtones, and did fling vp and downe among the Sheepe, ſaying, where art thou prowde *Alifamfaron*, where art thou? come to mee, for I am but one Knight alone, who deſires to proue my forces with thee man to man, and depriue thee of thy life, in paine of the wrong thou doeſt to the valiant *Pentapolin* the *Garamiante*. At that inſtant a ſtone gaue him ſuch a blow on one of his ſides, as did bury two of his ribbes in his body. Hee beholding himſelfe ſo ill dight, did preſently beleeue that hee was either ſlaine or ſorely wounded; and remembring himſelfe of his liquor, hee tooke out his oyle pot, and ſet it to his mouth to drinke, but ere he could take as much as hee thought was requiſite to cure his hurts, there commeth another *Almond* which ſtrucke him ſo full vpon the hand and oyle pot as it broke it into peeces, and carryed away with it beſides three or foure of his cheeke teeth, and did moreouer bruiſe very ſorely two of his fingers. Such was the firſt and the ſecond blowe, as the poore Knight

was conſtrained to fall downe off his horſe. And the Sheep-heards arriuing did verily beleeue they had ſlaine him; and therefore gathering their flocke together with all ſpeede, and carrying away their dead Muttons, which were more then ſeuen, they went away without verifying the matter any further.

Sancho remained all this while on the height, beholding his Maſters follies, pulling the haires of his beard for very deſpite, and curſed the houre and moment wherein hee firſt knew him; but ſeeing him ouerthrowne to the earth, and the Sheep-heards fled away, hee came downe to him, and found him in very badde taking, yet had hee not quite loſt the vſe of his ſenſes, to whom he ſaid. Did not I bidde you Sir Knight returne, and told you that you went not to inuade an army of men, but a flocke of ſheep. That theefe the wiſeman who is mine aduerſary, quoth *Don-Quixote*, can counterfait, and make men to ſeeme ſuch, or vaniſh away as he pleaſeth: for *Sancho* thou oughteſt to know, that it is a very eaſie thing for thoſe kinde of men, to make vs ſeeme what they pleaſe, and this *Maligne* that perſecuteth mee, enuying the glory which hee ſaw I was like to acquire in this battaile, hath conuerted the enemies ſquadrons into Sheepe; and if thou wilt not beleeue me *Sancho*, yet doe one thing for my ſake, that thou maieſt remoue thine errour, and perceiue the truth which I affirme, get vp on thine Aſſe and follow them faire and ſoftly aloofe, and thou ſhalt ſee that as ſoone as they are parted any diſtance from hence, they will turne to their firſt forme, and leauing to be ſheepe, will become men, as right and ſtraight as I painted them to thee at the firſt, but goe not now for I haue needs of thy helpe and aſſiſtance, draw nearer to me and ſee, how many cheeke teeth and others I want, for mee thinks there is not one left in my mouth. With that *Sancho* approched ſo neare, that he laid almoſt his eyes on his Maſters mouth, and it was iuſt at the time that the *Balſamum* had now wrought his

Digitized by Google

his effect in *Don-Quixote* his ſtomacke, and at the very ſeaſon that *Sancho* went about to looke into his mouth, he diſgorged all that he had in his ſtomacke, with as great violence as it had beene ſhot out of a Musket, iuſt in his compaſſiue Squires beard. O holy Mother *Mary*, quoth *Sancho*, what is this that hath befallen mee, the poore man is mortally wounded without doubt, for hee vomiteth vp bloud at his mouth. But looking a little nearer to it, hee perceiued in the colour and ſmell that it was not bloud, but the *Balſamum* of his Maſters oile-bottle, wherat hee inſtantly tooke ſuch a loathing, that his ſtomacke likewiſe turned, and hee vomited out his very bowels almoſt, all in his Maſters face. And ſo they both remained like Pearles. Soone after, *Sancho* ranne to his Aſſe to take ſomewhat to cleare himſelfe, and to cure his Lord out of his wallet, which when he found *wanting, he was ready to runne out of his wits: there hee beganne a new to curſe himſelfe, and made a firme reſolution in minde, that he would leaue his Maſter and turne to his Countrey againe, although he were ſure both to looſe his wages, and the hope of the Gouernment of the promiſed Iſland.

* *Hauing left it behinde him in the Inne when he ranne away and paid nothing for his lodging.*

By this *Don-Quixote* aroſe, and ſetting his left hand to his mouth, that the reſt of his teeth might not fall out, he caught hold on the raignes of *Rozinantes* bridle with the other, who had neuer ſtird from his Maſter: (ſuch was his loyaltie and good nature) hee went towards his Squire, that leaned vpon his Aſſe, with his hand vnder his cheeke, like one penſatiue and malecontent. And *Don-Quixote* ſeeing of him in that guiſe, with ſuch ſignes of ſadneſſe, ſaid vnto him. Know *Sancho* that one man is not more then another, if he doe not more then another. All thoſe ſtormes that fall on vs are arguments that the time will waxe calme very ſoone, and that things will haue better ſucceſſe hereafter, for it is not poſſible that either good or ill be durable. And hence wee may collect that our misfortunes hauing laſted ſo long, our fortune

and weale must bee likewise neare. And therefore thou oughtest not thus to afflict thy selfe for the disgraces that befall mee, seeing no part of them fall to thy lot. How not, quoth *Sancho*? was hee whom they tossed yesterday in the couerlet by fortune, any other mans Sonne then my Fathers? and the wallet that I want to day, with all my prouision, was it any others then mine owne? what doest thou want thy wallet *Sancho*? quoth *Don-Quixote*. I, that I doe, quoth hee. In that manner replyed *Don-Quixote*, wee haue nothing left vs to eate to day? that would be so, quoth *Sancho*, if we could not finde among these fields the hearbs which I haue heard you say you know, wherewithall such vnlucky Knights errant as you, are wont to supply like needes. For all that, quoth *Don-Quixote*, I would rather haue now a quarter of a loafe, or a cake and two pilchers heads, then all the hearbs that *Dioscorides* describeth, although they were glosed by Doctor *Laguna* himselfe. But yet for all that get vpon thy beast *Sancho* the good, and follow mee, for God who is the prouider for all creatures, will not faile vs. And principally seeing we doe a worke so greatly to his seruice as we doe, seeing he doeth not abandon the little flies of the aire, nor the wormelings of the earth, nor the spawnlings of the water. And he is so mercifull that he maketh his Sunne shine on the good and the euill, and raines on sinners and iust men. You were much fitter, quoth *Sancho*, to be a Preacher, then for a Knight errant. Knights errant knew and ought to know somewhat of all things, quoth *Don-Quixote*. For there hath beene a Knight errant in times past, who would make a Sermon or discourse in the midst of a campe riall, with as good grace as if hee were graduated in the Vniuersity of *Paris*: by which we may gather that the Lance neuer dulled the Pen, nor the Pen the Lance. Well then, quoth *Sancho*, let it be as you haue said, and let vs depart hence, and procure to finde a lodging for this night, where, I pray God, may be no co-

uerlets and toffers, nor Spirits, nor inchanted Moores, for if there bee, Ile bestow the flocke and the hooke on the Diuell. Demaund that of God Sonne *Sancho*, quoth *Don-Quixote*, and leade me where thou pleasest, for I will leaue the election of our lodging to thy choice for this time: yet I pray thee giue mee thy hand, and feele how many checke-teeth or others I want in this right side of the vpper jaw, for there I feele most paine. *Sancho* put in his fingers, and whilest he felt him, demanded how many cheeke teeth were you accustomed to haue on this side? foure, quoth hee, besides the hindermost; all of them very whole and sound. See well what you say Sir, quoth *Sancho*. I say foure, quoth *Don-Quixote*, if they were not fiue, for I neuer in my life drew or lost any tooth, nor hath any fallen or beene worme-eaten, or rotted through rheume. Well then, quoth *Sancho*, you haue on this nether part but two cheeke teeth and a halfe, and in the vpper, neither a halfe, nor any, for all there is as plaine as the palme of my hand. Vnfortunate I (quoth *Don-Quixote*) hearing the sorrowfull newes that his Squire told vnto him, for I had rather loose one of mine armes, so it were not that of my sword. For *Sancho* thou must wit, *that a mouth without cheeke-teeth, is like a Mill without a milstone*: and a tooth is much more to bee esteemed then a Diamant.

But wee which professe the rigorous Lawes of Armes, are subiect to all these disasters, wherefore mount gentle friend and giue the way, for I will follow thee what pace thou pleasest. *Sancho* obeyed, and roade the way where hee thought hee might finde lodging, without leauing the high way, which was there very much beaten. And going thus by little and little (for *Don-Quixote* his paine of his jawes did not suffer him rest, or make ouermuch hast,) *Sancho* to entertayne him and diuert his thought by saying some things, beganne to aboord him

Digitized by Google

him in the forme we meane to rehearſe in the Chapter enſuing.

Chap. V.

Of the diſcreet diſcourſes paſſed betweene Sancho *and his Lord: with the aduenture ſucceeding of a dead body: and other notable occurrences.*

ME thinks, good Sir, that all the miſhaps that befell vs theſe dayes paſt, are without any doubt in puniſhment of the ſinne you committed againſt the order of Knighthood, by not performing the Oath you ſwore, not to eate bread on table clothes, nor to ſport with the Queene, with all the reſt which inſueth, and you vowed to accompliſh, vntil you had wonne the Helmet of *Malandrino*, or I know not how the Moore is called, for I haue forgotten his name. Thou ſaieſt right *Sancho*, quoth *Don-Quixote*, but to tell the truth in deede, I did wholly forget it: and thou maieſt likewiſe thinke certainly, that becauſe thou dideſt not remember it to mee in time, that of the coūrlet was inflicted as a puniſhment on thee. But I will make amends, for we haue alſo manners of reconciliation for all things in the order of Knighthood. Why did I by chance ſweare any thing, quoth *Sancho*? it little imports, quoth *Don-Quixote*, that thou haſt not ſworne, let it ſuffice that I know thou art not very cleare from the fault of an acceſſary. And therefore at all aduentures it will not bee ill to prouide a remedy. If it bee ſo, quoth *Sancho*, beware you doe not forget this againe, as you did that of the Oath, for if you ſhould, perhaps thoſe ſpirits will take againe a fancy to ſolace themſelues with mee, and

peraduenture with you your selfe, if they see you obstinate.

Being in these and other such discourses, the night ouertooke them in the way, before they could discouer any lodging, and that which was worst of all, they were almost famisht with hunger, for by the losse of their wallets, they lost at once both their prouision and warderhouse. And to accomplish wholly this disgrace, there succeeded a certaine aduenture, which certainly hapned as wee lay it downe without any addition in the world, and was this; the night did shut vppe with some darkenesse, yet notwithstanding they trauailed on still, *Sancho* beleeuing that since that was the high way, there must be within a league or two in all reason some Inne. Trauailing therefore as I haue said, in a darke night, the Squire being hungry, and the Master hauing a good stomacke, they saw comming towards them in the very way they trauailed, a great multitude of lights, resembling nothing so well as wandering starres. *Sancho* beholding them was strucke into a wonderfull amazement, and his Lord was not much better. The one drew his Asse halter, the other held his horse, and both of them stoode still, beholding attentiuely what that might be, and they perceiued that the lights drew still nearer vnto them; and the more they approched, they appeared the greater, at the sight *Sancho* did tremble like one infected by the sauour of Quicksilver, and *Don-Quixotes* haire did stand vp like bristles, who animating himselfe a little, said, *Sancho* this must be questionlesse a great and most dangerous aduenture, wherein it is requisite that I shew all my valour and strength. Vnfortunate I, quoth *Sancho*, if by chance this aduenture were of Ghosts, as it seemeth to me that it is, where will there bee ribbes to suffer it? bee they neuer so great Ghosts, said *Don-Quixote*, I will not consent that they touch one haire of thy garment: For if they iested with thee the other time, it was because I could not leape

Digitized by Google

ouer

ouer the walles of the yard, but now wee are in plaine field where I may brandiſh my ſword as I pleaſe. And if they inchant and benumme you as they did the other time quoth *Sancho*, what will it then auaile vs to bee in open field or no? For all that replyed *Don-Quixote*, I pray thee *Sancho* bee of good courage, for experience ſhall ſhew thee how great my valour is; I will and pleaſe God, quoth *Sancho*, and ſo departing ſomewhat out of the way, they beganne againe to view earneſtly what that of the trauailing lights might bee; and after a very little ſpace they eſpied many white things, whoſe dreadfull viſions did in that very inſtant conclude *Sancho Panca* his courage, and now beganne to chatter with his teeth, like one that had the cold of a *Quartane*, and when they did diſtinctly perceiue what it was, then did his beating and chattering of teeth increaſe, for they diſcouered about ſome twenty all couered with white a horſe-backe, with Tapers lighting in their hands, after which followed a litter couered ouer with blacke, and then inſued other ſixe a horſe-backe, attired in mourning, and likewiſe their Mules, euen to the very ground, for they perceiued that they were not horſes, by the quietneſſe of their pace. The white folke rode murmuring ſomewhat among themſelues with a low and compaſſiue voice. Which ſtrange viſion, at ſuch an houre, and in places not inhabited, was very ſufficient to ſtrike feare into *Sancho*s heart, and euen in his Maſters. If it had beene any other then *Don-Quixote*, but *Sancho* tumbled here and there, being quite ouerthrowne with terrour. The contrary happed to his Lord, to whom in that ſame houre his imagination repreſented vnto him moſt liuely, the aduenture wherein hee was to bee ſuch a one, as hee oftimes had read in his bookes of Chiualry. For it is figured vnto him, that the litter was a beere, wherein was carryed ſome grieuously wounded or dead Knight, whoſe reuenge was only reſerued for him. And without making any other diſcourſe

he

hee set his Launce in the rest, seated himselfe surely in his saddle, and put himselfe in the middest of the way by which the white folke must forcibly passe, with great spirit and courage. And when he saw them draw neare, he said with a lowde voice: stand Sir Knight, whosoeuer you be, and render me account what you are? from whence you come? where you goe? and what that is which you carry in that beere? for according as you shew, either you haue done to others, or others to you some iniury. And it is conuenient and needfull that I know it, either to chastice you for the ill you haue cõmitted, or else to reuenge you of the wrong which you haue suffered, we are in hast quoth one of the white men, and the Inne is farre off, and therefore cannot expect to giue so full relation as you request, and with that spurring his Mule, passed forward. *Don-Quixote*, highly disdayning at the answere, tooke by the bridle and held him, saying, stay prowde Knight, and bee better mannerd another time, and giue mee account of that which I demanded, if not, I defie you all to mortall battaile. The Mule whereon the white man rode was somewhat fearefull and skittish, and being taken thus rudely by the bridle, shee tooke such a fright, that rising vp on her hinder legges, shee vnhorsed her Rider; one of the Lackeyes that came with them seeing him fallen, beganne to reuile *Don-Quixote*, who being by this throughly enraged, without any more adoe, putting his Launce in the rest, runne vpon one of the mourners, and threw him to the ground very sore wounded: and turning vpon the rest, it was a thing worthy the noting with what dexterity he did assault, breake vpon them, and put them all to flight, and it seemed none other, but that *Rozinante* had gotten then wings, hee bestirred himselfe so nimbly and couragiously.

All those white men were fearefull people, and vnarmed, and therefore fled away from the skirmish in a trice, and beganne to trauerse that field with their Tapers lighting,

ting, that they ſeemed to bee maskers that vſe to runne vp and downe in nights of Ioue and recreation. The mourners likewiſe wereſo lapped vp and muffled, by their mourning weedes as they could ſcarce ſtirre them, ſo that *Don-Quixote* did without any danger of his perſon giue them all the *Baſtonado*. And cauſed them to forſake their roomes whether they would or no, for all of them did verily thinke that he was no man but a Diuell of hell, that met them to take away the dead body which they carried in the litter. All this did *Sancho* behold, maruailouſly admired at his Maſters boldnes, which made him ſay to himſelf, my maſter is infallibly as ſtrong and valiant as he ſaid.

There lay on the ground by him whom his Mule had firſt ouerthrowne, a waxe Taper ſtill burning, by whoſe light, *Don-Quixote* perceiued him, and comming ouer to him, he laid the point of his Launce vpon his face, ſaying, that he ſhould render himſelfe, or elſe he would ſlay him. To which the other anſwered, I am already rendred more then enough, ſeeing I cannot ſtirre mee out of the place, for one of my legges is broken. And if you be a Chriſtian, I deſire you not to kill mee, for therein you would commit a great ſacriledge, I being a Licenciate, and haue receiued the firſt Orders. Well then, quoth *Don-Quixote*, what Diuell brought thee hither being a Church-man? Who Sir replied the ouerthrowne but my misfortune? yet doth a greater threaten thee, ſaid *Don-Quixote*, if thou doeſt not ſatisfie me in all that which I firſt demanded of thee. You ſhall eaſily be ſatisfied, quoth the Licenciate, and therefore you ſhall wit, that although firſt of all I ſaid I was a Licenciate, I am none, but a Batcheler, and am called *Alonſo Lopez*, borne at *Alcouendas*, and I came from the Citty of *Baeca*, with eleuen other Prieſts, which are thoſe that fled away with the Tapers; we trauailed towards *Segouia*, accompanying the dead body that lies in that litter of a certaine Gentleman who dyed in *Baeca*, and was there depoſited for a while, and now as

Digitized by Google

I say, we carry his bones to his place of buriall, which is in *Segouia*, the place of his birth. And who killed him, quoth *Don-Quixote*? God, quoth the Batcheler, with certaine pestilentiall feauers that he tooke. In that manner, quoth *Don-Quixote*, our Lord hath deliuered mee from the paines I would haue taken to reuenge his death, if any other had slaine him. But hauing kild him, he that did it, there is no other remedy but silence, and to lift vp the shoulders, for the same I must my selfe haue done, if hee were likewise pleased to slea me. And I would haue your reuerence to vnderstand, that I am a Knight of the *Mancha*, called *Don-Quixote*, and mine office and exercise is to goe throughout the world righting of wrongs, and vndoing of iniuries. I cannot vnderstand how that can be of righting wrongs, quoth the Batcheler, seeing you haue made me who was right before, now very crooked by breaking of my legge, which can neuer be righted againe, as long as I liue, and the iniury which you haue vndone in me, is none other but to leaue me so iniuried, as I shall remaine iniuried for euer. And it was very great disuenture to haue encountred with you, that goe about to seeke aduentures. All things, quoth *Don-Quixote*, succeede not of one fashion: the hurt was Master Batcheler *Alonso Lopez*, that you trauailed thus by night couered with those Surplices, with burning Tapers, and couered with weedes of dole, so that you appeared most properly some badde thing, and of the other world, and so I could not omit to fulfill my duty, by assaulting you, which I would haue done although I verily knew you to bee the *Sathans* themselues of hell. For, for such I iudged and accounted you euer till now.

Then since my badde fortune hath so disposed it, quoth the Batcheler, I desire you good Sir Knight errant (who hath giuen me so euill an errant) that you will helpe me to get vp from vnder this Mule, who holds still my legge betwixt the stirrop and saddle. I would haue staid talking

Digitized by Google vntill

vntill to morrow morning, quoth *Don-Quixote*, and why did you expect ſo long to declare your griefe to me? he preſently called to *Sancho Panca* to come ouer: but hee had little minde to doe, for hee was otherwiſe imployed, ranſacking of a ſumpture Mule, which thoſe good folke brought with them, well furniſhed with belly ware. *Sancho* made a bagge of his Caſacke, and catching all that he might, or could containe, he laid it on his beaſt, and then preſently after repaired to his Maſter, and holpe to deliuer the good Batcheler from the oppreſſion of his Mule. And mounting him againe on it, he gaue him his Taper, and *Don-Quixote* bade him to follow his fellowes, of whom he ſhould deſire pardon in his name, for the wrong hee had done them. For it lay not in his hands to haue done the contrary. *Sancho* ſaid to him alſo, if thoſe Gentlemen would by chance know, who the valorous Knight is, that hath vſed them thus, you may ſay vnto them that hee is the famous *Don-Quixote of Mancha*, otherwiſe called the Knight of the *Ilfauourd face*.

With this the Batcheler departed, and *Don-Quixote* demaunded of *Sancho*, what had moued him to call him *the Knight of the Ilfauoured face*, more at that time, then at any other? I will tell you that, quoth *Sancho*; I ſtood beholding of you a pretty while by the Taper light, which that vnlucky man carrieth, and truly you haue one of the euill-fauouredſt countenances of late, that euer I ſaw. Which either proceedeth of your being tyred after this battaile, or elſe through the loſſe of your teeth. That is not the reaſon, ſaid *Don-Quixote*. But rather, it hath ſeemed fit to the wiſe man, to whoſe charge is left the writing of my Hiſtory that I take ſome appellatiue name, as all the other Knights of yore haue done: for one called himſelfe, *The Knight of the burning ſword*. Another that *of the Vnicorne*, this, him *of the Phœnix*. The other, that *of the Damzels*. Another the *Knight of the Gryphen*. And ſome other *the Knight of Death*, and by theſe names

Digitized by Google and

and deuices, they were knowne throughout the compasse of the earth. And so I say, that the wiseman whom I mentioned, set in thy minde and tongue the thought to cal me *the Knight of the Il fauoured face*, as I meane to call my selfe from hencefoorth, and that the name may become me better, I will vpon the first occasion cause to be painted in my shield, a most ill fauoured countenance. You neede not, quoth *Sancho*, spend so much time and money in hauing the like countenance painted; but that which you may more easily doe, is, to discouer your owne, and looke directly on those that behold you, and I will warrant you, that without any more adoe, or new painting in your shield, they will call you; him *of the Il fauoured face*. And let this be said in iest, that hunger and the want of your teeth, haue giuen you, as I haue said, so *euill fauoured a face*, as you may well excuse all other heauy portraitures. *Don-Quixote* laught at his Squires conceit, and yet neuertheless he purposed to call himselfe by that name, as soone as euer he should haue commodity to paint his shield, or buckler. And after hee had paused a while, he said to *Sancho*, I beleeue *Sancho* that I am excommunicated, for hauing laid violent hands vpon a consecrated thing. * *Iuxta illud: si quis suadente diabolo, &c.* Although I am certaine I laid not my hands vpon him, but only this Iaueline: and besides I did not any way suspect that I offended Priests or Church men, which I doe respect and honour as a *Catholike* and faithfull *Christian*; but rather that they were shadowes and spirits of the other world. And if the worst hapned, I remember well that which befell the *Cid Ruy Diaz*, when he broke that other Kings Embassadours chaire before the Popes holinesse, for which he excommunicated him, and yet for all that the good *Rodericke Vinar* behaued himselfe that day like an honourable and valiant Knight.

* *Canon. 72. Distinct. 134.*

About this time the Bacheler departed, as is said, without speaking a word, and *Don-Quixote* would faine

Digitized by Google

haue seene whether the corps that came in the litter, was bones or no, but *Sancho* would not permit him, saying, Sir, you haue finished this perilous aduenture, most with your safety of any one of those I haue seene. This people although ouercome and scattered, might perhaps fall in the consideration, that he who hath ouercome them is but one person alone, and growing ashamed thereof, would perhaps ioyne and vnite themselues, and turne vpon vs, and giue vs enough businesse to doe. The Asse is in good plight according to my desire, and the mountayne at hand, and hunger oppresseth vs; therefore we haue nothing else to doe at this time, but retire our selues with a good pace, and as it is said, *to the graue with the dead, and let them liue to the bread.* And pricking on his Asse, he requested his Master to follow him; who seeing that *Sancho* spoke not without reason, he spurd after him without replying. And hauing trauailed a little way, betweene two small mountaines they found a large and hidden valley, where they alighted, and *Sancho* lighting his beast; and lying both along vpon the greene grasse, holpen by the sauce of hunger, they broke their fasts, dyned, ate their beauer, and supper all at one time; satisfying their appetites with more then one dish of cold meate, which the dead Gentlemans Chaplaines (which knew how to make much of themselues) had brought for their prouision. But here succeeded another discommodity which *Sancho* accounted not as the least, and was, that they had no wine to drinke; no, nor as much as a droppe of water to rinse their mouthes, and being scorched with drought, *Sancho* perceiuing the field where they were full of thicke and greene grasse, said that which shall ensue in the Chapter following.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. VI.

Of a wonderfull aduenture, atchieued with lesse hazard, then euer any other Knight did any, by the valorous Don-Quixote *of* Mancha.

IT is not possible my Lord, but that these greene hearbs doe argue, that neere vnto this place must bee some Fountayne or streame that watereth them, and therefore I pray you let vs goe a little farther, and wee shall meete that which may mitigate the terrible thirst that afflicts vs, which sets vs questionlesse in more paine then did our hunger. This counsell was allowed by *Don-Quixote*, and therefore leading *Rozinante* by the bridle, and *Sancho* his Asse by the halter, after laying vp the reuersion of their supper, they set on through the plaine, onely guided by their sheese, for the night was so darke as they could not see a iot. And scarce had they trauailed two hundred paces, when they heard a great noise of water, as if it fell headlong from some great and steepe rocke. The noise did cheare them very much, and standing to heare from whence it sounded, they heard vnawares another noise, which watered all the continent; they conceiued before, specially in *Sancho*, who as I haue noted was naturally very fearefull and of little spirit. They heard I say certaine blowes strucken with proportion, with a kinde of ratling of yrons and chaines, which accompanied by the furious sound of the water, might strike terrour into any other heart but *Don-Quixotes*.

The night as we said was darke, and they hapned to enter in among certaine tall and lostie trees, whose leaues moued by a soft gale of wind, made a fearefull and still noyse. So that the solitude, situation, darknesse and the noyse of the water and trembling of the leaues, concurring

ring did breede horrour and affright. But ſpecially ſeeing that the blowes neuer ceaſed, the wind ſlept not, nor the morning approached; whereunto may be added that they know not the place where they were. But *Don-Quixote* accompanied with his valiant heart, leaped on *Rozinante*, and embracing his Buckler, brandiſhed his " Launce and ſaid. Friend *Sancho*, I would haue thee " know that I was borne by the diſpoſition of heauen in " this our age of iron, to reſuſcitate in it that of golde, or " the golden world as it is called. I am hee for whom " are reſerued all dangerous, great, and valorous feats. I " ſay againe that I am he which ſhall ſet vp againe thoſe " of the *Round Table, the twelue peeres of Fraunce*, and the " *nine worthies*. I am he who ſhall cauſe the actes to be " forgotten of thoſe *Platires, Tablantes, Olimantes, & Ti-* " *rantes*. The *Phebuſſes, Beliamſes*, with all the crew of " the famous Knights errant of times paſt, doing in this " wherin I liue ſuch great and wonderfull feats of armes, " as ſhall obſcure the braueſt that euer they atchieued. " Thou noteſt well faithfull and loyall Squire, the darke- " nes of this night, the ſtrange ſilence, the deaſe and con- " fuſed trembling of theſe trees, the dreadfull noyſe of " that water in whoſe ſearch we come, which ſeemes to " throw it ſelfe headlong downe from the ſteepe moun- " taines of the Moone, the inceaſſable blowes which " doth ſtill wound our eares, all which together, and e- " uery one apart, are able to ſtrike terrour, feare, and a- " mazement into the very minde of *Mars*, how much " more in his that is not accuſtomed to the like chances " and aduentures. Yet all this which I haue depainted " to thee are inciters and rowſers of my minde, which " now cauſeth my heart almoſt to burſt in my breaſt, " with the deſire it hath to trie this aduenture, how diffi- " cult ſoeuer it ſhewes it ſelfe. Wherefore tie my horſe " gyrts a little ſtraighter, and farewell: here in this place " thou mayeſt expect mee three dayes and no more. And

Google

if

" if I shal not returne in that space, thou mayest go backe
" to our village, and from thence (for my sake) to *Toboso*,
" where thou shalt say to my incomparable Lady *Dulci-*
" *nea*, that her captiue Knight died, by attempting things
" that might make him worthy to be called hers.

When *Sancho* heard his Lord speake these wordes, he began to weepe with the greatest compassion of the world, and say vnto him, Sir, I see no reason why you should vndertake this fearefull aduenture: it is now night, and no body can perceiue vs, wee may very well crosse the way, & apart our selues from danger, although we should therefore want drinke these three dayes. And seeing none behold vs, there will be much lesse any one to take notice of our cowardize; the rather because I heard oft-times the Curate of our Village whom you know very well, preach *That he which seekes the danger perisheth therein*; so that, it is not good to tempt God, vndertaking such a huge affaire, out of which you cannot escape, but by miracle: and let those which heauen hath already wrought for you suffice, in deliuering you from being tost in a Couerlet, as I was, and bringing you away a Victor, free, and safe, from among so many enemies, as accompanied the dead man. And when all this shall not moue or soften your hard heart, let this moue it, to thinke and certainly beleeue, that scarce shall you depart from this place, when through very feare I shall giue vp my soule to him that pleaseth to take it. I left my countrey, wife, and children to come and serue you, hoping thereby to be worth more and not lesse: but as *couetousnesse breakes the sacke*, so hath it also torne my hopes, seeing when they were most pregnant and liuely to obtain that vnlucky and accursed Island, which you promised mee so often: I see that in exchange and pay thereof you meane to forsake mee here in a desart, out of all frequentation. For Gods sake doe not mee such a wrong my Lord; and if you will not wholy desist from your purpose, yet deferre

it at least till the morning, for as my little skill that I learned when I was a sheep-heard, telleth me, the dawning is not three houres off, * for the mouth of the fish is ouer the head and maketh mid-night in the line of the left arme. How canst thou *Sancho*, quoth *Don-Quixote*, see where is the line, or that mouth, or that taile, of which thou speakest, seeing the night is so darke that one starre alone appeareth not? that is true, quoth *Sancho*, but feare hath eyes, which can see things vnder the ground, and much more in the skies. And besides, we may gather by good discourse, that the day is not farre off. Let it be as little off as it list, quoth *Don-Quixote*, it shall neuer bee recorded of mee that either teares or prayers could euer disswade me from performing the duty of a Knight, and therefore good *Sancho* hold thy peace, for God who hath inspired me to attempt this vnseene and fearefull aduenture, will haue an eye to my weale, and also to comfort thy sorrow. And that thou hast therefore to doe, is to make straight my gyrts, and remaine here, for I will returne shortly either aliue or dead.

Sancho perceiuing his Lords last resolution, and how little his teares, counsailes, or prayers, could auaile, resolued to profit himselfe a little of his wit, and make him if hee could to expect vntill day, and so when hee did fasten the gyrts, hee softly without being felt tied his Asses halter to both *Rozinantes* legges so fast that when *Don-Quixote* thought to depart he could not, for that his horse could not goe a steppe, but leaping. *Sancho* seeing the good successe of his guile; said, behold Sir, how heauen moued by my teares and prayers, hath ordained that *Rozinante* should not goe a steppe, and if you will bee still contending, and spurring, and striking him, you will doe nothing but inrage fortune, and as the prouerbe saies, *But spurne against the pricke*. *Don-Quixote* grew woode at this, and yet the more he spurred him, he was the lesse able to goe, wherefore without perceiuing the cause of

* *Porque la boca de la ballena esta iuntaa de la cabeca. p.168.*

Digitized by Google

his horses stay, he resolued at last to be quiet, and expect either till the morning, or else till *Rozinante* would please to depart, beleeuing verily that the impediment came of some other cause, and not from *Sancho*, and therefore said vnto him. Since it is so *Sancho*, that *Rozinante* cannot stirre him, I am content to tarry till the dawning, although her tardinesse cost me some teares. You shall haue no cause to weepe replyed *Sancho*, for I will entertaine you telling of Histories vntill it be day, if you will not alight and take a nap vpon these greene hearbs, as Knights errant are wont; that you may be the fresher and better able to morrow to attempt that monstrous aduenture which you expect. What doest thou call alighting, or sleeping, quoth *Don-Quixote?* am I peraduenture one of those Knights that repose in time of danger? sleepe thou who wast borne to sleepe, or doe what thou please, for I will doe that which I shall see fittest for my pretense. Good Sir be not angry, quoth *Sancho*, for I did not speake with that intention: and so drawing neare vnto him hee set one of his hands on the pomell of the saddle, and the other hinder in such sort that hee rested imbracing his Lords left thigh, not daring to depart from thence the breadth of a finger, such was the feare he had of those blowes, which all the while did sound without ceasing.

Then *Don-Quixote* commanded him to tell some tale to passe away the time, as he had promised, and *Sancho* said he would, if the feare of that which he heard would suffer him. Yet, quoth he for all this I will encourage my selfe to tell you one, whereon if I can hit aright, and that I bee not interrupted, is the best history that euer you heard, and be you attentiue for now I beginne. *It was that it was, the good that shall befall be for vs all, and the harme for him that searches it.* And you must be aduertised good Sir, that the beginning that Ancient men gaue to their tales, was not of ordinary things, and it was a sentence of *Cato* the *Romaine Conrozin*: Which saies *and the harme*

Digitized by Google

harme be for him that ſearches it. Which is as fit for this place, as a ring for a finger, to the end that you may bee quiet, and not to goe ſeeke your owne harme to any place, but that wee turne vs another way, for no body Compelleth vs to follow this, where ſo many feares doe ſurpriſe vs. Proſecute this tale *Sancho*, ſaid *Don-Quixote*, and leaue the charge of the way we muſt goe to me. I ſay then, quoth *Sancho*, that in a village of *Eſtremadura*, there was a Sheepe-heard, I would ſay a Goate-heard. And as I ſay of my tale, this Goate-heard was called *Lope Ruyz*: and this *Lope Ruyz* was enamoured of a *Paſtora*, who was called *Torralua*; the which *Paſtora* called *Torralua* was Daughter to a rich heard-man, and this rich heard-man. If thou telleſt thy tale *Sancho* after that manner, quoth *Don-Quixote*, repeating euery thing twiſe that thou ſayeſt, thou wilt not end it this two dayes. Tell it ſuccinctly and like one of iudgement, or elſe ſay nothing. Of the very ſame faſhion that I tell, are all tales told in my Countrey, and I know not how to tell it any other, nor is it reaſon that you ſhould aske of me to make new cuſtomes. Tell it as thou pleaſeſt, quoth *Don-Quixote*, for ſince fortune will not otherwiſe, but that I muſt heare thee, goe forward. So that my deare Sir of my ſoule quoth *Sancho*, that as I haue ſaid already, this Sheepe-heard was in loue with *Torralua* the *Paſtora*, who was a round Wench, ſcornefull, and drew ſomewhat neare to a man, for ſhee had Mochachoes, for me thinkes I ſee her now before my face. Belike then, quoth *Don-Quixote*, thou knoweſt her? I did not know her, quoth *Sancho*, but hee that told mee the tale, ſaid it was ſo certaine and true, that I might when I told it to any other, very well ſweare and affirme that I had ſeene it all my ſelfe. So that dayes paſſing and dayes comming, the Diuell who ſleepes not, and * that troubles all, wrought in ſuch ſort, as the loue that the Sheep-heard bore to the *Paſtora*, turned into man-ſlaughter and ill will, and the cauſe was according

* Yque todo lo annaſca. Pag. 171.

Digitized by Google

ding to badde tongues, a certaine quantity of little iealousies that shee gaue him, such as they past the line, and came to the forbidden *. And the Sheep-heard did hate her so much after ward, that hee was content to leaue all that Countrey, because hee would not see her, and goe where his eyes should neuer looke vpon her. *Torralua* that saw her selfe disdained by *Lope*, did presently loue him, better then euer shee did before: That is a naturall condition of women, quoth *Don-Quixote*, to disdaine those that loue them, and to affect those which hate them. Passe forward *Sancho*. It hapned, quoth *Sancho*, that the Sheep-heard set his purpose in execution, and gathering vp his Goates, he trauailed through the fields of *Estremadura*, to passe into the Kingdome of *Portugall*. *Torralua* which knew it well followed him a foote and bare legged a farre off, with a pilgrims staffe in her hand, and a wallet hanging at her necke, where they say that shee carried a peece of a looking glasse, and another of a combe, and I know not what little bottle of changes for her face. But let her carry what shee carries, for I will not put my selfe now to verifie that. Only Ile say that they say, that the Sheep-heard arriued with his Goates to passe ouer the Riuer *Guadiana*, which in that season was swollen very much, and ouerflowed the banks, and at the side where hee came there was neither boate nor barke, nor any to passe himselfe or his Goates ouer the Riuer, for which he was very much grieued, because hee saw that *Torralua* came very neare, and shee would trouble him very much with her prayers and teares. But he went so long looking vp and downe that hee espyed a fisher who had so little a boate, as it could only hold one man and a Goate at once, and for all that hee spoke and agreed with him to passe himselfe and three hundred Goates that hee had ouer the Riuer. The fisherman entred into the boate, and carried ouer one Goate, he returned and past ouer another, and turned backe againe and past ouer another. Keepe you Sir

* *A Spanish Prouerbe touching their iealousie.*

Sir good account of the Goates, that the fiſherman ferries ouer; for if one onely be forgotten, the tale will end, and it will not be poſſible to tell one word more of it. I follow on then, and I ſay, that the landing place on the other ſide was very dirty and ſlippery, which made the fiſherman ſpend much time comming too and fro. Yet for all that he turned for another Goate, and another, and another.

Make account, quoth *Don-Quixote*, that thou haſt paſt them all ouer, for otherwiſe thou wilt not make an end of paſſing them in a whole yeares ſpace. How many, ſaid *Sancho*, are already paſt ouer? What a Diuell know I, ſaid *Don-Quixote*? See there that which I ſaid, quoth *Sancho*, that you ſhould keepe good account. By *Ieue* the tale is ended therefore, for there is no paſſing forward. How can that be, ſaid *Don-Quixote*, is it ſo greatly of the eſſence of this Hiſtory to know the Goates that are paſt ſo exactly and diſtinctly, that if one of the number be miſſed, thou canſt not follow on with thy tale? no Sir, in no ſort, ſaid *Sancho*, for as ſoone as I demaunded of you to tell mee how many Goates paſt ouer, and that you anſwered mee you knew not, in that very inſtant it went from mee out of my memory all that was to bee told, and yfaith it vvas of great vertue and content. So then, quoth *Don-Quixote*, the tale is ended? it is as certainely ended as is my Mother, quoth *Sancho*. Surely, replyed *Don-Quixote*, thou haſt recounted one of the rareſt tales or Hiſtories that any one of the world could thinke vpon, and that ſuch a manner of telling or finiſhing a tale, was neuer yet ſeene or ſhall bee ſeene againe, although I neuer expected any other thing from thy good diſcourſe. But I doe not greatly maruaile, for perhaps thoſe ſenſeleſſe ſtrokes, haue troubled thine vnderſtanding. All that may bee ſaid *Sancho*, but I know in the diſcourſe of my tale there is no more to bee ſaid, but that there it ends,

Digitized by Google

where

where the errour of counting the Goates that were wafted ouer the riuer begins, let it end in a good houre where it lists, answered *Don-Quixote*, and let vs trie whether *Rozinante* can yet stirre himselfe, then did he turne againe to giue him the spurres, and hee to leape as he did at the first and rest anew, being vnable to doe other, hee was so well shackled.

It hapned about this time, that eyther through the colde of the morning, or that *Sancho* had eaten at supper some lenatiue meates, or that it was a thing naturall (and that is most credible) he had a desire to doe that which others could not doe for him; but such was the feare that entred into his heart, as hee dared not depart from his Lord the breadth of a straw: and to thinke to leaue that which he had desired vndone was also impossible, therefore his resolution in that perplexed exigent, be it spoken with pardon, was this; he loosed his right hand, wherewithall he held fast the hinderpart of the saddle, and therwithall very softly and without any noyse hee vntied the Codpiece-point, wherewithall his breeches were onely supported, which, that being let slippe, did presently fall downe about his legges like a paire of bolts: after this, lifting vp his shirt the best he could, hee exposed his buttockes to the ayre, which were not the least: this being done, which as he thought was the chiefest thing requisite to issue out of that terrible anguish and plunge; hee was suddenly troubled with a greater, to wit, that hee knew not how to disburden himselfe without making a noyse: which to auoyde first he shut his teeth close, lifted vp his shoulders, and gathered vp his breath as much as he might, yet notwithstanding all these diligences, he was so vnfortunate, that he made a litle noise at the end, much different from that which made him so fearefull. *Don-Quixote* heard it, and said, What noyse is that *Sancho*? I know it not Sir, quoth he, I thinke it be some new thing for aduentures, or rather disuentures neuer begin with a

Digitized by Google

little

little. Then turned he once againe to trie his happe, and it ſucceeded ſo well that without making any rumour or noyſe, but that which he did at the firſt, he found himſelfe free of this loading that troubled him ſo much.

But *Don-Quixote* hauing the ſenſe of ſmelling as perfect as that of his hearing; and *Sancho* ſtood ſo neere, or rather ioyned to him, as the vapours did aſcend vpward, almoſt by a direct line, he could not excuſe himſelfe but that ſome of them muſt needs touch his noſe. And ſcarce had they arriued but that he occurd to the vſuall remedy, and ſtopped it very well betweene his fingers, and then ſaid with a ſnaffling voyce; Me thinkes *Sancho* that thou art much affraid. I am indeed, replied *Sancho*, but wherein I pray you, doe you perceiue it now more then euer? In that thou ſmelſt now more then euer, quoth *Don-Quixote*, and that not of *Ambar*. It may be ſo', quoth *Sancho*, yet the fault is not mine but yours, which brings me at ſuch vnſeaſonable houres, through ſo deſolate and fearefull places. I pray thee friend retire thy ſelfe two or three ſteps back, quoth *Don-Quixote*, holding his fingers ſtill vpon his noſe, and from henceforth haue more care of thy perſon, & of the reſpect thou oweſt to mine; for I ſee the ouermuch familiarity that I vſe with thee, hath ingendred this contempt. I dare wager, quoth *Sancho*, that you thinke I haue done ſomewhat with my perſon that I ought not. Friend *Sancho*, quoth *Don-Quixote*, it is the worſe to ſtirre it thus. And thus in theſe and ſuch like conuerſation the Maſter and the man paſſed ouer the night. And *Sancho* ſeeing that the morning approached, he looſed *Rozinante* very warily, and tied vp his hoſe. *Rozinante* feeling himſelfe (although he was not naturally very couragious) hee ſeemed to reioyce, and began to beate the ground with his hooffes; for by his leaue hee could neuer yet curuet. *Don-Quixote* ſeeing that *Rozinante* could now ſtirre, accounted it to be a good ſigne, and an incouragement of him to attempt that timorous aduenture.

Digitized by Google

By

By this *Aurora* did display her purple mantell ouer the face of Heauen, and euery thing appeared distinctly, which made *Don-Quixote* perceiue that he was among a number of tall Chesnut-trees, which commonly make a great shadow. He heard likewise those inceſſable ſtroakes, but could not espy the cause of thē; wherfore giuing *Rozinante* presently the spurre, and turning backe again to *Sancho* to bid him farewell, he commaunded him to stay for him there three dayes at the longest, and that if he returned not after that space, he should make full account, that Ioue was pleased he should end his daies in that dangerous aduenture. He repeated to him againe the embassage and errant hee should carrie in his behalfe to his Ladie *Dulcinea*, & that touching the reward of his seruices, he should not feare any thing, for he had left his Testament made before he departed from his village, where he should finde himselfe gratified, touching all that which pertained to his hire, according to the rate of the time he had serued. But if God would bring him off, from that aduenture safe and found, and without danger, he might full account to receiue the promised Island. Here *Sancho* began anew to weepe, hearing againe the pittifull discourses of his good Lord, and determined not to abandon him vntill the last traunce and end of that affaire, and out of these teares and honourable resolution of *Sancho*, the authour of this History collects, that it is like he was well borne, or at the very least an olde *Christian*, whose griefe did moue his Master a little, but not so much as he should shew the least argument of weakenes, but rather dissembling it the best that he could, he followed on his way towards the way of the water, and that where the stroakes were heard. *Sancho* followed him a foote, leading as he was wont, his Asse by the halter, who was the inseparable fellow of his prosperous or aduerse fortunes.

And hauing trauelled a good space among those Chesnut and shady trees, they came out into a little plaine that stood

Digitized by Google

ſtood at the foot of certaine ſteepe rockes, from whoſe tops did precipitate it ſelfe a great fall of water. There were at the foot of thoſe rockes certaine houſes, ſo ill made, as they rather ſeemed ruines of buildings then houſes; from whence as they perceiued, did iſſue the fearfull rumour and noyſe of the ſtroakes, which yet continued. *Rozinante* at this dreadfull noyſe did ſtart, and being made quiet by his Lord *Don-Quixote*, did by little and little draw neere to the houſes, recommending himſelfe on the way moſt deuoutly to his Ladie *Dulcinea*, and alſo to *Ioue*, deſiring him that he would not forget him. *Sancho* neuer departed from his Lords ſide, and ſtretched out his necke and eyes as farre as he might through *Rozinante* his legges, to ſee if he could perceiue that which helde him ſo fearefull and ſuſpended. And after they had trauelled about a hundred paces, more at the dubling of a point of a mountaine they ſaw the very cauſe, patent and open (for there could be none other) of that ſo hideous and fearefull a noyſe that had kept them all the night ſo doubtfull and affrighted, and was (O Reader if thou wilt not take it in bad part) ſixe yron Maces that fulled cloath, which with their interchangeable blowes, did forme that maruellous noyſe.

When *Don-Quixote* ſaw what it was, he waxed mute and all aſhamed. *Sancho* beheld him, and ſaw that hee hanged his head on his breaſt with tokens that hee was ſomewhat aſhamed. *Don-Quixote* looked alſo on his Squire, and ſaw that his cheekes were ſwolne with laughter, giuing withall euident ſignes that he was in danger to burſt, if he did not permit that violent paſſion to make a ſally, whereat all *Don-Quixotes* melancholy little preuailing, he could not beholding *Sancho*, but laugh alſo himſelfe. And when *Sancho* ſaw that his Maſter had begun the play, he let ſlip the priſoner in ſuch violent manner to preſſe his ſides hardly with both his hands to ſaue himſelfe from burſting. Foure times he ended, and other foure

Digitized by Google

foure he renued his laughter with as great impulse and force as at the first, whereat *Don-Quixote* was wonderfully inraged, but chiefly hearing him say in gibing manner: I would haue thee know friend *Sancho*, that I was born by the disposition of heauen in this our age of yron, to renue in it that of gold or the golden world. I am hee for whom are reserued all dangerous, great, and valorous feats. And in this sort he went repeating all or the greatest part of the words, *Don-Quixote* had said the first time that they heard the timorous blowes, *Don-Quixote* perceiuing that *Sancho* mockt him, grew so ashamed and angry withall, that listing vp the end of his launce, he gaue him two such blowes on the backe, as if he had receiued them on his pate, would haue freed his Master from paying him any wages, if it were not to his hayres. *Sancho* seeing that he gained so ill earnest by his iests, fearing that his Master should goe onward with it, he said vnto him with very great submission; Pacifie your selfe good Sir, for by *Ione* I did but iest. But why dost thou iest? I tell thee, I doe not iest, quoth *Don-Quixote*. Come here Master Merriman, thinkest thou that as those are yron Maces to full cloth, they were some other dangerous aduenture, that I haue not shown resolution enough to vndertake & finish it? Am I by chance obliged being as I am a Knight to know & distinguish noyses, and perceiue which are of a fulling Mill or no? And more it might (as it is true) that I neuer saw any before as thou hast done, base villain that thou art, borne and brought vp among the like: if not, make thou that these sixe Maces be conuerted into sixe Giants, and cast them in my beard one by one, or all together: and when I doe not turne all their heeles vp, then mocke me as much as thou pleasest.

No more good Sir, quoth *Sancho*, for I confesse I haue beene somewhat too laughsome. But tell me I pray you, now that we are in peace, as God shall deliuer you out of all aduentures that may befall you as whole and sound, as he

he hath done out of this, hath not the great feare we were in, beene a good ſubiect of laughter, and a thing worthy the telling? At leaſt I, for of you I am certaine that you doe not yet know what feare or terror is. I doe not denie, quoth *Don-Quixote*, but that which befell vs is worthy of laughter: yet ought it not to be recounted, for as much as all perſons are not ſo diſcreete, as to know how to diſcerne one thing from another, and ſet euery thing in his right point. You know at leaſt wiſe, quoth *Sancho*, how to ſet your Iaueline in his point, when pointing at my pate, you hit me on the ſhoulders, thanks be to God, and to the diligence I put in going aſide. But farewell it, for all will away in the bucking; and I haue heard olde folke ſay, That man loues thee well, who makes thee to weepe: and beſides great Lords are wont after a badde word which they ſay to one of their Seruingmen, to beſtow on him preſently a paire of hoſe. But I know not yet what they are wont to giue them after blowes, if it be not that Knights errant giue after the baſtanado Iſlands, or Kingdomes on the continent. The Die might runne ſo fauourably, quoth *Don-Quixote*, as all thou haſt ſaid, might come to paſſe: and therefore pardon what is done ſince thou art diſcreete, and knoweſt that a mans firſt motions are not in his hand. And be aduertiſed of one thing from hence forward (to the end to abſtaine, and carry thy ſelfe more reſpectiuely in thy ouer-much liberty of ſpeech with mee) that in as many bookes of Chiualry as I haue read, which are infinite, I neuer found that any Squire ſpoke ſo much with his Lord, as thou doſt with thine; which in good ſooth I do attribute to thy great indiſcretion and mine, thine in reſpecting me ſo little, mine in not making my ſelfe to be more regarded. Was not *Gandalin Amadis du Gaules* Squire Earle of the *firme Iſland*? and yet it is read of him that hee ſpoke to his Lord with his Cap in his hand, his head bowed, and his body bended (*more Turceſco*). What then ſhall we ſay of *Gaſabel Don*

Gataors

Digitized by Google

Gatacors Squire, who was so silent, as to declare vs the excellencie thereof, his name is but once repeated in all that so great and authenticall a History? Of all which my wordes, *Sancho*, thou must inferre, that thou must make difference betweene the Master and the man, the Lord and his Seruingman, the Knight and his Squire. So that from this day forward we must proceede with more respect, not letting the clew runne so much, for after what way soeuer I grow angry with thee, it will be badde for the Pitcher. The rewards and benefites that I haue promised thee, will come in their time, and if they doe not, thy wages cannot be lost (as I haue already said to thee).

You say very well quoth *Sancho*, but faine would I learne (in case that the time of rewards came not, and that I must of necessity trust to my wages) how much a Knight errants Squire did gain in times past? Or if they did agree for moneths or by dayes as Masons men. I doe not thinke quoth *Don-Quixote*, that they went by the hire, but onely trusted to their Lords curtesie. And if I haue assigned wages to thee in my sealed Testament which I left at home, it was to preuent the worst, because I know not yet what successe *Chiualrie* may haue in these our so miserable times, and I would not haue my soule suffer in the other world for such a minuity as is thy wages. For thou must vnderstand that in this world there is no state so dangerous as that of Knights errant. That is most true replied *Sancho*, seeing the onely sound of the Maces of a fulling Mill, could trouble and disquiet the heart of so valiant a Knight as you are. But you may be sure that I will not hereafter once vnfolde my lips to iest at your doings, but onely to honour you as my Master and naturall Lord. By doing so, replied *Don-Quixote*, thou shalt liue on the face of the earth, for next to our parents we are bound to respect our Masters, as if they were our fathers.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. VII.

Of the high aduenture and rich winning of the helmet of Mambrino, *with other ſucceſſes befalne the inuincible Knight.*

IT began about this time to raine, and *Sancho* would faine haue entred into the fulling Mils, but *Don-Quixote* had conceiued ſuch hate againſt them for the ieſt recounted, as he would in no wiſe come neere them, but turning his way on the right hand, he fell into a high way, as much beaten as that wherein they rode the day before; within a while after *Don-Quixote* eſpied one a horſeback, that bore on his head ſomewhat that gliſtred like gold; and ſcarce had he ſeene him, when hee turned to *Sancho*, and ſaid, Me thinks *Sancho* that there's no prouerbe that is not true, for they are all ſentences taken out of experience it ſelfe, which is the vniuerſall mother of ſciences; and ſpecially that prouerbe that ſayes, *Where one doore is ſhut another is opened.* I ſay this, becauſe if fortune did ſhut yeſternight the doore that we ſearched deceiuing vs in the aduenture of the yron Maces, it layes vs now wide open the doore that may addreſſe vs to a better and more certaine aduenture, whereon if I cannot make a good entry, the fall ſhall be mine, without being able to attribute it to the little knowledge of the fulling Maces or the darkeneſſe of the night: which I affirme becauſe if I be not deceiued, there comes one towards vs, that weares on his head the helmet of *Mambrino*, for which I made the oath. See well what you ſay Sir, and better what you doe, quoth *Sancho* for I would not wiſh that this were new Maces to batter vs and our vnderſtanding. The Diuell take thee for a man, replied *Don-Quixote*, what difference is there betwixt a helmet and fulling Maces?

Digitized by Google

Maces? I know not, quoth *Sancho*, but if I could speake as much now as I was wont, perhaps I would giue you such reasons as you your selfe should see how much you are deceiued in that you speake. How may I be deceiued in that I say scrupulous traytor, quoth *Don-Quixote*? Tell mee, seest thou not that Knight which comes riding towards vs on a dapple gray horse, with a helmet of golde on his head? That which I see and finde out to be so answered *Sancho*, is none other then a man on a gray Asse like mine owne, and brings on his head somewhat that shines. Why that is *Mambrinos* helmet, quoth *Don Quixote*, stand aside and leaue me alone with him, thou shalt see how without speech to cut of delayes, I will conclude this aduenture and remain with the helmet as mine owne which I haue desired so much, I will haue care to stand off, but I turne againe to say, that I pray God, that it be a purchase of gold and not fulling Mils. I haue already said to thee, that thou doe not make any more mention, no not in thought of those Maces; for if thou dost said *Don-Quixote* I vow, I say no more, that I will batter thy soule. Hereat *Sancho* fearing lest his Master would accomplish the vow which he had throwne out as round as a bowle, held his peace.

This therefore is the truth of the History of the helmet, horse and Knight which *Don-Quixote* saw: There was in that Commarke two villages, the one so little as it had neyther shop nor Barber, but the greater that was neere vnto it was furnished of one, and he therefore did serue the little village when they had any occasion, as now it befell that therein lay one sicke and must bee let bloud, and another that desired to trimme his beard; for which purpose the Barber came, bringing with him a brazen Bason: and as hee trauelled, it by chance began to raine, and therefore clapt his Bason on his head to saue his hatte from slayning, because it belike was a new one. And the Bason being cleane skowred, glistred halfe a

league off. He rode on a gray Asse as *Sancho* said; and that was the reason why *Don-Quixote* tooke them to be a dapple gray Steede, a Knight and a helmet of gold; for he did with all facility apply euery thing which he saw to his rauing Chiualry and ill-errant thoughts. And when he saw that the poore Knight drew neere, without setling himselfe to commune with him, he inrested his * Iauelin low on the thigh, and ranne with all the force *Rozinante* might, thinking to strike him thorow and thorow. And drawing neere vnto him, without stopping his horse, hee cryed, defend thy selfe Caytife, or else render vnto mee willingly, that which is my due by all reason. The Barber who so without fearing or surmising any such thing, saw that Fantasme and spirit come vpon him, had no other remedy to auoyde the blow of the Launce but to fall off of his Asse to the ground: and scarce had hee touched the earth, when rising vp againe as light as a Deere, he runne away so swiftly through the plaine, as the winde could scarce ouertake him; leauing behinde him on the ground his Bason, wherewithall *Don-Quixote* rested content, and said, that *Pagan* which lost it was discreete, and did imitate the *Castor*, who seeing himselfe hotly pursued by the hunters, which teares and cuts away that with his teeth, for which he knows by naturall instinct he followed. Then he commaunded *Sancho* to take vp the helmet, who lifting it, said the Bason is a good one By God, and is as well worth a Riall of eight as a marnedie; and giuing it to his Lord, he presently set it on his head, turning about euery way, to see whether he could get the Beauer, and seeing he could not finde it, hee said, The *Pagan* for whom this famous helmet was first forged, had doubtlesly a very great head; and that which grieues me principally is, that this helmet wants the one halfe.

* *Sancon.*

When *Sancho* heard him call the Bason a helmet, hee could not containe his laughter, but presently remembring on his Masters choler, he checkt it in the midst. Why dost

Digitized by Google

doſt thou laugh *Sancho*, quoth *Don-Quixote*? I laugh, ſaid he, to thinke on the great head the *Pagan* owner of this helmet had. For it is for all the world like a Barbers Baſon. Know *Sancho* that I imagine, quoth *Don-Quixote*, that this famous piece of this inchanted helmet did fall by ſome ſtrange accident into ſome ones handes that knew not the worth thereof, and ſeeing it was of pure gold, without knowing what he did, I thinke hee hath moulten the halfe, to profite himſelfe therewithall, and made of the other halfe this which ſeemes a Barbers Baſon, as thou ſayeſt. But be what it liſt, to me who knowes well what it is his tranſmutation makes no matter, for I will dreſſe it ſo in the firſt towne, where I ſhall finde a Smith, as that which the God of forges made for the God of warre, ſhall not ſurpaſſe, no nor come neere it; and in the meane while I will weare it as I may: for ſomething is better then nothing; and more, ſeeing it may very well defend me from the blow of a ſtone. That's true, quoth *Sancho*, if it be not throwne out of a ſling, ſuch as that of the battell of the two armies, when they bliſſed your Worſhips checke teeth, and broke the bottle wherin you carried the moſt bliſſed drench which made me vomit vp my guts. I doe not much care for the loſſe of it *Sancho*, quoth *Don-Quixote*, for as thou knoweſt, I haue the receit in memory; ſo haue I likewiſe, quoth *Sancho*, but if euer I make it or taſte it againe in my life, I pray God that here may be mine end. How much more I neuer meane to thruſt my ſelfe into any occaſion wherin I ſhould haue neede of it; for I meane with all my fiue ſenſes to keepe my ſelfe from hurting any, or being hurt. Of being once againe toſt in a Couerlet I ſay nothing, for ſuch diſgraces can hardly be preuented, and if they befall, there is no other remedy but patience, and to lift vp the ſhoulders, keepe in the breath, ſhut the eyes, and ſuffer our ſelues to bee borne where Fortune and the Couerlet pleaſeth.

Digitized by Google

Thou art a badde Christian *Sancho*, quoth *Don-Quixote*, hearing him say so; for thou neuer forgettest the iniuries that are once done to thee: know that it is the duty of noble and generous minds not to make any account of toyes. What legge hast thou brought away lame, what ribbe broken, or what head hurte, that thou canst not yet forget that jest? for the thing being well examined, it was none other then a jest or pastime; for if I did not take it to be such, I had returned by this to that place, & done more harme in thy reuenge, then that which the *Greekes* did for the rape of *Helen*: who if she were in these times, or my *Dulcinea* in hers, she might be sure she should neuer haue gained so much fame for beauty as she did: and saying so, he pierced the skie with a sigh. Then said *Sancho*, let it passe for a jest, since the reuenge cannot passe in earnest. But I know well the quality both of the jests and earnest, and also that they shall neuer fall out of my memory, as they will neuer out of my shoulders. But leauing this apart, what shall we doe with this dapple gray Steed that lookes so like a gray Asse, which that *Martin* left behinde, whom you ouerthrew, who according as he laide feete on the dust and made hast, hee mindes not to backe for him againe, and by my beard the gray beast is a good one. I am not accustomed, quoth *Don-Quixote*, to ransacke and spoyle those whom I ouercome, nor is it the practise of Chiualry to take their horses, and let them goe a foote: if that it befall the Victor to lose in the conflict his owne; for in such a case it is lawfull to take that of the vanquished, as wonne in faire warre. So that *Sancho* leaue that horse, or Asse, or what else thou pleasest to call it, for when his owner sees vs departed, he will returne againe for it. God knowes, quoth *Sancho*, whether it will be good or no for me to take him, or at least change for mine owne, which me thinkes is not so good. Truely the lawes of Knighthood are straight, since they extend not themselues to licence the exchang of one Asse

for another: and I would know whether they permit at leaſt to change the one harneſſe for another. In that I am not very ſure, quoth *Don-Quixote*, and as a caſe of doubt (vntill I be better informed) I ſay that thou exchange them, if by chance thy neede bee extreme: ſo extreme, quoth *Sancho*, that if they were for mine owne very perſon, I could not neede them more. And preſently enabled by the licence, he made *mutatio Caparum*, and ſet forth his beaſt like a hundred holy-dayes.

This being done, they broke their faſt with the relickes of the ſpoyles they had made in the Campe of Sumpture horſe, and drunke of the Milles ſtreames, without once turning to looke on them (ſo much they abhord them for the maruellous terror they had ſtrucken them in) and hauing by their repaſt cut away all cholericke and melancholicke humours, they followed on the way which *Rozinante* pleaſed to leade them (who was the depoſitory of his Maſters will, and alſo of the Aſſes, who followed him alwayes whereſoeuer hee went in good amitie and company. For all this they returned to the high way, wherein they trauelled at randome, without any certaine deliberation which way to goe. And as they thus trauelled, *Sancho* ſaid to his Lord, Sir, will you giue me leaue to commune a little with you; for ſince you haue impoſed vpon me that ſharpe commaundement of ſilence more then foure things haue rotted in my ſtomacke, and one thing that I haue now vpon the tippe of my tongue, I would not wiſh for any thing that it ſhould miſcarry? Say it, quoth *Don-Quixote*, and be briefe in thy reaſons, *For none is delightfull if it be prolix*. I ſay then, quoth *Sancho*, that I haue beene theſe later dayes, conſidering how little is gained by following theſe aduentures, that you doe thorow theſe deſarts and croſſe waies, where though you ouercome and finiſh the moſt dangerous, yet no man ſees nor knowes them, and ſo they ſhall remaine in perpetuall ſilence, both to your preiudice, and that of the fame which

Digitized by Google

which they deserue. And therefore me thinkes it were better (still excepting your better iudgement herein) that we went to serue some Emperour, or other great Prince that maketh warre, in whose seruice you might show the valour of your person, your maruellous force, and wonderfull iudgement: which being perceiued by the Lord whom we shall serue, he must perforce reward vs, euery one according to his deserts; and in such a place will not want one to record your noble acts for a perpetuall memory: of mine I say nothing, seeing they must not transgresse the Squire-like limits: although I dare auouch that if any notice be taken in Chiualry of the feats of Squires, mine shall not fall away betwixt the lines.

" *Sancho* thou sayest not ill, quoth *Don-Quixote*, but " before such a thing come to passe, it is requisite to spend " some time vp and downe the world, as in probation, " seeking of aduentures, to the end that by atchieuing " some, a man may acquire such fame and renoume, as " when he goes to the Court of any great Monark, he be " there already knowne by his workes, and that he shall " scarcely be perceiued to enter at the gates by the boyes " of that Citie, when they all will follow & inuiron him, " crying out aloude; This is the Knight of the Sunne, or " the Serpent, or of some other deuice vnder which hee " hath atchieued strange aduentures. This is he (will they " say) who ouercame in single fight the huge Giant *Bro-* " *cabruno* of the inuincible strength. He that disinchan- " ted the great *Sophie* of *Persia*, of the large inchantment " wherein he had lien, almost nine hundred yeares. So " that they will thus goe proclaiming his actes from " hand to hand; and presently the King of that King- " dome, moued by the great bruit of the boyes and other " people, will stand at the windowes of his Palace to see " what it is; and as soone as hee shall eye the Knight, " knowing him by his armes, or by the *Impresa* of his " shield, he must necessarily say, vp, goe all of you my Knights,

Digitized by Google

"Knights, as many of you as are in my Court forth, to re-
"ceiue the flower of Chiualry, which comes there: at
"whose commandement they all wil sally, & he himselfe
"will come downe to the midst of the staires, and will
"embrace him most straightly, and will giue him the
"peace, kissing him on the cheeke: and presently will
"carrie him by the hand to the Queenes chamber,
"where the Knight shall finde her accompanied by the
"Princesse her daughter, which must be one of the faireſt
"and debonaire damzels that can be found throughout
"the vast compasse of the earth; after this will presently
"and in a trice succeed that she will cast her eye on the
"Knight, and he on her, and each of them shall seeme
"to the other no humane creature but an Angell, and
"then without knowing how, or how not, they shall re-
"maine captiue and intangled in the intricable amorous
"nette, and with great care in their mindes, because they
"know not how they shall speake to discouer their an-
"guish and feeling. From thence the King will carrie
"him without doubt to some quarter of his Palace
"richly hanged; where hauing taken off his armes,
"they will bring him a rich mantell of Scarlet, furred
"with ermines to weare: and if hee seemed well before
"being armed, he shall now looke as well or better
"out of them. The night being come, he shal sup with the
"King, Queene & Princesse, where he shal neuer take off
"his eye off her, beholding vnawares of those that stand
"present: & she will do the like with as much discretion;
"for as I haue said she is a very discreete damzell. The
"Tables shall be taken vp, there shall enter vnexpectly in
"at the hal an ill fauored little dwarffe, with a faire Ladie
"that comes behinde the dwarffe betweene two Giants,
"with a certaine aduenture wrought by a most auncient
"wiseman, & that he who shal end it, shal be held for the
"best Knights of the world. Presently the King wil com
"mand al those that are present to proue it, wch they do,

Digitized by Google

but

" none of them can finiſh it, but onely the new come
" Knight to the great proofe of his fame. Whereat the
" Princeſſe will remaine very glad, and will be very ioy-
" full and well appaide, becauſe ſhee hath ſetled her
" thoughts in ſo high a place. And the beſt of it is that
" this King, or Prince, or what elſe he is, hath a very great
" warre with another as mighty as hee; and the Knight
" his gueſt doth aske him (after he hath bin in the Court
" a few dayes) licence to go and ſerue him in that warre.
" The King will giue it with a very good will, and the
" Knight will kiſſe his handes courteouſly for the fauour
" he doth him therein: and that night he will take leaue
" of his Ladie the Princeſſe by ſome window of a garden
" that lookes into her bed-chamber; by the which hee
" hath ſpoken to her oft-times before, being a great
" meanes and helpe therto, a certaine damzell which the
" Princeſſe truſts very much. He ſighes, and ſhee will fall
" in a ſound, and the damzell will bring water, to bring
" her to her ſelfe againe. She will be alſo full of care be-
" cauſe the morning drawes neere, and ſhe would not
" haue them diſcouered for any her Ladies honour. Fi-
" nally the Princeſſe will returne to her ſelfe, and will
" giue out her beautifull handes at the window to the
" Knight, who will kiſſe them a thouſand and a thouſand
" times, and will bathe them all in teares. There it will
" remaine agreed betweene them two, the meanes that
" they will vſe to acquaint one another with their good
" or badde ſucceſſes; and the Princes will pray him to
" ſtay away as little time as he may, which he ſhall pro-
" miſe vnto her, with many oathes and proteſtations.
" Then will he turne againe to kiſſe her handes, and take
" his leaue of her with ſuch feeling, that there will want
" but litle to end his life in the place he goes from thence
" to his chamber, and caſts himſelfe vpon his bedde, but
" he ſhall not be able to ſleepe a nappe for ſorrow of his
" departure: he will after get vp very early, and will goe

Digitized by Google

to

"to take leaue of the King, the Queene and Princesse.
"They tell him (hauing taken leaue of the first two) that
"the Princesse is ill at ease, and that she cannot be visi-
"ted: the Knight thinkes that it is for griefe of his de-
"parture, and the which tidings launceth him anew to
"the bottom of his heart, wherby he will be almost con-
"strained to giue manifest tokens of his griefe: the dam-
"zel that is priuy to their loues will be present, and must
"note all that passeth, and goe after to tell it to her Mi-
"stresse, who receiues her with teares, and sayes vnto
"her that one of the greatest afflictions she hath is, that
"she does not know who is her Knight, or whether hee
"be of blood royall or no: Her damzell will assure her
"againe that so great bountie, beauty and valor as is in
"her Knight, could not find place but in a great & royall
"subiect. The carefull Princesse will comfort her selfe
"with this hope; and labour to bee cheerefull lest shee
"should giue occasion to her parents to suspect any fini-
"ster thing of her: and within two dayes againe she will
"come out in publique. By this the Knight is departed,
"he fights in the warre, and ouercomes the Kings ene-
"my, he winnes many Cities, and triumphes for many
"battels, he retumes to the Court, he visits his Lady, and
"speakes to her at the accustomed place, he agreeth with
"her to demaund her of the King for his wife, in reward
"of his seruices, whereunto the King will not consent,
"because he knowes not what he is: but for all this, ey-
"ther by carrying her away, or by some other maner the
"Princesse becomes his wife, and he accounts himselfe
"therefore very fortunate, because it was after knowne
"that the same Knight is sonne to a very valorous King
"of I know not what Countrey; for I beleeue it is not
"in all the Mappe. The father dies, and the Princesse doth
"inherite the Kingdome, and thus in two wordes our
"Knight is become a King. Heere in this place enters
"presently the commoditie to reward his Squire, and all
those

" thoſe that holpe him to aſcend to ſo high an eſtate. He " marries his Squire with one of the Princeſſes damzels, " which ſhall doubtleſly bee the very ſame that was ac- " quainted with his loue, who is ſome principall Dukes " daughter.

That's it I ſeeke for, quoth *Sancho*, and all will goe right; therefore I will leane to that, for euery whit of it which you ſaid will happen to your ſelfe, without miſſing a iot, calling your ſelfe *The Knight of the ill fauoured face*. Neuer doubt it *Sancho*, quoth *Don-Quixote*, for euen in the very ſame maner, and by the ſame ſteppes that I haue recounted here Knights errant doe aſcend and haue aſ- ſended to be Kings and Emperours. This only is expedi- ent, that we enquire what King among the Chriſtians or Heathens makes warre and hath a faire daughter: but we ſhall haue time enough to bethinke that, ſince as I haue ſaid we muſt firſt acquire fame in other places, before we goe to the Court. Alſo I want another thing, that put caſe that we find a Chriſtian or Pagan King, that hath warres and a faire daughter, and that I haue gained incre- dible fame throughout the wide-world, yet cannot I tell how I might finde that I am deſcended from Kings, or at the leaſt couſen Germaine remoued of an Emperour? For the King will not giue me his daughter, vntill this be firſt very well proued, though my workes deſerue it neuer ſo much; ſo that I feare to loſe through this defect, that which mine owne hath merited ſo well. True it is, that I am a Gentleman of a knowne houſe of propriety and poſſeſſion; and perhaps the wiſe man that ſhall write my Hiſtory will ſo beautifie my kindred and diſcent, that hee will find me to be the fift or ſixt deſcent from a King; for thou muſt vnderſtand *Sancho*, that there are two maners of lineages in the world. Some that deriue their pede- gree from Princes and Monarkes, whom time hath by lit- tle and little diminiſhed and conſumed, and ended in a point like *Pyramydes*. Others that tooke their beginning

Digitized by Google

from

from base people, and ascend from degree vnto degree, vntill they become at last great Lords. So that all the difference is, that some were that which they are not now, and others are that which they were not. And it might be that I am of those, and after good examination my beginning might be found to haue beene famous and glorious; wherewithall the King my father in law ought to be content, whosoeuer he were: and when he were not, yet shall the Princesse loue me in such sort, that she shall in despite of her fathers teeth, admit me for her Lord and Spouse, although she knew me to be the sonne of a Water-bearer. And if not, here in this place may quader well, the carrying of her away perforce, and carrying of her where best I liked; for eyther time or death must needes end her fathers displeasure.

Here comes well to passe that *Sancho*, which some damned fellowes are wont to say; *Seeke not to get that with a good will, which thou mayest take perforce*; although it were better said, *The leape of a shrubbe is more worth then good mens intreaties.* I say it to this purpose, that if the King your father in law will not condiscend to giue vnto you the Princesse my Mistresse, then there's no more to be done, but as you say to her, steale away & carie her to another place: but all the harme is, that in the meane while that composition is vnmade, and you possesse not quietly your Kingdome, the poore Squire may whistle for any benefite or pleasure you are able to doe him, if it be not that the damzell of whom you spoke euen now, runne away with her Ladie, and that he passe away his misfortunes now and then with her, vntil heauen ordaine some other thing: for I doe thinke that his Lord may giue her vnto him presently, if he please to be his lawfull Spouse. There's none that can depriue thee of that, quoth *Don-Quixote*. Why, so that this may befall, quoth *Sancho*, there's no more but to commend our selues to God, and let fortune runne where it may best addresse vs. God bring

bring it ſo to paſſe, quoth *Don-Quixote*, as I deſire, and thou haſt neede of *Sancho*? and let him be a wretch that accounts himſelfe one. Let him be ſo, quoth *Sancho*, for I am an olde Chriſtian; and to be an Earle there is no more requiſite. I, and tis more then enough, quoth *Don-Quixote* for that purpoſe: and though thou wereſt not, it made not much matter; for I being a King I may giue thee nobility, without eyther buying of it, or ſeruing me with nothing. For in creating thee an Earle, loe thereby thou art a Gentleman: and let men ſay what they pleaſe, they muſt in good faith call thee right honourable, although it grieue them neuer ſo much. And thinke you, quoth *Sancho*, that I would not authorize my *Litado*. Thou muſt ſay *Dictado* or dignity, quoth *Don-Quixote*, and not *Litado*, for that's a barbarous word. Let it be ſo, quoth *Sancho Panca*, I ſay that I would accommodate all very well, for I was once by my life: the warner of a *Confratriety*, and the warners gowne became me ſo well, that euery one ſaid I had a preſence fit for the prouoſt of the ſame. Then how much more when I ſhall ſet on my ſhoulders the Reall of a Duke, or be apparrelled with golde and pearles after the cuſtome of ſtrange Earles; I doe verily beleeue that men will come a hundred leagues to ſee me. Thou wilt ſeeme very well, quoth *Don-Quixote*, but thou muſt ſhaue that beard very often, for as thou haſt it now ſo buſhie, knit, and vnhandſome, if thou ſhaueſt it not with a razor at the leaſt euery other day, men will know that thou art as farre from Gentilitie as a Musket can carie. What more is there to be done, quoth *Sancho*, then to take a Barber, and keepe him hired in my houſe; yea, and if it be neceſſary, he ſhall ride after me, as if he were a Maſter of horſe to ſome Nobleman: how knoweſt thou, quoth *Don-Quixote*, that Noblemen haue their Maſters of horſes riding after them? Some few years agoe I was a moneth in the Court, and there I ſaw that as a young little Lord rode by for his pleaſure, they ſaid

Digitized by Google

he

he was a great *Grande*: there followed him ſtill a horſe-backe a certaine man turning euery way that he went, ſo as he verily ſeemed to be his horſe taile. I then demaunded the cauſe why that man did not ride by the others ſide, but ſtill did follow him ſo? They anſwered me that he was Maſter of his horſes, and that the *Grandes* were accuſtomed to carrie ſuch men after them. Thou ſayeſt true, quoth *Don-Quixote*, and thou mayeſt carry thy Barber in that manner after thee; for *cuſtomes came not altogether*, nor were not inuented at once. And thou mayeſt be the firſt Earle that carried his Barber after him. And I doe aſſure thee that it is an office of more truſt to trim a mans beard then to ſaddle a horſe. Let that of the Barber reſt to my charge, quoth *Sancho*, and that of procuring to be a King, and of creating me an Earle to yours. It ſhall be ſo, quoth *Don-Quixote*; and thus lifting vp his eyes, he ſaw that which ſhall be recounted in the chapter following.

CHAP. VIII.

Of the liberty Don-Quixote *gaue to many wretches, who were a carrying perforce to a place they deſired not.*

Ide Hamete Benengeli, an *Arabicall* and *Machegan* Author recounts in this moſt graue, lofty, diuine, ſweet, conceited Hiſtory, that after theſe diſcourſes paſt between *Don-Quixote* and his Squire *Sancho Panca*, which we haue laid downe in the laſt Chapter. *Don-Quixote* lifting vp his eyes, ſaw that there came in the very ſame way wherein they rode, about ſome twelue men in a company on foote, inſerted like Bead-ſtones in a great chaine of yron that was tyed abou-

Digitized by Google

about their neckes, and euery one of them had manacles beſides on their handes. There came to conduct them two on horſebacke, and two others a foot; the horſemen had firelocke pieces, thoſe that came a foote darts and ſwords. And as ſoone as *Sancho* ſaw them, he ſaid; This is a chaine of Gally-ſlaues, people forced by the King to go to the Gallies. How? people forced, demanded *Don-Quixote*, is it poſſible that the King will force any body? I ſay not ſo, anſwered *Sancho*, but that it is people which are condemned for their offences to ſerue the King in the Gallies perforce. In reſolution, replyed *Don-Quixote*, (howſoeuer it be) this folke, although they be conducted goe perforce, and not willingly. That's ſo, quoth *Sancho*. Then if that be ſo, here fals in iuſtly the execution of my function, to wit, the diſſoluing of violences and outrages, and the ſuccouring of the afflicted and needefull. I pray you Sir, quoth *Sancho*, to conſider that the Iuſtice, who repreſents the King himſelfe, doth wrong or violence to no body, but onely doth chaſtice them for their committed crimes.

By this the chaine of ſlaues arriued, and *Don-Quixote* with very courteous termes requeſted thoſe that went in their guard, that they would pleaſe to informe him of the cauſe wherefore they carried that people away in that manner? One of the guardians a horſe-backe anſwered, that they were ſlaues condemned by his Maieſtie to the Gallies, and there was no more to be ſaid, neither ought he to deſire any farther knowledge. For all that, replied *Don-Quixote*, I would faine learne of euery one of them in particular the cauſe of his diſgrace: and to this did adde other ſuch and ſo courteous wordes, to moue them to tell him what he deſired, as the other guardian a horſe-backe ſaid. Although we carie here the Regiſter and teſtimony of the condemnations of euery one of theſe wretches, yet this is no time to hold them here long, or take out the proceſſes to reade, draw you neerer and demaund

maud it of themselues, for they may vse it and they please, and I know they will; for they are men that take delight both in acting and relating knaueries.

With this licence, which *Don-Quixote* himselfe would haue taken, although they had not giuen it him, he came to the chaine, and demanded of the first for what offence he went in so ill a guise? Hee answered that his offence was no other then for being in loue; for which cause only he went in that order. For that and no more, replied *Don-Quixote*? Well, if enamoured folke be cast into the Gallies, I might haue beene rowing there a good many dayes agoe. My loue was not such as you conie cure, quoth the slaue, for mine was that I loued so much a basket well heaped with fine linnen, as I did embrace it so straightly, that if the Iustice had not taken it away from me by force, I would not haue forsaken it to this houre by my good will. All was done in *Flagrante*; there was no leisure to giue me torment, the cause was concluded, my shoulders accommodated with a hundred, and for a supplement three prices of *Garrupes*, and the worke was ended. What are *Garrupes*, quoth *Don-Quixote*? *Garrupes* are Gallies, replied the slaue, who was a young man of some foure and twenty yeares old, and said he was borne in *Piedrahita*.

Don-Quixote demaunded of the second his cause of offence, who would answere nothing he went so sad and melancholy. But the first answered for him, and said, Sir this man goes for a *Canarie bird*, I meane for a Musitian and Singer. Is it possible, quoth *Don-Quixote*, that Musicians and Singers are likewise sent to the Gallies? Yes Sir, quoth the slaue, for there's nothing worse then to sing in anguish. Rather, quoth *Don-Quixote*, I haue heard say that he *which sings doth affright and chase away his harms*. Here it is quite contrary, quoth the slaue, for *He that sings once, weepes all his life after*. I doe not vnderstand it, said *Don-Quixote*; but one of the guardians said to him, Sir

Knight, to *sing in anguish*, is said among this people *non Sancta*, to confesse vpon the racke. They gaue this poore wretch the torture, and he confessed his deligne that hee was a *Ouartrezo*, that is a stealer of beathes. And because he hath confessed, he is likewise condemned to the Gallies for sixe years, with an *Amen* of two hundred blowes, which he beares already with him on his shoulders; and he goes alwayes thus sad and pensatiue, because the other theeues that remaine behinde, and also those which goe heere doe abuse, despise, and scorne him for confessing, and not hauing a courage to say *Non*. For they say a *No*, hath as many letters as an *Yo*, & that a delinquent is very fortunate, when his life or his death onely depends of his owne tongue, and not of witnesses or proofes: and in mine opinion they haue very great reason. I likewise thinke the same, quoth *Don-Quixote*.

And passing to the third, he demaunded that which he had done of the rest, who answered him out of hand, and that pleasantly. I goe to the Lady *Garrupes* for fiue yeares because I wanted coine Duckets. I will giue twenty with all my heart to free thee from that misfortune, quoth *Don-Quixote*. That, quoth the slaue, would be like to one that hath money in the midst of the Gulfe, and yet dies for hunger, because he can get no meat to buy for it. I say this, because if I had those twenty Duckets which your Worships liberality offers me in due season, I would haue so annoynted with them the Notaries penne, and whetted my Lawyers wits so well, that I might to day see my selfe in the midst of the Market of *Zocodouer* of *Toledo*, and not in this way trayled thus like a Grey-hound: but God is great. Patience; and this is enough.

Don-Quixote went after to the fourth, who was a man of a venerable presence, with a long white beard which reached to his bosome. Who hearing himselfe demanded the cause why he came there, began to weepe, and answered not a word. But the fift slaue sent him a tongue, and

Digitized by Google

and said, This honest man goes to the Gallies for foure yeares, after he had walked the Ordinary apparrelled in pompe, and a horsebacke. That is, quoth *Sancho Panca*, as I take, after he was caried about to the shame and publike view of the people. You are in the right, quoth the slaue, and the crime for which hee is condemned to this paine, was, for being a Broker of the care, I and of all the body too; for in effect I meane that this Gentleman goeth for a Baude, and likewise for hauing a little smacke and entrance in witch-craft. If that smacke and insight in witchcraft were not added, quoth *Don-Quixote*, hee merited not to goe and row in the Gallies for being a pure Baude, but rather deserued to gouerne and be their Generall. For the office of a Baude is not like euery other ordinary office, but rather of great discretion and most necessary in any Common-wealth well gouerned, and should not be practised but by people well borne; and ought besides to haue a **Veedor*, and examinator of them, as are of al other trades, & a certain appointed number of men known, as are of the other brokers of the exchange. And in this manner many harmes that are done might be excused, because this trade and office is practised by indiscreete people of little vnderstanding; such as are women of little more or lesse, young Pages and Iesters of few yeares standing, and of lesse experience, which in the most vrgent occasions, and when they should contriue any thing artificially, the crummes freeze in their mouthes and fists, and they know not which is their right hand. Faine would I passe forward, and giue reasons why it is conuenient to make choise of those which ought in the Common-wealth to practise this so necessary an office: but the place and season is not fit for it. One day I will say it to those which may prouide and remedy it: onely I say now, that the assumpt or addition of a Witch, hath depriued me of the compassion I should otherwise haue, to see those gray haires and venerable face in such distress

for

* Veedor *is an office in Spaine of great trust, set by the King to examine and search the dealing of other vnder-officers, an Ouerseer or Controuler.*

for being a Baude. Although I know very well that no ſorcery in the world can moue or force the will, as ſome ignorant perſons thinke (for our will is a free power, and ther's no hearb nor charme can conſtrain it.) That which certain ſimple women, or couſening companions make, are ſome mixtures and poyſons, wherewithall they cauſe men runne madde, and in the meane while perſwade vs that they haue force to make one loue well, being (as I haue ſaid) a thing moſt impoſſible to conſtraine the *Will*. That is true, quoth the olde man, and I proteſt Sir, that I am wholly innocent of the imputation of Witchcraft: as for being a Baude, I could not denie it: but yet I neuer thought that I did ill therein; for all mine intention was that all the world ſhould diſport them, and liue together in concord and quietneſſe without griefes or quarrels: but this my good deſire auailed me but little to hinder my going there; from whence I haue no hope euer to returne, my yeares doe ſo burden me, and alſo the ſtone, which lets me not reſt an inſtant. And ſaying this, he turned againe to his lamentations as at the firſt, and *Sancho* tooke ſuch compaſſion on him, as ſetting his hand into his boſome, he drew out a couple of ſhillings, and gaue it him as an almes.

From him *Don-Quixote* paſt to another, and demaunded his fault; who anſwered with no leſſe but with much more pleaſantneſſe then the former: I goe heere becauſe I haue jeſted ſomewhat too much with two couſen Germaines of mine owne, and with two other ſiſters, which were none of mine: finally, I jeſted ſo much with them all, that thence reſulted the increaſe of my kindred ſo intricately, as there is no Caſuiſt that can well reſolue it. All was proued by me, I wanted fauour, I had no money, and was in danger to loſe my head: finally, I was condemned for ſixe yeares to the Gallies. I conſented, it is a puniſhment of my fault; I am young, and let my life but holde out a while longer, and all will goe well. And if you Sir Knight

Knight carry any thing to succour vs poore folke, God will reward you it in heauen, and we will haue care here on earth to desire God in our daily prayers for your life and health, that it be as long and as good as your good countenance deserues. He that said this, went in the habite of a student, and one of the guard tolde him that hee was a great talker, and a very good Latinist.

After all these came a man of some thirty yeares olde, of very comely personage, saue onely that when he looked, he seemed to thrust the one eye into the other. Hee was differently tied from the rest; for he carried about his legge so long a chain, that it tired all the rest of his body: and he had besides two yron rings about his necke, the one of the chaine, and the other of that kinde which are called *A keepe friend*, or the foote of a friend. From whence descended two yrons vnto his middle, out of which did sticke two manacles, wherein his hands were lockt vp with a great hanging locke; so as he could neyther set his hands to his mouth, nor bend down his head towards his hands. *Don-Quixote* demanded why he was so loaden with yron more then the rest? The guard answered, because he alone had committed more faults then all together, and was a more desperate knaue, and that although they carried him tied in that sort, yet went they not sure of him, but feared hee would make an escape. What faults can he haue so grieuous, quoth *Don-Quixote*, since he hath onely deserued to be sent to the Gallies? he goeth, replied the guard to them for tenne yeares, which is equiualent to a ciuill death: neuer striue to know more but that this man is the notorious *Gines of Passamonte*, who is otherwise called *Ginesilio of Parapilla*. Master Commissarie, quoth the slaue, hearing him say so, go faire and softly, and runne not thus dilating of names and surnames, I am called *Gines* and not *Ginesilio*, and *Passamonte* is my surname, and not *Parapilla*, as you say, and let euery one turne about him, and he shall not doe little. Speake with

Digitized by Google

with leſſe ſwelling, quoth the Commiſſarie, Sir thiefe of more then the *Marke. If you will not haue me to make you hold your peace, maugre your teeth. It ſeemes well (quoth the ſlaue) that a man is carried as pleaſeth God; but one day ſome body ſhall know whether I be called *Gineſilio* of *Parapilla*. Why doe not they call thee ſo couſener, quoth the guard? They doe, ſaid *Gines*, but I will make that they ſhall not call me ſo, or I will fleece them; there where I mutter vnder my teeth. Sir Knight if you haue any thing to beſtow on vs, giue it vs now, and bee gone in the name of God; for you doe tire vs with your too curious ſearch of knowing other mens liues: and if you would know mine, you ſhall vnderſtand that I am *Gines of Paſſamonte*, whoſe life is written (ſhewing his hand) by theſe two fingers. Hee ſayes true, quoth the Commiſſary, for he himſelfe hath penned his owne hiſtorie ſo well as there is nothing more to bee deſired: and leaues the booke pawned in the priſon for two hundred Rials: and likewiſe meane to redeeme it, quoth *Gines*, though it were in for as many duckets. Is it ſo good a worke ſaid *Don-Quixote*? It is ſo good, replied *Gines*, that it quite puttes downe *Lazarillo de Tormes*, and as many others as are written or ſhall write of that kinde: for that which I dare affirme to you is, that it treates of true accidents, and thoſe ſo delightfull that no like inuention can be compared to them. And how is the booke intituled, quoth *Don-Quixote*? it is called, ſaid he, *The life of Gines of Paſſamonte*. And is it yet ended, ſaid the Knight? How can it be finiſhed, replied he, my life being not yet ended? ſince all that is written is from the houre of my birth vntill that inſtant that I was ſent this laſt time to the Gallies. Why then belike you were there once before (quoth *Don-Quixote*?) to ſerue God and the King, I haue beene in there another time foure yeares, and I know already how the Biſket and Prouant agree with my ſtomacke (quoth *Gines*) nor doth it grieue mee very

* Marke, *a certaine length appointed in Spaine for ſwords, which if any tranſgreſſe he is puniſhed, & the ſword forfeited.*

Digitized by Google

very much to returne vnto them; for there I shall haue leisure to finish my booke, and I haue many things yet to say: and in the Gallies of Spaine, there is more resting time then is requisite for that businesse, although I shall not neede much time to penne what is yet vnwritten; for I can if neede were, say it all by roate. Thou seemest to be ingenuous, quoth *Don-Quixote*: and vnfortunate withall, quoth *Gines*; for mishaps doe still persecute the best wits. They persecute knaues, quoth the Commissary. I haue already spoken to Mast. Commissary, quoth *Passamonte*, to go faire and softly; for the Lords did not giue you that rode, to the end you should abuse vs wretches that goe here, but rather to guide and carrie vs where his Maiesty hath commanded, if not by the life of, tis enough that perhaps one day may come to light, the spottes that were made in the Inne. And let all the world peace and liue well, and speake better, for this is now too great a digression. The Commissary held vp his rodde to strike *Passamonte* in answere of his threates, but *Don-Quixote* put himselfe betweene them, and intreated him not to vse him hardly, seeing it was not much that one who carried his handes so tyed, should haue his tongue somewhat free: and then turning himself towards the slaues he said: *Regedeo.p.202.*

I haue gathered out of all that which you haue said, deere brethren, that although they punish you for your faults, yet that the paines you goe to suffer, doe not very well please you, and that you march towards them with a very ill will, and wholly constrayned, and that perhaps the little courage this fellow had on the racke, the want of money that the other had, the small fauour that a third enioyed; and finally the wrested sentence of the Iudge, and the not executing that iustice that was on your sides haue beene cause of your miserie. All which doth present it selfe to my memory in such sort, as it perswadeth, yea and forceth me to effect that for you for which heauen sent me into the world, and made me professe that order

Digitized by Google

of Knighthood which I follow,& that vow which I made therein to fauour and aſſiſt the needfull,and thoſe that are oppreſſed by others more potent. But for as much as I know that it is one of the partes of prudence,not to doe that by foule means,which may be accompliſhed by faire; I will intreate thoſe Gentlemen your guardians and Commiſſary,they will pleaſe to looſe and let you depart peaceably; for there will not want others to ſerue the King in better occaſions; for it ſeemes to me a rigorous maner of proceeding,to make ſlaues of them whom God and nature created free. How much more good Sirs of the guard(added *Don-Quixote*) ſeeing theſe poore men haue neuer committed any offence againſt you; let them anſwere for their ſinnes in the other world: there is a God in heauen, who is not negligent in puniſhing the euill,nor rewarding the good: and it is no wiſe decent, that honourable men ſhould be the executioners of other men,ſeeing they cannot gaine or looſe much thereby. I demaund this of you in this peaceable and quiet manner, to the end that if you accompliſh my requeſt I may haue occaſion to yeeld you thankes; and if you will not doe it willingly,then ſhall this Launce and this Sword, guided by the inuincible valour of mine arme force you to it.

This is a pleaſant doting, anſwered the Commiſſary, and an excellent jeſt,wherewithall you haue finiſhed your large reaſoning. Would you haue vs leaue vnto you thoſe the King forceth? as if we had authority to let them goe,or you to commaund vs to doe it. Go on your way in a good houre gentle Sir,and ſettle the Baſon you beare on your head ſomwhat righter, and ſearch not thus whether the Catte hath three feete. Thou art a Catte, and a Rat,and a knaue,quoth *Don-Quixote*, and ſo with word and deed at once,he aſſaulted him ſo ſuddenly,as without giuing him leiſure to defend himſelfe,he ſtruck him down to the earth very ſore wounded with a blow of his Lance, and as fortune would, this was he that had the fire-locke

Digitized by Google

piece,

piece, the reſt of the guard remained aſtoniſhed at the vnexpected accident; but at laſt returning againe to themſelues, the horſemen ſet hand to their ſwords, and the footmen to their dartes, and all of them ſet vpon *Don-Quixote*, who did expect them very quietly: and doubtleſſy he would haue beene in danger, if the ſlaues perceiuing the occaſion offered to be ſo fit to recouer libertie, had not procured it by breaking the chaine wherein they were linked. The hurliburly was ſuch, as the guards now began to runne to hinder the ſlaues from vntying themſelues, now to offend *Don-Quixote*, who aſſaulted them; ſo that they could doe nothing auaileable to keepe their priſoners. *Sancho* for his part holpe to loſe *Gines of Paſſamonte*, who was the firſt that leaped free into the fielde without clogge, and ſetting vpon the ouerthrown Commiſſary, he diſarmed him of his ſword and piece, and now ayming at the one and then at the other with it, without diſcharging, made all the guards to abandon the fielde, as well for feare of *Paſſamontes* piece, as alſo to ſhunne the maruellous ſhowre of ſtones that the ſlaues now deliuered, powred on them. *Sancho* grew maruellous ſadde at this ſucceſſe; for he ſuſpected that thoſe which fledde away, would goe and giue notice of the violence committed to the *Holy brotherhood*: which would preſently iſſue in troupes, to ſearch the delinquents: and ſaid as much to his Lord, requeſting him to depart preſently from thence and imboske himſelfe in the mountaine, which was very neere. All is well, quoth *Don-Quixote*, I know now what is fit to be done, and ſo calling together al the ſlaues that were in a tumult, and had ſtript the Commiſſary naked; they came all about him to heare what he commanded, to whom he ſaid:

It is the part of people well borne to gratifie and acknowledge the benefits they receiue, ingratitude being one of the ſinnes that moſt offendeth the higheſt. I ſay it Sirs to this end, becauſe you haue by manifeſt triall ſeene, that

Digitized by Google

that which you haue receiued at my hand, in reward whereof I desire, and it is my will that all of you load en with that chain from which I euen now freed your necks, goe presently to the city of *Toboso*, and there present your selues before the Lady *Dulcinea* of *Toboso*, and recount vnto her that her Knight *of the Il fauoured face* sends you there to remember his seruice to her: and relate vnto her at large the manner of your freedome, all yon that haue had such noble fortune, and this being done you may after goe where you please.

Gines de Passamonte answered for all the rest, saying; that which you demand good Sir (our releaser) is most impossible to be performed, by reason that we cannot go altogether through these wayes, but alone and deuided, procuring each of vs to hide himselfe in the bowels of the earth, to the end we may not be found by the *Holy brotherhood*, which will doubtlesly set out to search for vs: that therefore which you may and ought to doe in this exigent is, to change this seruice and homage of the Lady *Dulcinea* of *Toboso*, into a certaine number of *Aue Maries* and *Creedes*, which we will say for your intention, and this is a thing that may be accomplished by night or by day, running or resting, in peace or in warre; but to thinke that wee will returne againe to take vp our chaines, or set our selues in the way of *Toboso*, is as hard as to make vs beleeue, that it is now night, it being yet scarce ten of the clocke in the morning, and to demaund such a thing of vs, is as likely as to seeke for Peares of the Elme tree. I sweare by such a one (quoth *Don-Quixote* throughly inraged) Sir sonne of a whoore, *Don Ginesilio* of *Paropillio*, or howsoeuer you are called, that thou shalt goe thy selfe alone with thy taile betweene thy legges, and beare all the chaine in thy necke. *Passamonte* who was by nature very cholericke, knowing assuredly that *Don-Quixote* was not very wise (seeing he had attempted such a desperate act, as to seeke to giue them liberty)

seeing

Digitized by Google

seeing himselfe thus abused, winked on his companions, and going a little aside, they sent such a shower of stones on *Don-Quixote*, as he had no leasure to couer himselfe with his Buckler, and poore *Rozinante* made no more account of the spurre, then if his sides were made of Brasse. *Sancho* ranne behinde his Asse, and by his meanes sheltred himselfe from the clowde and showre of stones, that rained vpon both. And *Don-Quixote* could not couer himselfe so well, but that a number of stones strucke him in the body with so great force, as they ouerthrew him at last to the ground, and scarce was he fallen when the student leapt vpon him and tooke the bason off his head, and gaue him three or foure blowes with it on the shoulders, and after strucke it so oft about the ground as hee almost broke it to peeces. They tooke from him likewise a cassocke which he wore vpon his armour, and thought also to take away his stockings, but that they were hindred by his grieues. From *Sancho* they tooke away his Cassocke, and left him in his haire, and diuiding all the spoiles of the battaile among themselues, they departed, euery one by the way he pleased, troubled with greater care how to escape from the *Holy brotherhood* which they feared, then to lade themselues with the yron chaine, and goe and present themselues before the Lady *Dulcinea* of *Toboso*. The Asse, and *Rozinante*, *Sancho*, and *Don-Quixote*, remained alone. The Asse stood pensatiue, with his head hanging downewards, shaking now and then his eares, thinking that the storme of stones was not yet past, but that they still buzzed by his head. *Rozinante* lay ouerthrowne by his Master, who was likewise strucke downe by another blow of a stone; *Sancho* in feare of the bullets of the *Holy brotherhood*, and *Don-Quixote* most discontent to see himselfe so misused by those very same, to whom he had done so much good.

Digitized by Google CHAP.

CHAP. IX.

Of that which befell the famous Don-Quixote *in* Siera Morena, *which was one of the most rare aduentures, which in this or any other so authenticall a History is recounted.*

DOn-Quixote seeeing himselfe in so ill plight, said to his Squire *Sancho*, I haue heard say oft-times, that to doe good to men vnthankfull, is to cast water into the Sea. If I had beleeued what thou saidst to me, I might well haue preuented all this griefe: but now that is past, patience, and be wiser an other time: you wil take warning as much by this, quoth *Sancho*, as I am a *Turke*. But since you say, that if you had beleeued me you had auoyded this griefe, beleeue mee now and you shall eschue a greater: for you must wit, that no Knighthood nor Chiualry is of any authority with the *Holy brotherhood*; for it cares not two farthings for all the Knights errant in the world, and know', that mee thinkes I heare their arrows buzze about mine eares already. *Sancho* thou art a naturall coward, quoth *Don-Quixote*, but because thou mayest not say that I am obstinate, and that I neuer follow thine aduice, I will take thy counsell this time, and conuey my selfe from that furie which now thou feareſt so much: but it shal be on a condition, that thou neuer tell aliue nor dying to any mortall creature, that I retired or withdrew my selfe out of this danger for feare, but onely to satisfie thy requests. For if thou sayest any other thing, thou shalt belie mee most falsly: and euen from this very time till that, and from thence vntil now I giue thee the lie herein, and I say thou liest, and shalt lie as oft-times as thou sayest or doest thinke the contrary: and doe not replie to me. For in one-

Digitized by Google

onely thinking that I withdraw my selfe out of any peril, but principally this, which seemes to cary with it some shadow of feare, I am about to remaine and expect heere alone, not onely for the *Holy brotherhood*, which thou nameſt and feareſt, but alſo for the brethren of the *Twelue Tribes*, for the *Seuen Macchabees*, for *Caſtor* and *Pollux*, and for all the other brothers and brotherhoods in the world. Sir, answered *Sancho*, to retire is not to flie nor to expect is wiſedome, when the danger exceedeth all hope; and it is the part of a wiſeman to keepe himſelfe ſafe to day for to morrow; and not to aduenture himſelfe wholly in one day. And know, that although I be but a rude Clowne, yet doe I for all that vnderſtand ſomewhat of that which men call good gouernement: and therfore do not repent your ſelfe for following mine aduice, but mount on *Rozinante* if you be able; if not, I wil helpe you, and come after me, for my mind gines me that we ſhall now haue more vſe of legges then of hands.

Don-Quixote leaped on his horſe without replying a word, and *Sancho* guiding him on his Aſſe they both entred into that part of * *Sierra Morena* that was neare vnto them; *Sancho* had a ſecret deſigne to croſſe ouer it all, and iſſue at *Viſo* or *Amodouar* of *Campo*, and in the meane time to hide themſelues for ſome dayes among thoſe craggie and intricate rockes, to the end they might not be found by the *Holy brotherhood*, if it did make after them. And he was the more encouraged to doe this, becauſe he ſaw their prouiſion which he carried on his Aſſe had eſcapt ſafely out of the skirmiſh of the Gally-ſlaues: a thing which he accounted to be a miracle, conſidering the diligence that the ſlaues had vſed to ſearch and carrie away all things with them. They arriued that night in to the very midſt & bowels of the mountain, & there *Sancho* thought it fitteſt to ſpend that night, yea and ſome other few dayes alſo, at leaſt as long as their victuals indured, and with this reſolution they tooke vp their lodging among

* *A great and large mountaine of Spaine.*

Digitized by Google

mong a number of Corke trees that grew betweene two Rockes. But fatall chaunce, which according to the opinion of thoſe that haue not the light of faith, guideth, directeth, and compoundeth all as it liketh, ordayned that that famous couſener and thiefe *Gines de Paſſamonte*, who was before deliuered out of chains by *Don-Quixotes* force and folly, perſwaded through feare he conceiued of the *Holy brotherhood* (whom hee had iuſt cauſe to feare) reſolued to hide himſelfe likewiſe in that mountaine, and his fortune and feares ledde him iuſt to the place where it had firſt addreſt *Don-Quixote* and his Squire, iuſt at ſuch time as he might perceiue them, and they both at that inſtant fallen aſleepe. And as euill-men are euermore ingratefull, and that neceſſity forceth a man to attempt that which it vrgeth; and likewiſe that the preſent redreſſe preuents the expectation of a future, *Gines* who was neither gratefull nor gratious, reſolued to ſteale away *Sancho* his Aſſe, making no account of *Rozinante*, as a thing neyther ſaleable nor pawnable. *Sancho* ſlept ſoundly, and ſo he ſtole his beaſt, and was before morning ſo farre off from thence, as he feared not to be found.

Aurora ſallied forth at laſt to refreſh the earth, and affright *Sancho* with a moſt ſorrowfull accident, for he preſently miſſed his Aſſe, and ſo ſeeing himſelfe depriued of him, he began the moſt ſadde and dolefull lamentation of the world: in ſuch ſort as he awaked *Don-Quixote* with his out-cries, who heard that hee ſaid thus. O childe of my bowels, borne in mine owne houſe, the ſport of my children, the comfort of my wife, and the enuie of my neighbours; the eaſe of my burdens, and finally the ſuſtainer of halfe of my perſon; for with ſixe and twentie *Marnedijs* that I gained daily by thee, I did defray halfe of mine expences. *Don-Quixote* who heard the plaint, and knew alſo the cauſe did comfort *Sancho* with the beſt words he could deuiſe, and deſired him to haue patience, promiſing to giue a letter of exchange, to the end that

Digitized by Google

they

they of his house might deliuer him three Asses of fiue, which he had left at home.

Sancho comforted himselfe againe with this promise, and dried vp his teares, moderated his sighes, and gaue his Lord thankes for so great a fauour. And as they entred in farther among those mountains we cannot recount the ioy of our Knight, to whom those places seemed most accommodate to atchieue the aduentures he searched for. They reduced to his memory the maruellous accidents that had befalne Knights-errant in like solitudes and desarts: and hee rode so ourwhelmed and transported by these thoughts, as he remembred nothing else. Nor *Sancho* had any other care (after he was out of feare to be taken) but how to fill his belly with some of these relikes which yet remained of the Clericall spoyles; and so hee followed his Lord taking now and then out of a basket, (which *Rozinante* caried for want of the Asse) some meat and lining there with all his paunch; and whilst he went thus imployed, hee would not haue giuen a mite to encounter any other aduenture how honourable soeuer.

But whilst he was thus busied, he espyed his Master laboured to take vp with the point of his Iaueline, some bulke or other that lay on the ground, and went towards him to see whether he needed his helpe iust at the season that he lifted vp a saddle cushion and a Portmantew fast to it, which were halfe rotten, or rather wholly rotted by the weather; yet they weighed so much that *Sanchoes* assistance was requisite to take them vp: and straight his Lord commaunded him to see what was in the Wallet. *Sancho* obeyed with expedition. And although it was shut with a chaine and hanging locke, yet by the parts which were torne he saw what was within, to wit foure fine holland shirts, and other linnens both curious and cleane: and moreouer a handkercher, wherein was a good quantity of gold: which he perceiuing said, Blessed be heauen which hath once presented to vs a beneficiall ad-

Digitized by Google

aduenture: and ſearching for more, he found a Tablet very coſtly bound. This *Don-Quixote* tooke of him, commaunding him to keepe the golde with himſelfe; for which rich fauour *Sancho* did preſently kiſſe his handes: and after taking all the linnen, he clapt it vp in the bagge of their victuals. *Don-Quixote* hauing noted all theſe things, ſaid, Me thinkes *Sancho* (and it cannot be poſſible any other) that ſome traueller hauing left his way, paſt through this mountaine, & being encountred by thieues, they ſlew him, and buried him in this ſecret place? It cannot be ſo, anſwered *Sancho*, for if they were theeues they would not haue left this money behinde them. Thou ſayeſt true, quoth *Don-Quixote*, and therefore I cannot coniecture what it might be: but ſtay a while, we will ſee whether there be any thing written in theſe Tablets, by which wee may vent and finde out that which I deſire. Then he opened it, and the firſt thing that he found written in it, as it were a firſt draught, but done with a very faire Character, was a Sonnet which he read aloude, that *Sancho* might alſo heare it, and was this which enſues.

OR loue of vnderſtanding quite is voyde:
Or he abounds in cruelty, or my paine
Th'occaſion equals not; for which I bide
The torments dyre, he maketh me ſuſtaine.
But if loue be a God, I dare maintaine
He nought ignores: and reaſon aye decides
Gods ſhould not cruell be: then who ordaines
This paine I worſhip, which my heart diuides?
Filis! I erre, if thou I ſay it is:
For ſo great ill and good cannot conſiſt.
Nor doth this wracke from heau'n befall but yet.
That ſhortly I muſt die, can no way miſſe:
For th'euill whoſe cauſe is hardly well expreſt
By miracle alone, true cure may get.

Nothing can be learned by that verſe, quoth *Sancho*, if

if by that * *Hilo* or threed which is said there, you gather not where lies the rest of the clue, what *Hilo* is heere, quoth *Don-Quixote?* Me thought, quoth *Sancho*, that you read *Hilo* there. I did not but *Fili*, said *Don-Quixote*, which is without doubt the name of the Lady, on whom the Authour of this Sonnet complaines, who in good truth seemes to be a reasonable good Poet, or els I know but little of that arte. Why then, quoth *Sancho*, belike you doe also vnderstand *Poetry*? That I doe, and more then thou thinkest, quoth *Don-Quixote*; as thou shalt see when thou shalt carry a letter from me to my Lady *Dulcinea del Toboso*, written in verse from the one end to the other: For I would thou shouldest know *Sancho*, that all or the greater number of Knights errant in times past were great Versifiers and Musitians, for these two qualities, or graces as I may better terme them, are annext to amourous Knights aduentures. True it is that the verses of the auncient Knights are not so adorned with words, as they are rich in conceits. I pray you reade more, quoth *Sancho*, for perhaps you may finde somewhat that may satisfie. Then *Don-Quixote* turned the leafe, and said, This is prose, and it seemes to be a letter. What Sir, a missiue letter, quoth *Sancho*? No but rather of loue, according to the beginning, quoth *Don-Quixote*. I pray you therefore, quoth *Sancho*, reade it loude enough, for I take great delight in these things of loue. I am content, quoth *Don-Quixote*, and reading it loudly as *Sancho* had requested, it said as ensueth.

Thy false promise and my certaine misfortune, do carry me to such a place, as from thence thou shalt sooner receiue newes of my death, then reasons of my iust complaints. Thou hast disdained me (*O ingrate*) for one that hath more, but not for one that is worth more then I am: but if vertue were a treasure of estimation, I would not emulate other mens fortunes, nor weep thus for mine own misfortunes. That which thy beauty erected, thy works

P haue

* *An allusion to the Spanish word Hilo, signifying a threed.*

Google

haue ouerthrowne: by it I deemed thee to be an Angell, and by these I certainely know thee to be but a woman. Rest in peace *(O causer of my warre)* and let heauen worke so that thy spouses deceipts remaine still concealed, to the end thou maist not repent what thou didst, and I bee constrained to take reuenge of that I desire not.

Hauing read the letter, *Don-Quixote* said, we can collect lesse by this then by the letter. What the Authour is, other then that he is some disdayned louer, and so passing ouer all the booke, he found other Verses and Letters, of which hee could read some, others not at all. But the summe of them all were, accusations, plaints, and mistrusts, pleasures, griefes, fauours, and disdaines, some solemnized, others deplored. And whilest *Don-Quixote* past ouer the booke, *Sancho* past ouer the mallet, without leauing a corner of it, or the cushion vnsearched, or a seame vnript, nor a locke of wooll vncarded, to the end nothing might remaine behinde for want of diligence, or carelessenesse, they found gold which past a hundred crowns, had stird in him such a greedinesse to haue more. And though he got no more then that which he found at the first, yet did he account his flights in the couerlet, his vomiting of the drench, the benedictions of the packe slaues, the blowes of the Carrier, the losse of his wallet, the robbing of his Cassocke, and all the hunger, thirst, and wearinesse that he had past in the seruice of his good Lord and Master, for well imployed; accounting himselfe to be more then well paied, by the gifts receiued of the money they found. The Knight of the *Il fauoured face* was the while possessed with a maruailous desire to know who was the owner of the mallet, coniecturing by the Sonnet, and letter, the gold, and linnen, that the enamoured was some man of worth, whom the disdaine and rigour of his Lady had conducted to some desperate termes. But by reason that no body appeared, through

Digitized by Google

that

that inhabitable and desart place, by whom he might be informed; he thought on it no more, but only roade on, without choosing any other way, then that which pleased *Rozinante* to trauaile, who tooke the plainest and easiest to passe through: hauing still an imagination that there could not want some strange aduenture, amidst that Forrest.

And as he roade on, with this conceipt he saw a man on the toppe of a little mountaine that stood iust before his face, leape from rocke to rocke, and tuffe to tuffe with wonderfull dexterity. And as he thought he was naked, had a blacke and thicke beard, the haires many and confusedly mingled, his feete and legges bare, his thighes were couered with a paire of hose, which seemed to bee of Murry veluet, but were so torne that they discouered his flesh in many places: his head was likewise bare, and although he past by with the hast we haue recounted, yet did *the Knight of the Ilfauoured face*, note all these particularities, and although he indeuoured, yet could not hee follow him, for it was not in *Rozinantes* power, in that weake state wherein he was to trauaile so swiftly among those rocks, chiefly being naturally very slow and flegmatike. *Don-Quixote* after espying him did instantly imagine him to be owner of the cushion and mallet; and therefore resolued to goe on in his search, although hee should spend a whole yeare therein among those mountaines: and commanded *Sancho* to goe about the one side of the mountaine, and he would goe the other, and quoth hee, it may befall that by vsing this diligence wee may incounter with that man, which vanished so suddainely out of our sight. I cannot doe so, quoth *Sancho*, for that in parting one step from you, feare presently so assault mee, with a thousand visions and affrightments. And let this serue you hereafter for a warning, to the end you may not from henceforth part me the blacke of a naile from your presence. It shall bee so, answereth

the Knight of the ill-fauoured face. And I am very glad that thou doſt thus build vpon my valour, the which ſhall neuer faile thee, although thou didſt want thy very ſoule: and therefore follow me by little and little, or as thou maiſt, and make of thine eyes two Lant-hornes, for wee giue a turne to this little rocke, and perhaps wee may meete with this man whom we ſaw euen now, who doubtleſly can be none other then the owner of our bootie. To which *Sancho* replyed, it were much better not to finde him: for if we ſhould meet him, and were by chance the owner of this money, it is moſt euident that I muſt reſtore it to him, and therefore it is better without vſing this vnprofitable diligence to let me poſſeſſe it *bona fide*, vntill the true Lord ſhall appeare by ſome way leſſe curious and diligent: which perhaps may fall at ſuch a time as it ſhall be all ſpent; and in that caſe I am freed from all proceſſes by priuiledge of the King. Thou deceiueſt thy ſelfe *Sancho* therein, quoth *Don Quixote*, for ſeeing wee are falne already into ſuſpition of the owner, wee are bound to ſearch and reſtore it to him: and when wee would not ſeeke him out, yet the vehement preſumption that we haue of it hath made vs poſſeſſors *mala fide*, and renders vs as culpable, as if he whom we ſurmiſe, were verily the true Lord. So that friend *Sancho*, be not grieued to ſeeke him, in reſpect of the griefe whereof thou ſhalt free me if he be found. And ſaying ſo, ſpurd *Rozinante*, and *Sancho* followed after a foote, animated by the hope of the young Aſſes his Maſter had promiſed vnto him: & hauing compaſſed a part of the mountain, they found a little ſtream, wherin lay dead, and halfe deuoured by dogs and crows, a Mule ſadled and bridled, al which confirmed more in them the ſuſpition that hee which fledde away was owner of the Mule and cuſhion. And as they looked on it, they heard a whiſtle, much like vnto that which Sheepheards vſe, as they keepe their flockes, and preſently appeared at their left hand a great number of Goates,

after

after whom the Goatheard that kept them, who was an aged man, followed on the toppe of the mountaine; and *Don-Quixote* cried to him, requesting him to come down to them, who answered them againe as loudly, demaunding of them who had brought them to those desarts, rarely troden by any other then Goats, Wolues, or other sauage beastes which frequented those mountaines? *Sancho* answered him; that if hee would descend where they were, they would giue him account thereof. With that the Sheepheard came downe, and arriuing to the place where *Don-Quixote* was, he said, I dare wager that you looke on the hyred Mule which lies dead there in that bottom; well, in good faith he lies in that very place these sixe moneths. Say, I pray you, haue not you met in the way with the master thereof? We haue encountred no body but a cushion and a little Mallet which wee found not very farre off from hence. I did likewise finde the same, replyed the Goatheard, but I would neuer take it vp nor approach to it, fearefull of some misdemeanor, or that I should be hereafter demaunded for it as for a stealth. For the Diuell is crafty, and now and then something riseth, euen from vnder a mans feete, whereat hee stumbles and falles, without knowing how, or how not. That is the very same I say, quoth *Sancho*, for I likewise found it, but would not approach it the cast of a stone. There I haue left it, and there it remaines as it was; for I *would not haue a dogge with a bell.* Tell me good fellow, quoth *Don-Quixote*, dost thou know who is the owner of all these things?

That which I can say, answered the Goatheard, is that about some sixe moneths past, little more or lesse; there arriued at a certaine sheepe-fold some three leagues off, a young Gentleman of comely personage, and presence, mounted on that very *Mule* which lies dead there, and with the same Cushion and Mallet which you say you met, but touched not. He demaunded of vs which was

the moſt hidden and inacceſſable part of the mountaine, and we told him that this wherein we are now : and it is true ; for if you did enter but halfe a league farther, perhaps you would not finde the way out againe ſo readily : and I doe greatly maruell how you could finde the way hither it ſelfe; for there is neyther high way nor path that may addreſſe any to this place. I ſay then, that the young man as ſoone as he heard our anſwere, hee turned the bridle, and trauelled towards the place wee ſhewed to him, leauing vs all with very great liking of his comelines and maruell, at his demaund and ſpeed wherewith he departed and made towards the mountaine : and after that time we did not ſee him a good many of daies, vntill by chance one of our ſheepheards came by with our prouiſion of victuals, to whom he drew neere, without ſpeaking a word, and ſpurned and beate him welfauourdly, and after went to the Aſſe which carried our victuals, and taking away all the bread and cheeſe that was there, hee fled into the mountaine with wonderfull ſpeede. When we heard of this, ſome of vs Goatheards, wee went to ſearch for him, and ſpent therein almoſt two dayes in the moſt ſolitary places of this mountaine, and in the end found him lurking in the hollow part of a very tall and great Corke tree ; who as ſoone as he perceiued vs, came forth to meete vs, with great ſlayednes : his apparrell was all torne, his viſage diſfigured, and toſted with the Sunne in ſuch manner, as we could ſcarce know him, if it were not that his attire, although rent, by the notice we had of it did giue vs to vnderſtand, that hee was the man for whom we ſought. He ſaluted vs courteouſly, and in briefe and very good reaſons he ſaid, that we ought not to maruell, ſeeing him goe in that manner : for that it behoued to doe ſo, that hee might accompliſh a certaine penance inioyned to him, for the many ſinnes he had committed. We prayed him to tell vs what he was, but we could neuer perſwade him to it. We requeſted him likewiſe that when

Digitized by Google

countenance demonstrate. And I doe vow (quoth *Don-Quixote*) by the high order of Chiualry, which I (although vnworthy & a sinner) haue receiued, and by the profession of Knights errant, that if you do pleasure me herein, to assist you with as good earnest as my profession doth binde me, either by remedying your disaster, if it can be holpen; or els by assisting you to lament it, if it be so desperate.

The *Knight of the Rocke*, who heard him of *the ill fauoured face* speake in that maner, did nothing else for a great while, but behold him again & again, and rebehold him from top to toe. And after viewing him wel he said; if you haue any thing to eate, I pray you giue it me for Gods sake, & after I haue eaten I will satisfie your demand thorowly, to gratifie the many courtesies & vndeserued proffers you haue made vnto me. *Sancho* and the Goatheard presents the one out of his Wallet; the other out of his Scrip, tooke some meat and gaue it to the Knight of the Rocke to allay his hunger, and he did eate so fast, like a distracted man, as he left no intermission between bit & bit, but clapt them vp so swiftly, as he rather seemed to swallow then to chew them; & whilst he did eate, neither he or any of the rest spoke a word: & hauing ended his dinner, he made them signes to follow him, as at last they did, vnto a little meadow seated hard by that place, at the folde of a mountain; where being arriued, he stretched himselfe on the grasse, which the rest did likewise in his imitation, without speaking a word, vntill that he after setling himselfe in his place, began in this manner: If Sirs, you please to heare the immanity of my disasters briefly rehearsed, you must promise me, that you will not interrupt the file of my doleful narration, with either demaund or other thing; for in the very instant that you shall do it, there also must remain that which I say depending. These words of our ragged Knights, called to *Don Quixotes* remembrance the tale which his Squire had told vnto him when he erred in the account of his Goats, which had passed the

riuer,

Digitized by Google

riuer, for which that Hiſtory remained ſuſpended. But returning to our ragged man; hee ſaid, this preuention which now I giue, is to the end that I may compendiouſly paſſe ouer the diſcourſe of my miſhaps, for the reuoking of them to remembrance only, ſerues me to none other ſteed, then to increaſe the olde by adding of new misfortunes; and by how much the fewer your queſtions are, by ſo much the more ſpeedily ſhal I haue finiſhed my pittifull Diſcourſe; and yet I meane not to omit my eſſential point of my woes vntoucht, that your deſires may be herein ſufficiently ſatisfied. *Don-Quixote* in his own, and his other companions name, promiſed to performe his requeſt; whereupon hee began his relation in this manner:

My name is *Cardenio*, the place of my birth, one of the beſt Cities in *Andaluzia*, my linage noble, my parents rich, and my misfortunes ſo great, as I thinke my parents haue e're this deplored, & my kinsfolke condoled them; being very little able with their wealth to redreſſe them; for the goods of fortune are but of ſmal vertue to remedy the diſaſters of heauen. There dwelt in the ſame Citie a heauen, wherin loue had placed all the glory that I could deſire; ſo great as the beauty of *Luſcinda*, a damzell as noble and rich as I: but more fortunate and leſſe conſtant then my honourable deſires expected. I loued, honoured and adored this *Luſcinda*, almoſt from my very infancy; and ſhe affected me likewiſe, with all the integrity and good will, which with her ſo young yeares did accord. Our parents knew our mutuall amity; for which they were nothing aggrieued, perceiuing very well, that although we continued it, yet could it haue none other end but that of Matrimony; a thing which the equality of our blood and ſubſtance did of it ſelfe almoſt inuite vs to. Our age and affection increaſed in ſuch ſort, as it ſeemed fit to *Luſcindas* father, for certaine good reſpects to denie me the entrance of his houſe any longer; imita-

ting

Digitized by Google

ting in a manner therein *Tisbi*, so much solemnized by the Poets, her parents; which hinderance serued onely to adde flame to flame, and desire to desire: for although it set silence to our tongues, yet could they not impose it to our pens, which are wont to expresse to whom it pleased, the most hidden secrecies of our soules with more liberty then the tong; for the presence of the beloued doth often distract, trouble, & strike dumbe the boldest tongue and firmest resolution. O heauens, how many letters haue I written vnto her? What cheerefull and honest answers haue I receiued? How many ditties and amorous verses haue I composed, wherein my soule declared and published her passions, declined her enflamed desires, entertained her remembrance, and recreated her will? In effect perceiuing my selfe to be forced, and that my soule consumed with a perpetuall desire to behold her, I resolued to put my desires in execution, and finish in an instant that which I deemed most expedient for the better atchieuing of my desired and deserued reward; which was (as I did indeede) to demaund her of her father for my lawfull Spouse. To which he made answere, that he did gratifie the good will which I shewed by honouring him, and desire to honour my selfe with pawnes that were his: but yet seeing my father yet liued, the motion of that matter properly most concerned him. For if it were not done with his good liking and pleasure, *Luscinda* was not a woman to be taken or giuen by stealth. I rendred him thankes for his good will, his wordes seeming vnto mee very reasonable, at that my father would agree vnto them, as soone as I should explane the matter; and therefore departed presently to acquaint him with my desires; who at the time which I entred into a chamber, wherein he was, stood with a letter open in his hand; and espying me, e're I could breake my minde vnto him, gaue it me, saying: by that letter *Cardenio*, you may gather the desire that Duke *Ricardo* beares, to doe you any pleasure or fauour.

fauour. This Duke *Ricardo*, as I thinke you know *Sirs* already, is a *Grande* of *Spaine*, whose Dukedome is seated in the best part of all *Andaluzia*. I tooke the letter and read it; which appeared so vrgent; as I my selfe accounted it would be ill done, if my father did not accomplish the contents thereof, which were indeed, that he should presently addresse me to his Court, to the end I might be companion (and not seruant) to his eldest sonne; and that he would incharge himselfe with the aduancing of me to such preferments as might be answerable vnto the value and estimation he made of my person. I past ouer the whole letter, & was strucken dumbe at the reading thereof, but chiefly hearing my father to say *Cardenio*, thou must depart within two dayes, to accomplish the Dukes desire; and omit not to render Almighty God thankes, which doth thus open the way, by which thou mayest attaine in fine to that which I know thou doest merite; and to these words added certaine others of fatherly counsaile and direction. The terme of my departure arriued, and I spoke to my *Luscinda* on a certaine night, and recounted vnto her all that passed, and likewise to her father, intreating him to ouerslip a few daies, & deferre the bestowing of his daughter else-where, vntill I went to vnderstand Duke *Ricardo* his will: which he promised me, and shee confirmed it with a thousand oathes and promises. Finally, I came to Duke *Ricardoes* Court, as was so friendly receiued and entertained by him, as euen very then enuie began to exercise her accustomed function, being forthwith emulated by the auncient Seruiters; perswading themselues, that the tokens the Duke shewed to doe me fauours, could not but turne to their preiudice. But hee that reioyced most at mine arriuall, was a second sonne of the Dukes called *Fernando*, who was young, gallant, very comely, liberall, and amorous; who within a while after my comming held me so deerely, as euery one wondred thereat: and though the elder loued me well, and did me

fauour,

fauour, yet was it in no respect comparable to that wherwithall *Don Fernando* loued and treated me. It therefore befell, that as there is no secresie amongst friends so great, but they will communicate it the one to the other, and the familiarity which I had with *Don Fernando*, was now past the limits of fauour, and turned into deerest amity, he reuealed vnto me all his thoughts, but chiefly one of his loue, which did not a little molest him. For he was enamoured on a Farmers daughter that was his fathers vassall, whose parents were maruellous rich, and she her selfe so beautifull, wary, discreete, and honest, as neuer a one that knew her could absolutely determine wherein in which of all her perfections she did most excell or was most accomplished. And those good parts of the beautifull countrey-maide reduced *Don Fernando* his desires to such an exigent, as he resolued that he might the better gaine her good will, and conquere her integrity, to passe her a promise of martiage, for otherwise he should labour to effect that which was impossible, and but striue against the streame. I, as one bound thereunto by our friendship, did thwart and disswade him from his purpose with the best reasons, & most efficacious words I might: and seeing all could not preuaile, I determined to acquaint the Duke *Ricardo* his father therewithall. But *Don Fernando* being very crafty and discreete, suspected and fea red as much, because he considered that in the law of a faithfull seruant, I was bound not to conceale a thing that would turne so much to the preiudice of the Duke my Lord: and therefore both to diuert and deceiue me at once, that he could finde no meanes so good, to deface the remembrance of that beauty out of his minde, which held his hart in such subiection, then to absent himself for certaine moneths: and he would likewise haue that absence to be this, that both of vs should depart together, and come to my fathers house, vnder pretence (as hee would informe the Duke) that he went to see and cheapen

pen certaine great horſes that were in the Citie wherein I was borne; a place of breeding the beſt horſes in the world. Scarce had I heard him ſay this (when borne away by the naturall propenſion each one hath to his countrey, and my loue ioynde) although his deſignment had not beene ſo good, yet would I haue ratified it, as one of the moſt expedient that could be imagined, becauſe I ſaw occaſion and oportunity ſo fairely offred, to returne and ſee againe my *Luſcinda*. And thereof ſet on by this thought and deſire, I approued his opinion, and did quicken his purpoſe, perſwading him to proſecute it with all poſsible ſpeede, for abſence would in the end work her effect in deſpite of the moſt forcible and vrgent thoughts; and when he ſaid this to me, hee had already vnder the title of a husband (as it was afterward knowne) reaped the fruits of his longing deſires, from his beautifull countrey maide, and did onely await an oportunity to reueale it without his owne detriment; fearefull of the Duke his fathers indignation, when he ſhould vnderſtand his errour.

It afterward hapned that as loue in young men is not for the moſt part loue but luſt, the which (as it euer propoſeth to it ſelfe as his laſt end and period is delight) ſo as ſoone as it obtaineth the ſame, it likewiſe decaieth and maketh forcibly to retire that which was termed loue; for it cannot tranſgreſſe the limits which Nature hath aſsigned it, which boundings or meares nature hath in no wiſe allotted to true and ſincere affection. I would ſay that as ſoone as *Don Ferdinando* had inioyed his Country laſſe, his deſires weakned, and his importunities waxed colde; and if at the firſt he fained an excuſe to abſent himſelfe, that he might with more facility compaſſe them, he did now in very good earneſt procure to depart to the end he might not put them in execution. The Duke gaue him licenſe to depart, and commaunded me to accompany him. We came to my Citie, where my fa-

Digitized by Google

ther

ther entertayned him according to his calling. I saw *Luscinda*, and then againe were reuiu'd (although indeede they were neither dead nor mortified) my desires, and acquainted *Don Fernando* (alas to my totall ruine) with them, because I thought it was not lawfull by the law of amity to keepe any thing concealed from him. There I dilated to him, on the beauty, wit, and discretion of *Luscinda* in so ample manner, as my prayses stirred in him a desire to view a damzell so greatly adorned, and inriched with so rare endowments: and this his desire I through my misfortune satisfied, shewing her vnto him by the light of a candle, at a window where we two were wont to parle together; where he beheld her to be such, as was sufficient to blot out of his memory al the beauties which euer he had viewed before. He stood mute, beside himselfe and rauished: and moreouer rested so greatly enamoured, as you may perceiue in the Discourse of this my dolefull narration. And to inflame his desires the more, (a thing which I fearefully auoyded, and onely discouered to heauen) fortune so disposed that he found after me one of her letters, wherein she requested that I would demand her of her father for wife; which was so discreet, honest and amorously penned, as he said after reading it, that in *Luscinda* alone were included all the graces of beauty and vnderstanding ioyntly, which were diuided and separate in all the other women of the world. Yet in good sooth I wil here confesse the truth, that although I saw cleerely how deseruedly *Luscinda* was thus extolde by *Don Ferdinando*, yet did not her praises please me so much pronounced by him; and therefore began to feare and suspect him, because he let no moment ouerslip vs without making some mention of *Luscinda*, and would still himselfe begin the discourse, were the occasion euer so far-fetched: a thing which rowsed in me I cannot tell what iealousie; not that I did feare any trauerse in *Luscindas* loyalty, but yet for all my fates made me the very

Digitized by Google

thing which they moſt aſſured me : and *Don Ferdinando* procured to read all the papers I ſent to *Luſcinda*, or ſhe to me, vnder pretext that he tooke extraordinary delight to note the witty conceits of vs both. It therefore fell out, that *Luſcinda* hauing demaunded of me a booke of Chiualry to reade, wherein ſhe tooke maruellous delight, and was that of *Amadis du Gaule*.

Scarce had *Don-Quixote* well heard him make mention of bookes of Knighthood, when he replied to him; if you had good Sir but once tolde me at the beginning of your Hiſtoricall narration, that your Lady *Luſcinda* was affected to the reading of Knightly aduentures, you needed not to haue vſed any amplification to indeere or make plaine vnto me the eminencie of her wit; which certainly could not in any wiſe be ſo excellent and perſpicuous as you haue figured it, if ſhe wanted the propenſion and feeling you haue rehearſed, to the peruſing of ſo pleaſing diſcourſes: ſo that henceforth with me, you need not ſpend any more words to explane and manifeſt the height of her beauty, worthes and vnderſtanding; for by this onely notice I haue receiued of her deuotion two books of Knighthood, I do confirm her for the moſt faire and accompliſhed woman for all perfections in the world: and I would to God good Sir, that you had alſo ſent her together with *Amadis* the Hiſtories of the good *Don Rugel of Grecia*; for I am certaine the Lady *Luſcinda* would haue taken great delight in *Darayda* and *Garaya*, and in the wittie conceits of the Sheepheard *Darinel*, and in theſe admirable verſes of his Bucolickes, ſung and rehearſed by him with ſuch grace, diſcretion and liberty. But a time may come, wherein this fault may be recompenced, if it ſhall pleaſe you to come with me to my village; for there I may giue you three hundred bookes, which are my ſoules greateſt contentment, and the intertainment of my life; although I doe now verily beleeue that none of them are left, thankes be to the ma-

lice

lice of euill and enuious inchanters. And I beseech you to pardon me this transgression of our agreement at the first, promised not to interrupt your Discourses: for when I heare any motion made of Chiualry or Knights errant, it is no more in my power to omit to speake of them, then in the Sunne-beames to leaue off warming, or in the Moones to render things humid. (And therefore I intreat pardon, and that you will prosecute your History, which is that which most imports vs.

Whilest *Don-Quixote* spoke those wordes *Cardenio* hanged his head on his breast, giuing manifest tokens that he was exceeding sad. And although *Don-Quixote* requested him twice to follow on with his Discourse, yet neither did he lift vp his head, or answer a word, till at last after he had stood a good while musing, hee held vp his head and said; it cannot be taken out of my minde, nor is there any one in the world can depriue me of the conceit, or make me beleeue the contrary: and hee were a bottle-head that would thinke or beleeue otherwise then that the great villaine, Master *Elisabat* the Barber kept Queene *Madasima* as his Lemman. That is not so I vow by such and such, quoth *Don-Quixote* in great choler (and as he was wont, rapt out three or foure round oathes) and it is great malice, or rather villany to say such a thing. For Queene *Madasima* was a very noble Lady, and it ought not to be presumed that so high a Princesse would fall in loue with a Quack-saluer: and whosoeuer thinkes the contrary, lies like an arrant villaine; as I will make him vnderstand a horseback or a foote, armed or disarmed, by night or by day, or as he best liketh. *Cardenio* stood beholding him very earnestly as he spoke these wordes, whom the accident of his madnesse had by this possessed, and was not in plight to prosecute his History: nor would *Don-Quixote* giue eare to it, he was so mightily disgusted to heare Queene *Madasima* detracted. A maruellous accident, for he tooke her defence as earnest-

ly,as if she were verily his true and naturall Princesse; his wicked bookes had so much distracted him. And *Cardenio* being by this furiously madde,hearing himselfe answered with the lie, and the denomination of a villaine, with other the like outrages,he tooke the rest in ill part, and lifting vp a stone that was neere vnto him,gaue *Don-Quixote* such a blow therewithall, as he ouerthrew him to the ground on his backe. *Sancho Panca* seeing his Master so roughly handled, set vpon the foole with his fist shut; and the ragged man receiued his assault in such manner,as he likewise ouerthrew him to his feete with one fist,and mounting afterward vpon him, did worke him with his feete like a piece of dough: and the Goatheard who thought to succour him, was like to incurre the same danger. And after hee had ouerthrowne and beaten them all very well,he departed from them and entred into the wood very quietly. *Sancho* arose, and with rage to see himselfe so belaboured without desert, he ran vpon the Goatheard to be reuenged on him, saying that he was in the fault,who had not premonished them,how that mans rauing fits, did take him so at times; for had they beene aduertised thereof, they might haue stood all the while on their guard. The Goatheard answered, that he had already aduised them thereof; and if hee had not beene attentiue thereunto, yet he was therefore nothing the more culpable. *Sancho Panca* replied, and the Goatheard made a reioyndrie thereunto, but their disputation ended at last,in the catching hold of one anothers beards,and beesisting themselues so vncompassionately,as if *Don-Quixote* had not pacified them, they would haue torne one another to pieces. *Sancho* holding still the Goatheard fast, said vnto his Lord, Let mee alone Sir *Knight of the ill fauoured face*, for on this man who is a Clowne as I am my selfe,and dubbed Knight,I may safely satisfie my selfe of the wrong he hath done me, by fighting with him hand to hand like an honourable man. It is

Bodleian Library

true

true, quoth *Don-Quixote*, but I know well that he is no wise culpable of that which hath hapned. And saying so appeased them; and turned againe to demaund of the Goatheard, whether it were possible to meet again with *Cardenio*; for he remained possessed with an exceeding desire to know the end of his History. The Goatheard turned againe to repeat what he had said at the first, to wit, that he knew not any certaine place of his abode; but if he haunted that Commarke any while, he would sometime meete with him, eyther in his madde or modest humour.

CHAP. XI.

Which treates of the strange adventures that hapned to the Knight of the Mancha, in Sierra Morena: and of the penance he did there, in imitation of Belti-nebros.

Don-Quixote tooke leaue of the Goatheard, & mounting once again on *Rozinante*, he commanded *Sancho* to follow him, who obayed, but with a very ill will; and thus they trauelled by little and little, entring into the thickest and rougheſt part of all the mountaine: and *Sancho* went almost burst with a desire to reason with his Master, and therefore wished in minde that he would once begin, that he might not transgresse his commaundement of silence imposed on him, but growing at last wholly impotent to containe himselfe speechlesse any longer: Good Sir *Don-Quixote*, I pray you giue me your blessing, and licenſe; for I meane to depart from this place, and return to my house, my wife and children, with whom I shall be at least admitted to reason and speake my pleasure; for that you would desire to

haue me keepe you company through theſe deſarts night and day, and that I may not ſpeake when I pleaſe, is but to bury me aliue: Yet if fortune had ſo happily diſpoſed our affaires, as that beaſtes could ſpeake as they did in *Guiſopetes* time, the harme had beene leſſe, for then would I diſcourſe a while with *Rozinante* (ſeeing my niggardly fortune hath not conſented I might doe it with mine Aſſe) what I thought good, & in this ſort would I weaue my miſhaps; for it is a ſtubborne thing, and that cannot be borne with patience, to trauell all the dayes of our life, and not to encounter any other thing then tramplings vnder feete, toſsings in Couerlets, blowes of ſtones, and buffets, and be beſides all this forced to ſow vp our mouthes, a man daring not to breake his minde, but to ſtand mute like a poſt. *Sancho* I vnderſtand thee now, quoth *Don-Quixote*, thou dieſt with longing to ſpeake that which I haue forbidden thee to ſpeake: account therefore that commaundement reuoked, and ſay what thou pleaſeſt, on condition that this reuocation be onely auaileable and of force whileſt we dwell in theſe mountaines, and no longer.

So be it, quoth *Sancho*, let me ſpeake now, for what may after befall, God onely knows; and then beginning to take the benefite of his licenſe, he ſaid, I pray you tell me what benefite could you reape by taking Queene *Magimaſa*? Or what was it to the purpoſe, that that Abbat was her friend or no? For if you had let it ſlip, ſeeing you were not his Iudge, I verily beleeue that the foole had proſecuted his tale, and we ſhould haue eſcaped the blow of the ſtone, the trampling vnder feete and ſpurnings, yea and more then fiue or ſixe good buffets. Yfaith *Sancho*, quoth *Don-Quixote*, If thou kneweſt as well as I did how honourable and principall a La. was Queene *Madaſima*, thou wouldeſt rather ſay, that I had great patience, ſeeing I did not ſtrike thee on the mouth out of which ſuch blaſphemies iſſued: for it is a very great diſhonour to auerre

or thinke that any Queene would fall in loue with a Barber. For the truth of the Hiſtory is, that Maſter *Eliſabat*, of whom the madde man ſpoke, was very prudent, and a man of a ſound iudgement, and ſerued the Queene as her Tutor & Philition; but to thinke that, ſhe was his Lemmon is a madneſſe worthy the ſeuereſt puniſhment: and to the end thou mayeſt ſee that *Cardenio* knew not what he ſaid, thou muſt vnderſtand that when he ſpoke it, hee then was wholly beſide himſelfe.

That's it which I ſay, quoth *Sancho*, that you ought not to make account of wordes ſpoken by a foole; for if fortune had not aſſiſted you, but dreſſed the ſtone to your head as it did to your breſt, we ſhould haue remained in good plight; for hauing turned ſo earneſtly in that my Ladies defence, whom God confound: and thinke you that *Cardenio* would not eſcape the dangers of the law, by reaſon of his madneſſe. Any Knight errant, anſwered *Don-Quixote*, is bound to turne for the honour of women, of what quality ſoeuer, againſt mad or vnmad men: How much more for Queenes of ſo high degree and worth, as was Queene *Madoſina*, to whom I beare particular affections for her good partes: for beſides her being maruellous beautifull, ſhee was moreouer very prudent and patient in her calamities, which were very many, and the company and counſels of Maſter *Eliſabat* proued very beneficiall, and neceſſary to induce her to beare her miſhaps with prudence and patience: and hence the ignorant and ill-meaning vulgar tooke occaſion to ſuſpect and affirme, that ſhe was his friend, but I ſay againe they lie, and all thoſe that doe either thinke or ſay it, doe lie a thouſand times. Why, quoth *Sancho*, I neyther ſay it nor thinke it; let thoſe affirme any ſuch thing, eate that lie and ſwallow it with their bread: and if they of whom you ſpoke, liued lightly, they haue giuen account to God there of by this. I come from my Vineyard, I know nothing. I am not a friend to know other mens liues. For

Digitized by Google

he

he that byes and lyes ſhall feele it in his purſe. How much more ſeeing I was borne naked, and am now naked, I can neither win nor loſe. And if they were leuyed, what is that for me? And many thinke there is Bacon, and there is but ſtakes? But how can they ſet gates to the field, ſpecially ſeeing they ſpake ill of God himſelfe? Good God, quoth *Don-Quixote*, how many follies haſt thou inſerted here, and how wide from our purpoſe are thoſe prouerbs which thou haſt recited? Honeſt *Sancho* hold thy peace, and from henceforth endeauour to ſerue thy Maſter, and do not meddle in things which concern thee nothing; & vnderſtand with al thy fiue ſenſes, that whatſoeuer I haue done, do, or ſhall do is wholly guided by reaſon, & conformable to the rules of Knighthood, which I know better then all the other Knights that euer profeſt them in the world. Sir, quoth *Sancho*, and is it a good rule of Chiualry, that we goe waudring and loſt among theſe mountains in this ſort, without path or way in the ſearch of a mad-man, to whom peraduenture after he is found, will returne a deſire to finiſh what he began, not of his tale, but of your head and my ribbes, by endeuouring to breake them ſoundly and throughly? Peace I ſay *Sancho*, once againe, quoth *Don-Quixote*, for thou muſt wit, that the deſire of finding the mad-man alone, brings me not into theſe parts ſo much, as that which I haue in my mind to atchieue a certaine aduenture, by which I ſhall acquire eternall renowne and fame, throughout the vniuerſall face of the earth: and I ſhall therewithall ſeale all that which may render a Knight errant complete and famous. And is the aduenture very dangerous, quoth *Sancho Panca*? No, anſwered the *Knight of the ill fauoured face*, although the Die might runne in ſuch ſort, as we might caſt a hazard in ſteed of an incounter; but all conſiſts in thy diligence. In mine, quoth *Sancho*? Yes (quoth *Don-Quixote*) for if thou returneſt ſpeedily from the place whereunto I meane to ſend thee, my paine will alſo end

ſhortly

shortly,& my glory commence very soone after: and because I will not hold thee long suspended, awayting to heare the effect of my words, I would haue thee to know, that the famous *Amadis du Gaule*, was one of the most accomplished Knights errant. I do not say well, saying he was one; for he was the onely, the first, the vnike and the Lord of as many as liued in his age. An euill yeare, and a worse moneth for *Don Beliamis* or any other that shall dare presume to compare with him; for I sweare that they all are questionlesse deceiued. I also say that when a Painter would become rare and excellent in his arte, he procures to imitate the patternes of the most singular Masters of his science. And this very rule runnes currant throughout all other trades and exercises of account, which serue to adorne a well disposed Commonwealth; and so ought and doth he that meanes to obtain the name of a prudent and patient man, by imitating *Vlysses*, in whose person and dangers doth *Homer* delineate vnto vs the true portaiture of patience and sufferance; as likewise *Virgil* demonstrates vnder the person of *Eneas*, the duety and valour of a pious sonne, and the sagacity of a hardy and expert Captaine, not shewing them such as indeede they were, but as they should be, to remaine as an example of Vertue, to ensuing posterities. And in this very manner was *Amadis* the North-star, and the *Sunne* of valorous and amorous Knights; whom all we ought to imitate which march vnder the ensignes of loue and Chiualry. And this being so manifest as it is, I finde friend *Sancho*, that the Knight errant who shall imitate him most, shall likewise be neerest to attaine the perfection of armes: and that wherein this Knight bewrayed most his prudence, valour, courage, patience, constancy and loue was when he retyred himselfe to doe penance, being disdained by his Lady *Oriana* to the *Poore Rocke*, changing his name vnto that of *Beltenebros*, a name certainly most significatiue and proper for the life which hee had then willing-

willingly choſen. And I may more eaſily imitate him herein, then in cleauing of *Giants*, beheading of Serpents, killing of Monſters, ouerthrowing of armies, putting Nauies to flight, and finiſhing of inchantments. And ſeeing that this Mountaine is ſo fit for that purpoſe, there is no reaſon why I ſhould ouerſlip the occaſion, which doth ſo commodiouſly proffer me her lockes. In effect, quoth *Sancho*, what is it you mean to do in theſe remote places? Haue not I tolde to thee already ſaid *Don-Quixote*, that I meane to follow *Amadis*, by playing heere the diſpaired, wood, and furious man. To imitate likewiſe the valiant *Orlando* where he found the tokens by a fountaine that *Angelica the faire* had abuſed her ſelfe with *Medoro*, for griefe whereof he ran mad, and pluckt vp trees by their rootes, troubled the water of cleere fountaines, ſlew Sheepheards, deſtroyed their flocks, fired the ſheep-folds, ouerthrew houſes, trayled Mares after him, and committed a hundred thouſand other inſolencies, worthy of eternall fame and memory. And although I meane not to imitate *Roldan*, or *Orlando*, or *Rowland* (for hee had all theſe names) exactly in euery madde prancke which hee played. Yet will I doe it the beſt I can, in thoſe things which ſhall ſeeme vnto me moſt eſſentiall. And perhaps I may reſt contented with the only imitation of *Amadis*, who without indamaging any by his rauings, & only vſing theſe of feeling laments, arriuing to as great fame therby as any one whatſoeuer.

I beleeue, replied *Sancho*, that the Knights which performed the like penances, were moued by ſome reaſons to doe the like auſterities and follies: but good Sir, what occaſion hath beene offered vnto you to become madde? What Lady hath diſdained you? Or what arguments haue you found that the Lady *Dulcinea of Toboſo* hath euer dallied with *Moore* or *Chriſtian*? There is the point, anſwered our Knight, and therein conſiſts the perfection of mine affaires; for that a Knight errant doe runne mad

vpon

vpon any iuſt occaſion; deſerues neyther prayſe nor thankes: the wit is in waxing madde without cauſe, whereby my Maſters may vnderſtand, that if drie, I could doe this, what would I haue done being watered? How much more ſeeing I haue a iuſt motiue, through the prolixe abſence that I haue made from my euer-ſupremeſt Lady *Dulcinea of Toboſo*. For as thou mighteſt haue heard read in *Marias Ambroſio* his Sheepheard:

To him that abſent is
All things ſucceed amiſſe.

So that friend *Sancho*, I would not haue thee lauiſh time longer in aduiſing to let ſlip ſo rare, ſo happy, and ſingular an imitation. I am madde, and will be madde, vntill thou returne again with anſwere vpon a letter, which I meane to ſend with me to my Lady *Dulcinea*: and if it be ſuch as my loyaltie deſerues, my madneſſe and penance ſhall end: but if the contrary, I ſhall runne wood in good earneſt, and be in that ſtate that I ſhall apprehend nor feele any thing. So that howſoeuer I be anſwered, I ſhall iſſue out of the conflict and paine wherein thou leaueſt me, by ioying the good thou ſhalt bring me, as wiſe, or not feeling the euill thou ſhalt denounce as wood. But tell me *Sancho*, keepeſt thou charily yet the helmet of *Mambrino*, which I ſaw thee take vp from the ground the other day, when that vngrateful fellow thought to haue broken it into pieces, but could not; by which may be collected the excellent temper thereof?

Sancho anſwered to this demaund, ſaying, I cannot ſuffer or beare longer Sir *Knight of the ill fauoured face*, nor take patiently many things which you ſay, and I begin to ſuſpect by your words that all that which you haue ſaid to me of *Chiualry*, and of gaining Kingdomes and Empires, of beſtowing Ilands and other gifts & great things, as Knights errant are wont, are all matters of ayre and lies, all couſenage or couſening, or how elſe you pleaſe to terme it: for he that ſhall heare you name a Barbers Ba-

ſon

ſon *Mambrinos* helmet, and that you will not abandon that errour in more then foure dayes; what other can he thinke, but that he who affirmes ſuch a thing doth want wit and diſcretion. I carry the Baſon in my bagge all battered and bored, and will haue it mended, and dreſſe my beard in it at home, if God ſhall doe me the fauor that I may one day ſee my wife and barnes. Behold *Sancho*, quoth *Don-Quixote*, I doe likewiſe ſweare that thou haſt the ſhalloweſt pate that euer any Squire had or hath in the world: is it poſsible, that in all the time thou haſt gone with me, thou couldeſt not perceiue, that all the aduentures of Knights errant doe appeare *Chimeras*, follies and deſperate things, being quite contrary? Not that they are indeed ſuch, but rather by reaſon that we are ſtil haunted by a crew of inchanters, which chaunge and transforme our actes, making them ſeeme what they pleaſe, according as they like to fauour or annoy vs. And ſo this which ſeemes to thee a Barbers baſon, is in my conceit *Mambrino* his Helmet; and to another will appeare in ſome other ſhape. And it is doubtleſly done by the profound ſcience of the wiſeman my friend, to make that ſeeme a Baſon, which really and truely is *Mambrinos* helmet: becauſe that it being ſo precious a Iewell, all the world would purſue me to depriue me of it; but now ſeeing that it is ſo like a Barbers baſon, they endeuour not to gaine it; as was cleerely ſhewed in him that thought to breake it the other day, and would not carry it with him, but left it lying behind him on the ground, for yfaith he had neuer left it, did he know the worthineſſe thereof. Keepe it friend, for I neede it not at this preſent wherein I muſt rather diſarme my ſelfe of the armes I weare, and remaine as naked as I was at the houre of my birth: if I ſhall take the humour rather to imitate *Orlando* in doing of my penance then *Amadis*.

Whilſt thus he diſcourſed, he arriued to the foote of a loſty mountaine, which ſtood like a hewen rocke, diuided

Digitized by Google

from

from all the reſt; by the ſpirit whereof glided a ſmooth Riuer hemmed in on euery ſide by a greene and flouriſhing meddow, whoſe verdance did maruellouſly delight the greedy-beholding eye. There were in it alſo many wilde trees, and ſome plants and flowers which rendred the place much more pleaſing. *The Knight of the ill-fauoured face* made choice of this place to accompliſh therin his penance: and therefore as ſoone as he had viewed it, he began to ſay with a loud voyce, like a diſtracted man theſe words enſuing: This is the place where the humor of mine eyes ſhall increaſe the liquid veynes of this Cryſtall current: and my continuall and deepe ſighes ſhall giue perpetuall motion to the leaues of theſe mountainy trees, in teſtimony of the paine which my oppreſſed heart doth ſuffer. O you, whoſoeuer ye be ruſticall Gods, which haue your Manſion in this inhabitable place, giue eare to the plaints of this vnfortunate louer, whom a long abſence, and a few imagined ſuſpitions haue conducted to deplore his ſtate among theſe deſarts; and make him exclaime on the rough condition of that ingrate and faire, who is the toppe, the Sunne, the period, terme and end of all humane beauty. O ye *Napeas* and *Driades*, which do wontedly inhabite the Thickets and Groues, ſo may the nimble and laſciuious *Satyres*, by whom (although in vaine) you are beloued, neuer haue power to interrupt your ſweete reſt, as you ſhall aſſiſt me to lament my diſaſters, or at leaſt attend them whileſt I dolefully breath them. O *Dulcinea* of *Toboſo*, the day of my night, the glory of my paine, North of my trauels, and ſtarre of my fortunes: ſo heauen inrich thee with the higheſt, whenſoeuer thou ſhalt demaund it, as thou wilt conſider the place and paſſe vnto which thine abſence hath conducted me, and anſwere my faith and deſires in compaſſionate and gracious manner. O ſolitary trees (which ſhall from hence forward keepe company with my ſolitude) giue tokens with the ſoft motion of your bowes, that my pre-

Digitized by Google

ſence

ſence doth not diſlike you. O thou my Squire, and grate-full companion in all proſperous and aduerſe ſucceſſes, beare well away, what thou ſhalt ſee me doe here, to the end that thou mayeſt after promptly recount it to the totall cauſe of my ruine. And ſaying ſo, he allighted from *Rozinante*, and taking off in a trice his bridle and ſaddle, he ſtrucke him on the buttocke, ſaying, He giues thee liberty, that wants it himſelfe: O horſe, as famous for thy workes as thou art vnfortunate by thy fates. Goe where thou pleaſeſt, for thou beareſt written in thy forehead, how that neyther the *Hippogriphon* of *Aſtolpho*, nor the renowned *Frontino*, which coſt *Bradamant* ſo deerely could compare with thee for ſwiftneſſe.

When *Sancho* had viewed and heard his Lord ſpeake thus, he likewiſe ſaid, Good betide him that freed vs from the paines of vnpannelling the gray Aſſe; for if hee were here yfaith he ſhould alſo haue two or three claps on the buttockes, and a ſhort Oration in his praiſe: yet if hee were here, I would not permit any other to vnpannell him, ſeeing there was no occaſion why; for he good beaſt was nothing ſubiect to the paſſions of loue, or diſpaire no more then I, who was his Maſter when it pleaſed God. And in good ſooth Sir *Knight of the ill-fauoured face*, if my departure and your madneſſe be in good earneſt, it will be needfull to ſaddle *Rozinante* againe, that hee may ſupply the want of mine Aſſe; for it will ſhorten the time of my departure, and returne againe: and if I make my voyage a foote, I know not when I ſhall arriue there, or returne here backe vnto you; for in good earneſt I am a very ill footman. Let it be as thou likeſt, quoth *Don-Quixote*, for thy deſigne diſpleaſeth me nothing; and therefore I reſolue that thou ſhalt depart from hence after three dayes, for in the meane ſpace thou ſhalt beholde what I will doe and ſay for my Ladies ſake, to the end thou maieſt tell it to her. Why, quoth *Sancho*, what more can I view, then that which I haue ſeene already? Thou

Digitized by Google

art

art altogether wide of the matter, answered *Don-Quixote*, for I must yet teare mine apparrel, throw away mine armour, and strike my head about these rockes, with many other things of that kinde, that will strike thee into admiration. Let me beseech you, quoth *Sancho*, see well how you giue your selfe those knockes about the rockes; for you might happen vpon some one so vngracious a rocke, as at the first rappe would dissolue all the whole *Machina* of your aduentures and penance. And therefore I would be of opinion, seeing that you doe holde it necessary that some knockes be giuen, with the head, and that this enterprise cannot bee accomplished without them, that you content your selfe, seeing that all is but fained, counterfeited, and a iest, that you should, I say, content your self with striking it on the water, or on some other soft thing, as Cotton or Woolle, & leaue to my charge the exaggeration thereof, for I will tell to my Ladie that you strike your head against the point of a rocke, which was harder then a Diamond.

I thanke thee *Sancho* for thy good will, quoth *Don-Quixote*, but I can assure thee that all these things which I doe are no iests, but very serious earnests, for otherwise we should transgresse the Statutes of Chiualry, which commaund vs not to auouch any vntruth, on paine of relapse, and to doe one thing for another is as much as to lie. So that my head-knockes must be true, firme, and sound ones, without any sophisticall or fantasticall shadow: and it will be requisite that thou leaue me some linte to cure me, seeing that fortune hath depriued vs of the *Balsamum* which we lost. It was worse to haue lost the Asse, quoth *Sancho*, seeing that at once with him we haue lost our linte, and all our other prouision: and I intreat you most earnestly not to name againe that accursed drinke, for in onely hearing it mentioned, you not only turne my guts in me, but also my soule. And I request you moreouer to make account that the terme of three dayes is already expired, wherein you would haue mee

take notice of your follies; for I declare them already for ſeene, and will tell wonders to my Ladie: wherefore go write your Letter, and diſpatch me with all haſt; for I long already to returne, and take you out of this Purgatory, wherein I leaue you. Doſt thou call it a Purgatory *Sancho*, quoth *Don-Quixote*? Thou hadſt done better hadſt thou called it hell, or rather worſe, if there be any thing worſe then that. I call it ſo (quoth *Sancho*) *quia in inferno nulla eſt retentio*, as I haue heard ſay. I vnderſtand not, ſaid *Don-Quixote*, what *retentio* meaneth. *Retentio* (quoth *Sancho*) is that, whoſoeuer is in hell, neuer comes, nor can come out of it. Which ſhall fall out contrary in your perſon, or my feet ſhall goe ill if I may carry ſpurs to quicken *Rozinante*: and that I may ſafely arriue before my Lady *Dulcinea* in *Toboſo*, for I will recount vnto her ſuch ſtrange things of your follies and madneſſe (for they be all one) that you haue done, and doe daily, as I will make her as ſoft as a gloue, although I found her at the firſt harder then a Corke tree: with whoſe ſweet and honie anſwere I will returne in the aire as ſpeedily as a Witch, and take you out of this Purgatory, which is no hell although it ſeemes one, ſeeing there is hope to eſcape from it; which as I haue ſaid they want which are in hell: and I beleeue you will not contradict me herein. Thou haſt reaſon, anſwered *the Knight of the ill fauoured face*, but how ſhall I write the Letter? and the warrant for the receit of the Colts alſo, added *Sancho*. All ſhall be inſerted together, quoth *Don-Quixote*: and ſeeing wee haue no paper, we may doe well, imitating the auncient men of times paſt, to write our mind in the leaues of trees or waxe; yet waxe is as hard to be found here as paper. But now that I remember my ſelfe, I know where wee may write our minde well, and more then well, to wit in *Cardenios* Tablets, and thou ſhalt haue care to cauſe the letters to be written out againe fairely in the firſt village, wherein thou ſhalt finde a Schoole-maſter; or if ſuch a

one

one be wanting, by the Clerke of the Church: and beware in any sort, that thou giue it not to a Notary or Court-Clerke to bee copied; for they write such an intangling-confounded processe letter, as *Sathan* himselfe would scarce be able to reade it. And how shall we doe for want of your name and subscription, quoth *Sancho*? Why, answered *Don-Quixote*, *Amadis* was neuer wont to subscribe to his Letters. I but the warrant to receiue the three Asses must forcibly be subsigned: and if it should afterward be copied, they would say the former is false, and so I shall rest without my Coltes. The warrant shall be written and firmed with my hand in the Tablets, which as soone as my Niece shall see, she will make no difficulty to deliuer thee them. And as concerning the loue letter, thou shalt put this subscription to it; *Yours vntill death, the Knight of the ill fauoured face.* And it makes no matter though it be written by any stranger, for as much as I can remember *Dulcinea* can neyther write nor read: nor hath she seene any Letter, no nor as much as a Character of my writing all the dayes of her life. For my loue and hers haue beene euer *Platonicall*, neuer extending themselues farther, then to an honest regard, and view the one of the other: and euen this same so rarely as I dare boldly sweare, that in these dozen yeares which I loue her more deerely then the light of these mine eyes, which the earth shall one day deuoure, I haue not seene her foure times, and perhaps of those same foure times she hath scarce perceiued once that I beheld her. Such is the care and closeneſse wherewithall her parents *Lorenco Corcuelo* and her mother *Aldonca Nogales*, haue brought her vp. Ta ta, quoth *Sancho*, that the Lady *Dulcinea of Toboso* is *Lorenco Corchuelo* his daughter, called by another name *Aldonca Lorenco*? The same is shee, quoth *Don-Quixote*, and it is she that merites to be Empresse of the vast Vniuerse. I know her very well, replied *Sancho*, and I dare say, that she can throw an Iron barre

Digitized by Google

as well as any the ſtrongeſt ladde in our Pariſh. I vow by the giuer, that tis a wench of the marke tall and ſtout, and ſo ſturdy withall, that ſhe will bring her chinne out of the mire, in deſpite of any Knight errant, or that ſhall erre, that ſhall honour her as his Lady. Out vpon her, what a ſtrength and voyce ſhe hath? I ſaw her on a day ſtand on the toppe of the Church ſteeple to call certaine ſeruants of her fathers, that labored in a fallow field; and although they were halfe a league from thence, they heard her as well as if they were at the foote of the Steeple: and the beſt that is in her is, that ſhe is nothing coy, for ſhe hath a very great ſmacke of Courtſhip, and playes with euery one, and gibes and ieſts at them: I. And now I affirme Sir *Knight of the ill fauoured face*, that not only you may, and ought to commit raying follies for her ſake, but eke you may with iuſt title alſo diſpaire and hang your ſelfe: for none ſhall heare thereof but will ſay you did very well, although the Diuell carried you away. And faine would I be gone, if it were for nothing elſe but to ſee her: for it is many a day ſince I ſaw her, and I am ſure ſhe is changed by this: for womens beauty is much impaired by going alwaies to the fielde, expoſed to the Sunne and weather. And I will now *Sir Don-Quixote*, confeſſe a truth vnto you, that I haue liued vntill now in a maruellous errour, thinking well and faithfully that the Lady *Dulcinea* was ſome great Princeſſe, on whom you were enamoured, or ſuch a perſon as merited thoſe rich preſents which you beſtowed on her, as well of the *Biſcaines*, as of the Slaues, and many others that ought to be, as I ſuppoſe, correſpondent to the many victories which you haue gained, both now and in the time that I was not your Squire. But pondering well the matter, I cannot conceiue why the Lady *Aldonca Lorenco*; I meane the Lady *Dulcinea* of *Toboſo*, of theſe ſhould care whether theſe vanquiſhed men which you ſend or ſhall ſend, do goe and kneele before her? For it may befall that ſhe at the very time of their

their arriuall bee combing of flaxe, or threshing in the barne, whereat they would be ashamed, and she likewise laugh and be somewhat displeased at the present.

I haue else told thee *Sancho* many times that thou art too great a pratler, quoth *Don-Quixote*, and although thou hast but a grosse witte, yet now and then thy frumps nippe: but to the end thou mayest perceiue the faultinesse of thy braine and my discretion, I will tell thee a short history, which is this: There was once a widdow faire, young, free, rich, and withall very pleasant and iocund, that fell in loue with a certaine round and wel-set seruant of a Colledge: his regent came to vnderstand it, and therefore said on a day to the widdow by the way of fraternall correction. Mistresse I do greatly maruell, and not without occasion that a woman so principal, so beautifull, and so rich, and specially so wittie, could make so ill a choice, as to waxe enamoured on so foule, so base, and foolish a man as such a one, we hauing in this house so many Masters of Arte, Graduates, and Diuines, amongst whom you might haue made choise as among Peares, saying I will take this, and I will not haue that? But she answered him thus, with a very pleasant and good grace; You are Sir greatly deceiued, if you deeme that I haue made an ill choise in such a one, let him seeme neuer so great a foole, for to the purpose that I meane to vse him, he knowes as much or rather more Philosophy then *Aristotle*. And so *Sancho* likewise is *Dulcinea* of *Toboso* as much worth as the highest Princesse of the world, for the effect I meane to vse her. For all the Poets which celebrate certaine Ladies at pleasure, thinkest thou that they all had Mistresse? No. Dost thou beleeue that the *Amarillis*, the *Files*, *Siluias*, *Dianas*, *Galateas*, *Alcidas*, and others such like, wherewithall the bookes, ditties, Barbers shops, and Theaters are filled, were truely Ladies of flesh and bones, and their Mistresses which haue and doe celebrate them thus? No certainly, but were for the greater

Digitized by Google

part fained, to ſerue as a ſubiect of their verſes, to the end the authours might be accounted amorous, and men of courage enough to be ſuch. And thus it is alſo ſufficient for me to beleeue and thinke that the good *Aldonca Lorenco* is faire and honeſt: as for her parentage it matters but little; for none will ſend to take information thereof, to giue to her an habite; and I make account of her as of the greateſt Princeſſe in the world. For thou oughteſt to know *Sancho*, if thou knoweſt it not already, that two things alone incite man to loue more then all things elſe, and thoſe be ſurpaſsing beauty, and a good name. And both theſe things are found in *Dulcinea* in their prime: for none can equall her in faireneſſe, and few come neere her for a good report. And for a finall concluſion, I imagine that all that which I ſay, is really ſo, without adding or taking ought away. And I doe imagine her in my fantaſie to be ſuch, as I could wiſh her as well in beauty as principality: and neyther can *Helen* approch, nor *Lucrece* come neere her, no nor any of thoſe other famous women, Greeke, Barbarous, or Latine, of forgoing ages. And let euery one ſay what he pleaſeth; for though I ſhould be reprehended for this by the ignorant, yet ſhall I not therfore be chaſtiſed by the more obſeruant and rigorous ſort of men. I auouch, quoth *Sancho*, that you haue great reaſon in all that you ſay, and that I am my ſelfe a very Aſſe. But alas why doe I name an Aſſe with my mouth, ſeeing one ſhould not make mention of a Rope in ones houſe that was hanged? But giue me the letter, and farewell, for I will change. With that *Don-Quixote* drew out his Tablets, and going a little aſide he began to indite his letter with a great grauity; and hauing ended it, called *Sancho* to him and ſaid, that he would reade it to him, to the end he might beare it away in memory, leſt by chance he did loſe the Tablets on the way, for ſuch were his croſſe fortunes, as made him feare euery euent. To which *Sancho* anſwered, ſaying, write

Digitized by Google

write it there twise or thrise in the booke, and giue me it after; for I will carry it safely by Gods grace. For to thinke that I will be euer able to take by rote is a great folly; for my memory is so short, as I doe many times forget mine owne name. But yet for all that reade it to me good Sir, for I would be glad to heare it, as a thing which I suppose to be as excellent, as if it were cast in a mould. Heare it then, sayes *Don-Quixote*, for thus it sayes.

The Letter of Don-Quixote *to* DVLCINEA of Toboso

Soueraigne Ladie,

THE wounded by the point of absence, and the hurt by the Darts of thy heart, sweetest Dulcinea *of* Toboso, *doth send thee that health which he wanteth himselfe. If thy beauty disdaine me, if thy valour turne not to my benefit, if thy disdaine conuert themselues to my harme, maugre all my patience, I shall be ill able to sustaine this care, which besides that it is violent, is also too durable. My good Squire* Sancho *will giue thee certaine relation, O beautifull, ingrate, and my deerest beloued enemy of the State wherein I remaine for thy sake: if thou please to fauour me, I am thine; and if not, doe what thou likest; for by ending of my life, I shall both satisfie thy cruelty and my desires.*

Thine vntill death,

The Knight of the ill fauoured face.

By my fathers life, quoth *Sancho*, when hee heard the Letter, it is the highest thing that euer I heard in my life. Good

Good God, and how well doe you ſay euery thing in it, and how excellently haue you applyed the ſubſcription of *the Knight of the ill fauoured face*! I ſay againe in good earneſt, that you are the Diuell himſelfe, and there's nothing but you know it. All is neceſſary anſwered *Don-Quixote*, for the office that I profeſſe. Put then (quoth *Sancho*) in the other ſide of that leafe, the warrant of the three Coults, and firme it with a leagible letter, that they may know it at the firſt ſight. I am pleaſed, ſaid *Don-Quixote*, and ſo writing it, he read it after to *Sancho*, and it ſaid thus:

You ſhall pleaſe good Niece, for this firſt of Colts to deliuer vnto my Squire Sancho Panca, *three of the fiue that I left at home, and are in your charge: the which three Colts I commaund to bee deliuered to him, for as many others counted and receiued here, for with this, and his acquitance they ſhall be iuſtly deliuered. Giuen in the bowels of Sierra Morena, the two and twentieth of Auguſt, of this preſent yeare.*

It goes very well (quoth *Sancho*) ſubſigne it therefore I pray you. It needes no ſeale (quoth *Don-Quixote*) but onely my Rubricke, which is as valible as if it were ſubſcribed, not onely for three Aſſes, but alſo for three hundred. My truſt is in you, anſwered *Sancho*, permit mee, for I will goe ſaddle *Rozmante*, and prepare your ſelfe to giue me your bleſſing, for I purpoſe preſently to depart before I ſee any madde pranke of yours; for I will ſay that I ſaw you play ſo many, as no more can be deſired. I will haue thee ſtay *Sancho* (and that becauſe it is requiſite) at leaſt to ſee me ſtarke naked, playing a douzen or two of rauing trickes, for I will diſpatch them in leſſe then halfe an houre; becauſe that thou hauing viewed them with thine owne eyes, mayeſt ſafely ſweare al the reſt that thou pleaſeſt to adde; and I aſſure thee that thou canſt not tell ſo many as I meane to performe. Let me intreate you good Sir, that I may not ſee you naked, for it wil turne my ſto-

Digitized by Google

ſtomacke, and I ſhall not be able to keepe my ſelfe from weeping: and my head is yet ſo ſore ſince yeſternight through my lamentations, for the loſſe of the gray beaſt, as I am not ſtrong enough yet to endure new plaints: but if your pleaſure be ſuch, as I muſt neceſſarily ſee ſome follies: doe them in Ioues name in your clothes briefely, and ſuch as are moſt neceſſarie. Chiefly ſeeing none of theſe things were requiſite for me; and as I haue ſaid, we might excuſe time (that ſhall now be lauiſhed in theſe trifles) to returne ſpeedily with the newes you deſire and deſerue ſo much. And if not, let the Lady *Dulcinea* prouide her ſelfe well; for if ſhe anſwere not according to reaſon, I make a ſolemne vow to him that I may, that Ile make her diſgorge out of her ſtomacke a good anſwere, with very kickes and fiſts. For how can it be ſuffered that ſo famous a Knight errant as your ſelf ſhould thus run out of his wits, without, nor for what, for one? Let not the Gentlewoman conſtraine me to ſay the reſt, for I will out with it, & venter all vpon twelue, although it neuer were ſolde.

In good faith *Sancho* (quoth *Don-Quixote*) I thinke thou art growen as madde as my ſelfe. I am not ſo mad, replied *Sancho*, but I am more cholerick. But ſetting that aſide, ſay what will you eate vntill my returne? Doe you meane to doe as *Cardenio*, and take by the high waies ſide perforce from the Sheepheards? Care thou not for that, replied *Don-Quixote*, for although I had it, yet would I not eate any other thing then the hearbes and fruits that this field and trees doe yeeld; for the perfection of mine affaire conſiſts in faſting, and the exerciſe of other caſtigations. To this *Sancho* replied, Doe you know what I feare? That I ſhall not finde the way to you againe heere where I leaue you, it is ſo difficult and obſcure. Take well the markes, and I will endeauour to keepe hereabouts, quoth *Don-Quixote*, vntill thou come backe againe: and will moreouer about the time of thy returne mount to the

Digitized by Google

the tops of theſe high Rockes,to ſee whether thou appeareſt: but thou ſhouldeſt doe beſt of all, to the end thou maieſt not ſtay and miſſe me,to cut downe here and there certain boughes, and ſtrow them on the way as thou goeſt,vntill thou beeſt out in the plaines, and thoſe may after ſerue thee as bounds and marks,by which thou mayſt againe finde me when thou returneſt, in imitation of the clew of *Theſes* Labyrinth.I wil doe ſo,quoth *Sancho*:and then cutting downe certaine boughes, he demanded his Lords bliſſing, and departed not without teares on both ſides.And mounting vpon *Rozinante*, whō *Don. Quixote* commended very ſeriouſly to his care, that he ſhould tender him as he would his owne perſon, hee made on towards the plaines,ſtrowing here and there on the way his branches,as his Maſter had aduiſed him; and with that departed,although his Lord importuned him to beholde two or three follies ere he went away. But ſcarce had he gone a hundred paces,when he returned and ſaid, I ſay Sir that you ſaid wel,that to the end I might ſweare with a ſafe conſcience that I haue ſeene you play theſe madde trickes,it were neceſſary that at leaſt I ſee you doe one, although that of your abode here is one great enough. Did not I tell thee ſo, quoth *Don-Quixote*, ſtay *Sancho*, for I will doe it in the ſpace of a Creede; and taking off with all haſt his hoſe,he remained the halfe of him naked, and did inſtantly giue two or three ierkes in the aire, and two tumbles ouer and ouer on the ground,with his head downeward and his legges aloft, where hee diſcouered ſuch things as *Sancho*, becauſe he would not ſee them againe,turned the bridle and rode away,reſting contented and ſatisfied,that he might ſwear that his Lord was mad. And ſo we will leaue him trauelling on his way, vntil his returne,which was very ſoone after.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. XII.

Wherein are prosecuted the prancks played by Don-Quixote *in his amorous humors, in the mountains of Sierra Morena.*

AND turning to recount what *the Knight of the ill fauoured face* did when he was all alone, the History sayes that after *Don-Quixote* had ended his friskles and leaps, naked from the gyrdle downward, and from that vpward apparrelled; seeing that his Squire *Sancho* was gone, and would behold no more of his madde prancks; hee ascended to the toppe of a high rocke, and began there to thinke on that whereon he had thought oftentimes before, without euer making a full resolution therein, to wit, whether were it better to imitate *Orlando* in his vnmeasurable furies, then *Amadis* in his melancholy moods: & speaking to himselfe, would say; if *Orlando* was so valorous and good a Knight, as men say; what wonder, seeing in fine he was inchanted and could not be slaine, if it were not by a denier pinne, thrust in at the sole of his foote; and therefore did weare shooes still, that had seuen foulds of Iron in the soles: although these his draughts stood him in no steede at *Roncesuales* against *Bernardo del Carpio*, which vnderstanding them, pressed him to death betweene his armes. But leauing his valour apart, let vs come to the losing of his wits; which it is certaine he lost through the signes hee found in the Forrest, and by the newes that the Sheepe-heard gaue vnto him, that *Angelica* had slept more then two nooneti;des with the little *Moore Medoro* of the curled lockes, him that was Page to King *Agramante*: and if he vnderstood this, and knew his Lady had played beside the cushion, what wonder was it that hee should runne

Digitized by Google

runne madde? But how can I imitate him in his furies, if I cannot imitate him in their occaſion; for I dare ſweare for my *Dulcinea* of *Toboſo*, that all the dayes of her life ſhe hath not ſeene one *Moore*, euen in his owne attire as he is, and ſhe is now right as her mother bore her: and I ſhould doe her a manifeſt wrong, if vpon any falſe ſuſpition, I ſhould turne madde, of that kinde of folly that did diſtract furious *Orlando*. On the other ſide I ſee that *Amadis du Gaule*, without looſing his wits or vſing any other rauing tricke, gained as great fame of being amorous as any one elſe whatſoeuer. For that which his Hiſtorie recites was none other, then that ſeeing himſelfe diſdained by his Lady *Oriana*, who had commaunded him to withdraw himſelfe from her preſence, and not appeare againe in it, vntill ſhe pleaſed: he retired himſelfe in the company of a certaine Hermit to the poore rocke, and there crammed himſelfe with weeping, vntill that heauen aſſiſted him in the midſt of his greateſt cares and neceſsitie. And this being true, as it is, why ſhould I take now the paines to ſtrip my ſelfe all naked, and offend theſe trees, which neuer yet did me any harme? Nor haue I any reaſon to trouble the cleer waters of theſe brooks, which muſt giue me drinke when I am thirſty. Let the remembrance of *Amadis* liue, and be imitated in euery thing as much as may be by *Don-Quixote of the Mancha*: of whom may be ſaid, what was ſaid of the other, that though he atchieued not great things, yet did he die in their purſuit. And though I am not contemned or diſdained by my *Dulcinea*, yet it is ſufficient as I haue ſaid already, that I be abſent from her: therefore handes to your taske, and ye famous actions of *Amadis* occurre to my remembrance, and inſtruct me where I may beſt begin to imitate you. Yet I know already that the greateſt thing he did vſe was prayer, and ſo will I. And ſaying ſo, he made him a paire of Beades of great Gaules, and was very much vexed in minde for want of an Eremite, who might

Digitized by Google

might heare his confession, and comfort him in his afflictions: and therefore did entertaine himselfe walking vp and downe the little greene fielde, writing and grauing in the rindes of trees, and on the smooth sandes many verses, all accommodated to his sadnesse, and some of them in the praise of *Dulcinea*. But those that were found throughly finished, and were ledgible after his owne finding againe in that place, were onely these ensuing.

O Ye plants, ye hearbes, and ye Trees,
That flowrish in this pleasant site;
In lofty and verdant degrees
If my harmes doe you not delight,
Heare my holy plaints, which are theese.
And let not my griefe you molest
Though it ouer so feelingly went,
Since heere for to pay your rest
Don-Quixote *his teares hath addrest*
Dulcinea's *want to lament*
Of Toboso.

In this very place was first spied
The loyalest louer and true,
Who himselfe from his Lady did hyde.
But yet felt his sorrowes anew,
Not knowing whence they might proceede.
Loue doth him cruelly wrest
With a passion of euill descent;
Which rob'd Don-Quixote *of rest,*
Till a pipe with teares was full prest
Dulcinea's *want to lament*
Of Toboso.

He searching aduentures blinde,
Among these dearne woods, and rockes,
Still curseth on pittilesse mind:
For a wretch amidst bushie lockes,
And cragges, may misfortunes finde.

Digitized by Google

Lone with his whip wounded his breſt,
And not with ſoft hands him pent,
And when he his noddle had preſt,
Don-Quixote *his teares did forth wreſt,*
Dulcinea's *want to lament,*
Of Toboſo:

The addition of *Toboſo* to the name of *Dulcinea*, did not cauſe ſmall laughter in thoſe which found the verſes recited, becauſe they imagined that *Don-Quixote* conceiued, that if in the naming of *Dulcinea* he did not alſo adde that *Of Toboſo*, the rime could not be vnderſtood; and in truth it was ſo, as he himſelfe did afterward confeſſe. He cõpoſed many others, but as we haue related none could be well copied, or found intire but theſe three ſtanza's. In this, and in ſighing, and inuoking the *Faunes* and *Siluanes* of theſe woods, & the *Nymphes* of the adioyning ſtreams, with the dolorous and hollow *Eccho*, that it would anſwere, and they conſort and liſten vnto him; and in the ſearch of ſome hearbes to ſuſtaine his languiſhing forces; he intertained himſelfe al the time of *Sancho* his abſence: who had he ſtaied three weekes away, as he did but three dayes, *The Knight of the ill fauoured face* ſhould haue remained ſo disfigured, as the very mother that bore him would not haue knowne him.

But now it is congruent that leauing him ſwallowed in the gulphes of ſorrow and verſifying, we turne & recount what hapned to *Sancho Panca* in his Embaſſage; which was that iſſuing out to the high way, he preſently tooke that, which ledde towards *Toboſo*, and arriued the next day following to the Inne, where the diſgrace of the Couerlet befell him: and ſcarce had he well eſpied it, but preſently he imagined that he was once againe flying in the ayre, and therefore would not enter into it, although his arriuall was at ſuch an houre, as he both might and ought to haue ſtayed, being dinner time, and he himſelfe likewiſe

Digitized by Google

likewise possest with a maruellous longing to taste some warme meate; for many dayes past he had fedde altogether on colde viands. This desire inforced him to approch to the In, remaining still doubtfull notwithstanding whether he should enter into it or no. And as he stood thus suspended, there issued out of the Inne two persons, which presently knew him, and the one said to the other, tell me Master Licenciat, is not that horseman that rides there *Sancho Panca*, him whom our aduenturers olde woman said to depart with her Master for his Squire? It is quoth the Licenciat, & that is our *Don-Quixote* his horse: and they knew him thus well, as those that were the Curate and Barber of his own village; and were those that made the search and formall processe against the bookes of Chiualry: and therefore as soone as they had taken full notice of *Sancho Panca* and *Rozinante*, desirous to learne newes of *Don-Quixote*, they drew neere vnto him, and the Curate called him by his name, saying, friend *Sancho Panca*, where is your Master? *Sancho Panca* knew them instantly, and desirous to conceale the place and manner wherein his Lord remained; did answere them that his Master was in a certaine place with-held by affaires for a few daies, that were of great consequence and concerned him very much, and that hee durst not for both his eyes discouer the place to them. No, no (quoth the Barber) *Sancho Panca*, if thou dost not tell vs where hee soiourneth, we must imagine as we doe already, that thou hast rob'd and slaine him, specially seeing thou commest thus on his horse; and therefore thou must in good faith get vs the horses owner, or else stand to thine answere. Your threats feare me nothing, quoth *Sancho*, for I am not a man that robs or murthers any one, euery man is slaine by his destinie, or by God that made him. My Lord remaines doing of penance in the midst of this mountaine, with very great pleasure. And then he presently recounted vnto them, from the beginning to the end the fashion wherein he

Digitized by Google

he had left him; the aduentures which had befalne, and how he carried a Letter to the Lady *Dulcinea of Toboſo*, who was *Lorenco Corchuelo* his daughter, of whom his Lady was enamoured vp to the liuers.

Both of them ſtood greatly admired at *Sanchoes* relation, and although they knew *Don-Quixotes* madneſſe already, and the kinde thereof, yet as often as they heard ſpeake thereof they reſted newly amazed. They requeſted *Sancho* to ſhew them the letter that he caried to the Lady *Dulcinea* of *Toboſo*. He told them that it was written in Tablets, and that he had expreſſe order from his Lord to haue it fairely copied out in paper, at the firſt village whereunto he ſhould ariue. To which the Curate anſwered, bidding ſhew it vnto him, and he would write out the copie very fairly. Then *Sancho* thruſt his hand into his boſome, and ſearched the little booke, but could not finde it, nor ſhould not though hee had ſearched till Doomes day, for it was in *Don-Quixotes* power, who gaue it not to him, nor did he euer remember to demaund it. When *Sancho* perceiued that the booke was loſt, his viſage waxed as pale and wanne as a dead man, and turning againe very ſpeedily to feele all the parts of his body, he ſaw cleerely that it could not be found, and therefore without making any more adoe, he laid holde on his owne beard with both his fiſtes, and drew almoſt the one halfe of the haire away, and afterward beſtowed on his face and noſe in a *memento* halfe a douzen ſuch cuffes, as he bathed them all in bloud; which the Curate and Barber beholding, they asked of him, what had befalne him, that he intreated himſelfe ſo ill? what ſhould befall me anſwered *Sancho*? But that I haue loſt at one hand, and in an inſtant three Colts, whereof the leaſt was like a Caſtle. How ſo, quoth the Barber? Marry ſaid *Sancho* I haue loſt the Tablets wherein were written *Dulcineas* Letter, and a ſchedule of my Lords, addreſt to his Niece, wherein he commaunded her to deliuer vnto me three Colts,

Digitized by Google

Colts, of foure or fiue that remained in his house. And saying so, hee recounted the losse of his gray Asse: The Curate comforted him, and said, that as soone as his Lord were found, he would deale with him to renew his grant, and write it in paper, according to the common vse and practise; for as much as those which were written in Tablets were invalid, and would neuer be accepted, nor accomplished. With this *Sancho* tooke courage, and said, if that was so he cared not much for the losse of *Dulcineas* Letter; for he knew it almost all by rote. Say it then *Sancho* quoth the Barber, and we will after write it. Then *Sancho* stood still, and began to scratch his head, to call the letter to memory, and now would he stand vpon one legge, and now vpon another. Sometimes he looked on the earth, others vpon heauen, and after he had gnawen off almost the halfe of one of his nailes and held them all the while suspended, expecting his recitall thereof, he said after a long pause: On my soule, Master Licenciat, I giue to the Diuell any thing that I can remember of that Letter, although the beginning was thus; *High and vnsauorie Ladie*: I warrant you, quoth the Barber, he said not so, but *Superhumaine* or *Soueraigne Ladie*. It is so, quoth *Sancho*; and presently followed, if I well remember. *He that is wounded and wants sleepe, and the hurt man doth kisse your worships hands, ingrate and very scornefull faire.* And thus he went rouing vntill he ended in *Yours vntill death, the Knight of the ill fauoured face.* Both of them tooke great delight to see *Sanchos* good memory, and praysed it to him very much, and requested him to repeat the Letter once or twice more to them, that they might also beare it in memorie, to write it at the due season. *Sancho* turned to recite it againe and againe, and at euery repetition said other three thousand errours. And after this he tolde other things of his Lord, but spoke not a word of his owne tossing in a Couerlet, which had befalne him in that Inne, into which he refused to enter. He

added

added beſides, how his Lord in bringing him a good diſpatch from his Ladie *Dulcinea* of *Toboſo*, would forthwith ſet out to endeauour how he might become an Emperour, or at the leaſt a Monarch; for they had ſo agreed betweene themſelues both: and it was a very eaſie matter for him to become one, ſuch was the valour of his perſon and ſtrength of his arme. And that when hee were one, he would procure him a good marriage; for by that time he ſhould be a widdowerer at the leaſt. And he would giue him one of the Emperours Ladies to wife, that were an Inheretrix of ſome great and rich ſtate on the firme land, for now he would haue no more Iſlands. And all this was related ſo ſeriouſly by *Sancho*, and ſo in his perfect ſenſe, he ſcratching his noſe euer and anon as hee ſpoke; ſo as the two were ſtrucken into a new amazement, pondering the vehemencie of *Don-Quixotes* frenſie, which caried quite away with it in that ſort the iudgement of that poore man, but would not labour to diſpoſſeſſe him of that errour, becauſe it ſeemed to them that ſince it did not hurt his conſcience, it was better to leaue him in it, that the recital of his follies might turne to their greater recreation: and therefore exhorted him to pray for the health of his Lord; for it was a very poſſible and contingent thing to arriue in the diſcourſe of time to the dignity of an Emperour, as he ſaid, or at leaſt to that of an Archbiſhop, or other calling equiualent to it.

Then *Sancho* demanded of them, Sirs, if fortune ſhould turne our affaires to another courſe, in ſuch ſort, as my Lord abandoning the purpoſe to purchaſe an Empire, would take in his head that of becomming a Cardinall, I would faine learne of you heere, what Cardinall errants are wont to giue to their Squires? They are wont to giue them (quoth the Curate) ſome ſimple Benefice, or ſome Parſonage, or to make them Clerkes or Sextons, or Vergers of ſome Church, whoſe liuing amounts to a good penny rent, beſide the profite of the Altar, which is oft-

Digitized by Google

times

times as much more: for that it is requisite (quoth *Sancho*) that the Squire be not married, and that he know how to helpe Masse at least: and if that be so vnfortunate, I, that both am married, and knowes not besides the first letter of the A.B.C. What will then become of me, if my Master take the humour to be an Archbishop, and not an Emperour, as is the custome and vse of Knights errant? Doe not afflict thy minde for that friend *Sancho* (quoth the Barber) for we will deale with thy Lord heere, and we will counsaile him, yea we wil vrge it to him as a matter of conscience, that he become an Emperour, and not an Archbishop; for it will be more easie for him to bee such a one, by reason that he is more valorous then learned. So me thinkes (quoth *Sancho*) although I know he hath ability enough for all. That which I meane to doe for my part is, I will pray vnto our Lord to conduct him to that place, wherein he may serue him best, and giue me greatest rewardes. Thou speakest like a discreet man (quoth the Curate) and thou shalt doe therein the duetie of a good Christian. But that which we must endeuour now, is to deuise how we may winne thy Lord from prosecuting that vnprofitable penance hee hath in hand, as thou sayest: And to the end we may thinke on the manner how, and eate our dinner withall, seeing it is time, let vs all enter into the Inne. *Sancho* bad them goe in and he would stay for them at the doore, and that he would after tell them the reason why he had no minde to enter, neither was it in any sort conuenient that he should: but he intreated them to bring him somewhat forth to eate, that were warme, and some prouand for *Rozinante*. With that they departed into the lodging, and within a while after the Barber brought forth vnto him some meate: and the Curate and Barber, after hauing pondered well with themselues what course they were to take to attaine their designe. The Curate fel on a deuice very fit both for *Don-Quixotes* humour, and also to bring their purpose

to passe; and was as he tolde the Barber, that he had bethought him, to apparrell himselfe like a Lady aduenturous, and that he therefore should doe the best that hee could to fit himselfe like a Squire, and that they would go in that habite to the place where *Don-Quixote* soiourned, saying that she was an afflicted and distressed Damzell, and would demaund a boone of him, which hee as a valorous Knight errant would in no wise denie her; and that the gift which he meaned to desire, was to intreate him to follow her where she would carry him, to right a wrong which a naughtie Knight had done vnto her: and that she would besides pray him not to commaund her to vnmaske her selfe, or inquire any thing of her estate, vntill he had done her right, against that badde Knight. And by this meanes he certainely hoped, that *Don-Quixote* would graunt all that he requested in this manner. And in this sort they would fetch him from thence, and bring him to his village, where they would labour with al their power, to see whether his extraugant frensie could be recouered by any remedy.

CHAP. XIII.

How the Curate and the Barber put their desigme in practise, with many other things, worthy to be recorded in this famous Historie.

THe Curates inuention disliked not the Barber, but rather pleased him so well, as they presently put it in execution. They borrowed therfore of the Inkeepers wife a Gowne and a Kerchife, leauing her in pawne therof a faire new Cassocke of the Curates. The Barber made him a great beard of a pyed Oxes tayle, wherein the Inkeeper was wont to hang his Horse-

Horſe-combe. The Hoſteſſe demaunded of them the occaſion why they would vſe theſe things? The Curate recounted in briefe reaſons of *Don-Quixotes* madneſſe, and how that diſguiſement was requiſite, to bring him away from the mountaine, wherein at that preſent he made his abode. Preſently the Inkeeper and his wife remembred themſelues how he had beene their gueſt, and of his *Balſamum*, and was the toſſed Squires Lord; and then they rehearſed againe to the Curate all that had paſſed betweene him and them in that Inne, without omitting the accident that had befalne *Sancho* himſelfe; and in concluſion the Hoſteſſe tricked vp the Curate ſo handſomly, as there could be no more deſired: for ſhe attired him in a gowne of broad-cloth, laid ouer with guardes of blacke Veluet, euery one being of a ſpan breadth, full of gaſhes and cuts: the bodies and ſleeues of greene Veluet, welted with white Sattin: which gowne and doublet as I ſuſpect were both made in the time of King *Bamba*. The Curate would not permit them to vaile and bekerchife him, but ſet on his head a white-quilted-linnen-night-cap; which he carried for the night, and guirded his forehead with a blacke Taffata garter, and with the other he maſked his face, wherewithall he couered his beard and viſage very neatly. Then did he incaske his pate in his hat, which was ſo broad, as it might ſerue him excellently for a *Quitaſoll*, and lapping himſelfe vp handſomly in his long cloke, he went to horſe, and rode as women vſe. Then mounted the Barber likewiſe on his Mule, with his beard hanging downe to the gyrdle, halfe red and halfe white, as that which as wee haue ſaid was made of the taile of a pyed coloured Oxe: then taking leaue of them all, and of the good *Maritornes*, who promiſed (although a ſinner) to ſay a roſary to their intention, to the end that God might giue them good ſucceſſe, in ſo Chriſtian and difficult an aduenture, as that which they vndertooke. But ſcarce were they gone out of the Inne, when the Curate began

began to dread a little that he had done ill, in apparrelling himſelfe in that wiſe, accounting it a very indecent thing that a Prieſt ſhould dight himſelfe ſo, although the matter concerned him neuer ſo much. And acquainting the Barber with his ſurmiſe, he intreated him that they might change attires, ſeeing it was much more iuſt that he, becauſe a lay-man, ſhould faine the oppreſſed Ladie, and himſelfe would become his Squire, for ſo his dignity would be leſſe prophaned: to which if he would not condiſcend, he reſolued to paſſe on no farther, although the Diuell ſhould carie therefore *Don-Quixote* away. *Sancho* came ouer to them about this ſeaſon; and ſeeing of them in that habite, he could not containe his laughter. The Barber to bee briefe did all that which the Curate pleaſed, and making thus an exchange of inuentions, the Curate inſtructed him how he ſhould behaue himſelfe; and what wordes he ſhould vſe to *Don-Quixote*, to preſſe and moue him to come away with him, and forſake the propenſion and loue to that place, which he had choſen to performe his vaine penance. The Barber anſwered that he would ſet euery thing in his due point and perfection, though he had neuer leſſoned him; but would not ſet on the array, vntill they came neere to the place where *Don-Quixote* abode, and therfore folded vp his clothes, and Maſter Parſon his beard, and forthwith went on their way, *Sancho Panca* playing the guide; who recounted at large to them all that had hapned with the mad-man, whom they found in the mountaine; concealing notwithſtanding the booty of the Malet, with the other things found therein: for although otherwiſe moſt ſimple, yet was our yong man an ordinary vice of fooles, and had a ſpice of couetouſneſſe.

They arriued the next day following to the place where *Sancho* had left the tokens of boughes, to finde that wherein his Maſter ſoiourned: and hauing taken notice thereof, he ſaid vnto them that, that was the entry, and

and therfore they might do well to apparrell themselues, if by change that might be a meane to procure his Lords libertie; for they had tolde him already, that on their going and apparrelling in that manner, consisted wholly the hope of freeing his Lord, out of that wretched life he had chosen; and therefore did charge him on his life not to reueale to his Lord in any case what they were, nor seeme in any sort to know them: and that if he demaunded (as they were sure he would) whether he had deliuered his letter to *Dulcinea*, he should say that he did, and that by reason she could not reade, she answered him by word of mouth, saying, that she commanded vnder paine of her indignation, that presently abandoning so austere a life, he would come and see her; for this was most requisite, to the end that moued therwithall, and by what they meant likewise to say vnto him, they made certaine account to reduce him to a better life, and would besides perswade him to that course instantly, which might set him in the way how to become an Emperor or Monark; for as concerning the being an Archbishop, hee needed not to feare it at all. *Sancho* listened to all the talke and instructions, and bore them away well in memory, and gaue them great thankes for the intention they had to counsell his Lord to become an Emperour, and not an Archbishop: for as he said, hee imagined in his simple iudgement that an Emperours were of more ability to reward their Squires then an Archbishops errant. Hee likewise added that he thought it were necessary he went somewhat before them to search him, and deliuer his Ladies answere: for perhaps, alone would be sufficient to fetch him out of that place, without putting them to any further paines. They liked of *Sancho Pansas* deuice, and therefore determined to expect him, vntil his returne with the newes of finding his Master. With that *Sancho* entred in by the clifts of the rockes (leauing them both behinde together) by which ran a little smooth streame,

to which other Rockes and ſome trees that grew neere vnto it, made a freſh and pleaſing ſhaddow. The heates, and the day wherein they arriued there, was one of thoſe of the moneth of Auguſt, when in thoſe places the heate is intollerable: the houre, about three in the afternoone. All which did render the place more grateful, and inuited them to remaine therein vntill *Sanchoes* returne. Both therefore arreſting there quietly vnder the ſhadow, there arriued to their hearing the ſound of a voyce, which without being accompanied by any inſtrument, did reſound ſo ſweet and melodiouſly, as they remained greatly admired, becauſe they eſteemed not that to be a place wherein any ſo good a Muſitian might make his abode. For although it is vſually ſaid that in the woods and fields are found Shepheards of excellent voyces, yet is this rather a Poetical inderement, then an approued truth; and moſt of all when they perceiued that the verſes they heard him ſinging were not of ruſticke compoſition, but rather of delicate and Courtly inuention. The truth whereof is confirmed by the verſes, which were theſe:

WHo doth my weale diminiſh thus and ſtaine?
Diſdaine.
And ſay by whom, my woes augmented be?
By Iealouſie.
And who my patience doth by triall wrong?
An abſence long.
If ſhee be ſo, then for my grieuous wrong
No remedie at all I may obtaine,
Since my beſt hopes I cruelly finde ſlaine
By Diſdaine, Iealouſie, and Abſence long.
Who in my minde, thoſe deſires ſtill doth moue?
Diſe Loue.
And who my glories ebbe, doth moſt importune?
Fortune.
And to my plaints, by whom increaſe is giuen?
By heauen.

If

If that be so, then my mistrust iumps euen,
That of my wondrous euill, I needes must die:
Since in my harme ioynd and vnited be,
Loue, wauering Fortune, and a rig'rous Heauen.
Who, better hap, can vnto me bequeath?
Death.
From whom his fauors doth not long estrange?
From change.
And his too serious harmes, who cureth wholie?
Folly.
If that be so, it is no wisedome truely
To thinke by humane meanes to cure that care,
Where th'only Antidotes, and med'cines are:
Desired death, light change, and endlesse folly.

The house, the time, the solitarines of the place, voice, and arte of him that sung, strucke wonder and delight in the hearers mindes, which remained still quiet, listning whether they might heare any thing else: but perceiuing that the silence continued a pretie while, they agreed to issue and seeke out the Musitian, that sung so harmoniously. And being ready to put their resolution in practise, they were againe arrested by the same voyce; the which touched their eares anew with this Sonnet.

A SONNET.

HOly Amitie! which with nimble wings
Thy semblance leaning heere on earth behinde,
Among the blisfed soules of heauen, vp flings,
To those Imperiall roomes to cheere thy minde.
And thence to vs, is when thou lik'st assignd
Iust peace, whom shadie vaile so couer'd brings:
As oft in steed of her, deceit we finde
Clad in the weedes of good and vertuous things.
Leaue heau'n ô Amitie! doe not permit
Fowle

Foule fraude thou openly thy robes inuest;
With which sincere intents, destroy does it.
For if thy likenesse from't thou dost not wrest,
The world will turne, to the first conflict soone,
Of discord Chaos *and confusion.*

The song was concluded with a profound sigh; and both the others lent attentiue eare to heare if hee would sing any more; but perceiuing that the musicke was conuerted into throbs and dolefull plaints, they resolued to goe and learne who was the wretch, as excellent for his voyce, as dolorous in his sighes: and after they had gone a little at the doubling of the point of a cragge, they perceiued one of the very same forme and fashion that *Sancho* had painted vnto them, when he tolde them the History of *Cardenio*: which man espying them likewise, shewed no semblance of feare, but stood still with his head hanging on his breast like a malecontent, not once lifting vp his eyes to behold them from the first time, when they vnexpectedly arriued.

The Curate who was a man very well spoken (as one that had already intelligence of his misfortune, for hee knew him by his signes) drew neerer to him, and prayed and perswaded him with short, but very forcible reasons, to forsake that miserable life, least he should there eternally lose it, which of all miseries would proue the most miserable. *Cardenio* at this season was in his right sense, free from the furious accident, that distracted him so often; and therefore viewing them both attired in so strange and vnusuall a fashion from that which was vsed among those deserts, he rested somewhat admired; but chiefely hearing them speake in his affaire, as in a matter knowne (for so much he gathered but of the Curates speeches) and therefore answered in this manner: I perceiue well, good Sirs (whosoeuer you be) that heauen which hath alwayes care to succour good men, yea euen and the wic-

ked

ked many times, hath without any desert addrest vnto me by these desarts and places so remote from vulgar haunt, persons, which laying before mine eyes with quicke and pregnant reasons the little I haue to leade this kinde of life, doe labour to remoue me from this place to a better: and by reason they know not as much as I doe, and that after escaping this harme, I shall fall into a farre greater, they account me perhaps for a man of weake discourse, and what is worse for one wholly deuoide of iudgement. And were it so, yet is it no maruell; for it seemes to me that the force of the imagination of my disasters is so bent and powerfull in my destruction, that I without being able to make it any resistance, do become like a stone, voyde of all good feeling and knowledge: and I come to know the certainty of this truth, when some men doe recount and shew vnto me tokens of the things I haue done, whilest this terrible accident ouer-rules me: and after I can doe no more, then be grieued though in vaine, and curse without benefite my too froward fortune; and render as an excuse of my madnesse, the relation of the cause thereof, to as many as please to heare it: for wise men perceiuing the cause, will not wonder at the effects. And though they hiue me no remedie, yet at least wil not condemne me, for it will conuert the anger they conceiue at my misrules, into compassion of my disgraces. And Sirs if by chance it be so, that you come with the same intention that others did, I request you ere you inlarge farther your discreet perswasions, that you will giue eare a while to the relation of my mishaps: for perhaps when you haue vnderstood it, you may saue the labour that you would take, conforting an euill wholly incapable of consolation.

Both of them which desired nothing so much then to vnderstand from his owne mouth, the occasion of his harmes, did intreate him to relate it, promising to do nothing else in his remedie or comfort, but what himselfe pleased.

pleaſed. And with this the ſorrowfull Gentleman began his doleſull Hiſtorie, with the very ſame wordes almoſt that he had rehearſed it to *Don-Quixote* and the Goatheard a few dayes paſt, when by occaſion of Maſter *Eliſabat* and *Don-Quixotes* curioſitie in obſeruing the *Decorum* of Chiualry, the tale remained imperfect, as our Hiſtory left it aboue. But now good fortune ſo diſpoſed things, that his fooliſh fit came not vpon him, but gaue him leiſure to continue his ſtorie to the end; and ſo arriuing to the paſſage that ſpoke of the Letter *Don Ferdinando* found in the booke of *Amadis du Gaule*, *Cardenio* ſaid that he had it very well in memory; and the ſenſe was this.

LVSCINDA to CARDENIO.

I diſcouer daily in thee worthes, that oblige & inforce me to holde thee deere: and therefore if thou deſireſt to haue me diſcharge this debt, without ſeruing a writ on my honour, thou mayeſt eaſily doe it. I haue a father that knowes thee, and loues me likewiſe well; who without forcing my will, will accompliſh that which iuſtly thou oughteſt to haue: if it be ſo, that thou eſteemeſt me as much as thou ſayeſt, and I doe beleeue.

This Letter moued me to demand *Luſcinda* of her father for my wife, as I haue already recounted; and by it alſo *Luſcinda* remained in *Don Ferdinandos* opinion crowned, for one of the moſt diſcreete women of her time. And this billet Letter was that which firſt put him in minde to deſtroy me, e're I could effect my deſires. I tolde to *Don Ferdinando* wherein conſiſted all the difficultie of her fathers protracting of the marriage, to wit, in that my father ſhould firſt demaund her; the which I dared not to mention vnto him, fearing leſt hee would not willingly conſent thereunto; not for that the qualitie, bountie, vertue, and beautie of *Luſcinda*, were to him vn-

Digitized by Google

vnknowne, or that she had not partes in her able to ennoblish and adorne any other linage of Spaine whatsoeuer: but because I vnderstood by him that he desired not to marrie me vntill hee had seene what Duke *Ricardo* would doe for me. Finally, I tolde him that I dared not reueale it to my father, as well for that inconuenience, as for many others that made me so affraid, without knowing what they were, as me thought my desires would neuer take effect. To all this *Don Ferdinando* made me answere that he would take vpon him to speake to my father, and perswade him to treate of that affaire also with *Luscindas*. O ambitious *Martus*. O cruell *Catiline*. O facinorous *Quila*. O treacherous *Galalon*. O trayterous *Vellido*. O reuengefull * *Iulian*. O couetous *Iudas*. Traytor, cruell, reuengefull, and cousening, what indeserts did this wench commit, who with such plaines discouered to thee the secrets and delights of his heart? What offence committed I against thee? What words did I speake, or counsel did I giue, that were not all addrest to the increasing of thine honour and profite? But on what doe I of all wretches the worst complaine, seeing that when the current of the starres do bring with it mishaps, by reason they come downe precipitately from aboue, there is no earthly force can with-hold, or humane industry preuent or euacuat them? Who would haue imagined that *Don Fernando* a noble Gentleman, discreete, obliged by my deserts, and powerfull to obtaine whatsoeuer the amorous desire would exact of him, where and whensoeuer it seazed on his heart (would as they say) become so corrupt as to depriue me of one onely sheepe, which yet I did not possesse? But let these considerations be laide apart as vnprofitable, that we may knit vp againe the broken threede of my vnfortunate History. And therefore I say, that *Don Ferdinando* beleeuing that my presence was a hinderance to put his treacherous and wicked designe in execution, he resolued to send me to his eldest brother, vnder

* *One who for the rape of his daughter, committed by* Rodericke *King of Spaine, brought in the Moores and destroyed all the Countrey.*

Digitized by Google

vnder pretext to get ſome money of him, for to buy ſixe great horſes, that he had of purpoſe, and onely to the end I might abſent my ſelfe, bought the very ſame day that he offered to ſpeake himſelfe to my father, and would haue me goe for the money (becauſe he might bring his treacherous intent the better to paſſe) could I preuent this treaſon? Or could I perhaps but once imagin it? No truly; but rather glad for the good merchandize hee had made, did make proffer of my ſelfe to depart for the money very willingly. I ſpoke that night to *Luſcinda*, and acquainted her with the agreement paſt betweene mee and *Don Ferdinando*, bidding her to hope firmely that our good iuſt deſires would ſort a wiſhed and happie end. She anſwered me againe (as little ſuſpecting *Don Ferdinandos* treaſon as my ſelfe) bidding me to returne with all ſpeede, becauſe ſhe beleeued that the concluſion of our affections ſhould be no longer deferred, then my father deferred to ſpeake vnto hers. And what was the cauſe I know not, but as ſoone as ſhe had ſaid this vnto me, her eyes were filled with teares, and ſomewhat thwarting her throate, hindered her from ſaying many other things, which me thought ſhe ſtriued to ſpeake.

I reſted admired at this new accident vntill that time neuer ſeene in her; for alwaies as many times as my good fortune and diligence graunted it, we conuerſed with all ſport and delight, without euer intermedling in our diſcourſes, any teares, ſighes, complaints, ſuſpitions, or fears. All my ſpeech was to aduance my fortune; for hauing receiued her from heauen as my Ladie and Miſtreſſe, then would I amplifie her beautie, admire her worth, & praiſe her diſcretion. She on the other ſide would returne mee the exchange, extolling in me, what ſhe as one enamoured accounted worthy of laude and commendation. After this we would recount a hundred thouſand toyes and chaunces befalne our neighbours and acquaintance, and that to which my preſumption dared fartheſt to extend it ſelfe,

ſelfe, was ſometimes to take her beautifull and luorie hands perforce, and kiſſe them as well as I might through the rigorous ſtrictneſſe of a niggardly Iron grate which deuided vs. But the precedent night to the day of my ſad departure, ſhe wept, ſobd, and ſighed, and departed, leauing me full of confuſion and inward aſſaults, amazed to beholde ſuch new and doleſull tokens of ſorrow and feeling in *Luſcinda*. But becauſe I would not murder my hopes, I did attribute all theſe things to the force of her affection towards me, and to the griefe which abſence is wont to ſtirre in thoſe that loue one another deerely. To be briefe, I departed from thence ſorrowfull and penſiue, my ſoule being ful of imaginations and ſuſpitions, and yet know not what I ſuſpected or imagined. Cleere tokens, foretelling the ſadde ſucceſſe and misfortune which attended me. I arriued to the place where I was ſent, and deliuered my letters to *Don Ferdinandos* brother, & was well intertained, but not wel diſpatched; for he commanded me to expect (a thing to me moſt diſpleaſing) eight dayes, and that out of the Duke his fathers preſence; becauſe his brother had written vnto him to ſend him certaine moneyes vnknowne to his father. And all this was but falſe *Don Ferdinandos* inuention, for his brother wanted not money wherewithall to haue diſpatched me preſently, had not he written the contrary.

This was ſo diſpleaſing a commandement & order, as almoſt it brought me to termes of diſobeying it, becauſe it ſeemed to me a thing moſt impoſſible to ſuſtaine my life ſo many daies in the abſence of my *Luſcinda*. And ſpecially hauing left her ſo ſorrowfull as I haue recounted; yet notwithſtanding I did obey like a good ſeruant, although I knew it would be with the coſt of my health. But on the fourth day after I had arriued, there came a man in my ſearch with a letter, which he deliuered vnto me, and by the indorſement I knew it to be *Luſcindas*; for the hand was like hers. I opened it not without feare

and

and aſſailement of my ſenſes, knowing that it muſt haue beene ſome ſerious occaſion, which could moue her to write vnto me, being abſent, ſeeing ſhe did it ſo rarely, euen when I was preſent. I demaunded of the bearer before I read, who had deliuered it to him, and what time he had ſpent in the way. He anſwered me that paſſing by chaunce at mid-day through a ſtreete of the Citie, a very beautifull Ladie did call him from a certaine window: Her eyes were all beblubbered with teares; and ſaid vnto him very haſtily: Brother, if thou beeſt a Chriſtian, as thou appeareſt to be one, I pray thee for Gods ſake, that thou doe forthwith addreſſe this letter to the place and perſon that the ſuperſcription aſſigneth, (for they be well knowen) and therein thou ſhalt doe our Lord great ſeruice. And becauſe thou mayeſt not want meanes to doe it, take what thou ſhalt finde wrapped in that Handkerchife: and ſaying ſo, ſhe threw out of the window a handkerchife, wherein were lapped vp a hundred Rials, this ring of golde which I carie here, and that letter which I deliuered vnto you; and preſently without expecting mine anſwere ſhe departed, but firſt ſaw me take vp the handkerchife and letter; and then I made her ſignes that I would accompliſh herein her command: and after perceiuing the paines I might take in bringing you it ſo well conſidered, and ſeeing by the indorſement, that you were the man to whom it was addreſt. For Sir I know you verie well; and alſo obliged to doe it by the teares of that beautiful Ladie, I determined not to truſt any other with it, but to come and bring it you my ſelfe in perſon: and in ſixteene houres ſince it was giuen vnto me, I haue trauelled the iourney you know, which is at leaſt eighteene leagues long. Whileſt the thankefull new meſſenger ſpake thus vnto me, I remained in a manner hanging on his words, and my thighes did tremble in ſuch manner, as I could very hardly ſuſtaine my ſelfe on foote: yet taking courage, at laſt I opened the letter, whereof theſe were the Contents.

The word that Don Ferdinando *hath past vnto you to speake to your father, that he might speake to mine, he hath accomplished more to his owne pleasure then to your profite. For Sir you shall vnderstand, that he hath demaunded mee for his wife; and my father borne away by the aduantage of worthes which he supposes to be in* Don Ferdinando *more then in you, hath agreed to his demaund in so good earnest, as the espousals shall bee celebrated within these two daies, and that so secretly and alone, as onely the heauens and some folke of the house shall be witnesses. How I remaine, imagine, and whether it be conuenient you should returne you may consider: and the successe of this affaire shall let you to perceiue, whether I loue you well or no. I beseech Almighty God that this may arriue vnto your hands, before mine shall see it selfe in danger to ioyne it selfe with his, which keepeth his promised faith so ill.*

These were in summe, the contents of the letter, and the motiues that perswaded me presently to depart, without attending any other answere, or other monies; for then I conceiued clearly, that it was not the buyall of the horses, but that of his delights, which had moued *Don Ferdinando* to send me to his brother. The rage which I conceiued against him ioyned with the feare to lose the iewell which I had gained by so many yeares seruice, and desires, did set wings on mee, for I arriued as if I had flien the next day at mine owne Citie, in the houre and moment fit to goe speake to *Luscinda*. I entred secretly, and left my Mule whereon I rode in the honest mans house, that had brought mee the letter and my fortune purposing then to be fauourable to me, disposed so mine affaires, that I found *Luscinda* sitting at that yron grate, which was the sole witnesse of our loues. *Luscinda* knew me straight and I her, but not as we ought to know one another. But who is hee in the world which may truly vaunt, that he hath penetrated, and throughly exhausted the confused thoughts, and mutable nature of women?

Google

women? truly none. I ſay then to proceede with my tale, that as ſoone as *Luſcinda* perceiued me ſhe ſaid *Cardenio* I am attired with my wedding garments, and in the Hall doe waite for mee, the traitor *Don Ferdinando*, and my couetous father with other witneſſes; which ſhall rather be ſuch of my death, then of mine eſpouſals; bee not troubled deare friend, but procure to be preſent at this ſacrifice, the which if I cannot hinder, by my perſwaſions and reaſons, I carry hidden about me a poynard ſecretly which may hinder more reſolute forces, by giuing end to my life, and a beginning to thee, to know certaine the affection which I haue euer borne, and doe beare vnto thee. I anſwered her troubled and haſtily, fearing I ſhould not haue the leaſure to reply vnto her, ſaying ſweete Ladie, let thy works verifie thy words, for if thou carrieſt a poynard to defend thy credit, I doe heere likewiſe beare a ſword wherewithall, I will defend thee, or kill my ſelfe if fortune proue aduerſe and contrary. I beleaue that ſhe could not heare all my words by reaſon ſhe was called haſtily away as I perceiued, for that the bridegroome expected her comming. By this the night of my ſorrowes did throughly fall, and the Sunne of my gladneſſe was ſet: and I remained without light in mine eyes, or diſcourſe in my vnderſtanding. I could not finde the way into her houſe, nor could I moue my ſelfe to any part: yet conſidering at laſt how important my preſence was, for that which might befall in that aduenture, I animated my ſelfe the beſt I could, and entred into the houſe; and as one that knew very well all the entries and paſſages thereof, and ſpecially by reaſon of the trouble and buſineſſe that was then in hand, I went in vnperceiued of any. And thus without being ſeene, I had the oportunitie to place my ſelfe in the hollow roome of a window of the ſame Hall, which was couered by the endes of two incountring peeces of tapeſtry, from whence I could ſee all that was done in the Hall, remaining my ſelfe vnviewed

Digitized by Google

vnuiewed of any. VVho could now describe the assaults and surprisals of my heart whilst I there abode: The thoughts which incountred my mind, the considerations which I had, which were so many and such, as they can neither be said, nor is it reason they should. Let it suffice you to know, that the bridegroome entred into the Hall without any ornament, wearing the ordinary array hee was wont, and was accompanied by a cousen Germaine of *Luscindas*, and in all the Hall there was no stranger present, nor any other then the household seruants, within a while after *Luscinda* came out of the Parlour accompanied by her mother and two waiting maides of her owne, as richly attired and deckt, as her calling and beautie deserued, and the perfection of courtly pompe and brauery could affoord my distraction and trouble of mind lent me no time to note particularly the apparrell shee wore, and therefore did onely marke the colours which were carnation and white; and the splendour which the precious stones and Iewels of her tires, and all the rest of her garments yeelded: yet did the singular beauty of her faire and golden tresses surpasse them so much, as being in competencie with the precious stones, and flame of foure linkes that lighted in the Hall, yet did the splendour thereof seeme farre more bright and glorious to mine eies. O memory the mortall enemie of mine ease, to what end serues it now to represent vnto me the vncomparable beautie of that my adored enemy. Were it not better cruel memory to remember & represent that which she did then, that being moued by so manifest a wrong, I may at least endeuour to lose my life, since I cannot procure a reuenge? Tire not good sirs to heare the digressions I make, for my griefe is not of that kinde that may be rehearsed succinctly and speedily; seeing that in mine opinion euery passage of it is worthy of a large discourse.

To this the Curate answered, that not onely they were not

not tyred or wearied, hearing of him, but rather the receaued maruellous delight to heare him recount each minutie and circumstance, because they were such, as deserued not to be past ouer in silence, but rather merited as much attention as the principall parts of the History: you shall then wit (quoth *Cardenio*) that as they thus stood in the Hall, the Curate of the Parish entred, and taking them both by the hand, to doe that which in such an act is required at the saying of, *Will you Ladie* Luscinda *take the Lord* Don Ferdinando *who is heere present for your lawfull spouse, according as our holy mother the Church commands?* I thrust out all my head and neck out of the tapistry, and with most attentiue eares and a troubled mind, setled my selfe to heare what *Luscinda* answered; expecting by it the sentence of my death, or the confirmation of my life. O if one had dared to sally out at that time, and cried with a loud voice: O *Luscinda*, *Luscinda*, see well what thou doest, consider withall what thou owest me. Behold how thou art mine, and that thou canst not be any others, note that thy saying of yea, and the end of my life shall be both in one instant. O traytor *Don Ferdinando* robber of my glory, death of my life, what is this thou pretendest? what wilt thou doe? Consider that thou canst not Christianlike atchieue thine intention, seeing *Luscinda* is my spouse, and I am her husband. O foolish man now that I am absent, and farre from the danger, I say what I should haue done, and not what I did. Now after that I haue permitted my deere Iewel to be robbed, I exclaime on the theefe, on whom I might haue reuenged my selfe, had I had as much heart to doe it as I haue to complaine. In fine since I was then a coward and a foole, it is no matter though I now die ashamed, sory, and frantick. The Curate stood expecting *Luscindaes* answere a good while ere she gaue it, and in the end, when I hoped that she would take out the Poynard to stab her selfe, or would vnloose her tongue to say some truth, or

vse

vse some reason or perswasion that might redound to my benefit, I heard heere in stead thereof answere with a dismaied and languishing voice the word: *I will*: and then *Don Fernando* said the same, and giuing her the ring, they remained tyed with an indissoluble knot. Then the bridegroome comming to kisse his spouse, she set her hand vpon her heart, and fell in a trance betweene her mothers armes.

Now onely remaines vntold the case wherein I was, seeing in that, yea, which I had heard my hopes deluded, *Luscindaes* words and promises falsified; and my selfe wholy disabled to recouer in any time the good which I lost in that instant, I rested void of counsell, abandoned (in mine opinion) by heauen, proclaimed an enemy to the earth which vpheld me, the ayre denying breath enough for my sighes, and the water, humour sufficient to mine eyes: only the fire increased in such maner, as I burned throughly with rage and iealousie. All the house was in a tumult for this sodaine amazement of *Luscinda*, and as her mother vnclasped her bosome to giue her the ayre, there appeared in it a paper foulded vp, which *Don Fernando* presently seazed on, and went aside to reade it by the light of a torch, and after he had read it, he sate down in a chayre, laying his hands on his cheeke, with manifest signes of melancholy discontent, without bethinking himselfe of the remedies that were applied to his spouse, to bring her againe to her selfe. I seeing all the folke of the house thus in an vprore, did aduenture my selfe to issue, not waighing much whether I were seene or no; bearing withall a resolution (if I were perceiued) to play such a rash part as all the world should vnderstand the iust indignation of my breast, by the reuenge I would take on false *Don Fernando*, and the mutable and dismaied traytresse: But my destinie which hath reserued me for greater euils, if possibly there may be any greater then mine owne, ordained that instant my wit should

abound, whereof euer ſince I haue ſo great want: and therefore without will to take reuenge of my greateſt enemies (of whom I might haue taken it with all facilitie, by reaſon they ſuſpected ſo little my being there) I determined to take it on my ſelfe, and execute in my ſelfe the paine which they deſerued; and that perhaps with more rigour then I would haue vſed towards them, if I had ſlaine them at that time, ſeeing that the ſodaine death finiſheth preſently the pain, but that which doth lingringly torment, kils alwaies without ending the life. To be ſhort, I went out of the houſe, and came to the other where I had left my Mule, which I cauſed to bee ſadled, and without bidding mine hoaſt adieu, I mounted on her, and rode out of the Citie, without daring like another *Lot* to turne back and behold it: and then ſeeing my ſelfe alone in the fields, and that the darkeneſſe of the night did couer me, and the ſilence thereof inuite me to complain, without reſpect or feare to be heard or known, I did let ſlip my voyce and vntied my tongue with ſo many curſes of *Luſcinda* and *Don Ferdinando*, as if thereby I might ſatisfie the wrong they had done me. I gaue her the title, of cruell, vngratefull, falſe, and ſcorneſull, but ſpecially of couetous, ſeeing the riches of mine enemie, had ſhut vp the eyes of her affection, to depriue me therof, and render it to him, with whom fortune had dealt more frankly and liberally: and in the midſt of this tune of maledictions and ſcornes, I did excuſe her ſaying: that it was no maruaile that a Mayden kept cloſe in her parents houſe, made and accuſtomed alwaies to obey them, ſhould at laſt condiſcend to their will ſpecially, ſeeing they beſtowed vpon her for husband ſo noble, ſo rich and proper a Gentleman as to refuſe him, would be reputed in her to proceed either from want of iudgement, or from hauing beſtowed her affections elſewhere, which things muſt of force greatly preiudice her good opinion and renowne. Preſently would I turne againe to

say, that though she had told them that I was her spouse, they might easily perceiue that in chusing me she had not made so ill an election, that she might not be excused, seeing that before *Don Fernando* offred himselfe, they themselues could not happen to desire, if their wishes were guided by reason, so fit a match for their daughter as my selfe: and she might easily haue said, before shee put her selfe in that last and forcible passe, of giuing her hand, that I had already giuen her mine, which I would come out to confesse and confirme all that she could any way faine in this case: and concluded in the end, that little loue, lesse iudgement, much ambition and desire of greatnesse caused her to forget the wordes, wherewithall she had deceiued, intertained, and sustained me in my firme hopes and honest desires.

Vsing these wordes, and feeling this vnquietnesse in my brest, I trauelled all the rest of the night, and strucke about dawning into one of the entries of these mountaines, through which I trauelled three dayes at random, without following or finding any path or way, vntill I arriued at last to certaine meddowes and fieldes, that lie I know not in which part of these mountaines: and finding there certaine heards, I demaunded of them which way lay the most craggy and inaccessible places of these rocks, and they directed me hither; and presently I trauelled towards it, with purpose here to end my life: and entring in among those desarts, my Mule through wearinesse and hunger fell dead vnder me, or rather as I may better suppose, to disburden himselfe of so vile and vnprofitable a burden as he carried in me. I remained a foote, ouercome by nature, and pierced thorow and thorow by hunger, without hauing any helpe, or knowing who might succour me; and remained after that manner I know not how long prostrate on the ground; and then I arose a gaine without any hunger, and I found neere vnto mee certaine Goatheards, who were those doubtlesly that

fedde me in my hunger. For they tolde me in what manner they found me, and how I ſpake ſo many fooliſh and madde wordes, as gaue certaine argument that I was deuoide of iudgement. And I haue felt in my ſelfe ſince that time that I enioy not my wits perfectly, but rather perceiue them to be ſo weakened and impaired, as I commit a hundred follies, tearing mine apparrell, crying loudly thorow theſe deſarts, curſing my fates, and idely repeating the beloued name of mine enemie, without hauing any other intent or diſcourſe at that time, then to endeauour to finiſh my life ere long: and when I turne to my ſelfe, I am ſo broken and tyred, as I am ſcarce able to ſtirre me. My moſt ordinary Manſion place is in the hollownes of a Corke tree, ſufficiently able to couer this wretched carkaſſe. The Cowheards and the Goatheards that feede their cattell here in theſe mountaines, moued by charity, gaue me ſuſtenance, leauing meate for me by the wayes, and on the rockes which they ſuppoſe I frequent, and where they thinke I may finde it: and ſo although I doe then want the vſe of reaſon, yet doth naturall neceſſity induce me to know my meate, and ſtirreth my appetite to couet, and my will to take it. They tell me when they meete me in my wits, that I doe other times come out to the high wayes, and take it from them violently, euen when they themſelues doe offer it vnto mee willingly. After this manner doe I paſſe my miſerable life, vntill heauen ſhall be pleaſed to conduct it to the laſt period, or ſo change my memorie, as I may no more remember on the beauty and treacherie of *Luſcinda*, or the iniurie done by *Don Ferdinando*; for if it doe me this fauour without depriuing my life, then will I conuert my thoughts to better diſcourſes: if not, there is no other remedie but to pray God to receiue my ſoule into his mercie; for I neyther finde valour nor ſtrength in my ſelfe to ridde my bodie out of the ſtraites, wherein for my pleaſure I did at firſt willingly intrude it.

Digitized by Google

This

This is Sirs the bitter relation of my disasters: wherefore iudge if it be such as may be celebrated with lesse feeling and compassion then that, which you may by this time haue perceiued in my selfe? And doe not in vaine labour to perswade or counsel me that which reason shal affoord you may bee good for my remedie: for it will worke no other effect in me then a medicine prescribed by a skilfull Physitian, to a Patient that will in no sort receiue it. I will haue no health without *Luscinda*, and since she pleaseth to be alienate her selfe, being or seeing she ought to be mine: so doe I also take delight to be of the retinue of mishap, although I might be a retainer to good fortune. She hath ordained that her changing shall establish my perdition. And I will labour by procuring mine owne losse, to please and satisfie her wil: and it shal be an example to ensuing ages, that I alone wanted that, wherewithall all other wretches abounded, to whom the impossibility of receiuing comfort, proued sometimes a cure; but in me it is an occasion of greater feeling and harme, because I am perswaded that my harmes cannot end euen with very death it selfe. Here *Cardenio* finished his large discourse, and vnfortunate and amorous History; and iust about the time that the Curate was bethinking himselfe of some comfortable reasons to answer and perswade him: he was suspended by a voyce which arriued to his hearing, which with pittifull accents said what shall be recounted in the fourth part of this Narration. For in this very point the wise and most absolute Historiographer *Cid Hamete Benengeli* finished the third Part of this HISTORY.

Digitized by Google

Lord of your Dominions

George R

Digitized by Google

THE DELIGHTFVLL HISTORY OF THE WITTY KNIGHT DON-QVIXOTE of the MANCHA.

THE FOVRTH PART.

CHAP. I.

Wherein is discourſed the new and pleaſant aduenture that hapned to the Curate and Barber, in Sierra Morena.

MOſt happy and fortunate were thoſe times, wherein the thriſe audacious and bolde Knight *Don-Quixote* of the *Mancha*, was beſtowed on the world; by whoſe moſt honorable reſolution, to reuiue and renue in it the already worne out, and welnigh diſeaſed exerciſe of armes, wee ioy in this our ſo niggard and ſcant an age of all paſtimes, not onely the ſweetneſſe of his true Hiſtorie, but alſo of the other tales, and digreſſions contained therein, which are in ſome reſpects leſſe pleaſing, artificiall and true, then the very Hiſtory it ſelfe. The which proſecuting the carded, ſpun, and ſelfe twined threede of the rela

tion

tion ſayes, that as the Curate beganne to bethinke himſelfe vpon ſome anſwere that might both confort and animate *Cardenio*, hee was hindered by a voyce which came to his hearing, ſaid very dolefully the words enſuing.

O God! is it poſsible that I haue yet found out the place which may ſerue for a hidden Sepulchre, to the load of this loathſome body that I vnwillingly beare ſo long? Yes it may be, if the ſolitarineſſe of theſe rockes doe not illude me, ah vnfortunate that I am! How much more grateſull companions will theſe cragges and thickets proue to my deſignes, by affoording me leiſure to communicate my miſhaps to heauen with plaints; then that if any mortall man liuing, ſince there is none vpon earth from whom may be expected counſell in doubts, eaſe in complaints, or in harmes remedie. The Curate and his companions heard and vnderſtood all the words cleerely, and for as much as they coniectured (as indeede it was) that thoſe plaints were deliuered very neere vnto them, they did all ariſe to ſearch out the plaintiffe; and hauing gone ſome twenty ſteppes thence, they beheldе a young youth behinde a rocke, ſitting vnder an Aſhe tree, and attired like a country Swaine, whom by reaſon his face was inclined, as hee ſate waſhing of his feete in the cleere ſtreame that glided that way, they could not perfectly diſcerne; and therefore approched towards him with ſo great ſilence, as they were not deſcryed by him who only attended to the waſhing of his feet, which were ſo white, as they properly reſembled two pieces of cleere cryſtall, that grew among the other ſtones of the ſtreame. The whiteneſſe and beautie of the feete amazed them, being not made as they well coniectured, to treade cloddes, or meaſure the ſteppes of lazie Oxen, and holding the Plow, as the youthes apparrell would perſwade them; and therefore the Curate, who went before the reſt, ſeeing they were not yet eſpyed, made ſignes to the other two

that

that they ſhould diuert a little out of the way, or hide themſelues behinde ſome broken cliffes that were neere the place; which they did all of them, noting what the youth did with very great attention. Hee wore a little browne Capouch, gyrt very neere to his body with a white Towell; alſo a paire of Breeches and Gamaſheos of the ſame coloured cloth, and on his head a clay coloured Cap. His Gamaſheos were lifted vp halfe the legge, which verily ſeemed to be white *Alablaſter*. Finally, hauing waſhed his feete, taking out a linnen Kerchiſe from vnder his Cappe, he dried them therewithall, and at the taking out of the Kerchiſe, he held vp his face, and then thoſe which ſtood gazing on him had leiſure to diſcerne an vnmatchable beautie, ſo ſurpaſsing great, as *Cardenio* rounding the Curate in the eare, ſaid, this bodie ſince it is not *Luſcinda* can be no humane creature, but a diuine. The youth tooke off his Cappe at laſt, and ſhaking his head to the one and other part, did diſheauell and diſcouer ſuch beautifull haires, as thoſe of *Phœbus* might iuſtly emulate them: and thereby they knew the ſuppoſed Swaine to be a delicate woman, yea and the faireſt that euer the firſt two had ſeene in their liues, or *Cardenio* himſelfe, the louely *Luſcinda* excepted; for as he after affirmed, no feature ſaue *Luſcindas* could contend with hers. The long and golden haires did not onely couer her ſhoulders, but did alſo hide her round about, in ſuch ſort, as (her feete excepted) no other part of her body appeared, they were ſo neere and long. At this time her hands ſerued her for a Combe, which as her feete ſeemed pieces of cryſtall in the water, ſo did they appeare among her haires like pieces of driuen Snow. All which circumſtances did poſſeſſe the three which ſtood gazing at her with great admiration, and deſire to know what ſhe was; and therefore reſolued to ſhew themſelues; and with the noyſe which they made when they aroſe, the beautifull mayden held vp her head, and remouing her haires from

Digitized by Google

before

before her eyes with both handes, ſhe eſpyed thoſe that had made it, and preſently ariſing full of feare and trouble, ſhe laid hand on a packet that was by her, which ſeemed to be of apparrell, and thought to flie away, without ſtaying to pull on her ſhooes, or to gather vp her haire: But ſcarce had ſhe gone ſixe paces when her delicate and tender feete, vnable to abide the rough encounter of the ſtones made her to fall to the earth. Which the three perceiuing, they came out to her, and the Curate arriuing firſt of all, ſaid to her: Ladie, whatſoeuer you be, ſtay and feare nothing; for we which you beholde here, come only with intention to doe you ſeruice, and therefore you neede not pretend ſo impertinent a flight, which neyther your feete can endure nor would we permit. The poore Gyrle remained ſo amazed and confounded, as ſhee anſwered not a word: wherefore the Curate and the reſt drawing neerer, he tooke her by the hand, and then hee proſecuted his ſpeech, ſaying, What your habite concealed from vs Ladie, your haires haue bewrayed, being manifeſt arguments that the cauſes were of no ſmal moment which haue thus bemasked your ſingular beauty, vnder ſo vnworthy array; and conducted you to this all-abandoned deſart; wherein it was a wonderfull chaunce to haue met you, if not to remedie your harmes, yet at leaſt to giue you ſome comfort, ſeeing no euill can afflict and vexe one ſo much, and plunge him in ſo deepe extreames, (whileſt it depriues not the life) that will wholly abhorre from liſtening to the aduice that is offered, with a good and ſincere intention; ſo that faire Ladie, or Lord, or what elſe you ſhall pleaſe to be termed, ſhake off your affrightment, and rehearſe vnto vs your good or ill fortune, for you ſhall finde in vs ioyntly, or in euery one apart, companions to helpe you to deplore your diſaſters.

Whileſt the Curate made this ſpeech, the diſguiſed woman ſtood as one halfe aſleepe, now beholding the one, now the other, without once mouing her lippe or

Digitized by Google

saying a word; much like vnto a rusticke Clowne, when rare and vnseene things to him before, are vnexpectedly presented to his view. But the Curate insisting and vsing other perswasiue reasons addrest to that effect, won her at last to make a breach on her tedious silence, and with a profound sigh blow open her currall gates, saying somwhat to this effect: Since the solitarinesse of these rockes hath not beene potent to conceale me, nor the disheaueling of my disordered haires, licensed my tongue to belie my sexe, it were in vaine for me to faine that anew, which if you beleeued it, would be more for courtesies sake then any other respect. Which presupposed, I say good Sirs, that I doe gratifie you highly for the liberall offers you haue made me; which are such, as haue bound me to satisfie your demaund as neere as I may; although I feare the relation which I must make to you of my mishappes, will breede sorrow at once with compassion in you, by reason you shal not be able to find any salue that may cure, comfort, or beguile them: yet notwithstanding to the end my reputation may not houer longer suspended in your opinions, seeing you know me to be a woman, and view me, young, alone and thus attyred, being things all of them able eyther ioyned or parted, to ouerthrow the best credite, I must be enforced to vnfolde, what I could otherwise most willingly conceale. All this she that appeared so comely spoke without stoppe, or staggering, with so ready deliuerie and so sweete a voice, as her discretion admired them no lesse then her beautie. And renewing againe their complements and intreaties to her, to accomplish speedily her promise, she setting all coynesse apart, drawing on her shooes very modestly, and winding vp her haire, sate her downe on a stone, and the other three about her, where she vsed no little violence to smother certaine rebellious teares that stroue to breake forth without her permission: and then with a reposed and cleere voyce she began the Historie of her life in this manner. In

Digitized by Google

In this Prouince of *Andaluzia* there is a certaine Towne, from whence a Duke deriues his denomination, which makes him one of thoſe in Spain are call'd *Grandes*: He hath two ſonnes, the elder is heire of his States, and likewiſe as may be preſumed of his vertues: the younger is heire I know not of what, if it be not of * *Vellido* his treacheries, or *Galalons* fraudes. My parents are this Noblemans vaſſals, of humble and low calling; but ſo rich, as if the goods of nature had equalled thoſe of their fortunes, then ſhould they haue had nothing elſe to deſire, nor I feared to ſee my ſelfe in the misfortunes, wherein I now am plunged. For perhaps my miſhaps proceed from that of theirs in not being nobly deſcended. True it is that they are not ſo baſe, as they ſhould therefore ſhame their calling, nor ſo high as may check my conceit, which perſwades me, that my diſaſters proceede from their lowneſſe. In concluſion, they are but Farmours, and plaine people, but without any touch or ſpot of badde bloud, and as we vſually ſay, Olde ruſtie Chriſtians, yet ſo ruſtie and auncient, as it, their riches, and magnificent porte, gaines them by little and little the title of Gentilitie; yea, and of worſhip alſo; although the treaſure and Nobility, whereof they made moſt price and account, was to haue had me for their daughter: and therefore as well by reaſon that they had none other heire then my ſelfe, as alſo becauſe as affectionate parents, they held me moſt deere: I was one of the moſt made of and cheriſhed daughters that euer father brought vp: I was the mirrour wherein they beheld themſelues, the ſtaffe of their olde age, and the ſubiect to which they addreſt all their deſires. From which, becauſe they were moſt vertuous, mine did not ſtray an inch: and euen in the ſame manner that I was Ladie of their mindes, ſo was I alſo of their goods. By me were ſeruants admitted or diſmiſſed: the notice and account of what was ſowed or reaped, paſt through my handes, of the Oyle-mils, the Wine-preſſes, the number of

* *One that murdered* Sancho *King of Caſtile, as he was eaſing himſelfe at the ſiege of Camora.*

great and little cattell, the Bee-hiues; in fine, of all that which so rich a Farmour as my father was, had or could haue; I kept the account, and was the Steward thereof and Mistresse, with such care of my side and pleasure of theirs, as I cannot possible endure it enough. The times of leisure that I had in the day, after I had giuen what was necessary to the head seruants, and others, labourers I did intertaine in those exercises, which were both commendable and requisite for mayders, to wit, in sowing, making of bone-lace, and many times handling the Distaffe: and if sometimes I left those exercises to recreate my minde a little, I would then take some godly booke in hand, or play at the Harpe; for experience had taught me, that musicke ordereth disordered mindes, and doth lighten the passions that afflict the spirit. This was the life which I ledde in my fathers house: the recounting wherof so particularly, hath not beene done for ostentation, nor to giue you to vnderstand that I am rich, but to the end you may note how much, without mine owne fault haue I falne from that happy state I haue said, vnto the vnhappie plight into which I am now reduced. The Historie therefore is this, that passing my life in so many occupations, and that with such recollection as might bee compared to a religious life, vnseene as I thought by any other person then those of our house: for when I went to Masse it was commonly so early, and so accompanied by my mother and other maid-seruants; and I my selfe so couerd and watchfull, as mine eyes did scarce see the earth whereon I treade: and yet notwithstanding those of loue, or as I may better terme them, of idlenesse, to which *Linces* eyes may not be compared, did represent me to *Don Ferdinandos* affection and care; for this is the name of the Dukes younger sonne, of whom I spake before. Scarce had she named *Don Ferdinando* when *Cardenio* changed colour, and began to sweate with such alteration of bodie and countenance, as the Curate and

Barber

Barber which beheld it, feared that the accident of frenzie did assault him which was wont as they had heard to possesse him at times. But *Cardenio* did nothing else then sweat, and stood still beholding now and then the countrey gyrle imagining straight what she was, who without taking notice of his alteration, followed on her discourse in this manner. And scarce had he seene me when (as he himselfe after confest) he abode greatly surprized by my loue, as his actions did after giue euident demonstration.

But to conclude, soone the relation of those misfortunes which haue no conclusion, I will ouerslip in silence the diligences and practises of *Don Ferdinando* vsed to declare vnto me his affection: he suborned all the folke of the house. He bestowed gifts and fauours on my parents: euery day was a holy day, and a day of sports in the streets where I dwelled: at night no man could sleepe for musicke; the letters were innumerable that came to my hands without knowing who brought them; farsed too full of amorous conceits and offers; and containing more promises and protestations then they had characters. All which, not onely could not mollifie my mind, but rather hardened it as much as if he were my mortal enemie, and therefore did construe all the indeuours he vsed to gaine my good will to be practised to a contrary end: which I did not, as according *Don Fernando* vngentle, or that I esteemed him too importunat, for I took a kind of delight to see my selfe so highly esteemed and beloued of so noble a Gentleman: nor was I any thing offended to see his papers written in my praise; for if I be not deceiued in this point, be we women euer so foule, we loue to heare men call vs beautifull. But mine honesty was that which opposed it selfe vnto all these things, and the continuall admonitions of my parents, which had by this plainely perceiued *Don Fernandos* pretence as one that cared not, all the world should know it. They would often say vn-

to me, that they had depoſited their honours and reputation in my vertue alone and diſcretion, and bad me conſider the inequality that was betweene *Don Fernando* and me, and that I might collect by it how his thoughts (did he euer ſo much affirme the contrary) were more addreſt to compaſſe his pleaſures then my profit. And that if I feared any inconuenience might befall, to the end they might croſſe it, & cauſe him to abandon his ſo vniuſt a purſuite they would match me where I moſt liked, eyther to the beſt of that towne, or any other towne adioyning, ſaying they might eaſily compaſſe it, both by reaſon of their great wealth and my good report. I fortified my reſolution and integrity with theſe certaine promiſes, and the knowne truth which they told me, and therefore would neuer anſwere to *Don Fernando* any word, that might euer ſo farre of argue the leaſt hope of condiſcending to his deſires. All which cautions of mine which I think he deemed to be diſdains, did inflame more his laſciuious appetite (for this is the name wherewithal I intitle his affection towards me) which had it beene ſuch as it ought, you had not knowne it now, for then the cauſe of reuealing it had not befalne me. Finally *Don Fernando* vnderſtand how my parents meant to marrie mee: to the end they might illude his hope of euer poſſeſſing me, or at leaſt ſet more gards to preſerue mine honour, and this newes or ſurmiſe was an occaſion that hee did, what you ſhall preſently heare.

For one night as I ſate in my chamber only attended by a young Mayden that ſerued me, I hauing ſhut the doores very ſafe, for feare leaſt through any negligence my honeſtie might incur any danger without knowing or imagining how it might happē: notwithſtanding all my diligēces vſed and preuentions, & amidſt the ſolitude of this ſilence and recollection, he ſtood before me in my chamber. At his preſence I was ſo troubled as I loſt both ſight and ſpeech, and by reaſon thereof could not crie, nor I

thinke he would not though I had attempted it, permit me. For he preſently ranne ouer to me, and taking me betweene his armes (for as I haue ſaid I was ſo amazed, as I had no power to defend my ſelfe) he ſaid ſuch things to me as I knew not how it is poſſible that vntruth ſhould haue the ability to faine things reſembling in ſhew ſo much the truth: and the traytor cauſed teares, to giue credit to his words, and ſighes to giue countenance to his intention. I poore ſoule being alone amidſt my friends, & weakly practiſed in ſuch affairs began I know not how to account his leeſings for verities, but not in ſuch ſort, as his teares or ſighes might any wiſe moue me to any compaſſion that were not commendable. And ſo the firſt trouble & amazement of mind being paſt, I began again to recouer my defectiue ſpirits, and then ſaid to him with more courage then I thought I ſhould haue had; if as I am my Lord betweene your armes, I were betweene the pawes of a fierce *Lyon*, and that I were made certaine of my liberty on condition to doe or ſay any thing preiudiciall to mine honour: it would proue as impoſſible for me to accept it, as for that which once hath beene, to leaue off his eſſence and being. Wherefore euen as you haue ingyrt my middle with your armes, ſo likewiſe haue I tied faſt my minde with vertuous and forcible deſires, that are wholy diſcrepant from yours, as you ſhall perceiue, if ſeeking to force me, you preſume to paſſe further with your inordinate deſigne, I am your vaſſall, but not your ſlaue, nor hath the nobility of your bloud power nor ought it to harden, to diſhonour, ſtaine or hold in little account the humility of mine; and I doe eſteeme my ſelfe though a countrey wench and farmers daughter, as much as you can your ſelfe, though a Nobleman and a Lord: With me your violence ſhall not preuaile, your riches gaine any grace, your words haue power to deceiue, or your ſighes and teares be able to moue: yet if I ſhall finde any of theſe properties mentioned in him when

when my parents shall please to bestow on me for my spouse, I will presently subiect my will to his, nor shall it euer varie from his minde a iot: So that if I might remaine with honor, although I rested void of delights, yet would I willingly bestow on you, that which you presently labour so much to obtaine: all which I do say to diuert your straying thought from euer thinking that any one may obtaine of me ought who is not my lawfull spouse: If the let onely consistes therein most beautifull *Dorotea* (for so I am called) answered the disloyall Lord: behold I giue thee here my hand to be thine alone: and let the heauens from which nothing is concealed; and this Image of our Lady which thou hast heere present, be witnesses of this truth. When *Cardenio* heard her say that she was called *Dorotea*, he fell again into his former suspicion, and in the end confirmed his first opinion to be true: but would not interrupt her speech, being desirous to know the successe, which he knew wholy almost before, and therefore said onely. Lady is it possible that you are named *Dorotea*. I haue heard speake of another of that name, which perhaps hath runne the like course of your misfortunes: but I request you to continue your relatiõ, for a time may come wherein I may recount vnto you things of the same kinde, which will breed no small admiration. *Dorotea* noted *Cardenios* words, and his vncouth, and disastrous attire, and then intreated him very instantly if he knew any thing of her affaires, he would acquaint her therewithall. For if fortune had left her any good, it was onely the courage which she had to beare patiently and disaster that might befall her, being certaine in her opinion that no new one could arriue which might increase a whit those she had alreadie. Ladie I would not let slip the occasion (quoth *Cardenio*) to tell you what I thinke, if that which I imagine were true: and yet there is no commoditie left to doe it: nor can it auaile you much to know it. Let it be what it list said *Dorotea*: but that which af-

Digitized by Google

ter befell, of my relation was this: That *Don Fernando* tooke an Image that was in my chamber for witneſſe of our contract, and added withall moſt forcible words and vnuſuall oathes, promiſing vnto me to become my huſband. Although I warned him, before he had ended his ſpeech, to ſee well what he did, and to weigh the wrath of his father, when he ſhould ſee him married to one ſo baſe, and his vaſſall, and that therefore he ſhould take heede that my beautie ſuch as it was ſhould not blinde him. Seeing he ſhould not finde therein a ſufficient excuſe for his errour: and that if he meant to doe me any good, I coniured him by the loue that he bore vnto me, to licenſe my fortunes to roule in their owne ſpheare, according as my quality reached: For ſuch vnequall matches doe neuer pleaſe long, nor perſeuer with that delight wherewithall they begunne.

All the reaſons heere rehearſed, I ſaid vnto him, and many moe; which now are falne out of minde, but yet proued of no efficacy to weane him from his obſtinate purpoſe, euen like vnto one that goeth to buy; which intention neuer to pay for what he takes: and therefore neuer conſiders the price, worthineſſe, or faultleſſe of the ſtuffe he takes to credit. I at this ſeaſon made a briefe diſcourſe, and ſaid thus to my ſelfe: I may doe this, for I am not the firſt which by matrimonie hath aſcended from a low degree to a high eſtate: nor ſhall *Don Fernando* be the firſt whom beautie or blind affection (for that is the moſt certaine) hath induced to make choyce of a conſort vnequall to his greatneſſe. Then ſince herein I create no new world, nor cuſtome, what error can be committed by embracing the honour wherewithall fortune crownes me: Although it ſo befell that his affection to to me endured no longer then till he accompliſh his will, for before God, I certes ſhall ſtill remaine his wife. And if I ſhould diſdainfully giue him the repulſe, I ſee him now in ſuch termes, as perhaps forgetting the dutie of a Noble

man, hee may vſe violence, and then ſhall I remaine for euer diſhonoured, and alſo without excuſe of the imputations of the ignorant which knew not how much without any fault I haue falne into this ineuitable danger. For, what reaſons may be ſufficiently forcible to perſwade my father and other that this Noble man did enter into my chamber without my conſent? All theſe demaunds and anſwers did I in an inſtant reuolue in mine imagination, and found my ſelfe chiefly forced (how I cannot tell) to aſſent to his petition, by the witneſſes hee innoked, the teares hee ſhed, and finally by his ſweete diſpoſition and comely feature, which accompanied with ſo many arguments of vnfained affection, were able to conquere and enthrall any other heart, though it were as free and wary as mine owne. Then called I for my waiting Maide that ſhe might on earth accompany the celeſtiall witneſſes. And then *Don Fernando* turned againe to reiterate and confirme his oathes, and added to his former, other new Saints as witneſſes, and wiſhed a thouſand ſucceeding maledictions to light on him, if he did not accompliſh his promiſe to me. His eyes againe waxed moyſt, his ſighes increaſed, and himſelfe inwreathed mee more ſtraightly betweene his armes, from which he had neuer once looſed mee: and with this, and my Maydens departure, I left to be a Mayden, and hee beganne to be a traytor, and diſloyall man. The day that ſucceeded to the night of my miſhaps came not I thinke ſo ſoone as *Don Fernando* deſired it: for after a man hath ſatisfied that which the appetite couets, the greateſt delight it can take after is to appart it ſelfe from the place where the deſire was accompliſhed. I ſay this, becauſe *Don Fernando* did haſten his departure from me, by my Maids induſtrie, who was the very ſame that had brought him into my chamber, hee was got in the ſtreete before dawning. And at his departure from mee he ſaid (al-

though not with ſo great ſhew of affection and vehemencie, as hee had vſed at his comming) that I might be ſecure of his faith, and that his oathes were firme moſt true: and for a more confirmation of his word hee tooke a rich ring off his finger, and put it on mine. In fine he departed and I remained behinde I cannot well ſay, whether ioyfull or ſad; but this much I know that I reſted confuſed and penſiue, and almoſt beſide my ſelfe for the late miſchance; yet eyther I had not the heart, or elſe I forgot to chide my Maide for her treacherie committed by ſhutting vp *Don Fernando* in my chamber: for as yet I could not determine, whether that which hadbefalne mee, was a good or an euill. I ſaid to *Don Ferdinando* at his departure that he might ſee mee other nights when he pleaſed by the ſame meanes hee had come that night ſeeing I was his owne, and would reſt ſo, vntill it pleaſed him to let the world know that I was his wife. But hee neuer returned againe, but the next night following; could I ſee him after for the ſpace of a moneth eyther in the ſtreete or Church, ſo as I did but ſpend time in vaine to expect him: although I vnderſtoode that hee was ſtill in towne, and rode euerie other day a hunting an exerciſe to which hee was much addicted.

Thoſe dayes were I know, vnfortunate and accurſed to me, and thoſe houres ſorrowfull; for in them I began to doubt, nay rather wholly to diſcredite *Don Fernando* his faith: and my maide did then heare loudly the checkes I gaue vnto her for her preſumption, euer vntill then diſſembled. And I was moreouer conſtrained to watch and keepe guard on my teares and countenance, leſt I ſhould giue occaſion to my parents to demaund of me the cauſe of my diſcontents, and therby ingage me to vſe ambages or vntruthes to couer them. But all this ended in an inſtant, one moment arriuing whereon all theſe reſpects ſtumbled, all honourable diſcourſes ended, patience was

loſt, and my moſt hidden ſecrets iſſued in publicke: which was when there was ſpread a certaine rumour throughout the towne within a few dayes after, that *Don Fernando* had married in a Citie neere adioyning, a damzell of ſurpaſsing beautie, and of very noble birth, although not ſo rich, as could deſerue by her preferment or dowrie ſo worthy a husband. It was alſo ſaid, that ſhe was named *Luſcinda*, with many other things that hapned at their Spouſals, worthy of admiration. *Cardenio* hearing *Luſcinda* named, did nothing elſe but liſt vp his ſhoulders, bite his lippe, bend his browes, and after a little while ſhedde from his eyes two floods of teares. But yet for all that *Dorotea* did not interrupt the file of her Hiſtorie, ſaying, This dolefull newes came to my hearing, and my heart in ſteede of freezing thereat, was ſo inflamed with choler and rage, as I had welnigh runne out to the ſtreets, and with outcries publiſhed the deceit and treaſon that was done to me: but my furie was preſently aſſwaged by the reſolution which I made, to doe what I put in execution the very ſame night, and then I put on this habite which you ſee, being giuen vnto me by one of thoſe that among vs Countrey-folke are called Swaines, who was my fathers ſeruant; to whom I diſcloſed all my misfortunes, and requeſted him to accompany me to the Citie, where I vnderſtood mine enemie ſoiourned. He, after he had reprehended my boldneſſe, perceiuing me to haue an inflexible reſolution, made offer to attend on me as hee ſaid, vnto the end of the world: and preſently afeer I truſſed vp in a pillowbeare, a womans attire, ſome mony and jewels, to preuent neceſsities that might befall; and in the ſilence of night, without acquainting my treacherous maide with my purpoſe, I iſſued out of my houſe, accompanied by my ſeruant, and many imaginations: and in that manner ſet on towards the Citie, and though I went on foote, was yet borne away flying, by my deſires, to come if not time enough to hinder that which was paſt,

yet at leaſt to demaund of *Don Fernando* that he would tell me with what conſcience or ſoule he had done it. I arriued where I wiſhed within two dayes and a halfe; and at the entry of the Citie I demaunded where *Luſcinda* her father dwelled? and he of whom I firſt demaunded the queſtion anſwered me more then I defired to heare: he ſhewed me the houſe, and recounted to me all that befell at the daughters marriage, being a thing ſo publique and knowne in the Citie, as men made meetings of purpoſe to diſcourſe thereof. Hee ſaid to me that the very night wherein *Don Fernando* was eſpouſed to *Luſcinda*, after that ſhe had giuen her conſent to be his wife, ſhee was inſtantly aſſayled by a terrible accident, that ſtrucke her into a traunce, and her ſpouſe approching to vnclaſpe her boſome, that ſhe might take the ayre, found a paper foulded in it, written with *Luſcindas* owne hand, wherein ſhe ſaid and declared, that ſhe could not be *Don Fernandoes* wife, becauſe ſhe was already *Cardenioes*, who was, as the man tolde me, a very principall Gentleman of the ſame Citie; and that if ſhe had giuen her conſent to *Don Fernando*, it was onely done becauſe ſhe would not diſobey her parents: in concluſion he tolde me, that the Billet made alſo mention, how ſhee had a reſolution to kill her ſelfe preſently after the marriage, and did alſo lay downe therein the motiues ſhe had to doe it. All which as they ſay, was confirmed by a poynard that was found hidden about her in her apparrell. Which *Don Fernando* perceiuing, preſuming that *Luſcinda* did flout him, and holde him in little account, hee ſet vpon her ere ſhe had turned to her ſelfe, and attempted to kill her with the very ſame poynard; and had done it if her father and other friends which were preſent had not oppoſed themſelues, and hindered his determination. Moreouer they reported that preſently after *Don Fernando* abſented himſelfe from the Citie, and that *Luſcinda* turned not out of her agony vntill the next day, and then recounted to her parents

how

how she was verily Spouse to that *Cardenio* of whom we spake euen now. I learned besides that *Cardenio* as it is rumourd, was present at the marriage, and that as soone as he saw her married, being a thing he would neuer haue credited, departed out of the Citie in a desperate moode, but first left behinde him a letter, wherein he shewed at large the wrong *Luscinda* had done to him, and that hee himselfe meant to go to some place where people should neuer after heare of him. All this was notorious, and publiquely bruited throughout the Citie, and euery one spoke thereof, but most of all hauing very soone after vnderstood that *Luscinda* was missing from her parents house and the Citie; for shee could not be found in neyther of both: for which her parents were almost beside themselues, not knowing what meanes to vse to finde her.

These newes reduced my hopes again to their rancks, and I esteemed it better to find *Don Fernando* vnmarried then married, presuming that yet the gates of my remedy were not wholly shut, I giuing my selfe to vnderstand that heauen had peraduenture set that impediment on the second marriage, to make him vnderstand what hee ought to the first; and to remember, how he was a *Christian*, and that he was more obliged to his soule then to humane respects. I reuolued all these things in my mind, and comfortlesse did yet comfort my selfe, by fayning large yet languishing hopes to sustaine that life which I now do so much abhor. And whilest I staide thus in the Citie, ignorant what I might doe, seeing I found not *Don Fernando*, I heard a cryer goe about publikely, promising great rewards to any one that could finde me out, giuing signes of the very age & apparrell I wore. And I likewise heard it was bruited abroad, that the youth which came with me had carried me away from my fathers house. A thing that touched my soule very neerely, to view my credite so greatly wrackt, seeing that it was not sufficient

to haue loſt it by my comming away, without the addition of him with whom I departed, being a ſubiect ſo baſe and vnworthy of my loftier thoughts. Hauing heard this crie, I departed out of the Citie with my ſeruant: who euen then began to giue tokens that he faultred in the fidelitie he had promiſed to me: and both of vs together entred the very ſame night into the moſt hidden parts of this mountaine, fearing leſt we might be found. But as it is commonly ſaid, that one euill cals on another, and that the end of one diſaſter is the beginning of a greater, ſo proued it with me; for my good ſeruant, vntill then faithfull and truſtie, rather incited by his owne villany then my beautie, thought to haue taken the benefite of the opportunity which theſe inhabitable places offered; and ſollicited me of loue, with little ſhame and leſſe feare of GOD or reſpect of my ſelfe: and now ſeeing that I anſwered his impudencies with ſeuere and reprehenſiue wordes, leauing the intreaties aſide, wherwithall he thought firſt to haue compaſt his will, he began to vſe his force. But iuſt heauen which ſeldome or neuer neglects the iuſt mans aſſiſtance, did ſo fauour my proceedings, as with my weake forces, and very little labour, I threw him downe a ſteepe rocke, and there I left him, I know not whether aliue or dead. And preſently I entred in among theſe mountaines, with more ſwiftneſſe then my feare and wearineſſe required; hauing therein no other proiect or deſigne, then to hide my ſelfe in them, and ſhunne my father and others, which by his intreaty and meanes ſought for me euery where. Some moneths are paſt ſince my firſt comming here, where I found a Heardman, who carried me to a village ſeated in the midſt of theſe rockes, wherein he dwelled and intertained me, whom I haue ſerued as a Sheepheard euer ſince, procuring as much as lay in me to abide ſtill in the fielde, to couer theſe haires, which haue now ſo vnexpectedly betraide me. Yet all my care and induſtry was not very beneficiall,

Digitized by Google

seeing my Master came at last to the notice that I was no man but a woman, which was an occasion that the like euill thought sprung in him,as before in my seruant. And as fortune giues not alwayes remedie for the difficulties which occurre, I found neyther rocke nor downefall to coole and cure my Masters infirmitie, as I had done for my man: and therefore I accounted it a lesse inconuenience to depart thence and hide my selfe againe among these desarts, then to aduenture the triall of my strength or reason with him. Therefore,as I say, I turned to imboske my selfe,and search out some place,where without any encumbrance I might intreat heauen with my sighes and teares,to haue compassion on my mishap; and lend me industry and fauour,eyther to issue fortunately out of it,or else to die amidst these solitudes, not leauing any memory of a wretch, who hath minister matter, although not through her owne default, that men may speake and murmure of her, both in her owne and in other countries.

CHAP. II.

Which treates of the discretion of the beautifull Dorotea, *and the artificiall manner vsed to disswade the amorous Knight from continuing his penance: and how he was gotten away; with many other delightfull and pleasant occurrences.*

THis is Sirs the true relation of my Tragedie,see therfore now and iudge, whether the sighes you heard,the words to which you listened, and the teares that gushed out at mine eyes haue not had sufficient occasion to appeare in greater abundance: and hauing considered the quality of my disgrace;

Digitized by Google

you ſhall perceiue all comfort to be vaine, ſeeing the remedie thereof is impoſsible. Only I will requeſt at your handes one fauor which you ought and may eaſily grant, and is that you will addreſſe me vnto ſome place, where I may liue ſecure from the feare and ſuſpition I haue to be found by thoſe which I know doe daily trauell in my purſuit: for although I am ſure that my parents great affection towards me, doth warrant me to be kindely receiued and intertained by them: yet the ſhame is ſo great that poſſeſſeth me onely to thinke that I ſhall not returne to their preſence in that ſtate which they expect, as I account it farre better to baniſh my ſelfe from their ſight for euer, then once to beholde their face, with the leaſt ſuſpition that they againe would beholde mine diuorced from that honeſtie which whilome my modeſt behauiour promiſed. Here ſhe ended, and her face ſuddenly ouer-run by a louely ſcarlet, perſpicuouſly deuoted the feeling and baſhfulnes of her ſoule.

The audients of her ſad ſtorie, felt great motions both of pitie and admiration for her misfortunes: and although the Curate thought to comfort and counſell her forthwith, yet was he preuented by *Cardenio*, who taking her firſt by the hand, ſaid at laſt; Ladie, thou art the beautifull *Dorotea*, daughter vnto rich *Cleonardo*. *Dorotea* reſted admired when ſhe heard her fathers name, and ſaw of how little value he ſeemed, who had named him. For we haue already recounted how raggedly *Cardenio* was clothed; and therefore ſhe ſaid vnto him, and who art thou friend that knoweſt ſo well my fathers name; for vntill this houre (if I haue not forgotten my ſelfe) I did not once name him throughout the whole Diſcourſe of my vnfortunate tale? I am (anſwered *Cardenio*) the vnluckie Knight whom *Luſcinda* (as thou ſaidſt) affirmed to be her husband. I am the diſaſtrous *Cardenio*, whom the wicked proceeding of him that hath alſo brought thee to thoſe termes wherein thou art, hath conducted me to the

state in which I am, and thou mayest beholde ragged, naked, abandoned by all humane comfort, & what is worse, voyde of sense; seeing I onely enioy it but at some few short times, and that, when heauen pleaseth to lend it me. I am hee *Dorotea* that was present at *Don Fernandoes* vnreasonable wedding, and that heard the consent which *Lusinda* gaue him to be his wife. I was hee that had not the courage to stay and see the end of her traunce, or what became of the paper found in her bosome. For my soule had not power or sufferance, to beholde so many disuentures at once, and therefore abandoned the place and my patience together, and onely left a Letter with mine Hoste, whom I intreated to deliuer it into *Lusinda* her owne handes, and then came into these desarts, with resolution to end in them my miserable life, which since that houre I haue hated as my most mortall enemie. But fortune hath not pleased to depriue me of it, thinking it sufficient to haue impaired my wit, perhaps reseruing me for the good successe befalne me now in finding of your selfe: for that being true (as I beleeue it is) which you haue here discoursed, peraduenture it may haue reserued yet better hap for vs both in our disasters then we doe expect. For presuppoſing that *Lusinda* cannot marry with *Don Fernando* because she is mine, nor *Don Fernando* with her because yours: and that she hath declared so manifestly the same: we may well hope that heauen hath meanes to restore to euery one that which is his owne, seeing it yet consists in being not made away, or anihilated. And seeing this comfort remaines, not sprung from any very remote hope, nor founded on idle surmises, I request thee faire Ladie to take another resolution in thine honourable thought, seeing I meane to do it in mine, and let vs accommodate our selues to expect better successe. For I doe vow vnto thee by the faith of a Gentleman and *Christian*, not to forsake thee vntill I see thee in *Don Fernandoes* possession; and when I shall not by reasons be a-

Digitized by Google

ble to induce him to acknowledge how farre he reſts indebted to thee, then will I vſe the liberty graunted to me as a Gentleman, and with iuſt title challenge him to the fielde, in reſpect of the wrong he hath done vnto thee; forgetting wholly mine owne iniuries, whoſe reuenge I will leaue to heauen, that I may be able to right yours on earth.

Dorotea reſted wonderfully admired hauing knowne and heard *Cardenio*, and ignoring what competent thanks ſhe might returne him in ſatisfaction of his large offers, ſhe caſt her ſelfe downe at his feete to haue kiſt them, which *Cardenio* would not permit: and the Licenciat anſwered for both prayſing greatly *Cardenios* diſcourſe: and chiefly intreated, prayed, and counſelled them, that they would go with him to his village, where they might fitte themſelues with ſuch things as they wanted, and alſo take order how to ſearch out *Don Fernando*, or carrie *Dorotea* to her fathers houſe, or doe elſe what they deemed moſt conuenient. *Cardenio* and *Dorotea* gratified his courteſies, and accepted the fauour hee proffered. The Barber alſo who had ſtood all the while ſilent and ſuſpended, made them a prettie Diſcourſe, with as friendly an offer of himſelfe, and his ſeruice as Maſter Curate; and likewiſe did briefly relate the occaſion of their comming thither, with the extrauagant kinde of madneſſe which *Don-Quixote* had, and how they expected now his Squires returne, whom they had ſent to ſearch for him. *Cardenio* hauing heard him named, remembred preſently as in a dreame the conflict paſt betweene them both, and recounted it vnto them, but could not in any wiſe call to minde the occaſion thereof.

By this time they heard one call for them, and knew by the voyce that it was *Sancho Pancas*, who becauſe hee found them not in the place where he had left them, cryed out for them as loudly as he might. They went to meete him, and demaunding for *Don-Quixote*, he anſwe-

Digitized by Google

red that he found him all naked to his shirt, leane, yellow, almost dead for hunger, and sighing for his Lady *Dulcinea*: and although he had tolde him, how she commaunded him to repaire presently to *Toboso*, where she expected him: yet notwithstanding he answered that he was determined neuer to appeare before her beautie, vntill he had done feats that should make him worthy of her gratious fauour. And then the Squire affirmed if that humor passed on any further, hee feared his Lord would be in danger neuer to become an Emperour as he was bound in honour, no nor a Cardinall, which was the least that could be expected of him. The Licenciat bid him be of good cheere, for they would bring him from thence whether he would or no; and recounted to *Cardenio* and *Dorotea*, what they had bethought for *Don-Quixotes* remedie, or at least for the carrying of him home to his house. To that *Dorotea* answered, that she would counterfeit the distressed Ladie better then the Barber; and chiefly seeing shee had apparrell wherewithall to acte it most naturally. And therefore desired them to leaue to her charge the representing of all that which should bee needfull for the atchieuing of their designe; for she had read many books of Knighthood, and knew well the stile that distressed damzels vsed, when they requested any fauour of Knights aduenturous. And then neede we nothing else, quoth the Curate, but onely to put our purpose presently in execution. For questionlesse good successe turnes on our side, seeing it hath so vnexpectedly begun alreadie to open the gates of your remedy, and hath also facilitated for vs that wherof we had most necessity in this exigent. *Dorotea* tooke forthwith out of her pillowbeare a whole gowne of very rich stuffe, and a short mantle of another greene stuffe, and a collar and many other rich jewels out of a boxe, wherewithall she adorned her selfe in a trice so gorgeously, as shee seemed a very rich and goodly Ladie. Al which and much more she had brought

Digitized by Google

with

with her as ſhe ſaid from her houſe, to preuent what might happen, but neuer had any vſe of them vntill then. Her grace, geſture and beautie liked them all extremely, and made them account *Don Fernando* to be a man of little vnderſtanding, ſeeing he contemned ſuch feature. But he which was moſt of all admired was *Sancho Panca*, becauſe, as he thought (and it was ſo indeed) that he had not in all the dayes of his life before ſeene ſo faire a creature: and he requeſted the Curate very ſeriouſly to tell him who that beautifull Ladie was? and what ſhe ſought among thoſe through-fares? This faire Lady friend *Sancho*, anſwered the Curate, is (as if a man ſaid nothing ſhe is ſo great) is heire apparent by direct line of the mighty Kingdome of *Micomicon*, and comes in the ſearch of your Lord, to demaund a boone of him, which is, that he will deſtroy and vndoe a great wrong done vnto her by a wicked Giant; and through the great fame which is ſpread ouer all *Guinea* of your Lords proweſſe, this Princeſſe is come to finde him out. A happy ſearcher, and a fortunate finding, quoth *Sancho*, and chiefly if my Maſter be ſo happie as to right that iniurie, and redreſſe that wrong by killing that, O! the mighty lubber of a Giant whom you ſay: yes, he will kill him, I am very certaine, if he can once but meete him, and if that he be not a ſpirit; For my Maſter hath no kinde of power ouer ſpirits. But I muſt requeſt one fauour of you among others moſt earneſtly good Maſter Licenciat, and tis, that to the end my Lord may not take an humour of becomming a Cardinall (which is the thing I feare moſt in this world) that you will giue him counſell to marry this Princeſſe preſently, and by that meanes he ſhall remaine incapable of the dignitie of a Cardinall, and will come very eaſily by his Empyre, and I to the end of my deſires: for I haue thought well of the matter, and haue found that it is in no wiſe expedient that my Lord ſhould become a Cardinall, for I am wholy vnfit for any Eccleſiaſticall dig-

nitie, seeing I am a married man, and therefore to trouble my selfe now with seeking of dispensations to inioy Church-liuings, hauing as I haue both wife and children, were neuer to end: so that all my good consists in that my Lord do marry this Princesse instantly whose name yet I know not, & therfore I haue not said it. She is hight (quoth the Curate) the Princesse *Micomicona*, for her Kingdome being called *Micomicon*, it is euident she must be termed so. That is questionlesse quoth *Sancho*, for I haue knowne many to take their denomination and surname from the place of their birth, calling themselues *Peter* of *Alcala*, *Iohn* of *Vbeda*, and *Iames* of *Valedolid*: and perhaps in *Guinea* princes and Queenes vse the same custome, and call themselues by the names of their prouinces. So I thinke quoth the Curate, and as touching your Masters marriage with her, I will labour therein as much as lies in my power. Wherewithall *Sancho* remained as well satisfied; as the Curate admired at his simplicitie, and to see how firmely hee had fixed in his fantasie the very rauings of his master, seeing he did beleeue without doubt that his Lord should become an Emperour. *Dorotea* in this space had gotten vpon the Curates Mule, and the Barber had somewhat better fitted the beard which he made of the Oxes tayle on his face, & did after intreat *Sancho* to guide them to the place where *Don-Quixote* was, and aduertised him withall, that he should in no wise take any notice of the Curate or Barber, or confesse in any sort that he knew them, for therein consisted all the meanes of bringing *Don-Quixote* to the minde to become an Emperour. Yet *Cardenio* would not goe with them, fearing lest thereby *Don-Quixote* might call to minde their contention: and the Curate thinking also that his presence was not expedient, remained with him, letting the others goe before, and these followed a farre off faire and softly on foote, and ere they departed the Curate instructed *Dorotea* a new, what she

Digitized by Google

ſhould ſay, who bid him to feare nothing, for ſhe would diſcharge her part to his ſatisfaction, and as bookes of chiualrie required and laid downe.

They trauelled about three quarters of a league, as they eſpied the Knight, and at laſt they diſcouered him among a number of intricate rocks, all apparelled but not armed: and as ſoone as *Dorotea* beheld him, ſhe ſtrucke her palfray, her well bearded Barber following her: and as they approached *Don-Quixote*, the Barber leaped lightly down from his Mule, and ranne towards *Dorotea* to take her down betweene his armes, who allighting, went with a very good grace towards *Don-Quixote*, and kneeled before him. And although hee ſtriued to make her arife, yet ſhee remaining ſtill on her knees ſpake to him in this manner: I will not ariſe from heince thrice valorous and approued knight, vntill your bountie and courteſie ſhall grant vnto me one boone, which ſhall much redound vnto your honour and prize of your perſon, and to the profit of the moſt diſconſolate and wronged Damſell that the Sunne hath euer ſeene. And if it be ſo that the valour of your inuincible arme be correſpondent to the bruite of your immortall fame, you are obliged to ſuccour this comfortleſſe weight, that comes from lands ſo remote, to the ſound of your famous name, ſeeking you for to remedie her miſhaps. I will not anſwere you a word faire Lady quoth *Don-Quixote*, nor heare a iot of your affaire, vntill you ariſe from the ground. I will not get vp from hence my Lord quoth the afflicted Ladie, if firſt of your wonted bountie you doe not grant to my requeſt. I do giue and grant it ſaid *Don-Quixote*, ſo that it be not a thing that may turne to the damnage or hinderance of my king, my countrey, or of her that keepes the key of my heart and liberty. It ſhall not turne to the damage or hinderance of thoſe you haue ſaid, good Sir, replied the dolorous Damſell; and as ſhe was ſaying this *Sancho Pança* rounded his Lord in the eare ſaying: ſoftly to him, Sir you may very well grant the requeſt ſhe a-

keth, for it is a matter of nothing, it is onely to kill a monstrous Giant, and she that demands it is the mighty Princesse *Micomicona* Queene of the great Kingdome of *Micomicon* in *Ethiopia*. Let her be what she will quoth *Don-Quixote*, for I will accomplish what I am bound, and my conscience shal informe me comformable to the state I haue professed: and then turning to the Damsell he said: Let your great beauty arise, for I grant to you any boone which you shall please to aske of me. Why then quoth the Damsell that which I demaund is, that your magnanimous person come presently away with mee, to the place where I shall carry you, & do likewise make me a promise, not to vndertake any other aduenture or demaund vntill you reuenge me vpon a traytour who hath against all lawes both diuine, and humane vsurped my kingdome. I say that I grant you all that quoth *Don-Quixote*, and therefore Ladie you may cast away from this day forward all the melancholy that troubles you, and labour that your languishing and dismaied hopes may recouer again new strength & courage, for by the helpe of God, & that of mine arme you shall see your selfe shortly restored to your kingdome, and enthronized in the chayre of your ancient and great estate, in despite and maugre the traytours that shall dare gainesay it: and therefore Hands to the worke, for they say, that danger alwaies followes delay. The distressed Damsell strued with much ado to kisse his hand, but *Don-Quixote* who was a most accomplished Knight for courtesie, would neuer condescend thereunto, but making her arise, he imbraced her with great kindenesse and respect; and commaunded *Sancho* to saddle *Rozinante*, and helpe him to arme himselfe. *Sancho* tooke downe the armes forth with, which hung on a tree like trophies, and searching the guirts armed his Lord in a moment, who seeing himselfe armed said, let vs in Gods name depart from hence to assist this great Lady. The barber kneeled all

this while, & could with much adoe dissemble his laughter or keepe on his beard that threatned still to fall off; with whose fall perhaps they should all haue remained without bringing their good purpose to passe: and seeing that the boone was granted, and noted the diligence wherewithall *Don-Quixote* made himselfe readie to depart and accomplish the same: hee arose and tooke his Ladie by the hand, and both of them together holpe her vpon her Mule: and presently after *Don-Quixote* leaped on *Rozinante*, and the Barber got vp on his beast, *Sancho* onely remayning a foote: where hee a fresh renued the memory of the losse of his gray Asse, with the want procured to him thereby. But all this he bore with very great patience, because he supposed that his Lord was now in the way, and next degree to be an Emperour: for he made an infallible account that he would marry that Princesse, and at least be King of *Micomicon*: but yet it grieued him to thinke how that Kingdome was in the countrey of blacke Moores, and that therefore the Nation which should be giuen to him for his vassals should be all blacke: for which difficultie his imagination coyned presently a good remedie: and he discoursed with himselfe in this manner. Why should I care, though my subiects be all blacke Moores, is there any more to be done, then to loade them in a ship, & bring them into *Spaine*, where I may sell them, and receiue the price of them in readie money? And with that money may I buy some title or Office, wherein I may after liue at mine ease all the daies of my life? No! but sleepe, and haue no wit, nor abilitie to dispose of things, and to sell thirtie or ten thousand vassailes in the space of one would say, giue me those strawes. I will dispatch them all, they shall flie the little with the great, or as I can best contriue the matter. And be they euer so blacke I will transforme them into white or yellow ones; come neere and see whether I cannot sucke well my fingers ends: And thus he trauailed so

sollicitous

sollicitous and glad, as he quite forgot his paine of trauailing a foote. *Cardenio* and the Curate stood in the meane time beholding all that passed from behinde some brambles, where they lay lurking and were in doubt what meanes to vse to issue and ioyne in company with them. But the Curate who was an ingenious and prompt plotter deuised instantly what was to bee done, that they might attaine their desire, thus he tooke out of his case a payre of sheares, and cut off *Cardenioes* beard therewithall in a trice, and then gaue vnto him to weare a riding Capouch which he himselfe had on, and a blacke cloake; and himselfe walked in a dublet and hose. *Cardenio* thus attired looked so vnlike that he was before, as he would not haue knowne himselfe in a looking glasse. This being finished, and the others gone on before whilst they disguised themselues, they sallied out with facility to the high way before *Don-Quixote* or his company, for the rocks and many other bad passages did not permit those that were a horsebacke to make so speedie an end of their iourney as they: and when they had throughly past the mountaine, they expected at the foot thereof for the Knight and his companie: and when the Knight appeared, the Curate looked on him very earnestly for a great space, with inkling that he beganne to know him, and after he had a good while beheld him, he ranne towards him with his arms spread abroad saying. In a good howre be it the mirrour of all knighthood found and my noble country man *Don-Quixote* of the *Mancha*, the flower and the creame of gentilitie, the shadow and remedie of the afflicted & the *Quintessence* of knights errāt: and saying this he held *Don-Quixote* his left thigh embraced. Who, admiring at that which he heard that man to say and do, did also reuiew him with attention, and finally knew him, & all amazed to see him, made much ado to alight, but the Curate would not permit him: wherefore *Don-Quixote* said good Master *Licenciat* permit me

to alight, for it is in no sort decent that I be a horse-backe, and so reuerend a person as you goe on foote: I will neuer consent thereunto, quoth the Curate, your highnes must needs stay on horseback, seeing that theron you are accustomed to atchieue the greatest feats of Chualrie and aduentures, which were euer seene in our age. For it shall suffice me, who am an vnworthy Priest, to get vp behinde some one of these other Gentlemen that ride in your company, if they will not take it in bad part, yea and I will make account that I ride on *Pegasus*, or the * *Zebra* of the famous Moore *Muzaraque*, who lies yet inchanted in the steepe rocke of *Culema*, neere vnto *Alcala* of *Henares*. Truely I did not thinke vpon it good Master Licenciat, answered *Don-Quixote*, yet I presume that my Lady the Princesse will be well appaide for my sake to commaund her Squire to lend you the vse of his saddle, and to get vp himselfe on the Croper, if so it be that the beast will beare double. Yes that it will, said the Princesse for ought I know, and likewise I am sure it will not be necessary to commaund my Squire to alight, for he is of himselfe so courteous and courtly, as he will in no wise condescend that an Ecclesiasticall man should go a foote when he may helpe him to a horse. That is most certaine, quoth the Barber; and saying so he alighted, and intreated the Curate to take the saddle; to which courtesie he did easily condescend. But by euill fortune as the Barber thought to leape vp behind him: the Mule which was in effect a hired one (& that is sufficient to say it was vnhappy) did lift a little her hinder quarters, and bestowed two or three flings on the ayre, which had they hit on Master *Nicholas* his brest or pate, he would haue bequeathed the quest of *Don-Quixote* vpon the Diuill: but notwithstanding the Barber was so affrighted, as he fell on the ground with so little heed of his beard, as it fell quite off, and lay spread vpon the ground: and perceiuing himselfe without it, he had no other shift, but to couer his face

* *A strange beast of Affricke that trauels very swiftly.*

Digitized by Google

face with both his handes, and complaine that all his cheeke teeth were ſtrucken out. *Don-Quixote* beholding ſuch a great ſheaſe of a beard falne away, without jaw or bloud from the face, he ſaid, I vow this is one of the greateſt miracles that euer I ſaw in my life; it hath taken and pluckt away his beard, as ſmoothly as if it were done of purpoſe. The Curate beholding the danger wherein their inuention was like to incurre if it were detected, went forthwith, and taking vp the beard came to Maſter *Nicholas* that lay ſtill a playing, and with one puſh bringing his head towards his owne breſt, he ſet it on againe, murmuring the while ouer him certaine wordes, which he ſaid were a certaine prayer, appropriated to the ſetting on of falne beardes, as they ſhould ſoone perceiue: And ſo hauing ſet it on handſomly, the Squire remained as wel bearded and whole as euer hee was in his life: whereat *Don-Quixote* reſted maruellouſly admired, and requeſted the Curate to teach him that prayer when they were at leaſure. For he ſuppoſed that the verture therof extended it ſelfe farther then to the faſtning on of beardes; ſince it was manifeſt that the place whence the beard was torne, muſt hãue remained without fleſh, wounded & il-dight; and ſeeing it cured all, it muſt of force ſerue for more then the beard. It is true, replyed Maſter Curate; and then promiſed to inſtruct him with the ſecret, with the firſt oportunity that was preſented.

Then they agreed that the Curate ſhould ride firſt on the Mule, and after him the other two, each one by turnes vntill they arriued to the Inne, which was about ſome two leagues thence. Three being thus mounted, to wit, *Don-Quixote*, the Princeſſe and Curate, and the other three on foote, *Cardenio*, the Barber, and *Sancho Pancas*. *Don-Quixote* ſaid to the damzell, Madame, let me intreat your highneſſe to leade me the way that moſt pleaſeth you. And before ſhe could anſwere, the Licenciat ſaid, Towards what Kingdome would you trauell? Is it by

Digitized by Google

fortune

fortune towards that of *Micomicon*? I suppose it should be thitherwards, or else I know but little of Kingdomes. She who knew very well the Curates meaning, and was her selfe no babe, answered, saying; Yes Sir, my way lies towards that Kingdome. If it be so, quoth the Curate, you must passe thorow the village where I dwell, & from thence direct your course towards *Cartagena*, where you may luckily embarke your selues. And if you haue a prosperous winde, and a quiet and calme Sea, you may come within the space of nine yeares to the sight of the lake *Meona*, I meane *Meolidas*, which stands in this side of your Highnesse Kingdome some hundred dayes iourney or more. I take you to be deceiued good Sir, quoth shee; for it is not yet fully two yeares since I departed from thence; and truely I neuer almost had any faire weather, and yet notwithstanding I haue arriued, and come to see that which I so much longed for, to wit, the presence of the worthy *Don-Quixote* of the *Mancha*, whose renowne came to my notice as soone as I touched the earth of Spaine with my foote, and moued me to search for him, to commend my selfe to his courtesie, and commit the iustice of my cause to the valour of his inuincible arme. No more, quoth *Don-Quixote*, I cannot abide to heare my selfe praysed. For I am a sworne ene my of all adulation. And although this be not such, yet notwithstanding the like discourses doe offend my chaste eares. What I can say to you faire Princesse is, that whether I haue valour or not; that which I haue or haue not, shalbe imployed in your seruice, euen to the very losse of my life. And so omitting that till his time, let me intreat good Master Licenciate, to tell me the occasion which hath brought him heere to these quarters so alone, without attendants, and so slightly attired, as it strikes me in no little admiration: To this I will answere with breuity, quoth the Curate: You shall vnderstand that Master *Nicholas* the Barber, our very good friend, and my selfe, trauelled

uelled towards *Sinill*, to recouer certaine summes of money, which a kinsman of mine, who dwels this many yeares in the *Indias* hath sent vnto me. The summe is not a little one, for it surmounted seuenty thousand Rials of eight, all of good waight: see if it was not a rich gift. And passing yesterday through this way we were set vpon by foure robbers, which dispoyled vs of all, euen to our very beardes, and that in such sort, as the Barber was forced to set on a counterfeit one: and this young man that goeth here with vs (meaning *Cardenio*) was transformed by them anew. And the best of it is, that it is publikely bruited about all this Commarke, that those which surprised vs were Galley-slaues, who were set at liberty, as it is reported, much about this same place, by so valiant a Knight, as in despite of the Commissarie and the guard he freed them all. And questionlesse hee either was wood, or else as great a knaue as themselues, or some one that wanted both soule and conscience, seeing he let slip the Wolues amidst the Sheepe, the Foxe among the Hennes, and Flies hard by Honie, and did frustrate iustice, rebell against his naturall Lord and King, for he did so by oppugning his iust commaundements, and hath depriued the Gallies of their feete, and set all the *Holy brotherhood* in an vprore, which hath reposed these many yeares past. And finally, would doe an acte, by which he should loose his soule, and yet not gaine his bodie. *Sancho* had rehearsed to the Curate & Barber the aduenture of the slaues, which his Lord had accomplished with such glorie, and therefore the Curate did vse this vehemencie as he repeated it, to see what *Don-Quixote* would say or doe, whose colour changed at euery word, and durst not confesse that he was himselfe, and the deliuerer of that good people: and these, quoth the Curate, were they that haue robbed vs, and God of his infinite mercy pardon him who hindered their going to receiue the punishment they had so well deserued.

Digitized by Google

CHAP.

CHAP. III.

Of many pleaſant diſcourſes paſſed betweene Don-Quixote, *and thoſe of his companie, after he had abandoned the rigorous place of his penance.*

SCarce had the Curate finiſhed his ſpeech throughly, when *Sancho* ſaid: By my faith Maſter Licenciate, he that did that feate was my Lord, and that not for want of warning, for I told him before hand, and aduiſed him, that he ſhould ſee well what he did, and that it was a ſinne to deliuer them, becauſe they were all ſent to the Gallies for very great villanies they had played. You bottlehead, replyed *Don-Quixote*, hearing him ſpeake, it concerneth not Knights errant to examine whether the afflicted, inchained, and oppreſſed which they encounter by the way, be carried in that faſhion, or are plunged in that diſtreſſe, through their owne default or diſgrace; but onely are obliged to aſſiſt them as needie and oppreſſed, ſetting their eyes vpon their paines and not on their crimes. I met with a Roſarie or beades of inſerted people, ſorrowful and vnfortunate, and I did for them that which my religion exacts, as for the reſt, let them verifie it elſewhere: and to whoſoeuer elſe the holy dignity and honourable perſon of Maſter Licenciat excepted, it ſhall ſeeme euill: I ſay hee knowes but ſlightly what belongs to Chiualrie; and hee lies like a whoreſon and a villaine borne: and this will I make him know with the broade ſide of my ſword. Theſe wordes he ſaid, ſetling himſelfe in his ſtirrups, and addreſſing his Morion for the Barbers baſon, which he accounted to be *Mambrino* his helmet, he carried hanging at the pomell of his ſaddle, vntill he might haue it repaired of the craſings the Galley ſlaue had wrought in it. *Dorotea* who

was very discreete and pleasant, and that was by this well acquainted with *Don-Quixotes* faultie humour, and saw all the rest make a iest of him, *Sancho Panca* excepted, would also shew her conceit to bee as good as some others, and therefore said vnto him, Sir knight remember your selfe of the booye you haue promised vnto mee, whereunto conforming your selfe you cannot intermeddle in any other aduenture, be it euer so vrgent. Therfore asswage your stomacke, for if Master Licentiat had known that the gallisiaues were deliuered by your inuincible arme he would rather haue giuen vnto himselfe three blowes on the mouth, and also bit his tongue thrice then haue spoken any word whence might result your indignation. That I dare sweare quoth the Curate, yea and besides torne away one of my Mustachioes. Madame said *Don-Quixote*, I will hold my peace, and suppresse the iust choler already inkindled in my breast, and will ride quietly and peaceably, vntil I haue accomplished the thing I haue promised: and I request you in recompence of this my good desire, if it be not displeasing to you, to tell mee your grieuãce, and how many, which, & what the persons be, of whom I must take, due, sufficient, and entyre reuenge? I will promptly performe your will herein answered *Dorotea*, if it will not bee irkesome to you to listen to disasters, in no sort good Madame said *Don-Quixote* to which *Dorotea* answered thus, be then attentiue to my relation. Scarce had she said so when *Cardenio* and the Barber came by her side, desirous to heare how the discreete *Dorotea* would faine her tale: and the same did *Sancho*, which was as much deceiued in her person as his Lord *Don-Quixote* and she after dressing her selfe well in the saddle, bethought and prouided her selfe whilst she coughed and vsed other gestures, and then began to speake in this manner.

First of all good Sirs I would haue you note that I am called, and heere she stood suspended a while by reason she

ſhe had forgotten the name that the Curate had giuen vnto her; but he preſently occurd to her ſuccour vnderſtanding the cauſe and ſaid. It is no wonder great Ladie, that you be troubled and ſtagger whileſt you recount your misfortunes, ſeeing it is their ordinary cuſtome of diſaſters to depriue thoſe whom they torment and diſtract their memory in ſuch ſort, as they cannot remember themſelues, euen of their owne very names; as now it proues done in your highneſſe which forgets it ſelfe, that you are called the Princes *Micomicona* lawfull inheritrix of the great Kingdome of *Micomicon*: and with this note you may eaſily reduce into your dolefull memorie, all that which you ſhall pleaſe to rehearſe. It is very true (quoth the Damſell) and from henceforth I thinke it will not be needfull to prompt me any more, for I will arriue into a ſafe port, with the narration of my authenticke Hiſtorie: which is, that my father who was called the wiſe *Imacrio*, was very expert in that which is called Art Magick, and he knew by his ſcience that my mother, who was called Queene *Xaramilla* ſhould die before he deceaſed, & that he ſhould alſo paſſe from this life within a while after, & leaue me an Orphane, but he was woont to ſay how that did not afflict his mind ſo much, as that he was very certaine that a huge Giant, Lord of a great Iland neere vnto my Kingdome called *Pandafilando, of the duſkie ſight*: becauſe although his eyes ſtand in their right places, yet doe they ſtill looke a ſquint, which he doth to terrifie the beholders. I ſay that my father knew that this Giant when he ſhould heare of his death, would paſſe with a maine power into my land, and depriue me therof, not leauing me the leſt village, wherein I might hide my head. Yet might all this be excuſed, if I would marry with him, but as he found out by his ſcience, he knew I would neuer condiſcend thereunto, or incline mine affection to ſo vnequall a marriage: and herein he ſaid nothing but truth, for it neuer paſt once my thought to eſ-

ſpouſe

spouse that Giant, nor with any other, were he euer so vnreasonable, great and mightie: my father likewise added then that after his death, and that I should see *Landasilando* vsurpe my kingdome, I should in no wise stand to my defence, for that would proue my destruction; but leauing to him the kingdome freely without troubles, if I meant to excuse mine owne death, and the totall ruine of my good and loyall subiects, for it would be impossible to defend my selfe from the diuelliſh force of the giant, I should presently direct my course towards *Spayne*, where I should find a redresse of my harms, by incountring with a knight errant, whose fame should extend it selfe much about that time throughout that kingdome, and his name should be if I forget not my selfe, *Don Acote* or *Don Gigote*. Ladie, you would say *Don-Quixote* quoth *Sancho Panca*, or as he is called by another name, *the Knight of the ilfauored face*, you haue reason replied *Dorotea*: he said moreouer, that he should be high of stature, haue a withered face, and that on the right side a little vnder the left shoulder, or thereabouts he should haue a tawny spot with certaine haires like to briſtles. *Don-Quixote* hearing this said to his Squire, hold my horse heere sonne *Sancho*, and helpe me to take off mine apparrell, for I will see whether I be the Knight of whom the wise king hath propheſied: Why would you now put off your cloathes quoth *Dorotea*? to see whether I haue that spot which your father mentioned, answered *Don-Quixote*: you need not vndoe your apparrell for that purpose said *Sancho*, for I know alreadie that you haue a spot with the tokens she named on the very ridges of your backe, and argues you to bee a very strong man: that is sufficient quoth *Dorotea*, for wee must not looke too neere, or be ouer curious in our friends affaires, and whether it be on the shoulder, or ridge of the backe it imports but little, for the substance consists onely in hauing such a marke, and that whereſoeuer it shall be;

seeing

ſeeing all is one, and the ſelfe ſame fleſh: and doutleſly my good father did ayme well at all, and I likewiſe in commending my ſelfe to *Don-Quixote*, for ſurely he is the man of whom my father ſpoke, ſeeing the ſignes of his face agree with thoſe of the great renowne that is ſpread abrode of this knight, not onely in *Spayne*, but alſo in *Ethiopia*: for I had no ſooner landed in *Oſuna*, when I heard ſo many of his proweſſes recounted, as my minde gaue me preſently that he was the man in whoſe ſearch I trauailed. But how did you land in *Oſuna* good Madam quoth *Don-Quixote*, ſeeing it is no Sea-towne? Marrie ſir quoth the Curate anticipating *Doroteas* anſwere, the Princeſſe would ſay that after ſhe had landed in *Malaga*, the firſt place wherein ſhe heard tidings of you was at *Oſuna*. So I would haue ſaid quoth *Dorotea*, and it may be very wel quoth the Curate, and I deſire your Maieſtie to continue your diſcourſe; there needs no farther continuation quoth *Dorotea*, but that finally my fortune hath beene ſo fauourable in finding of *Don-Quixote*, as I doe alreadie hold and account my ſelfe for Queene and Ladie of all mine eſtate, ſeeing that hee of his wonted bountie and magnificence hath promiſed mee the boone to accompany me whereſoeuer I ſhall guide him, which ſhall be to none other place then to ſet him before *Pandafilando of the darkie ſight*, to the end you may ſley him, and reſtore me to that which he hath ſo wrongfully vſurped: for all will ſucceede in the twinkling of an eye, as the wiſe *Tinacrio* my good father hath alreadie foretold: who ſaid moreouer, and alſo left it written in *Chaldaicall* or Greeke characters, for I cannot read them, that if the knight of the Prophecie, after hauing beheaded the Giant, would take me to wife, that I ſhould in no ſort refuſe him, but inſtantly admitting him for my ſpouſe, make him at once poſſeſſor of my ſelfe and my Kingdome.

VVhat thinkeſt thou of this friend *Sancho* quoth *Don-*

Don-Quixote then, when he heard her say so? how likest this point? did not I tell thee thus much before? see now whether we haue not a kingdome to commaund, and a Queene whom we may marry? I sweare as much quoth *Sancho*, a poxe on the knaue that will not marry as soone as Master *Pandahilado* his windepipes are cut. Mount then and see whether the Queene be ill or no, I would to God all the fleas of my bed turned to be such. And saying so he gaue two or three friskles in the ayre, with very great signes of contentment, and presently went to *Dorotea*, and taking her Mule by the bridle he withheld it, and laying himselfe downe on his knees before hee requested her very submissiuely to giue him her hands to kisse them, in signe that hee receiued her for his Queene and Ladie. Which of the beholders could abstaine from laughter, perceiuing the masters madnesse, and the seruants simplicity? To be briefe, *Dorotea* must haue giuen them vnto him, and promised to make him a great Lord in her kingdome, when heauen became so propitious to her, as to let her once recouer and possesse it peaceablie. And *Sancho* returned her thanks with such words as made them all laugh a new. This is my Historie noble Sirs quoth *Dorotea*, whereof onely restes vntold, that none of all the traine which I brought out of my Kingdome to attend on mee is now extant, but this well bearded Squire; for all of them were drowned in a great storme that ouertooke vs in the very sight of the harborough, whence he and I escaped, and came to land by the helpe of two plankes, on which we laid hold, almost by miracle; as also the whole discourse and mysterie of my life seemes none other then a miracle, as you might haue noted: And if in any part of the relation I haue exceeded, or not obserued a due *decorum*, you must impute it to that which Master Licentiat said to the first of my History, that continuall paines and afflictions of mind depriues them that suffer the like of their memory.

That

That ſhall not hinder mee (O high and valorous Ladie) quoth *Don-Quixote*, from enduring as many as I ſhall ſuffer in your ſeruice be they euer ſo great or difficult. And therfore I doe anew ratifie & confirme the promiſe I haue made, and doe ſweare to goe with you to the end of the world vntill I finde out your fierce enemy, whoſe proud head I meane to ſlice off by the helpe of God, and my valorous arme, with the edge of this (I will not ſay a good) ſword: thanks be to *Gines* of *Paſſamonte*, which tooke away mine owne: this he ſaid murmuring to himſelfe, and then proſecuted ſaying: and after I haue cut it off, and left you peaceably in the poſſeſſion of your ſtate, it ſhal reſt in your owne will to diſpoſe of your perſon as you like beſt. For as long as I ſhall haue my memory poſſeſſed, and my will captiued, and my vnderſtanding yeelded to her, I will ſay no more, it is not poſſible that euer I may induce my ſelfe to marry any other, although ſhee were a *Phœnix*.

That which *Don-Quixote* had ſaid laſt of all, of not marrying, diſliked *Sancho* ſo much as lifting his voyce with great anger he ſaid, I vow and ſweare by my ſelfe that you are not in your right wits, Sir *Don-Quixote*: for how is it poſſible that you can call the matter of contracting ſo high a Princeſſe as this is in doubt? do you think that fortune will offer you at euery corners end the like happe of this which is now proffered? Is my Ladie *Dulcinea* perhaps more beautifull, no certainly, nor halfe, ſo faire, nay I am rather about to ſay, that ſhe comes not to her ſhoo that is heere preſent. In an ill howre ſhal I arriue to poſſeſſe that vnfortunate Earldome which I expect if you go thus ſeeking for Muſhrubs in the bottome of the Sea: Marry, marry your ſelfe preſently; the diuell take you for me, and take that kingdome comes into your hands, and being a King make me preſently a Marqueſſe, or Admirall, and inſtantly after let the diuell take all if he pleaſeth. *Don-Quixote*, who heard ſuch blaſphemies

mies ſpoken againſt his Ladie *Dulcinea*, could not beare them any longer, and therefore liſting vp his Iaueline without ſpeaking any word to *Sancho*, gaue him therewithall too ſuch blowes as hee ouerthrew him to the earth: and had not *Dorotea* cried to him, to hold his hand he had doubtleſly ſlaine him in the place. Thinkeſt thou (quoth he after a while) baſe peaſant, that I ſhall haue alwaies leaſure and diſpoſition to thruſt my hand into my pouch, and that there be nothing elſe but thou ſtill erring and I pardoning; and doſt not thou think of it (excommunicated raſcall) for certainly thou art excommunicated, ſeeing thou haſt talked ſo broadly of the peereleſſe *Dulcinea*, and doeſt not thou know baſe ſlaue, vagabond, that if it were not for the valour ſhee infuſeth into mine arme, that I ſhould not haue ſufficient forces to kill a flea, ſay ſcoffer with the vipers tongue, who doſt thou thinke hath gained this kingdome, and cut the head of this Giant; and made thee a Marqueſſe. (For I giue all this for done alreadie, and for a matter ended and iudged) but the worthes and valour of *Dulcinea*: vſing mine arme as the inſtrument of her act. She fights vnder my perſon, and ouercomes in mee: And I liue and breath in her, and from her I holde my life and being. O whoreſon villaine, how vngratefull art thou, that ſeeſt thy ſelfe exalted out from the duſt of the earth to be a Nobleman, and yet doſt repay ſo great a benefit, with detracting the perſon that beſtowed it on thee.

Sancho was not ſo ſore hurt, but that he could heare all his Maſters reaſons very well: wherefore ariſing ſomwhat haſtily, he ran behinde *Dorotea* her Palfray, and from thence ſaid to his Lord: Tell me Sir if you be not determined to marry with this Princeſſe, it is moſt cleere that the Kingdome ſhall not be yours: and if it be not, what fauours can you be able to doe to me? It is of this that I complaine me, marrie your ſelfe one for one with this Princeſſe, now that we haue her here, as it were rai-

Digitized by Google

ned to vs downe from heauen, and you may after turne to my Ladie *Dulcinea*, for I thinke there bee Kings in the world, that keepe Lemmons. As for beauty, I will not interneddle, for if I muſt ſay the truth, each of both is very faire, although I haue neuer ſeene the Ladie *Dulcinea*. How, haſt not thou ſeene her blaſphemous traytor? quoth *Don-Quixote*, if thou didſt but euen now bring mee a meſſage from her? I ſay, quoth *Sancho*, I haue not ſeene her ſo leiſurely, as I might particularly note her beautie and good partes one by one, but yet in a clap as I ſaw them, they liked me very well. I doe excuſe thee now, ſaid *Don-Quixote*, and pardon me the diſpleaſure which I haue giuen vnto thee, for the firſt motions are not in our handes. I ſee that well, quoth *Sancho*, and that is the reaſon why talke is in me of one of thoſe firſt motions. And I cannot omit to ſpeake once at leaſt, that which comes to my tongue. For all that *Sancho*, replied *Don-Quixote*, ſee well what thou ſpeakeſt, for the earthen pitcher goes ſo oft to the water, I will ſay no more.

Well then anſwered *Sancho*, God is in heauen, who ſeeth all theſe guiles, and ſhall be one day iudge of him that ſinnes moſt, of me in not ſpeaking well, or of you by not doing well. Let there be no more, quoth *Dorotea*; but run *Sancho* and kiſſe your Lords hand, and aske him forgiueneſſe, and from henceforth take more heede how you praiſe or diſpraiſe any body, and ſpeake no ill of that Ladie *Toboſo*, whom I doe not know otherwiſe then to doe her ſeruice: and haue confidence in God, for thou ſhalt not want a Lordſhip wherein thou mayeſt liue like a King. *Sancho* went with his head hanging downward, and demaunded his Lords hand, which he gaue vnto him with a graue countenance, & after he had kiſſed it, he gaue him his bleſſing, and ſaid to him, that he had ſomewhat to ſay vnto him, and therefore bade him to come ſomewhat forward that he might ſpeake vnto him. *Sancho* obeyed, and both of them going a little aſide *Don-Quixote*

ſaid

ſaid vnto him, I haue not had leiſure after thy comming to demaund of thee in particular concerning the Embaſſage that thou carriedſt, and the anſwere that thou broughteſt backe; and therefore fortune lends vs now ſome oportunitie and leiſure, doe not denie me the happineſſe which thou mayeſt giue me by thy good newes. Demaund what you pleaſe, quoth *Sancho*, and I will anſwere you, and I requeſt you good my Lord, that you bee not from henceforth ſo vengatiue. Why doeſt thou ſay ſo *Sancho*? quoth *Don-Quixote*. I ſay it, replied *Sancho*, becauſe that theſe blowes which you beſtowed now, were rather giuen in reuenge of the diſſention which the Diuell ſtirred betweene vs two the other night, then for any thing I ſaid againſt my Lady *Dulcinea*, whom I do honor and reuerence as a relike, although ſhe be none, onely becauſe ſhe is yours. I pray thee good *Sancho*, ſaid *Don-Quixote*, fal not again into thoſe diſcourſes, for they offend me. I did pardon thee then, and thou knoweſt that a new offence muſt haue a new penance.

As they talked thus, they eſpied a gallant comming towards them, riding on an Aſſe, and when he drewe neere he ſeemed to be an Ægyptian: but *Sancho Panca*, who whenſoeuer he met any Aſſes, followed them with his eyes and his heart, as one that thought ſtill on his owne, had ſcarce eyed him when he knew that it was *Gines* of *Paſſamonte*, and by the looke of the Ægyptian, found out the fleece of his Aſſe, as in truth it was; for *Gines* came riding on his gray Aſſe; who to the end that hee might not be knowne, and alſo haue commodity to ſell his beaſt; attired himſelfe like an Egyptian, whoſe language and many others he could ſpeake as well as if they were his mother tongue. *Sancho* ſaw him and knew him, and ſcarce had he ſeene and taken notice of him, when he cryed out aloude, Ah thiefe, *Gineſillo*, leaue my goods behinde thee, ſet my life looſe, and doe not intermedle with my eaſe. Leaue mine Aſſe, leaue my comfort; flie

flie villaine, abſent thy ſelfe thiefe, and abandon that which is none of thine. He needed not to haue vſed ſo many words and frumps, for *Gines* leaped downe at the very firſt, and beginning a trot that ſeemed rather to be a gallop, he abſented himſelfe and fled farre enough from them in a moment. *Sancho* went then to his Aſſe, and imbracing him, ſaid, How haſt thou done hitherto my darling and treaſure, gray Aſſe of mine eyes, and my deereſt companion: and with that ſtroked and kiſſed him as if it were a reaſonable creature. The Aſſe held his peace, and permitted *Sancho* to kiſſe and cheriſh him, without anſwering a word. All the reſt arriued, and congratulated with *Sancho* for the finding of his Aſſe, but chiefly *Don-Quixote*, who ſaid vnto him that notwithſtanding that he found his Aſſe, yet would not he therefore annull his warrant for the three Colts; for which *Sancho* returned him very great thankes.

Whileſt they two trauelled together diſcourſing thus, the Curate ſaid to *Dorotea*, that ſhe had very diſcreetely diſcharged her ſelfe, as well in the Hiſtorie, as in her breuitie and imitation thereof, to the phraſe and conceits of books of knighthood: ſhe anſwered that ſhe did ofttimes read bookes of that ſubiect, but that ſhe knew not where the Prouinces lay, nor Sea ports; and therefore did onely ſay at randome, that ſhe had landed in *Oſuna*. I knew it was ſo, quoth the Curate, and therefore I ſaid what you heard, wherewithall the matter was ſouldered. But is it not a maruellous thing to ſee with what facility the vnfortunate Gentleman beleeues all theſe inuentions and lies, onely becauſe they beare the ſtile and manner of the follies laid downe in his bookes? It is quoth *Cardenio*, and that ſo rare and beyond all conceit, as I beleeue if the like were to be inuented, ſcarce could the ſharpeſt wits deuiſe ſuch another. There is yet, quoth the Curate, as maruellous a matter as that: for leauing apart the ſimplicities which this good Gentleman ſpeakes concerning

Digitized by Google

his frenſie, if you will commune with him of any other ſubiect whatſoeuer he will diſcourſe on it with an excellent methode, and ſhew himſelfe to haue a cleere and pleaſing vnderſtanding. So that, if he be not touched by matters of Chiualry, there is no man but will deeme him to be of a ſound and excellent iudgement.

Don-Quixote on the other ſide proſecuted his conuerſing with his Squire, whileſt the others talked together; and ſaid to *Sancho*: Let vs two friend *Panca* forget olde iniuries, and ſay vnto me now without any rancour or anger, where, how, and when didſt thou finde my Ladie *Dulcinea*? What did ſhe when thou cameſt? What ſaidſt thou to her? What anſwered ſhee? What countenance ſhewed ſhe as ſhe read my Letter? And who writ it out fairely for thee? And euery other thing that thou ſhalt thinke worthy of notice in this affaire, to be demanded or anſwered, without either addition or lying, or ſoothing adulation: and on the other ſide do not abbreuiate it, leſt thou ſhouldeſt defraude me thereby of expected delight. Sir, anſwered *Sancho*, if I muſt ſay the truth, none copied out the Letter for me, for I caried no Letter at all. Thou ſayeſt true, quoth *Don-Quixote*, for I found the Tablets wherein it was written with my ſelfe, two dayes after thy departure, which did grieue me exceedingly, becauſe I knew not what thou wouldeſt do, when thou didſt perceiue the want of the Letter, and I alwaies made full account that thou wouldeſt returne againe from the place where thou ſhouldeſt firſt miſſe it. I had done ſo, quoth *Sancho*, if I had not borne it away in memory, when you read it to me, in ſuch ſort, as I ſaid it to a Clerke of a Veſtrie, who did copie it out of my vnderſtanding ſo point by point, as hee ſaid that hee neuer in all the dayes of his life, although he had read many a Letter of excommunication, read or ſeene ſo fine a Letter as it was. And doſt thou holde it yet in memory *Sancho* quoth *Don-Quixote*? No Sir, ſaid *Sancho*, for after I gaue it, ſeeing it ſer-

ued for none other purpoſe, I did willingly forget it. And if I remember any thing it is that of the *mouldy*, I would ſay *Soueraigne Ladie*, and the end, *Yours vntill death, The Knight of the ill fauoured face*, and I put betweene theſe two things in the Letter three hundred *ſoules*, and *liues*, and *ſweet eyes*.

CHAP. IIII.

Of the pleaſant diſcourſes continued betweene Don-Quixote, *and his Squire* Sancho Panca, *with other aduentures.*

ALl this liketh me well, ſaid *Don-Quixote*, therefore ſay on, thou arriuedſt, and what was that Queene of beauty doing then? I dare ſay that thou foundeſt her threeding of Pearls, or imbroidering ſome curious deuice, with Venice golde for me her captiue Knight? No that I did not, quoth *Sancho*, but winnowing two buſhels of Wheate in the yard of her houſe. Why then ſaid *Don-Quixote*, thou mayeſt make account that each corne of that Wheate was a graine of Pearle, ſeeing they were touched by her delicate hand. And friend didſt thou note well what the Wheate was, whether of the beſt or ordinarie? It was not but redde, ſaid *Sancho*. Well then I aſſure thee, anſwered *Don-Quixote*, that being ſifted by her hands, it muſt needes make very faire bread and white. But paſſe forward, when thou didſt deliuer my Letter, did ſhe kiſſe it? Did ſhe ſet it on her head? Did ſhe vſe any ceremony worthy of ſuch a Letter? Or what did ſhe? When I went to giue it vnto her, ſaid *Sancho*, ſhe was holding vp of her armes with a good quantity of Wheate that ſhe had in her Siue, and therfore ſaid vnto me, friend, lay downe that Letter there

Bibliotheca Regia Monacensis

on the ſacke, for I cannot reade it vntill I haue winnowed all that is here. O diſcreete Ladie, quoth *Don-Quixote*, ſhe ſurely did that becauſe ſhe might reade it at leaſure, and recreate her ſelfe therewithall. Forward *Sancho*, and as long as ſhe was thus buſied, what diſcourſes paſſed ſhe with thee? What did ſhe demaund of thee concerning me? And thou, what didſt thou anſwere? Say all good *Sancho*, ſay all, recount to me euery particularity, and let not the leaſt immunity remaine in the Inke-horne. She demaunded nothing of me, quoth *Sancho*, but I recounted vnto her the ſtate I had left you in for her ſake, doing of penance, all naked from the gyrdle vpward among theſe rockes like a bruit beaſt; ſleeping on the ground, and eating your bread without Table-clothes, and that you neuer combed your beard, but was weeping and curſing your fortune. There thou ſaidſt ill (quoth *Don-Quixote*) for I doe not curſe my fortune, but rather bleſſe it, and will bleſſe it as long as I ſhall liue, ſeeing it hath made me worthy to merite the loue of ſo high a Lady as *Dulcinea* of *Toboſo*: She is in good faith ſo high, anſwered *Sancho*, as ſhe ſurpaſſeth me almoſt by a whole cubite. Why how now *Sancho*, ſaid the Knight, haſt thou meaſured thy ſelfe with her? I did meaſure my ſelfe with her in this manner, replyed *Sancho*, that comming ouer to helpe her to lift vp a ſack of Wheat on an Aſſe, we ioyned ſo neere, as I well perceiued that ſhe was more then a great ſpan higher then my ſelfe. That is true, quoth *Don-Quixote*, but thinkeſt thou not that the talneſſe of her extended ſtature is adorned with a thouſand millions of graces and indowments of the ſoule? But *Sancho*, thou canſt not denie me one thing, when thou didſt thus approch her, didſt thou not feele a moſt odoriferous ſmell, an aromaticall flagrancie, an, I cannot tell what, ſo pleaſing, as I know not how to terme it? I ſay ſuch a ſent, as if thou werſt in ſome curious perfumers ſhop? That which I know, quoth *Sancho* is, that I felt a little vnſauorie ſent, ſome-

what ramiſh and manlike, and I thinke the reaſon was, becauſe ſhe had ſweat a litle doing of that exerciſe. It was not ſo (quoth *Don-Quixote*) but eyther thou hadſt the murre, or elſe didſt ſmell thy ſelfe; for I know very well how that Roſe among thornes doth ſent, that Lillie of the field, and that choſen Amber. It may well be ſaid *Sancho* as you haue ſaid; for I haue had many times ſuch a ſmell, as me thought the Ladie *Dulcinea* had then: and though ſhe ſmeld to it were no maruell: for one Diuell is like another. And well (quoth *Don-Quixote*) ſee heere, ſhe hath ſifted her corne, and ſent it to the Mill. What did ſhe after ſhe had read the Letter? The Letter ſaid *Sancho*, ſhe read it not, for ſhe ſaid ſhe could neither reade nor write, and therefore ſhee tore it into ſmall pieces, and would haue no man to reade it, leſt thoſe of the village ſhould know her ſecrets, and ſay that what I had tolde her by word of mouth of your loue and extraordinarie penance, which you remayned doing for her ſake was ſufficient. And finally ſhe concluded, commaunding me to ſay vnto you, that ſhe had her commended vnto you, and that ſhe remained with greater deſire to ſee you then to write vnto you; and therefore ſhe requeſted and willed you, as you tendred her affection, that preſently vpon ſight hereof you ſhould abandon theſe ſhrubbie groues; leaue off your frenſie, and take preſently the way of *Toboſo*. If ſome matter of greater importance did not occur, for ſhe had very great deſire to ſee and talke with you. She laughed heartily when I tolde her that you named your ſelfe *the Knight of the ill-fauoured face*. I demaunded of her whether the beaten *Biſcaine* came there? and ſhe anſwered that he did, and affirmed withall that hee was a very honeſt man. I asked alſo for the Galley-ſlaues, but ſhe tolde me, that ſhe had ſeene none of them as yet.

All goes well till this, ſaid *Don-Quixote*, but tell me I pray thee what Iewell did ſhe beſtow on thee at thy de-

Digitized by Google

parture for reward of the newes thou carriedst vnto her of me? For it is an vsuall and ancient custome among Knights and Ladies errant to bestow on Squires, Damsels, or dwarfes which bring thē any good tidings of their Ladies, or seruants, some rich Iewel as a reward & thanks of their welcome newes. It may well be quoth *Sancho*, and I hold it for a very laudable custome, but I thinke it was onely vsed in times past; for I thinke the manner of this our age is onely to giue a peece of bread, and cheese, for this was all that my Ladie *Dulcinea* bestowed on me, and that ouer the yard wals, when I tooke my leaue with her. And in signe thereof (well fare all good tokens) the cheese was made of sheepes milke. She is maruellous liberall quoth *Don-Quixote*, and if she gaue thee not a Iewell of gold, it was without doubt, because she had none then about her. *But sleeues are good, although they come after the feast.* I will see her and then all things shall be amended, knowest thou *Sancho* whereat I wonder, It is at this sodaine returne, for it seemes to me thou wast gone, and hast come backe againe in the ayre, for thou hast beene away but a little more then three daies, *Toboso* being well nigh thirtie leagues from hence: And therefore do beleeue that the wise inchanter, who takes care of mine affaires, and is my friend (for there is such a one of force, and then must bee, vnder paine that I else should not be a good knight errant) I say I verely thinke that wise man holpe thee to trample vnawares of thy selfe: for there are wise men of that condition which will take a Knight errant sleeping in his bed; and without knowing how or in what manner hee will wake the next day a thousand leagues from that place where he fell a sleepe. And were it not for this, knights errant could not succour one another in their most dangerous exigents, as they do now at euerie step. For it oft-times befalles that a knight is fighting in the mountaines of *Armenia* with some diuelliſh *Fauno*, some dreadfull shadow, or fierce knight

knight, where he is like to haue the worſt, and in this point of death when I leaſt expect it, there appeares there on the top of a cloude, or riding in a chariot of fire an other Knight his friend, who was but euen then in England, and helpes him, and deliuers him from death, and returnes againe that night to his owne lodging, where hee ſuppes with a very good appetite, and yet for all that is there woont to bee, two or three thouſand leagues from the one to the other countrey. All which is compaſſed by the induſtrie and wiſedome of thoſe skilfull inchaunters, that take care of the ſaid valorous knights. So that friend *Sancho*, I am not hard of beleefe in giuing thee credite that thou haſt gone and returned in ſo ſhort a time from this place to *Toboſo*, ſeeing as I haue ſaid, ſome wiſe man my friend hath belike tranſported thee thither by ſtealth, and vnaware, of thy ſelfe. I eaſily thinke it replied *Sancho*, for *Rozinante* trauailed in good faith as luſtily as if he were an *Ægyptians* Aſſe with quickſiluer in his eares, and thinkeſt thou not quoth *Don-Quixote*, that he had not quickſiluer in his eares? yes and a legion of diuels alſo to helpe it, who are folke that doe trauaile and make others goe as much as they liſt without any wearineſſe.

But leauing all this apart, what is thine opinion that I ſhould doe now, concerning my Ladies commaundement, to goe and ſee her: for although I know that I am bound to obey her beheſts: yet doe I finde my ſelfe diſabled at this time to accompliſh them, by reaſon of the grant I haue made to the Princeſſe that comes with vs, and the law of armes doth compell me to accompliſh my word, rather then my will? on the one ſide I am aſſaulted and vrged by a deſire to go and ſee my Ladie: on the other, my promiſed faith, and the glory that I ſhall winne in this enterprize doe incite and call me away. But that which I reſolue to doe, is to trauaile with all ſpeede that I may quickly arriue to the place where that Giant is,

and will cut off his head at my comming, and when I haue peaceably installed the Princesse in her Kingdome, will presently returne to see the light that doth lighten my senses; to whom I will yeeld such forcible reasons of my so long absence, as she shall easily condescend to excuse my stay, seeing all doth redound to her glory and fame. For all that I haue gained, doe winne, or shall hereafter atchieue by force of armes in this life, proceedes wholy from the gracious fauor she pleaseth to bestow vpon me, & my being hers. O God! quoth *Sancho* I perceiue that you are greatly diseased in the pate. I pray you Sir tell me whether you mean to go this long voyage for nought? And let slip and lose so rich and so noble a preferment as this? where the dowrie is a Kingdome, which is in good faith as I haue heard say, twentie thousand leagues in compasse. And most plentifully stored with all things necessary for the sustaining of humane life: and that it is greater then *Portugall* and *Castile* ioyned together? peace for Gods loue, and blush at your owne words, and take my counsaile, and marry presently in the first village that hath a parish Priest: and if you will not doe it there, can you wish a better commodity then to haue our owne Master Licentiat, who will doe it most excellently. And note that I am old enough to giue counsaile, and that this which I now deliuer is as fit for you, as if it were expressly cast for you in a mould. For a Sparrow in the fist, is worth more then a flying Bittor,

For he that can haue good, and euill doth chuse,
For ill that betides him, must not patience loose.

Why *Sancho* quoth *Don-Quixote*, if thou giuest me counsaile to marry to the end I may become a King after I haue slaine the Giant, and haue commoditie thereby to promote thee, and giue thee what I haue promised: I let thee to vnderstand that I may doe all that most easily without marrying my self. For before I enter into the battaile, I will make this condition, that when I come away victor,

victor, although I marry not the Princeſſe, yet ſhall a part of the Kingdome bee at my diſpoſition, to beſtow vpon whom I pleaſe; and when I receiue it, vpon whom wouldeſt thou haue me beſtow it but on thy ſelfe? that is manifeſt ſaid *Sancho*: but I pray you Sir haue care to chuſe that part you would reſerue towards the Seaſide, to the end that if the liuing doe not pleaſe me, I may embarke my blacke vaſſailes, and make the benefit of them which I haue ſaid. And likewiſe I pray you not to trouble your minde, thinking to goe and ſee my Ladie *Dulcinea* at this time; but trauaile towards the place where the Giant is, and kill him, and conclude that buſineſſe firſt, for I ſweare vnto you that I am of opinió it will proue an aduenture of very great honour and profit. I aſſure thee *Sancho* quoth *Don-Quixote*, thou art in the right, and I will follow thy counſaile in rather going firſt with the Princeſſe, then to viſite *Dulcinea*. And I warne thee not to ſpeake a word to any bodie, no not to thoſe that ride with vs of that which we haue heere ſpoken and diſcourſed together, for ſince *Dulcinea* is ſo warie and ſecret, as ſhe would not haue her thoughts diſcouered, it is no reaſon, that I either by my ſelfe or any other ſhould detect them.

If that be ſo quoth *Sancho*, why then doe you ſend all thoſe which you vanquiſh by vertue of your arme to preſent themſelues to my Ladie *Dulcinea*, ſeeing this is as good as ſubſignatió of your hands writing, that you wiſh her well, and are enamored on her? and ſeeing that thoſe which goe to her, muſt forcibly lay them downe on their knees before her preſence, and ſay that they come from you to doe her homage, how then can the thoughts of you both be hidden and concealed? O! how great a foole art thou, and how ſimple quoth *Don-Quixote*. Doſt not thou perceiue *Sancho*, how all this reſults to her greater glory. For thou oughteſt to wit, that in our knightly proceedings, it is great honour that one Ladie alone, haue

many

many knights errant for her seruitors, without extending their thoughts any further then to serue her, only for her high worthes, without attending any other reward of their many and good desires, then that she will deigne to accept them as her seruants and knights. I haue heard preach said *Sancho* that men should loue our Sauiour with that kind of loue, onely for his owne sake, without being moued thereunto, eyther by the hope of glorie, or the feare of paine, although for my part I would loue and serue him, for what he is able to doe. The Diuell take thee for a clowne, quoth *Don-Quixote* how sharpe and pertinently dost thou speake now and then? able to make a man imagine that thou hast studied. Now by mine honestly, quoth *Sancho*, I can neyther reade nor write.

Master *Nicholas* perceiuing them drowned thus in their discourses, cried out to them to stay and drinke of a little fountaine that was by the way. *Don-Quixote* rested, to *Sanchoes* very great contentment, who was already tyred with telling him so many lies, and was affraid his Master would intrappe him in his owne wordes. For although he knew *Dulcinea* to be of *Toboso*, yet had hee neuer seene her in his life. And *Cardenio* had by this time done on the appartel *Dorotea* wore when they found her in the mountaines, which though they were not very good, yet exceeded with great aduantage those which he had himselfe before. And allighting hard by the fountain, they satisfied with the prouision the Curate had brought with him from the Inne, although it were but little, the great hunger that pressed them. And whilest they tooke their ease there, a certaine young stripling that trauelled passed by, who looking very earnestly on all those which sate about the fountaine, he ranne presently after to *Don-Quixote*, and imbracing his legs, he said weeping downe right: O my Lord doe not you know me? Looke well vpon me, for I am the youth *Andrew*, whom you vnlooosed from the Oake whereunto I was tyed. *Don-Qui-*

Digitized by Google

note preſently knew him, and taking him by the handes, he turned to thoſe that were preſent, and ſaid, becauſe you may ſee of how great importance it is, that there be Knights errant in the world, to vndoe wrongs and iniuries, that are committed in it by the inſolent and badde men which liue therein; you ſhall wit that a few dayes paſt as I rode through a wood, I heard certaine lamentable ſcritches and cries, as of ſome needefull and afflicted perſon: I forthwith occurd, borne away by my profeſſion towards the place from whence the lamentable voyce ſounded, & I found tied to an Oaken tree, this boy whom you ſee here in our preſence; for which I am maruellous glad, becauſe if I ſhall not ſay the truth, he may checke me. I ſay that he was tied to the Oake ſtarke naked from the middle vpward, and a certain clowne was opening his fleſh with cruell blows that he gaue him with the reynes of a bridle; which clowne as I after vnderſtood, was his Maſter. And ſo aſſoone as I ſaw him, I demaunded the cauſe of thoſe cruell ſtripes. The rude fellow anſwered that he beate him becauſe he was his ſeruant, and that certaine negligences of his proceeded rather from being a thiefe, then of ſimplicity. To which this childe anſwered: Sir, he whips me for no other cauſe, but by reaſon that I demaund my wages of him. His Maſter replied, I know not now what ſpeeches and excuſes, the which although I heard, yet were they not by me admitted. In reſolution I cauſed him to be looſed, and tooke the clownes oath, that he would take him home, and pay him there his wages, one Riall vpon another; I and thoſe alſo perfumed. Is it not true, ſonne *Andrew*? Didſt not thou note with what a domineering countenance I commanded it; and with what humilitie he promiſed to accompliſh all that I impoſed, commaunded, and deſired? anſwere me, be not aſhamed, nor ſtagger at all, but tell what paſſed to theſe Gentlemen, to the end it may be manifeſtly ſeene how neceſſary it is as I haue ſaid to haue Knights errant vp and downe the high waves.

All

All that which you haue ſaid quoth the boy is very true ; but the end of the matter ſucceeded altogether contrary to that which you imagined. How contrarie quoth *Don-Quixote*? Why hath not the peaſant paide thee? He not only hath not payed me, anſwered the boy, but rather as ſoone as you were paſſed the wood, & that we remained both alone, he turned againe and tied me to the ſame tree, and gaue me a freſh ſo many blowes, as I remained another S. *Bartholomew*, all fleaed : and at euery blow he ſaid ſome jeſt or other in deriſion of you : ſo that if I had not felt the paine of the ſtripes ſo much as I did, I could haue found in my heart to haue laughed very heartily. In fine, he left me in ſuch pitifull caſe, as I haue beene euer ſince curing my ſelfe in an Hoſpital of the euil, which the wicked peaſant did then vnto me. And you are in the fault of al this, for if you had ridden on your way, and not come to the place where you were not ſought for, nor intermedled your ſelfe in other mens affaires, perhaps my Maſter had contented himſelfe with giuing me a dozen or two of ſtrokes, and would preſently after haue looſed me, and payed me my wages. But by reaſon you diſhonoured him ſo much without cauſe, and ſaid to him ſo many villanies, his choler was inflamed ; and ſeeing hee could not reuenge it on you, finding himſelfe alone, he disburdened the ſhower on me ſo heauily, as I greatly feare that I ſhall neuer againe bee mine owne man. The hurt conſiſted in my departure (quoth *Don-Quixote*) for I ſhould not haue gone from thence, vntill I had ſeene thee payed. For I might haue very well knowne by many experiences "that there is no clowne that will keepe his word, if he "ſee the keeping of it can turne any way to his damage. But yet *Andrew* thou doſt remember how I ſwore that if he paied thee not, I would returne and ſeeke him out, and likewiſe finde him, although he conueyed himſelfe into a Whales belly. Thats true, quoth *Andrew*, but all auailes not : thou ſhalt ſee whether it auailes or no preſently,

Digitized by Google

quoth *Don-Quixote*, and ſaying ſo, got vp very haſtily; and commaunded *Sancho* to bridle *Rozinante*, who was feeding whileſt they did eate: *Dorotea* demaunded of him what he meant to doe? He anſwered that he would goe and finde out the villaine, and puniſh him for vſing ſuch bad proceedings, and cauſe *Andrew* to bee paid the laſt denier, in deſpite of as many peaſants as liued in the world. To which ſhe anſwered, intreating him to remember that he could not deale with any other aduenture, according to his promiſe, vntill hers were atchieued, and ſeeing that hee himſelfe knew it to bee true better then any other, that he ſhould pacifie himſelfe, vntill his return from her Kingdome. You haue reaſon, ſaid *Don-Quixote*, and therefore *Andrew* muſt haue patience perforce vntill my returne (as you haue ſaid Madame) and when I ſhall turne againe I doe ſweare vnto him, and likewiſe renew my promiſe, neuer to reſt vntill he be ſatisfied and payed. I beleeue not in ſuch oathes, quoth *Andrew*, but would haue as much money as might carrie me to *Siuill*, rather then all the reuenges in the world. Giue me ſome meate to eate, and carie away with me, and God be with you and all other Knights errant, and I pray God that they may proue as erring to themſelues as they haue been to me.

Sancho tooke out of his bagge a piece of bread and cheeſe, and giuing it to the youth ſaid, hold, brother *Andrew*, for euery one hath his part of your misfortune. I pray you what part thereof haue you, ſaid *Andrew*? This piece of bread and cheeſe that I beſtow on thee, quoth *Sancho*, for God onely knowes whether I ſhall haue need of it againe or no: for thou muſt wit friend, that we the Squires of Knights errant, are very ſubiect to great hunger and euil lucke, yea and to other things which are better felt then tolde: *Andrew* laid holde on his bread and cheeſe; and ſeeing that no body gaue him any other thing, he bowed his head, and went on his way. True it

is that he said to *Don-Quixote* at his departure: for Gods loue good Sir Knight errant, if you shall euer meet me againe in the plight you haue done, although you should see mee torne in pieces, yet do not succour or helpe me, but leaue me in my disgrace; for it cannot be so great, but that a greater will result from your helpe, vpon whom and all the other Knights errant that are borne in the world, I pray God his curse may alight. *Don-Quixote* thought to arise to chastise him, but he ran away so swiftly, as no man durst follow him, and our Knight remained maruellously ashamed at *Andrews* tale: wherefore the rest with much ado suppresst their desire to laugh, lest they should throughly confound him.

CHAP. V.

Treating of that which befell all Don-Quixote *his train in the Inne.*

THe dinner being ended, they sadled and went to horse presently, and trauelled all that day, and the next without incountring any aduenture of price, vntill they arriued at the only bugge and scar-crow of *Sancho Panca*: and though he would full faine haue excused his entry into it, yet could he in no wise auoide it: the Inkeeper, the Hostesse her daughter, and *Maritornes* seeing *Don-Quixote* and *Sancho* returne, went out to receiue them with tokens of great loue and ioy, and he intertained them with graue countenance and applause, and bad them to make him ready a better bedde then the other which they had giuen vnto him the time before. Sir, quoth the Hostesse, if you would pay vs better then the last time we would giue you one for a Prince. *Don-Quixote* answered that hee would; they prepared a reasonable good bedde for him in the same wide roome where he lay before: and he went presently to bedde,

Digitized by Google

bedde, by reaſon that he arriued much tyred, and voide of wit. And ſcarce was he gotten into his chamber, when the Hoſteſſe leaping ſuddenly on the Barber, and taking him by the beard, ſaid, now by my ſelfe bliſſed, thou ſhalt vſe my taile no more for a beard, and thou ſhalt turne me my taile; for my husbands combe goes throwen vp and down the flowre, that it is aſhamed to ſee it: I meane the combe that I was wont to hang vp in my good taile. The Barber would not giue it vnto her for all her drawing, vntill the Licenciate bad him to reſtore it, that they had now no more vſe thereof, but that he might now very well diſcouer himſelfe, and appeare in his owne ſhape, and ſay to *Don-Quixote*, that after the Galley-ſlaues had robd him, he fledde to that Inne: and if *Don-Quixote* demaunded by chaunce for the Princeſſe her Squire, that they ſhould tel him, how ſhe had ſent him before to her kingdome, to giue intelligence to her ſubiects, that ſhe returned, bringing with her him that ſhould free and giue them all liberty. With this the Barber ſurrendred the taile willingly to the Hoſteſſe, and likewiſe all the other borrowed wares which ſhe had lent for *Don-Quixotes* deliuery. All thoſe of the Inne reſted wonderfull amazed at *Doroteas* beautie, and alſo at the comelineſſe of the Shepheard *Cardenio*. Then the Curate gaue order to make readie for them ſuch meat as the Inne could affoord: and the Inkeeper in hope of better payment, did dreſſe very ſpeedily for them a reaſonable good dinner. *Don-Quixote* ſlept all this while, and they were of opinion to let him take his reſt, ſeeing ſleepe was more requiſite for his diſeaſe then meate. At the Table they diſcourſed (the Inkeeper, his wife, daughter and *Maritornes*, and all the other trauellers being preſent) of *Don-Quixotes* ſtrange frenſie, and of the manner wherein they found him. The Hoſteſſe eftſoones recounted what had happned there betweene him and the Carrier; and looking to ſee whether *Sancho* were preſent, perceiuing that hee was away, ſhe tolde likewiſe all the ſtory of his canuaſing, whereat they conceiued no little content and paſtime. And as the Curate

Cool

ſaid

ſaid, that the originall cauſe of *Don-Quixotes* madneſſe proceeded from the reading of bookes of Knighthood; the Inkeeper anſwered.

I cannot conceiue how that may be, for (as I beleeue) there is no reading ſo delightfull in this world: and I my ſelfe haue two or three bookes of that kinde with other papers, which doe verily keepe me aliue, and not onely mee, but many other. For in the reaping times, many of the reapers repaire to this place in the heates of mid-day, and there is euermore ſome one or other among them that can reade, who takes one of theſe bookes in hand, and then ſome thirtie or more of vs doe compaſſe him about, and do liſten to him with ſuch pleaſure as it hinders a thouſand hoary haires: for I dare ſay at leaſt of my ſelfe, that when I heare tell of thoſe furious and terrible blowes that knights errant giue, it inflames me with a deſire to become ſuch a one my ſelfe, and could finde in my heart to be hearing of them day and night. I am iuſt of the ſame minde no more, nor no leſſe, ſaid the hoſteſſe, for I neuer haue any quiet houre in my houſe, but when thou art hearing thoſe bookes whereon thou art ſo beſotted, as then thou doeſt onely forget to chide, which is thy ordinarie exerciſe at other times. That is very true ſaid *Maritornes*. And I in good ſooth doe take great delight to heare thoſe things, for they are very fine, and eſpecially when they tell how ſuch a Ladie lies embraced by her Knight vnder an Orange tree, and that a certaine Damſell keepeth watch all the while, readie to burſt for enuie that ſhe hath not likewiſe her ſweet heart: And very much afraid. I ſay that all thoſe things are as ſweete as honey to me. And you quoth the Curate to the Inkeepers daughter what doe you thinke? I know not in good ſooth Sir quoth ſhe, but I doe likewiſe giue eare, and in truth although I vnderſtand it not, yet doe I take ſome pleaſure to heare them, but I miſlike greatly thoſe blowes, which pleaſe my father ſo much: and onely delight in the lamentations that knightes make being abſent from their Ladies: which

in ſooth doe now and then make mee weepe through the compaſſion I take of them. Well then quoth *Dorotea*, belike faire Maiden you would remedie them, if ſuch plaints were breathed for your owne ſake? I know not what I would doe anſwered the Gyrle, onely this I know, that there are ſome of thoſe Ladies ſo cruell, as their knights call them *Tigres* and *Lions*, and a thouſand other wild beaſts. And *good Ieſus*, I knew not what vnſouled folk they bee, and ſo without conſcience, that becauſe they wil not once behold an honorable man, they ſuffer him either to die or run mad. And I know not to what end ſerues all that coyneſſe. For if they do it for honeſties ſake, let thē marry with them, for the knights deſire nothing more: Peace child quoth the hoſteſſe, for it ſeemes that thou knoweſt too much of thoſe matters, and it is not decent that maidens ſhould know or ſpeake ſo much; I ſpeake quoth ſhe, by reaſon that this good Sir made me the demaund. And I could not in courteſie omit to anſwere him: Well ſaid the Curate, let me entreate you good mine hoſt to bring vs here thoſe books, for I would faine ſee them.

I am pleaſed ſaid the Inkeeper, and then entring into his chamber he brought forth a little old Mallet ſhut vp with a chaine, & opening thereof, he tooke out three great bookes and certaine papers written with a very faire letter. The firſt booke he opened was that of *Don Cirongilio of Thracia*. The other *Felixmarte of Hircania*: And the third, *The Hiſtorie of the great Captaine*, *Goncalo Hernandez of Cordona* with the life of *Diego Garcia of Paredes*, adioyned. as ſoone as the Curate had read the titles of the two bookes, hee ſaid to the Barber, we haue now great want of our friends the old woman and Neece: not ſo much as you thinke quoth the Barber, for I know alſo the way to the yard, or the chimney, and in good ſooth, there is a fire in it good enough for that purpoſe. Would you then quoth the hoſt burne my bookes? no more of them quoth the Curate, but theſe firſt two of *Don Cirongilio* and *Felixmarte*, are my bookes, perhaps quoth the Inkeeper hereticall or flegmaticall that you

would thus roughly handle them? Schismaticall thou wouldest haue said quoth the Barber, and not flegmaticall. It is so said the Inkeeper, but if you will needs burne any, I pray you rather let it be that of the *great Captaine*, & of that *Diego Garcia*, for I would rather suffer one of my sonnes to be burned, then any one of those other two. Good friend these two bookes are lying and full of follies and vanities, but that *of the great Captaine* is true, and containeth the artes of *Goncalo Hernandez of Cordoua*: who for his sundrie and noble actes, merited to be termed by all the world, *The great Captaine*, a name famous, illustrious, and onely deserued by himselfe, and this other *Diego Garcia* of *Paredes* was a noble Gentleman borne in the Citie of *Truxillo in Estremadura* and was a most valorous souldier, and of so surpassing force as he would detaine a mill wheele with one hand from turning in the midst of the speediest motion: and standing once at the end of a bridge with a two handed sword, defended the passage against a mightie armie that attempted to passe ouer it: and did so many other things, that if another, who were a stranger and vnpassionate had written them, as he did himselfe who was the relater and historiographer of his owne actes, and therefore recounted them with the modestie of a Gentleman, and proper Chronicler; they would haue drowned all the *Hectors*, *Achilleses* and *Rollands* in obliuion.

There is a iest quoth the Inkeeper, deale with my father I pray you, see at what you wonder. A wise tale, at the withholding of the wheele of a mill. I sweare you ought to read that which is read in *Felixmarte* of *Hircania*, who with one twhart blow cut fiue mightie Giants in halfes, as if they were of beanes, like to the little Friers that children make of beancods. And set an other time vpon a great and most powerfull armie of more then a million and fixe hundred thousand souldiers, and ouerthrew and scattered them all like a flocke of sheepe. What then can you say to me of the good *Don Cirongilio* of *Thracia*, who was so animous and valiant as may

be ſeene in his booke: wherein is laid downe, that as he ſayled along a Riuet there iſſued out of the middeſt of the water a ſerpent, of fire, and hee as ſoone as hee perceiued it, leaped vpon her, and hanging by her ſquamie ſhoulders he wroong her throat ſo ſtraitly betweene both his armes, that the Serpent perceiuing her ſelfe to bee well nigh ſtrangled, had no other way to ſaue her ſelfe, but by diuing down into the deeps, carrying the knight away with her, who would neuer let goe his gripe, and when they came to the bottome, he found himſelfe by a Pallace in ſuch faire and pleaſant gardens, as it was a wonder: and preſently the Serpent turned into an old man, which ſaid to him ſuch things as there is no more to be deſired. Two figs for the *great Captaine*, and that *Diego Garcia*, of whom you ſpeake.

Dorotea hearing him ſpeake thus, ſaid to *Cardenio*, mee thinkes our hoſt wants but little to make vp a ſecond part of *Don-Quixote*? So it ſeemes to me likewiſe replied *Cardenio*, for as we may coniecture by his words, he certainly beleeues that euery thing written in thoſe bookes paſſed iuſt as it is laid downe, and barefooted friers would be ſcarce able to perſwade him the contrary. Know friend (quoth the Curate to the Inkeeper) that there was neuer any ſuch mā as *Felixmarte* of *Hircania*, or *Don Cirongilio* of *Thracia*, nor other ſuch knights, as books of Chiualry recount. For all is but a deuice and fiction of idle wits that compoſed them, to the end that thou ſayeſt, to paſſe ouer the time as your readers do in reading of thē. For I ſincerely ſweare vnto thee, that there were neuer ſuch knights in the world, nor ſuch aduentures and rauings hapned in it. Caſt that bone to another dog quoth the Inkeeper, as though I knew not how many numbers are fiue, and where the ſhoe wrets me now. I pray you Sir goe not about to giue me pappe, for by the Lord I am not ſo white. Is it not a good ſport that you labour to perſwade mee that al that which theſe good books ſay, are but rauings & fables, they being printed by grace & priuiledge of the Lords of the priuie Counſell; as if they were folke that would permit-

Digitized by Google

ſo

so many lies to be printed at once: and so many battels and inchantments, as are able to make a man runne out of his wits. I haue told thee already friend (said the Curate) that this is done for the recreation of our idle thoughts: and so euen as in welgouernd cõmonwealths the plaies of Chesse, Tennis and Trucks are tollerated for the pastime of some men, which haue none other occupation, and either ought not, or cannot work: euen so such books are permitted to be printed: presuming, (as in truth they ought) that no man would be found so simple & ignorant, as to hold any of these bookes for a true history. And if my leasure permitted, & that it were a thing requisite for this auditory, I could say many things cõcerning the subiect of books of knighthood, to the end that they should be well contriued, and also be pleasant and profitable to the readers: but I hope somtime to haue the commoditie to communicate my conceit with those that may redresse it. And in the meane while you may beleeue good mine host what I haue said, and take to you your bookes, and agree with their truthes or leasings as you please, and much good may it doe you. And I pray God that you hault not in time on the foot that your guest *Don-Quixote* halteth. Not so quoth the Inkeeper, for I will neuer be so wood as to become a Knight errant, for I see well, that what was vsed in the times of these famous knights, is now in no vse nor request.

Sancho came in about the midst of this discourse, and rested much confounded and pensatiue of that which he heard them say, that knights errant were now in no request, and that the bookes of Chiualry, onely contained follies and lies: and purposed with himselfe to see the end of that one voyage of his Lords, and that if it sorted not the wished successe which he expected, he resolued to leaue him, and returne home to his wife and children, and accustomed labour. The Inkeeper thought to take away his bookes and budget, but the Curate withheld him saying, stay a while, for I would see what papers are those which are written in so faire a character. The host tooke thẽ out & gaue them to him to read, being in

number ſome eight ſheets with a title written in text letters, which ſaid, *The Hiſtorie of the curious impertinent*: The Curate read two or three lines ſoftly to himſelfe, and ſaid after, truly the title of this Hiſtory doth not miſlike mee, and therefore I am about to read it through. The Inkeeper hearing him ſaid, your reuerence may very well do it, for I aſſure you that ſome gueſts which haue read it here as they trauelled, did commend it exceedingly, and haue begd it of me as earneſtly, but I would neuer beſtow it, hoping ſome day to reſtore it to the owner of this Mallet, who forgot it heere behinde him with theſe bookes and papers, for it may be that hee will ſometime returne, and although I know that I ſhall haue great want of the bookes, yet will I make to him reſtitution, for although I am an Inkeeper, yet God be thanked I am a Chriſtian therewithall, You haue great reaſon my friend quoth the Curate, but yet notwithſtanding if the taſt like me, thou muſt giue me leaue to take a copie thereof; withall my heart replied the hoſt. And as they two talked, *Cardenio* taking the booke began to reade a little of it, and it pleaſing him as much as it had done the Curate, he requeſted him to read it in ſuch ſort as they might al heare him: that I would willingly doe ſaid the Curate, if the time were not now more fit for ſleeping then reading. It were ſufficient repoſe for me ſaid *Dorotea*, to paſſe away the time liſtening to ſome tale or other, for my ſpirit is not yet ſo well quieted, as to affoord me licence to ſleepe, euen then when nature exacteth it. If that be ſo quoth the Curate, I will read it if it were but for curioſitie, perhaps it containeth ſome delightfull matter. Maſter *Nicholas* and *Sancho* intreated the ſame; the Curate ſeeing and knowing that he ſhould therein doe them all a pleaſure, and he himſelfe likewiſe receiue as great, ſaid, ſeeing you will needs heare it, be all of you attentiue, for the Hiſtorie beginneth in this manner.

Digitized by Google

CHAP.

CHAP. VI.

Wherein is rehearsed the Historie of the curious impertinent.

IN *Florence* a rich and famous Citie of *Italie*, in the Prouince called *Tuscane*, there dwelled two rich and principall Gentlemen called *Anselmo* and *Lothario*, which two were so great friends, as they were named for excellency & by *Antonomasia*, by al those that knew them, the two friends. They were both batchelers, and much of one age and manners; all which was of force to make them answere one another with reciprocall amity. True it is, that *Anselmo* was somewhat more inclined to amorous daliance then *Lothario*, who was altogether addicted to hunting. But when occasion exacted it, *Anselmo* would omit his owne pleasures to satisfie his friends, and *Lothario* likewise his, to please *Anselmo*. And by this meanes both their wils were so correspondent, as no clocke could be better ordred then were their desires. *Anselmo* became at last deepely enamoured of a principall and beautifull young Ladie of the same Citie, called *Camila*, being so worthily descended, and she her selfe of such merite therewithall, as he resolued (by the consent of his friend *Lothario*, without whom he did nothing) to demaund her of her parents for wife, and did put his purpose in execution: and *Lothario* himselfe was the messenger, and concluded the matter so to his friends satisfaction, as he was shortly after put in possession of his desires: and *Camila* so contented to haue gotten *Anselmo*, as she ceased not to render Heauen and *Lothario* thankes, by whose meanes she had obtained so good a match. The first dayes, as all marriage daies are wont to be merry; *Lothario* frequented according to the custome, his friend *Anselmos* house, endeuouring to honor, feast and recreat him all the wayes he might possible, but af-

ter the Nuptials were finiſhed, and the concourſe of ſtrangers viſitations and congratulations ſomewhat ceaſed, *Lotharío* alſo began to be ſomewhat more ſlacke then he wonted in going to *Anſelmo* his houſe, deeming it (as it is reaſon that all diſcreet men ſhould) not ſo conuenient to viſite or haunt ſo often the houſe of his friend after marriage, as he would, had he ſtill remained a Batcheler. For although true amitie neyther ſhould, or ought to admit the leaſt ſuſpition: yet notwithſtanding a married mans honour is ſo delicate and tender a thing, as it ſeemes it may be ſometimes impayred euen by very brethren, and how much more by friends. *Anſelmo* noted the remiſnes of *Lotharío*, and did grieuouſly complaine thereof, ſaying, that if he had wiſt by marriage he ſhould thus be depriued of his deereſt conuerſation, he would neuer haue married; and that ſince through the vniforme correſpondencie of them both being free, they had deſerued the ſweet title of *the two friends*, that he ſhould not now permit (becauſe he would be noted circumſpect without any other occaſion) that ſo famous and pleaſing a name ſhould be loſt: and therefore he requeſted him (if it were lawfull to vſe ſuch a terme betweene them two) to returne and be Maſter of his houſe, and come and goe out of it, as he had done before his marriage, aſſuring him that his Spouſe *Camila* had no other pleaſure and will, then that which himſelfe pleaſed ſhe ſhould haue: and that ſhe, after hauing knowne how great was both their friendſhips, was not a little amazed to ſee him become ſo ſtrange.

To all theſe and many other reaſons alleaged by *Anſelmo*, to perſwade *Lotharío* to frequent his houſe: he anſwered with ſo great prudence, diſcretion and warineſſe, as *Anſelmo* remained ſatisfied of his friends good intention herein: and they made an agreement betweene them two, that *Lotharío* ſhould dine at his houſe twice a weeke, and the Holydaies beſides. And although this agreement had paſſed betweene them, yet *Lotharío* purpoſed to do that onely which he ſhould finde moſt expedient for his friends honour, whoſe

reputation he tendered much more deerely then he did his owne; and was wont to say very discreetely, that the married man vnto whom heauen had giuen a beautifull wife, ought to haue as much heede of the friends which hee brought to his house, as he should of the women friends that visited his wife, for that which is not done nor agreed vpon in the Church or Market, nor in publike feasts or stations (being places that a man cannot lawfully hinder his wife from frequenting sometimes at least) are oft-times facilitated, and contriued in a friends or kinswomans house, whom perhaps we neuer suspected. *Anselmo* on the other side affirmed, that therefore married men ought euery one of them to haue some friend who might aduertise them of the faults escaped in their manner of proceeding; for it befals many times, that through the great loue which the husband beares towards his wife, eyther he doth not take notice, or else he doth not aduertise her, because he would not offend her to doe, or omit to doe certaine things, the doing or omitting whereof, might turne to his honour or obloquie: to which things being aduertised by his friend hee might easily apply some remedie: but where might a man find a friend so discreet, loyal and trustie as *Anselmo* demaunds? I know not truely, if not *Lothario*; for he it was that with all solicitude and care regarded the honour of his friend: and therefore endeuoured to clip and diminish the number of the dayes promised, lest he should giue occasion to the idle vulgar, or to the eyes of vagabonds and malitious men to iudge any sinister thing, viewing so rich, comely, noble, and qualified a young man as he was, to haue so free accesse into the house of a woman so beautifull as *Camila*. For though his vertues and modest carriage were sufficiently able to set a bridle to any malignant tongue, yet notwithstanding he would not haue his credit, nor that of his friends called into any question, and therefore would spend most of the dayes that he had agreed, to visite his friend, in other places and exercises; yet fayning excuses so plausible, as his friend admitted them for very reasonable.

nable. And thus the time paſſed on in challenges of vnkindneſſe of the one ſide, and lawfull excuſes of the other.

It ſo fell out, that as both the friends walked on a day together in a field without the Citie, *Anſelmo* ſaid to *Lothario* theſe words enſuing. I know very well friend *Lothario*, that among all the fauours which God of his bounty hath beſtowed vpon me, by making me the ſonne of ſuch parents, and giuing to me with ſo liberall a hand, both the goods of Nature and Fortune. Yet as I cannot anſwere him with ſufficient gratitude for the benefits alreadie receiued, ſo doe I finde my ſelfe moſt highly bound vnto him aboue all others for hauing giuen me ſuch a friend as thou art, and ſo beautifull a wife as *Camila*; being both of you ſuch pawnes as if I eſteeme you not in the degree which I ought, yet doe I hold you as deere as I may. And yet poſſeſſing all thoſe things which are wont to bee the all and ſome that are wont, and may make a man happy, I liue notwithſtanding the moſt ſullen and diſcontented life of the world. Being troubled I know not ſince when and inwardly wreſted with ſo ſtrange a deſire, and extrauagant from the common vſe of others, as I maruaile at my ſelfe, and do condemne and rebuke my ſelfe when I am alone, and doe labour to conceale and couer mine owne deſires, all which hath ſerued me to as little effect, as if I had proclaimed mine owne errors purpoſely to the world. And ſeeing that it muſt finally breake out, my will is that it bee onely communicated to the treaſury of thy ſecret. Hoping that by it and mine owne induſtrie which (as my true friend) thou wilt vſe to helpe me, I ſhall be quickly freed from the anguiſh it cauſeth, and by thy meanes my ioy and contentment ſhall arriue to the paſſe that my diſcontents haue brought mee through mine owne folly.

Lothario ſtood ſuſpended at *Anſelmos* ſpeech, as one that could not imagine, to what ſo prolixe a preuention and preamble tended: And although he reuolued and imagined ſundry things in his mind which hee deemed might afflict his friend

friend, yet did he euer ſhoote wide from the marke which in truth it was: and that he might quickly eſcape that agonie, wherin the ſuſpenſion held him, he ſaid that his friend did notable iniurie to their amitie in ſearching out wreathings and ambages in the diſcouery of his moſt hidden thoughts to him, ſeeing he might aſſure himſelfe certainly, either to receiue counſels of him how to entertaine, or elſe remedy & meanes how to accompliſh them. It is very true, anſwered *Anſelmo*, and with that confidence I let thee to vnderſtand friend *Lothario*, that the deſire which vexeth me, is a longing to know whether my wife *Camila* be as good and perfect, as I doe account her: and I cannot wholy reſt ſatisfied of this truth, but by making triall of her, in ſuch ſort, as it may giue manifeſt argument of the degree of her goodneſſe, as the fire doth ſhew the value of gold. For I am of opinió (O friend) that a woman is of no more worth or vertue then that which is in her, after ſhe hath bene ſolicited, & that ſhe alone is ſtrong, who cannot be bowed by the promiſes, gifts, teares, & cõtinual importunities of importunate louers. For what thanks is it (quoth he) for a woman to be good, if no bodie ſay or teach her ill? What wonder that ſhe be retired and timerous, if no occaſion be miniſtred to her of diſſolution, and chiefly ſhe that knowes ſhe hath a husband readie to kill her, for the leaſt argument of lightneſſe? So that ſhe which is onely good for feare, or want of occaſion, will I neuer hold in that eſtimation, that I would the other ſollicited and purſued, who notwithſtanding comes away crowned with the victory. And therefore being moued as well by theſe reaſons, as by many other, which I could tell you, which accredite and fortifie mine opinion, I deſire that my wife *Camila* doe alſo paſſe through the pikes of thoſe proofes and difficulties, and purifie and refine her ſelfe in the fire of being requeſted, ſolicited and purſued; and that by one whoſe worthes and valour may deſerue acceptance in her opinion: and if ſhe beare away the Palme of the victory, as I beleeue ſhe will, I ſhall account my fortune matchleſſe, and may brag that my deſires are in

* *Caſta eſt quàm nemo rogauit.*

their height: and will ſay that a ſtrong woman hath falne to my lot, of whom the wiſe man ſaith, *Who ſhall finde her?* and when it ſhall ſucceede contrary to mine expectation, I ſhall with the pleaſure that I will conceiue to ſee how rightly it iumps with mine opinió, beare very indifferētly the griefe wch in all reaſon, this ſo coſtly a triall muſt ſtir in me. And preſuppoſing that nothing which thou ſhalt ſay to me, ſhall be auaileable to hinder my deſigne, or diſſwade me from putting my purpoſe in execution; I would haue thy ſelfe deere friend *Lothario* to prouide thee to be the inſtrument, that ſhall labour this worke of my liking, and I will giue thee oportunitie enough to performe the ſame without omitting any thing that may further thee in the ſolicitation of an honeſt, noble, warie, retired, and paſſionleſſe woman.

And I am chiefly moued to cōmit this ſo hard an enterprize to thy truſt, becauſe I know that if *Camila* be vanquiſhed by thee yet ſhall not the victory arriue to the laſt puſh & vpſhot, but onely to that of accounting a thing to bee done, which ſhall not be done for many good reſpects. So ſhall I remaine nothing offended, and mine iniury concealed in the vertue of thy ſilence; for I know thy care to be ſuch in matters concerning mee, as it ſhall be eternall like that of death. And therfore if thou deſireſt that I may leade a life, deſeruing that name, thou muſt forthwith prouide thy ſelfe to enter into this amorous conflict, and that not languiſhing or ſlouthfully, but with that courage and diligence which my deſire expecteth, and the confidence I haue in our amitie aſſureth me.

Theſe were the reaſons vſed by *Anſelmo* to *Lothario*, to all which he was ſo attentiue as vntill he ended, hee did not once vnfold his lippes to ſpeake a word ſaue thoſe which we haue aboue related: and ſeeing that he ſpoke no more; after he had beheld him a good while, as a thing that he had neuer before, and did therefore ſtrike him into admiration and amazement, he ſaid. Friend *Anſelmo* I cannot perſwade my

ſelfe, that the words you haue ſpoken be other then ieſts, for had I thought that thou wert in earneſt, I would not haue ſuffered thee to paſſe on ſo farre, and by lending thee no eare, would haue excuſed this tedious Oration. I doe verily imagine, that either thou doeſt not know me, or I thee: but not ſo: for I know thee to bee *Anſelmo*, and thou, that I am *Lothario*: the dammage is, that I thinke thou art not the *Anſelme* thou waſt wont to bee, and perhaps thou deemeſt me not to be the accuſtomed *Lothario* that I ought to be: for the things which thou haſt ſpoken are not of that *Anſelmo* my friend; nor thoſe which thou ſeekeſt, ought to be demaunded of that *Lothario*, of whom thou haſt notice. For true friends ought to proue and vſe their friends as the *Poet* ſaid, *Vſque ad Aras*. That is, that they ſhould in no ſort imploy them or implore their aſſiſtance in things offenſiue vnto God: and if a Gentile was of this opinion in matters of friendſhip, how much greater reaſon is it that a Chriſtian ſhould haue that feeling, ſpecially knowing that the celeſtiall amitie is not to be loſt for any humane friendſhip whatſoeuer. And when the friend ſhould throw the barres ſo wide, as to ſet heauenly reſpectes apart, for to compliment with his friend, it muſt not be done on light grounds, or for things of ſmall moment, but rather for thoſe whereon his friends life, & honour wholy depends. Then tell me now *Anſelmo* in which of theſe two things art thou in danger, that I may aduenture my perſon to doe thee a pleaſure; and attempt ſo deteſtable a thing as thou doeſt demaund? none of them truly, but rather doeſt demaund, as I may coniecture, that I doe induſtriouſly labour to depriue thee of thine honour and life together, and in doing ſo, I likewiſe depriue my ſelfe of them both. For if I muſt labour to take away thy credit, it is moſt euident, that I diſpoſe thee of life, for a man without reputation is worſe then a dead man: and I being the inſtrument (as thou deſireſt that I ſhould be) of ſo great harme vnto thee, doe not I become likewiſe thereby diſhonoured, and by the ſame conſequence alſo without life? Heare mee friend *Anſelmo*, and haue

haue patience not to anſwere me vntil I haue ſaid all that I thinke concerning that which thy minde exacteth of thee. For wee ſhall haue after leaſure enough, wherein thou mayeſt reply, and I haue patience to liſten vnto thy reaſons.

I am pleaſed quoth *Anſelmo*, ſay what thou likeſt: And *Lothario* proſecuted his ſpeech in this manner, me thinks *Anſelmo* that thou art now of the *Moores* humours, which can by no meanes be made to vnderſtand the errour of their ſect. Neither by Citations of the holy Scripture, nor by reaſons which conſiſt in ſpeculations of the vnderſtanding, or that are founded in the Articles of the faith: but muſt be wonne by palpable examples, and thoſe, eaſie, intelligible, demonſtratiue and doubtleſſe, by Mathematicall demonſtrations which cannot be denied. Euen as when wee ſay: *If from two equall parts, we take away two parts equall, the parts that remaine are alſo equall.* And when they cannot vnderſtand this, as in truth they do not, we muſt demonſtrate it to them with our hands, and lay it before their eyes, and yet for all this, nought can auaile to winne them in the end to giue credit to the verities of our religion, which very termes and manner of proceeding, I muſt vſe with thee, by reaſon that the deſire which is ſprung in thee, doth ſo wander and ſtray from all that which beares the ſhadow onely of reaſon, as I doubt much that I ſhall ſpend my time in vaine, which I ſhall beſtow to make thee vnderſtand thine owne ſimplicity, for I will giue it no other name at this preſent: and in good earneſt I was almoſt perſwaded to leaue thee in thine humour, in puniſhment of thine inordinate and vnreaſonable deſire, but that the loue which I beare towards thee doth not conſent, I vſe to thee ſuch rigour, or leaue thee in ſo manifeſt a danger of thine owne perdition. And that thou maiſt clearely ſee it, tell me *Anſelmo*, haſt not thou ſaid vnto me that I muſt ſolicite one that ſtands vpon her reputation: perſwade an honeſt woman, make proffers to one that is not paſſionate or engaged? and ſerue a diſcreete woman? yes, thou haſt ſaid

all

all this. Well then, if thou knoweſt already that thou haſt a retyred, honeſt, vnpaſſionate, and prudent wife, what ſeekeſt thou more? And if thou thinkeſt that ſhe will reſt victorious after all mine aſſaults, as doubtleſly ſhe will, what better titles wouldeſt thou after beſtow vpon her, then thoſe ſhe poſſeſſeth already? eyther it proceeds becauſe thou doſt not thinke of her as thou ſayeſt, or els becauſe thou knoweſt not what thou demaundeſt. If thou doſt not acount her ſuch as thou prayſeſt her, to what end wouldeſt thou proue her, but rather as an euill perſon, vſe her as thou likeſt beſt: but if ſhe be as good as thou beleeueſt, it were an impertinent thing to make tryall of truth it ſelfe. For after it is made, yet it will ſtill reſt onely with the ſame reputation it had before. Wherfore it is a concluding reaſon that to attempt things whence rather harme may after reſult vnto vs then good, is the part of raſh and diſcourſeleſſe braines, and principally when they deale with thoſe things whereunto they are not compelled or driuen, and that they ſee euen a farre off, how the attempting the like is manifeſt folly. Difficult things are vndertaken for God, or the world, or both. Thoſe that are done for God are the workes of the Saints, indeauouring to leade Angels liues in fraile and mortall bodies. Thoſe of the world are the trauels and toiles of ſuch as croſſe ſuch immenſe ſeas, trauell through ſo aduerſe regions, and conuerſe with ſo many nations, to acquire that which wee call the goods of fortune. And the things acted for God and the world together, are the worthy exploits of reſolute and valorous martiall men, which ſcarce perceiue ſo great a breach in the aduerſarie wall, as the common billet is wont to make, when leauing all feare apart, without making any diſcourſe, or taking notice of the manifeſt danger that threatens them, borne away by the wings of deſire and honour to ſerue God, their Nation and Prince, doe throw themſelues boldly into the throate of a thouſand menacing deathes which expect them.

Theſe are things wont to be practiſed, and it is honour,

glory and profite to attempt them, be they neuer ſo full of inconueniences and danger: but that which thou ſayeſt, thou wilt trie and put in practiſe, ſhall neuer gaine thee Gods glorie, the goods of Fortune, or renoune among men: for ſuppoſe that thou bringeſt it to paſſe according to thine owne fantaſie, thou ſhalt remaine nothing more contented, rich or honorable then thou art already: and if thou doeſt not, then ſhalt thou ſee thy ſelfe in the greateſt miſerie of any wretch liuing: for it will little auaile thee then, to thinke that no man knowes the diſgrace befallen thee, it being ſufficient both to afflict and diſſolue thee, that thou knoweſt it thy ſelfe, and for greater confirmation of this truth I will repeate vnto thee a ſtanza of the famous Poet *Ludouico Taſſilo* in the end of his firſt part of Saint *Peters* teares, which is:

The griefe increaſeth, and withall the ſhame,
In Peter *when the day it ſelfe did ſhow.*
And though he no man ſees, yet doth he blame,
Himſelfe becauſe he had offended ſo:
For breſts magnanimous not onely tame
When that of others, they are ſeene, they know.
But of themſelues aſham'de they often bee,
Though none but Heauen and Earth their errour ſee.

So that thou canſt not excuſe thy griefe, with ſecrecie be it neuer ſo great, but rather ſhalt haue continuall occaſion to weepe, if not watry teares from thine eyes, at leaſt teares of bloud from thy heart, ſuch as that ſimple Doctor wept, of whom our Poet makes mention, who made triall of the veſſell, which the prudent *Reynaldos* vpon maturer diſcourſe refuſed to deale withall: and although it be but a Poeticall fiction, yet doth it containe many hidden morals, worthy to be noted, vnderſtood and imitated: how much more ſeeing that by what I meane to ſay now, I hope thou ſhalt begin to conceaue the great errour which thou wouldeſt wittingly commit. Tell me *Anſelmo*, if heauen or thy fortunes had

Digitized by Google

made thee Lord and lawfull possessor of a most precious *Diamante*, of whose goodnesse and qualitie all the Lapidaristes that had viewed the same would rest satisfied, and that all of them would ioyntly and vniformely affirme that it arriued in quality, goodnes, and finesse to all that, to which the nature of such a stone might extend it selfe, and that thou thy selfe didst beleeue the same, without witting any thing to the contrary: would it be iust that thou shouldest take an humour to set that *Diamant* betweene an Anuile and a hammer; and to trie there by very force of blowes whether it be so hard and so fine as they say? And farther when thou didst put thy designe in execution, put the case that the stone made resistance to thy foolish triall, yet wouldest thou adde thereby no new valour or esteeme to it: and if it did breake as it might befall, were not then all lost? Yes certainly, and that leauing the owner in all mens opinion for a very poore ignorant person. Then friend *Anselmo*, make account that *Camila* is a most pretious *Diamant*, as well in thine, as in other mens estimation, and it is no reason to put her in contingent danger of breaking, seeing that although she remain in her integrity, she cannot mount to more worth then she hath at the present; & if she faltred, or did not resist, consider euen at this present, what state you would be in then, and how iustly thou mightest then complaine of thy selfe, for being cause of her perdition and thine owne? See how there is no jewell in the world comparable to the modest and chaste woman. And that all womens honour consists in the good opinion that's had of them: and seeing that of thy spouse is so great as it arriues to that summe of perfection which thou knowest, why wouldest thou call this verity in question? Know friend that a woman is an imperfect creature, and should therefore haue nothing cast in her way to make her stumble and fall, but rather to cleere, and doe all incumbrances away out of it, to the end she may without impeachment run with a swift course to obtaine the perfection she wants, which onely consists in being vertuous.

Digitized by Google

The Naturalists recount, that the *Ermine* is a little beast that hath a most white skinne, and that when the hunters would chase him they vse this art to take him: as soone as they finde out his haunt, and places where he hath recourse, they thwart them with mire and dirt, and after when they discrie the little beast, they pursue him towards those places which are defiled, and the *Ermine* espying the mire standes still, and permits himselfe to be taken and captiued in exchange of not passing through the mire, or slayning of his whitenesse, which it esteemes more then eyther liberty or life. The honest and chaste woman is an Ermine, and the vertue of chastitie is whiter and purer then Snow: and hee that would not lose it, but rather desires to keepe and preserue it, must proceede with a different stile from that of the *Ermine*. For they must not propose and lay before her the mire of the passions, flatteries and seruices of importunate louers; for perhaps she shall not haue the naturall impulse and force which commonly through proper debility is wont to stumble, to passe ouer those incumbrances safely: and therefore it is requisite to free the passage and take them away, and lay before her the cleerenesse of vertue, and the beauty comprized in good fame. The good woman is also like vnto a bright and cleere mirrour of *Crystall*, and therfore is subiect to bee stained and dimmed by euery breath that toucheth it. The honest woman is to be vsed as reliques of Saints, to wit, she must be honoured but not touched. The good woman is to be kept and prized like a faire Garden full of sweet flowers and Roses, that is held in estimation; whose owner permits no man to enter and trample, or touch his flowers, but holdes it to be sufficient that they standing a farre off without the railes may ioy the delightfull sight, and flagrancie thereof. Finally I will repeat certaine verses vnto thee that haue now come to my memorie, the which were repeated of late in a new play, and seeme to me very fit for the purpose of which we treat. A prudent olde man did giue a neighbour of his that had a daughter, counsaile to

keepe

keepe and shut her vp: and among many other reasons hee vsed these.

TRuely woman is of glasse,
Therefore no man ought to trie
If she broke or not might bee,
Seeing all might come to passe.
Yet to breake her tis more easie,
And it is no wit to venter
A thing of so brittle temper,
That to saulder is so queasie.
And I would haue all men dwell
In this truth, and reasons ground,
That if Danaes, *may be found*
Golden showers are found as well.

All that which I haue said to thee *Anselmo* vntill this instant hath beene for that, which may touch thy selfe: and it is now high time that somewhat be heard concerning me. And if by chance I shall be somewhat prolixe, I pray thee to pardon me; for the *Labyrinth* wherein thou hast entred, and out of which thou wouldest haue me to free thee requires no lesse. Thou holdest me to be thy friend, and yet goest about to dispoyle me of mine honour, being a thing contrary to all amitie; and dost not onely pretend this, but dost likewise indeauour that I should robbe thee of the same, that thou wouldest depriue me of mine is euident; for when *Camila* shall perceiue that I sollicite her as thou demaundest, it is certaine that she will esteeme of me, as of one quite deuoide of wit and indiscreete, seeing I intend and doe a thing so repugnant to that, which the being that him I am, and thine amitie doe binde me vnto; that thou wouldest haue me rob thee thereof is as manifest, for *Camila* seeing mee thus to court her, must imagine that I haue noted some lightnesse in her, which lent me boldnes thus to discouer vnto her my depraued desires, and she holding her selfe to be thereby iniu-

red and diſhonoured, her diſgrace muſt alſo concerne thee as a principall part of her. And hence ſprings that which is commonly ſaid, that the husband of the adulterous wife, although he know nothing of her lewdneſſe, nor hath giuen any occaſion to her to doe what ſhe ought not, nor was able any way to hinder by diligence, care, or other means his diſgrace, yet is intituled with a vituperious and vile name, and is in a manner beheld by thoſe that know his wiues malice with the eyes of contempt; whereas they ſhould indeed regard him rather with thoſe of compaſsion, ſeeing that hee fals into that misfortune, not ſo much through his owne default, as through the light fantaſie of his wicked conſort. But I will ſhew thee the reaſon why a badde womans husband is iuſtly diſhonoured and contemned, although he be ignorant and guiltleſſe thereof, and cannot preuent nor hath giuen to it any occaſion. And be not grieued to heare me, ſeeing the benefite of the diſcourſe ſhall redound vnto thy ſelfe.

When God created our firſt parent in the terreſtriall *Paradice*, the holy Scripture ſaith, *that God infuſed ſleepe into Adam*, and that being aſleepe he tooke out a ribbe out of his left ſide, of which hee formed our mother *Eue*, and as ſoone as *Adam* awaked and beheld her he ſaid, this is fleſh of my fleſh, and bone of my bones. And God ſaid, for this ſhall a man leaue his father and his mother, and they ſhall be two in one fleſh, and then was the diuine Sacrament of Matrimonie firſt inſtituted, with ſuch indiſſoluble knots, as onely may be by death diſſolued. And this marueilous Sacrament is of ſuch efficacie and force, as it makes two different perſons to be one very fleſh, and yet operates farther in good married folke: For although they haue two ſoules, yet it makes them to haue but one will. And hence it proceeds, that by reaſon the wiues fleſh is one and the very ſame with her husbands, the blemiſhes or defects that taint it, doe alſo redound into the husbands, although he (as we haue ſaid) haue miniſtred no occaſion to receiue that dammage. For

as

as all the whole body feeles any paine of the foote, head or any other member, becauſe it is all one fleſh: and the head ſmarts at the griefe of the Anele, although it hath not cauſed it, ſo is the husband participant of his wiues diſhonour, becauſe he is one and the ſelfeſame with her. And by reaſon that all the honours and diſhonours of the world are, and ſpring from fleſh and bloud; and thoſe of the badde woman be of this kinde, it is forcible, that part of them fall to the husbands ſhare, and that he be accounted diſhonourable, although he wholly be ignorant of it. See then *Anſelmo* to what perill thou doeſt thruſt thy ſelfe, by ſeeking to diſturbe the quietneſſe and repoſe wherein thy wife liues: and for how vain & impertinent curioſitie thou wouldeſt ſtir vp the humors which are now quiet in thy chaſte ſpouſes breſt; note how the things thou doſt aduenture to gaine, is of ſmal moment, but that which thou ſhalt loſe ſo great, that I muſt leaue it in his point, hauing no wordes ſufficiently able to indeere it. But if all that I haue ſaid be not able to moue thee from thy badde purpoſe: thou moyeſt well ſeeke out for ſome other inſtrument of thy diſhonour and miſhaps: for I meane not to be one, although I ſhould therefore loſe thine amitie, which is the greateſt loſſe that might any way befall mee.

Here the prudent *Lotharie* held his peace, and *Anſelmo* remained ſo confounded and melancholie, as hee could not anſwere a word to him, for a very great while. But in the end he ſaid. I haue liſtned friend *Lotharie*, to all that which thou haſt ſaid vnto mee, with the attention which thou haſt noted. And haue perceiued in thy reaſons, examples, & ſimilitudes, the great diſcretion wherewithall thou art indowed, and the perfection of amitie that thou haſt attained: and do alſo confeſſe and ſee, that if I follow not thine aduice, but ſhould leaue vnto mine owne, I doe but ſhunne the good and purſue the euill. Yet oughteſt thou likewiſe to conſider how herein I ſuffer the diſeaſe which ſome women are wont to haue that long to eate earth, lime, coales, and other far

worſe and loathſome things; euen to the very ſight, and much more to the taſte. So that it is behouefull to vſe ſome arte by which I may be cured, and this might be eaſily done, by beginning only to ſolicite *Camila* although you did it but weake and fainedly: for I know ſhee will not be ſo ſoft and pliable, as to daſh her honeſtie about the ground at the firſt encounters, and I will reſt ſatisfied with this commencement alone: and thou ſhalt herein accompliſh the obligation thou oweſt to our friendſhip, by not only reſtoring mee to life, but alſo by perſwading me not to diſpoile my ſelfe of mine honour. And thou art bound to doe this for one reaſon that I ſhall alledge, to wit, that I being reſolued as indeed I am to make this experience, thou oughteſt not to permit being my friend that I ſhould bewray my defect herein to a ſtranger, whereby I might very much indanger my reputation, which thou laboureſt ſo much to preſerue, and though thy credit may loſe ſome degrees in *Camilas* opinion, whilſt thou doſt ſolicite her, it matters not very much or rather nothing; for very ſhortly, when we ſhall eſpie in her the integritie that we expect, thou maiſt open vnto her ſincerely the drift of our practice, by which thou ſhalt againe recouer thine impaired reputation. Therefore ſeeing the aduenture is little, and the pleaſure thou ſhalt doe mee by the enterpriſing thereof ſo, too great, I pray thee do it, though euer ſo many incumbrances repreſent themſelues to thee, for (as I haue promiſed) with only thy beginning, I will reſt ſatisfied and account the cauſe concluded.

Lothario perceauing the firme reſolution of *Anſelmo*, and nothing elſe occurring forcibly diſſwaſiue, nor knowing what other reaſons to vſe, that might hinder this his precipitate reſolution: and noting withall how hee threatned to breake the matter of this his indiſcreet deſires to a ſtranger: he determined to auoid greater inconueniences to giue him ſatisfaction, and performe his demaund, with purpoſe and reſolution to guide the matter ſo diſcreetly, as without troubling *Camila's* thoughts, *Anſelmo* ſhould reſt contented,

and therefore intreated him not to open his minde to any other, for he himselfe would vndertake that enterprise, and beginne it when soeuer hee pleased. *Anselmo* imbraced him very tender and louingly, and gratified him as much for that promise, as if he had done him some very great fauour: and there they accorded betweene them, that he should beginne the worke the very next day insuing, for he would giue him place and leasure to speake alone with *Camila*, and would likewise prouide him of money, jewels, and other things to present vnto her. He did also admonish him to bring musicke vnder her windowes by night, and write verses in her praise, and if he would not take the paine to make them, he himselfe would compose them for him. *Lotharie* promised to performe all himselfe, yet with an intention far wide from *Anselmos*; and with this agreement they returned to *Anselmos* house, where they found *Camila* somewhat sad and carefull, expecting her husbands returne, who had stayed longer abroade that day then his custome. *Lotharie* leauing him at his house, returned to his owne, as pensiue as he had left *Anselmo* contented, and knew not what plot to lay, to issue out of that impertinent affaire with prosperous successe. But that night hee bethought himselfe of a manner how to deceaue *Anselmo* without offending *Camila*: and so the next day insuing hee came to his friends house to dinner, where *Camila* knowing the great good will her husband bore towards him, did receaue and entertaine him very kindly with the like, dinner being ended, and the table taken vp, *Anselmo* requested *Lotharie* to keepe *Camila* company vntil his returne, for hee must haue gone about an affaire that concerned him greatly, but would returne againe within an houre and a halfe. *Camila* intreated her husband to stay, and *Lotharie* proferd to goe and keepe him companie, but nothing could preuaile with *Anselmo*, but rather he importuned his friend *Lotharie*, to remaine and abide there his returne, because hee must goe to treate of a matter of much consequence. He also commanded *Camila* not to leaue *Lo-*

Digitized by Google

tharie

thario alone vntill he came backe. And ſo hee departed leauing *Camila* and *Lothario* together at the table, by reaſon that all the attendants and ſeruants were gone to dinner.

Here *Lothario* ſaw that he was entred into the liſts, which his friend ſo much deſired, which his aduerſarie before him who was with her beautie able to ouercome a whole ſquadron of armed Knights; ſee then if *Lothario* had not reaſon to feare himſelfe? but that which he did at the firſt onſet was to lay his elbow on the arme of his chaire, and his hand on his cheeke, and deſiring *Camila* to beare with his reſpectleſneſſe therein, he ſaid he would repoſe a little, whileſt hee attended *Anſelmo's* comming. *Camila* anſwered that ſhee thought hee might take his eaſe better on the cuſhions of ſtate, and therefore prayed him hee would enter into the parler and lye on them. But he excuſed himſelfe, and ſo remained aſleepe in the ſame place, vntill *Anſelmos* returne, who comming in, and finding his wife in her chamber and *Lothario* a ſleepe, made full account, that by reaſon of his long ſtay, they had time enough both to talke, and repoſe, and therefore expected very greedily the houre wherein his friend ſhould awake, to goe out with him, and learne what ſucceſſe he had: all ſucceeded as he wiſhed, for *Lothario* aroſe, and both of them went abroade, and then he demaunded of him what hee deſired: and *Lothario* anſwered that it ſeemed not to him ſo good to diſcouer al his meaning at the firſt, and therefore had done no other thing at that time, then ſpeake a little of her beautie and diſcretion, for it ſeemed to him that this was the beſt preamble he could vſe to gaine by little and little ſome intereſt and poſſeſſion in her acceptance, to diſpoſe her thereby the better to giue eare againe to his wordes more willingly, imitating therein the Diuels craft when hee meanes to deceaue any one that is vigilant and carefull, for then hee tranſlates himſelfe into an Angell of light, being one of darkeneſſe, and laying before him apparent goods, diſcouers what hee is in the end, and brings his intention to paſſe, if his guiles bee not at the beginning de-

tected. All this did greatly like *Anselmo*, who said that hee would affoorde him euery day as much leasure, although he did not goe abroade, for hee would spend the time so at home, as *Camila* should neuer be able to suspect his drift.

It therefore befell, that many daies passed, which *Lotharie* did willingly ouerslip, and said nothing to *Camila*, yet did he euer soothe *Anselmo*, and told him, that hee had spoken to her, but could neuer winne her to giue the least argument of flexibilitie, or make way for the feebliest hope that might be: but rather affirmed that shee threatned him, that if hee did not repell his impertinent desires, shee would detect his indirect proceedings to her husband. It is well quoth *Anselmo*. Hitherto *Camila* hath resisted wordes, it is therefore requisite to trie what resistance she wil make against works. I will giue thee to morrow foure thousand crownes in gold, to the end thou maist offer, and also bestow them on her: and thou shalt haue as many more to buy jewels, wherewithall to baile her: for women are naturally inclined, and specially if they be faire (be they euer so chast) to goe braue and gorgeously attired, and if thee can ouercome this temptation, I will remaine pleased, and put thee to no more trouble. *Lotharie* answered that seeing he had begun, he would beare his enterprise on to an end, although he made full account, that he should depart from the conflict, both tyred and vanquished. He receaued the foure thousand crownes the next day, and at once with them foure thousand perplexities, for he knew not what to inuent, to lie a new; but concluded finally to tell to his friend how *Camila* was as inflexible at gifts and promises as at words, and therefore it would be in vaine to trauaile any more in her pursuite, seeing he should doe nothing else but spend the time in vaine.

But fortune which guided these affaires in an other manner, so disposed, that *Anselmo* hauing left *Lotharie* and *Camila* alone as he was wont, entred secretly into a chamber, and through the cranies and chinks did listen and see what they would doe: where he perceaued that *Lotharie* in the

Digitized by Google

the ſpace of halfe an houre ſpoke not a word to *Camila*, nor yet would he haue ſpoken though hee had remained there a whole age, and thereupon ſurmiſed ſtraight, that all that which his friend had told him of *Camilas* anſweres and his owne ſpeech were but fictions and vntruthes, and that hee might the more confirme himſelfe, and ſee whether it were ſo, he came forth and calling *Lotharie* apart, he demaunded of him what *Camila* had ſaid, and in what humour ſhee was at the preſent? *Lotharie* anſwered that he meant not euer any more to ſound her in that matter, for ſhee replied to him ſo vntowardly and ſharply, as he durſt not attempt any more to ſpeake vnto her of ſuch things. O, quoth *Anſelmo*, *Lotharie*, *Lotharie*, how euill doſt thou anſwere to the affection thou oweſt me, or to the confidence I did repoſe in thee? I haue ſtood beholding thee all this while through the hole of that locke, and ſaw how thou neuer ſpokeſt one word to her. Whereby I doe alſo collect, that thou haſt not yet once accoſted her, and if it be ſo, as doubtleſly it is, ſay, why doſt thou deceaue me? or why goeſt thou about fraudulently to depriue me of thoſe meanes, whereby I may obtaine my deſires? *Anſelmo* ſaid no more, yet what he ſaid was ſufficient to make *Lotharie* confuſed and aſhamed, who taking it to be a blemiſh to his reputation to bee found in a lie, ſwore to *Anſelmo*, that he would from thence forward ſo indeuour to pleaſe his minde and tell him no more leaſings, as hee himſelfe might perceaue the ſucceſſe thereof, if he did againe curiouſly lye in watch for him, a thing which hee might well excuſe, becauſe his moſt ſerious labour to ſatisfie his deſire, ſhould remoouc all ſhadowe of ſuſpicion. *Anſelmo* beleeued him, and that he might giue him the greater commodity, and leſſe occaſion of feare, he reſolued to abſent himſelfe from his houſe ſome eight daies, and goe to viſit a friend of his, that dwelled in a Village not farre from the Cittie, and therefore dealt with his friend that he ſhould ſend a meſſenger to call for him very earneſtly, that vnder that pretext, he might finde an excuſe to *Camila* for his departure,

Digitized by Google

O infortunate and inconsiderate *Anselmo*, what is that which thou doest? what doest thou contriue? or what is that thou goest about? behold thou workest thine owne ruine, laying plots of thine owne dishonour, and giuing order to thy proper perdition. Thy wife *Camila* is good, thou dost possesse her in quiet and peaceable manner, no man surpriseth thy delights, her thoughts transgresse not the limits of her house. Thou art her heauen on earth, and the goale to which her desires aspire. Thou art the accomplishment and summe of her delectation, thou art the squire by which shee measureth and directeth her will, adiusting wholy with thine and with that of heauen. Since then the mines of her honour, beautie, modestie, and recollection, bountifully afford thee without any toile, all the treasures contained in them, or thou canst desire, why wouldest thou digge the earth, and seeke out new vaines, and new seene treasures exposing thy selfe to the danger, that thy labours may turne to wracke, seeing in fine, that they are only sustained by the weake supporters of her fraile nature? remember how hee that seekes the impossible, may iustly bee refused of that which is possible, according vnto that which the Poet saith:

IN death for life I seeke.
Health in infirmitie.
For issue in a dungeon deepe:
In iayles for libertie,
And in a treachour loyaltie.
But enuious fate, which still
Conspires to worke mine ill,
With Heauen hath thus decreed;
That easie things should be to me denide
Cause I craue th'impossible.

Anselmo departed the next day following to the Village, telling *Camila* at his departure, that whilest hee were absent his friend *Lothario* would come and see to the affaires of his

Digitized by Google

houſe, and to eate with her, and deſired her therefore, to make as much of him, as ſhee would doe of his owne perſon. *Camila* like a diſcreet and modeſt woman, was grieued at the order her husband did giue to her, and requeſted him to render how indecent it was that any one ſhould poſſeſſe the chaire of his table, he being abſent, and if hee did it, as doubting her inſufficiencie, to manage his houſhold affaires, that at leaſt he ſhould make triall of her that one time, and ſhould clearely perceaue how ſhee was able to diſcharge matters of farre greater conſequence. *Anſelmo* replyed, that what hee commanded was his pleaſure, and therefore ſhee had nothing elſe to doe, but hold downe the head, and obay it. *Camila* anſwered, that ſhee would doe ſo, although it was very much againſt her will. In fine her husband departed, and *Lotharie* came the next day following to the houſe, where hee was entertained by *Camila* very friendly, but would neuer treate with *Lotharie* alone, but euermore was compaſſed by her ſeruant and waiting Maidens, but chiefly by one called *Leonela*, whome ſhee loued dearely; as one that had beene brought vp with her in her Fathers houſe, euen from their infancie, and when ſhee did marry *Anſelmo*, ſhee brought her from thence in her company.

The firſt three dayes *Lotharie* ſpoke not a word, although he might, when the tables were taken vp, and that the folke of the houſe went haſtely to dinner, for ſo *Camila* had commanded, and did giue *Leonela* order beſides to dine before her ſelfe, and that ſhee ſhould ſtill keepe by her ſide: but the gyrle which had her fancie otherwiſe imployed in thinges more pleaſing her humour, and needed thoſe houres and times for the accompliſhing of them, did not alwaies accompliſh ſo punctually her Ladies command, but now and then would leaue her alone with that were her Ladies beheaſt. But the honeſt preſence of *Camila*, the grauitie of her face, and the modeſtie of her carriage was ſuch, as it ſerued as a bridle to reſtraine *Lotharios* tongue. But the benefit of *Camilas* many vertues, ſetting ſilence to *Lotharios* ſpeech, re-

iulted afterward to both their harmes. For though the tongue ſpoke not, yet did his thoughts diſcourſe, and had leaſure afforded them to contemplate, part by part, all the extremes of worth and beautie that were cumulated in *Camila* potent to inflame a ſtatue of frozen Marble: how much more an heart of fleſh. *Lotharie* did only behold her in the time and ſpace he ſhould ſpeake vnto her, and did then conſider how worthy ſhee was to be loued. And this conſideration did by little and little giue aſſaults to the reſpects which he ought to haue borne towards his friend *Anſelmo*: a thouſand times did hee determine to abſent himſelfe from the Cittie, and goe where *Anſelmo* ſhould neuer ſee him, nor hee *Camila* ſbut the delight hee tooke in beholding her did againe with-hold and hinder his reſolutions. When hee was alone he would condemne himſelfe of his mad deſigne, and tearme himſelfe a badde friend and worſe *Chriſtian*, hee made diſcourſes and compariſons betweene himſelfe and *Anſelmo*, all which did finiſh in this point that *Anſelmos* foolhardineſſe, and madneſſe was greater, then his owne infidelitie, and that if hee might bee as eaſily excuſed before God, for that he meant to doe, as he would be before men, he needed not to feare any puniſhment ſhould bee inflicted on him for the crime: finally, *Camilas* beautie and worths, aſſiſted by the occaſion which the ignorant husband had thruſt into his fiſts, did wholly ruine and ouerthrow *Lotharios* his loyaltie, and therefore without regarding any other thing then that to which his pleaſure conducted him, about a three dayes after *Anſelmos* departure (which time he had ſpent in a continuall batraile and reſiſtance of his contending thoughts) he beganne to ſolicite *Camila*, with ſuch trouble of the ſpirits and ſo amorous wordes, as ſhee was ſtrucken almoſt beſide her ſelfe with wonder, and made him no other anſwere, but ariſing from the table, flung away in a furie into her chamber. But yet for all this drines, *Lotharios* his hope (which is wont euermore to bee borne at once with loue) was nothing diſmayed, but rather accounted the more

of

of *Camila*, who perceiuing that in *Lothario*, which she neuer durst before to imagine, knew not what she might doe; but it seeming vnto her to be a thing neither secure nor honest, to giue him occasion or leisure to speake vnto him againe, determined to send one vnto her husband *Anselmo* the same very night, as indeed she did, with a letter to recal him home to her house. The subiect of her Letter was this.

CHAP. VII.

Wherein is prosecuted the history of the curious impertinent.

EVen as it is commonly said, that an armie seemes not well without a Generall, or a Castle without a Constable, so doe I affirme that it is much more indecent to see a young married woman without her husband, when hee is not iustly detained away by necessary affaires. I finde my selfe so ill disposed in your absence, and so impatient and impotent to indure it longer, as if you doe not speedily returne, I shall be constrained to returne backe vnto my father, although I should leaue your house without any keeping. For the guard you appointed for me, if it be so that hee may deserue that title, lookes more I beleeue to his own pleasure, then to that which concernes you, therefore seeing you haue wit enough, I will say no more, nor ought I to say more in reason.

Anselmo receiued the Letter, and by it vnderstood that *Lothario* had begun the enterprize, and that *Camila* had answered to him according as he had hoped: and maruellous glad at the newes, he answered his wife by word of mouth, that she should not remoue in any wise from her house, for he would returne with all speed. *Camila* was greatly admired at his answer, which strucke her into a greater perplexitie then she was at the first, being affraid to stay at home, and

alſo to goe to her fathers. For by ſtaying ſhe indangers her honeſty, by going ſhe ſhould tranſgreſſe her husbands commaund: at laſt ſhe reſolued to doe that which was worſt, which was to remaine at home, and not to ſhunne *Lotharios* preſence, leſt ſhe ſhould giue her ſeruants occaſion of ſuſpition: and now ſhe was grieued to haue written what ſhee did to her husband, feareful leſt he ſhould thinke that *Lotharo* had noted in her ſome token of lightneſſe, which might haue moued him to loſe the reſpect which otherwiſe was due vnto her: but confident in her innocency, ſhe caſt her hopes in God and her good thoughts, wherewithall ſhee thought to reſiſt all *Lotharios* words, and by holding her ſilent without making him any anſwere, without giuing any further account of the matter to her husband, leſt thereby ſhe might plunge him in new difficulties & contention with his friend, and did therefore bethinke her how ſhee might excuſe *Lothario* to *Anſelmo*, when he ſhould demaund the occaſion that moued her to write vnto him that Letter. With theſe more honeſt then profitable or diſcreete reſolutions ſhe gaue eare the ſecond day to *Lothario*, who charged her with ſuch reſolution, as her conſtancy beganne to ſtagger, and her honeſty had enough to doe, recurring to her eyes to containe them, leſt they ſhould giue any demonſtration of the amorous compaſsion which *Lotharios* wordes and teares had ſtirred in her breaſt. *Lothario* noted all this, and it inflamed him the more. Finally, he thought that it was requiſite the time and leiſure which *Anſelmoes* abſence affoorded him, to lay cloſer ſiege to that Fortreſſe: and ſo he aſſaulted her preſumptiouſly with the praiſes of her beauty; for there is nothing which with ſuch facility doth render and raze to the ground the proudly creſted Turrets of womens vanity, then the ſame vanity being dilated on by the tongue of adulation and flattery. To be briefe, he did with all diligence vndermine the rocke of her integrity with ſo warlike engines, as although *Camila* were made of braſſe,

ted, promiſed, flattered, perſiſted and fained ſo feelingly, and with ſuch tokens of truth, as trauerſing *Camilas* care of her honour, he came in the end to triumph ouer that which was leaſt ſuſpected, and he moſt deſired: for ſhe rendred her ſelfe, euen *Camila* rendred her ſelfe. But what wonder if *Lotharioes* amitie could not ſtand on foote? A cleere example, plainly demonſtrating that the amorous paſſion is onely vanquiſhed by ſhunning it; and that no body ought to aduenture to wreſtle with ſo ſtrong an aduerſarie: for heauenly forces are neceſſarie for him that would confront the violence of that paſſion, although humane. None but *Leonela* knew the weakeneſſe of her Ladie, for from her the two bad friends and new louers could not conceale the matter: nor yet would *Lothario* diſcouer to *Camila* her husbands pretence, or that he had giuen him wittingly the oportunity whereby he arriued to that paſſe, becauſe ſhe ſhould not imagine that he had gotten her lightly, and by chance, and did not purpoſely ſollicite her.

A few dayes after *Anſelmo* arriued to his houſe, and did not perceiue what wanted therein, to wit, that which it had loſt, and he moſt eſteemed. From thence he went to ſee his friend *Lothario*, whom he found at home, and embracing one another, he demanded of him the newes of his life or of his death. The newes which I can giue thee friend *Anſelmo* quoth *Lothario*, are, that thou haſt a wife who may deſeruedly be the example and garland of all good women. The words that I ſpoke vnto her were ſpent on the ayre, my proffers contemned, and my gifts repulſed, and beſides ſhe hath mockt me notably for certaine fained teares that I did ſhed. In reſolution, euen as *Camila* is the patterne of all beauty, ſo is ſhe a treaſury wherein modeſty reſides, courteſie and warineſſe dwell, and all the other vertues that may beautifie an honourable woman, or make her fortunate. Therefore friend take backe thy money, for here it is ready, and I neuer had occaſion to imploy it: for *Camilas* integrity cannot be ſubdued with ſo baſe things as are gifts and promiſes. And *An-*

Selmo content thy selfe now with the proofes made already, without attempting to make any farther triall. And seeing thou hast past ouer the Sea of difficulties and suspitions with a drie foote, which may and are wont to be had of women: doe not eftsoones enter into the profound depthes of new inconueniences, nor take thou any other Pilot to make experience of the goodnesse and strength of the vessell that heauen hath allotted to thee, to passe therein through the Seas of this world: but make account that thou art harboured in a safe hauen, and there hold thy selfe fast with the Anchors of good consideration, and so rest thee vntill death come to demaund his debt, from the payment whereof no Nobility or priuiledge whatsoeuer can exempt vs. *Anselmo* rested singularly satisfied at *Lotharios* discourse, and did beleeue it as firmely as if it were deliuered by an Oracle; but did intreat him notwithstanding to prosecute his attempt, although it were onely done for curiositie, and to passe away the time; yet not to vse so efficacious meanes, as he hitherto practised: and that he only desired him to write some verses in her praise, vnder the name of *Clori*, for hee would make *Camila* beleeue, how that he was inamoured of a certaine Lady, to whom he did appropriate that name, that hee might celebrate her prayses with the respect due to her honour: and that if he would not take the paynes to inuent them, that he himselfe would willingly compose them. That is not needfull, quoth *Lothario*, for the *Muses* are not so alienated from me, but that they visite mee sometimes in the yeare. Tell you vnto *Camila* what you haue deuised of my loues: and as for the verses, I will make them my selfe, if not so well as the subiect deserues, yet at the least as artificially as I may deuise them. *The impertinent curious man* and his treacherous friend hauing thus agreed, and *Anselmo* returned to his house, he demaunded of *Camila* that which she maruelled he had not asked before, that she should tell vnto him the occasion why she sent vnto him the Letter? *Camila* made answere, because it seemed vnto her, that *Lothario* be-

held her ſomewhat more immodeſtly then when he was at home; but that now ſhe did againe diſſwade her ſelfe, and beleeued that it was but a light ſurmiſe, without any ground, becauſe that ſhe perceiued *Lothario* to loath her preſence, or be by any meanes alone with her. *Anſelmo* tolde her that ſhe might very well liue ſecure for him, for that he knew *Lotharios* affections were beſtowed elſe-where, and that vpon one of the nobleſt damzels of the Citie, whoſe prayſes he ſolemnized vnder the name of *Clori*, and that although he were not, yet was there no cauſe to doubt of *Lotharios* vertue, or the amitie that was betweene them both. Here if *Camila* had not beene premoniſhed by *Lothario* that the loue of *Clori* was but fained, and that he himſelfe had told it to *Anſelmo* to blinde him, that he might with leſſe difficultie celebrate her owne prayſes vnder the name of *Clori*, ſhee had without doubt falne into the deſperate toyles of iealouſie; but being alread aduertiſed, ſhe paſſed ouer that aſſault lightly. The day following they three ſitting together at dinner, *Anſelmo* requeſted *Lothario* to repeate ſome one of the verſes that he had made to his beloued *Clori*; for ſeeing that *Camila* knew her not, he might boldly ſay what he pleaſed. Although ſhe knew her, quoth *Lothario*, yet would I not therefore ſuppreſſe any part of her praiſes. For when any louer praiſeth his Ladie for her beauty, and doth withall taxe her of cruelty, her credit incurres no danger. But befall what it liſt, I compoſed yeſterday a Sonnet of the ingratitude of *Clori*, and is this enſuing.

A SONNET.

AMidſt the ſilence of the darkeſt night,
When ſweeteſt ſleepe inuadeth mortall eyes:
I poore accounte, to heau'n and Clori *bright,*
Giue of the richeſt harmes, which euer riſe.
And at the time, we Phębus *may deuiſe,*
Shine through the Roſeall gates of th'Orient bright,

Google

With

With deepe accents, and sighes in wonted guise
I doe my plaints renew, with maine and might.
And when the Sunne, downe from his starry seat
Directest rayes, towards the earth doth send,
My sighes I double and my sad regrete.
And night returnes, but of my woes no end:
For I finde alwayes in my mortall strife,
Heau'n without eares, and Clori *likewise deafe.*

Camila liked the Sonnet very well, but *Anselmo* best of all; for he praysed it, and said, that the Lady must be very cruell, that would not answere such perspicuous truths, with reciprocall affection. But then *Camila* answered, why then belike all that which inamoured Poets say is true? In as much as Poets, quoth *Lotharo*, they say not truth, but as they are inamoured, they remaine as short as they are true. That is questionlesse, quoth *Anselmo*, all to vnder- p and giue *Lotharo* more credite with *Camila*, who was as careleſse of the cause her husband said so, as she was enamoured of *Lotharo*, and therefore with the delight she tooke in his compositions, but chiefly knowing that his desires and labors were addrest to her selfe, who was the true *Clori*, shee intreated him to repeate some other Sonnet or dittie, if he remembred any. Yes that I do, quoth *Lotharo*, but I beleeue that it is not so good as the first, as you may well iudge, for it is this.

A SONNET.

I Die, and if I cannot be beleeu'd,
My deaths, more certaine, as it is most sure,
To see me at thy feet, of life depriu'd:
Rather then grieue, this thraldome to endure.
Well may I in oblinious shades obscure
Of glory, life, and fauour be denide:
And yet euen there shall in my bosome pure,
The shape of thy faire face ingraude be eyed.

Digitized by Google

For that's a relique, which I do reserue
For the last traunces, my contentions threaten,
VVhich midst thy rigour doth it selfe preserue.
O woe's the wight! that is by tempests beaten
By night, in vnknowne Seas, in danger rife,
For want of North, or hauen to lose his life.

Anselmo commended also this second Sonnet as hee had done the first, and added by that means one linke to another in the chaine, wherewith he intangled himselfe, and forged his owne dishonour: seeing when *Lotario* dishonoured him most of all, he said vnto him then that he honoured him most. And herewith all *Camila* made all the linkes that verily serued onely to abase her downe to the Center of contempt, seeme to mount her in her husbands opinion, vp to the height of vertue and good fame.

It befell soone after, that *Camila* finding her selfe alone with her mayden said to her, I am ashamed friend *Leonela* to see how little I knew to value my selfe, seeing that I made not *Lotario* spend some time at least in the purchasing the whole possession of mee, which I with a prompt will bestowed vpon him so speedily. I feare me that he will impute my hastinesse to lightnesse, without cõsidering the force he vsed towards mee, which wholy hindred and disabled my resistance. Let not that afflict you Madam quoth *Leonela*, for it is no sufficient cause to diminish estimation, that, that bee giuen quickly which is to be giuen, if that in effect be good that is giuen, and be in it selfe worthy of estimation; for it is an old prouerbe, *That hee that gines quickly, gines twice.* It is also said as well quoth *Camila*, *that that which costeth little, is lesse esteemed.* That reason hath no place in you quoth *Leonela*, for as much as loue according as some say, which some say, doth sometimes flie, other times it goes, it runs with this man, and goes leasurely with the other; it makes some key-cold, and inflames others, some it wounds, and some it kils, it begins the Carrire of his desires in an instant, and in the ve-

ry fame, concludes it likewise: It is wont to lay siege to the fortresse in the morning, and at night it makes it to yeelde; for ther's no force able to resist it: which being so, what doe you wonder, or what is it that you feare? If the same hath befalne *Lothario*, seeing that loue made of my Lords absence an instrument to vanquish vs? and it was forcible, that in it we should conclude on it which loue had before determined, without giuing time it selfe any time, to leade *Anselmo* that he might returne, and with his presence leaue the worke imperfect. For loue hath none so officious or better a minister to execute his desires then is occasion: It serues it selfe of occasion in all his act, but most of all at the beginning. And all this that I haue said, I know rather by experience then heare say: as I will some day let you to vnderstand, for Madam I am likewise made of flesh, and lustie young bloud. And as for you Ladie *Camila*, you did not giue vp and yeelde your selfe presently, but stayed vntill you had first seene in *Lotharios* eyes, his sighes in his discourses, in his promises and gifts all his soule, in which and in his perfections you might reade how worthy he is to be loued. And seeing this is so, let not these scruples & nice thoughts assault or further disturbe your mind, but perswade your selfe that *Lothario* esteemes you as much as you doe him, and liues with content & satisfaction, seeing that it was your fortune to fal into the amorous snare, that it was his good lucke to catch you with his valour and deserts: who not only hath the foure *S S.* which they say euery good louer ought to haue, but also the whole A.B.C. which if you will not credite, doe but listen to me a while, and I will repeate it to you by rote. He is as it seemes, and as farre as can iudge amiable, bountifull, courteous, dutifull, enamored, firme, gallant, honourable, illustrious, loyall, milde, noble, honest, prudent, quiet, rich, and the S. S. which they say, and besides true, valorous. The X. doth not quader well with him, because it sounds harshly: Y. he is young. And the Z. he is zealous of thine honour. *Camila* laughed at her maydens A. B. C. and accounted her to bee more practicke

in loue matters then ſhe her ſelfe had confeſſed, as indeed ſhe was, for then ſhe reuealed to her Miſtreſſe, how ſhe and a certaine young man well borne of the Citie did treate of loue one with another: Hereat her Miſtreſſe was not a little troubled in minde, fearing that her honour might be greatly indangered by that meanes; ſhe demaunded whether her affections had paſſed farther then words, and the maid anſwered very ſhameleſly and freely that they did: for it is moſt certaine that this kinde of wretchleſſe Miſtreſſes doe alſo make their maydens careleſſe and impudent: who when they perceiue their Ladies to faulter, are commonly wont to hault likewiſe themſelues, and care not that the world doe know it. *Camila* ſeeing this errour paſt remedie, could do no more but intreate *Leonela* not to reueale any thing of her affaires, to him ſhe ſaid was her ſweet heart; & that ſhe ſhould handle her matters diſcreetly & ſecretly, leſt they might come to *Anſelmo* or *Lotharios* notice. *Leonela* promiſed to performe her wil, but did accõpliſh her promiſe in ſuch ſort, as ſhe did confirme *Camilas* feares, that ſhe ſhould loſe her credit by her means. For the diſhoneſt & bold Gyrle after that ſhe had perceiued that her Miſtres, her proceedings were not ſuch as they were wont, grew ſo hardy as ſhe gaue entrance, and brought her louer into her Maiſters houſe, preſuming that although her Ladie knew it, yet would ſhe not dare to diſcouer it. For this among other harmes follow the ſinnes of Miſtreſſes, that it makes them ſlaues to their owne ſeruants, and doth oblige them to conceale their diſhoneſt and baſe proceedings as it fell out in *Camila*, who although ſhe eſpied *Leonela* not once onely, but ſundry times together with her louer in a certaine chamber of the houſe, ſhe not onely dared not to rebuke her for it, but rather gaue her oportunity to hide him, and would remoue all occaſions out of her husbands way, whereby he might ſuſpect any ſuch thing.

But all could not hinder *Lothario* from eſpying him once, as he departed out of the houſe at the breake of the day: who not knowing him, thought at the firſt that it was a ſpirit, but when

when he ſaw him poſt away, and caſt his cloake ouer his face, leaſt he ſhould be known, he abandoning his ſimple ſurmiſe, fell into a new ſuſpicio which had ouerthrown them all, were it not that *Camila* did remedie it. For *Lotharios* thought that he whom he had ſeene iſſue out of *Anſelmos* houſe at ſo vnreaſonable an hower, had not entred into it for *Leonelas* ſake, nor did he remember then that there was ſuch a one as *Leonela* in the world, but onely thought that as *Camila* was lightly gotten by him, ſo belike ſhe was won by ſome other. For the wickedneſſe of a bad woman bringeth vſually all theſe additions, that ſhe looſeth her reputatio euen with him to whom ſhe prayed and perſwaded ſhe yeeldeth her ſelfe: and he beleeueth that ſhe will as eaſily, or with more facility conſent to others, and doth infallibly credit the leaſt ſuſpicion which thereof may be offered.

And it ſeemes that *Lotharios* in this inſtant was wholy depriued of all reaſonable diſcourſe, and quite diſpoyled of his vnderſtanding, for without pondering of the matter, impatient & kindled by the iealouſe rage that inwardly gnawed his bowels, fretting with deſire to be reuenged on *Camila*, who had neuer offended him, he came to *Anſelmo* before he was vp, & ſaid to him: know *Anſelmo* that I haue had theſe many daies a ciuill conflict within my ſelfe whether I ſhould ſpeake or no, and I haue vſed as much violence as I might, to my ſelfe, not to diſcouer a thing vnto you, which now it is neither iuſt nor reaſonable I ſhould conceale. Know that *Camilas* fortreſſe is rendred and ſubiect to all that I pleaſe to commaund, and if I haue beene ſomewhat ſlow to informe thee this of truth, it was becauſe I would firſt ſee, whether it proceeded of ſome light appetite in her: or whether ſhee did it to trie me, and ſee whether that loue was ſtill conſtantly continued, which I firſt began to make vnto her by thy order and licence. I did alſo beleeue, that if ſhee had beene ſuch as ſhe ought to bee, and her that we both eſteemed her, ſhe would haue by this time acquainted you with my importunacy: but ſeeing that ſhe lingers therein, I preſume that her

ber promiſes made vnto mee are true, that when you did a-gaine abſent your ſelfe out of the towne, ſhe would ſpeake with mee in the wardrobe (and it was true, for there *Camila* was accuſtomed to talke with him) yet would not I haue thee runne raſhly to take reuenge, ſeeing the ſinne is not yet otherwiſe committed then in thought, & perhaps betweene this and the oportunity ſhe might hope to put it in execution, her mind would be changed, and ſhe repent her ſelfe of her folly. And therefore ſeeing that thou haſt euer followed mine aduiſes partly or wholy, follow and keepe one counſaile that I will giue vnto thee now, to the ende that thou mayeſt after with carefull aſſurance, and without fraud ſatisfie thine owne will as thou likeſt beſt, faine thy ſelfe to be abſent two or three daies as thou art wont, and then conuey thy ſelf cunningly into the wardrobe, where thou maiſt very well hide thy ſelfe behind the tapeſtry, and then thou ſhalt ſee with thine owne eyes, and I with mine what *Camila* will doe; and if it be that wickedneſſe which rather ought to be feared then hoped for, thou maieſt with wiſedome, ſilence, and diſcretion bee the proper executioner of ſo iniurious a wrong.

Anſelmo remained amazed, and almoſt beſides himſelfe, hearing his friend *Lotharo* ſo vnexpectedly to acquaint him with thoſe things, in a time wherein he leaſt expected them, for now hee eſteemed *Camila* to haue eſcaped victreſſe from the forged aſſaults of *Lotharo*, and did himſelfe triumph for glorie of her victorie, ſuſpended thus and troubled, he ſtood ſilent a great while looking on the earth without once remouing his eye from it; and finally turning towards his friend, he ſaid. *Lotharo*, thou haſt done all that which I could expect from ſo intire amitie, and I do therefore meane to follow thine aduice in all things preciſely, doe therefore what thou pleaſeſt, and keepe that ſecret which is requiſite in ſo waighty and vnexpected an euent, or that I doe promiſe quoth *Lotharo*, and ſo departed wholly repented for that hee had told to *Anſelmo* ſeeing how fooliſhly hee had

proceeded, since hee might haue reuenged himselfe on *Camila* very well, without taking away so cruell and dishonorable. There did he curse his little wit; and abased his light resolution: and knewe not what meanes to vse to destroy what he had done, or giue it some reasonable and contrary issue. In the end hee resolued to acquaint *Camila* with the whole matter, and by reason that hee neuer missed of opportunitie to speake vnto her, he found her alone the very same day; and shee seeing likewise that shee had commoditie to speake vnto him, said. Know friend *Lothario* that a certaine thing doth pinch my heart in such manner, as it seemes ready to burst in my brest, as doubtlesly I feare me that in time it will, if we cannot set a remedie to it. For such is the immodestie of *Leonela*, as shee shuts vp a louer of hers euery night in this house, and remaines with him vntill day light, which so much concernes my credit, as it leaues open a spacious field to him, that sees the other goe out of my house at so vnseasonable times, to iudge of me what he pleaseth; and that which most grieues mee is that I dare not punish or rebuke her for it. For shee being priuie to our proceedings sets a bridle on me, and constraines me to conceale hers, and hence I feare me will bad successe befall vs. *Lothario* at the first suspected that *Camila* did speake thus to make him beleeue that the man whom he had espied, was *Leonelas* friend, and none of hers: but seeing her to weepe indeede and bee greatly afflicted in minde, he began at last to giue credit vnto the truth, and beleeuing it, was greatly confounded and grieued for that he had done. And yet notwithstanding he answered *Camila* that shee should not trouble or vexe her selfe any more, for he would take such order as *Leonelas* impudencies should bee easily crost and suppressed. And then did recount vnto her all that hee had said to *Anselmo*, spurd on by the furious rage of iealous indignation, and how her husband had agreed to hide himselfe behinde the tapestrie of the wardrobe, that he might from thence clearly perceiue, the little loyaltie shee kept towards him, and demanded par-

Google

don

don of her for that follie and counſaile to redreſſe it, & come ſafely out of the intricate Labyrinth, whereinto his weake eyed diſcourſe had conducted him.

Camila hauing heard *Lotharios* diſcourſe, was afraid and amazed, and with great anger, and many and diſcreet reaſons did rebuke him, reuiling the baſeneſſe of his thoughts, and the ſimple and little conſideration that hee had. But as women haue naturally a ſuddaine wit, for good or bad much more prompt then men: although when indeed they would make diſcourſes, it proues defectiue. So *Camila* found in an inſtant a remedy for an affaire in apparance ſo irremediable and helpleſſe, and therfore bad *Lotharie* to induce his friend *Anſelmo* to hide himſelfe the next day enſuing, for ſhee hoped to take commodity out of his being there, for them both to ioy one another with more ſecuritie then euer they had before: and without wholly manifeſting her prouerbe to him, ſhee only aduertiſed him to haue care, that after *Anſelmo* were hidden hee ſhould preſently come when *Leonela* called for him, and that he ſhould anſwere her as directly to euery queſtion ſhee propoſed, as if *Anſelmo* were not in place. *Lotharie* did vrge her importunately to declare her deſigne vnto him, to the end he might with more ſecuritie and aduice obſerue all that was neceſſarie. I ſay, quoth *Camila*, there is no other obſeruance to bee had, then onely to anſwere me directly to what I ſhall demaund. For ſhe would not giue him account before hand of her determination, fearefull that he would not conforme himſelfe to her opinion which ſhee tooke to bee ſo good; or elſe leaſt he would follow or ſeeke any other, that would not proue after ſo well. Thus departed *Lotharie*, and *Anſelmo* vnder pretext that hee would viſit his friend out of Towne departed, and returned couertly backe againe to hide himſelfe, which hee could do the more commodiouſly, becauſe *Camila* and *Leonela* did purpoſely afford him oportunitie. *Anſelmo* hauing hidden himſelfe, with the griefe that may bee imagined one would conceiue, who did expect to ſee with his owne eyes

an

an anotomie made of the bowels of his honour, and was in danger to loose the highest felicitie that hee accounted himselfe to possesse in his beloued *Camila*: *Camila* and *Leonela* being certaine that he was hidden within the wardrobe entred into it, wherein scarce had *Camila* set her foote, when breathing forth of a deepe sigh shee spoke in this manner.

Ah friend *Leonela* were it not better, that before I put in execution, that which I would not haue thee to know, least thou shouldest indeauour to hinder it, that thou takest *Anselmos* poyniard that I haue sought of thee, and passe this infamous brest of mine through and through? but doe it not, for it is no reason that I should suffer for other mens faults. I will know first of all what the bold and dishoneſt eyes of *Lothario* noted in me that should stirre in him the presumption to discouer vnto me so vnlawfull a desire, as that which he hath reuealed, so much in contempt of his friend, and to my dishonour. Stand at that window *Leonela*, and call him to mee, for I doe infallibly beleeue, that hee stands in the streete awaiting to effect his wicked purpose. But first my cruell, yet honourable minde shall be first performed. Alas deare Madame (quoth the wise and craftie *Leonela*) what is is it you meane to doe with that poyniard? meane you perhaps to depriue either your owne or *Lotharios* life therewithall? for which soeuer of these things you doe, shall redound to the losse of your credit and fame. It is much better that you dissemble your wrong, and giue no occasion to the bad man now to enter into this house, and finde vs here in it alone: Consider good Madame how we are but weake women, and hee is a man; and one resolute, and by reason that he comes blinded by his bad and passionate intent, hee may peraduenture before thou beest able to put thine in execution, doe somewhat that would be worse for you, then to depriue you of your life. Euill befall my Mr. *Anselmo*, that ministers so great occasion to impudencie, thus to discouer her visage in our house, and if you should kill him by chance Madame, as I suspect you meane to doe, what shall we doe after

after with the dead carkaſſe? what? ſaid *Camila*, we would leaue him here that *Anſelmo* might burie him. For he muſt in all equitie eſteeme that labour for eaſe, which hee ſhall paſſe, in the interring of his owne infamie. Make an end then, and call him, for mee thinkes that all the time which I ſpend vntaking due reuenge of my iuſt diſdaine, turnes into the preiudice of the loyaltie which I owe to my ſpouſe.

Anſelmo liſtned very attentiuely all the while, and at euery word that *Camila* ſaid, his thoughts changed. But when he vnderſtood that ſhee was reſolued to kill *Lothario*, he was about to come out and diſcouer himſelfe, to the end that ſuch a thing ſhould not be done, but the deſire that hee had to ſee wherein ſo braue and honeſt a reſolution would end with-held him, determining then to ſallie out, when his preſence ſhould be needfull to hinder it. *Camila* about this time beganne to bee very weake and diſmayed, and caſting her ſelfe, as if ſhee had fallen into a trance vpon a bed that was in the roome, *Leonela* beganne to lament very bitterly and to ſay. Alas wretch that I am, how vnfortunate ſhould I be, if the flower of the worlds honeſtie, the crowne of good women, and the patterne of chaſtitie, ſhould die here betweene my hands. Thoſe and ſuch other things ſhee ſaid ſo dolefully, as no one could heare her, that would not deeme her to bee one of the moſt eſteemed and loyall Damzels of the world: and take her Ladie for an other new and perſecuted *Penelope*. Soone after *Camila* returned to her ſelfe, and ſaid preſently. Why goeſt thou not *Leonela* to call the moſt diſloyall friend of a friend, that euer the Sunne beheld, or the night concealed. Make an end, runne, make haſt, and let not the fire of my choller bee through thy ſlay conſumed and ſpent, nor the iuſt reuenge which I hope to take paſſe ouer in threats or maledictions. I goe to call him Madame, quoth *Leonela*, but firſt of all you muſt giue mee that poyniard, leaſt you ſhould doe with it in mine abſence ſomewhat that would miniſter occaſions to vs your friends to deplore you all the dayes of our liues. Goe away boldly friend

Leonela

Leonela said *Camila*, for I shall do nothing in thine absence; for although I be in thine opinion both simple and bolde enough to turne for mine honour, yet meane I not to be so much as the celebrated *Lucretia*, of whom it is recorded that she slew her selfe, without hauing committed any error or slaine him first who was the principall cause of her disgrace: I will die if I must needes die, but I will be satisfied and reuenged on him that hath giuen me occasion to come into this place to lament his boldnesse, sprung without my default. *Leonela* could scarcely be intreated to goe and call *Lothario*; but at last she went out, and in the meane time *Camila* remained, speaking to her selfe these words: Good God, had not it beene more discretion to haue dismissed *Lothario*, as I did many times before, then thus to possesse him as I haue done, with an opinion that I am an euill and dishonest woman, at least all the while that passeth, vntill mine actes shall vndeceiue him, and teach him the contrary? It had beene doubtlesly better: but then should not I be reuenged, nor mine husbands honour satisfied. If he were permitted to beare away so cleerely his malignitie, or escape out of the snare wherein his wicked thoughts inuolued him. Let the Traytor pay with his lifes defrayment, that which he attempted with so lasciuious a desire. Let the world know (if it by chance shall come to know it) that *Camila* did not only conserue the loyaltie due to her Lord, but also took reuenge of the intended spoile thereof. But yet I beleeue that it were best to giue *Anselmo* first notice thereof; but I did already touch it to him in the Letter which I wrote to him to the Village: and I beleeue that his not concurring to take order in this so manifest an abuse, proceeds of his too sincere and good meaning, which would not, nor cannot beleeue, that the like kinde of thought, could euer finde intertainment in the breast of so firme a friend, tending so much to his dishonour: and what maruell, if I my selfe could not credite it for a great many daies together, nor would I euer haue thought it, if his insolency had not arriued to that passe, which the

Digitized by Google

manifeſt gifts, large promiſes, and continuall teares hee ſhed doe giue teſtimony. But why doe I make now theſe diſcourſes? Hath a gallant reſolution perhaps any neede of aduice? No verily; therefore auaunt treacherous thoughts, here we muſt vſe reuenge. Let the falſe man come in, arriue, die and end, and let after befall what can befall. I entred pure and vntouched to his poſſeſſion, whom heauen beſtowed on me for mine, and I will depart from him purely: and if the worſt befall, I ſhall onely be defiled by mine owne chaſte bloud, and the impure goare of the falſeſt friend that euer amitie ſaw in this world. And ſaying of this ſhe praunced vp and down the roome with the poyniard naked in her hand, with ſuch long and vnmeaſurable ſtrides, and making withal ſuch geſtures, as ſhe rather ſeemed defectiue of wit, and a deſperate ruffian, then a delicate woman.

All this *Anſelmo* perceiued very well from behinde the Arras that couerd him; which did not a little admire him, and he thought that what he had ſeene and heard, was a ſufficient ſatisfaction of farre greater ſuſpitions then he had: and could haue wiſhed with all his heart that the trial of *Lotharios* comming might be excuſed, fearing greatly ſome ſudden badde ſucceſſe: and as he was ready to manifeſt himſelfe, and to come out and embrace and diſſwade his wife; he withdrew himſelfe becauſe he ſaw *Leonela* returne, bringing *Lothario* in by the hand, and as ſoone as *Camila* beheld him, ſhe drew a great ſtrike with the point of the poyniard athwart the wardrop, ſaying *Lothario*, note wel what I mean to ſay vnto thee: for if by chance thou beeſt ſo hardy as to paſſe ouer this line which thou ſeeſt, ere I come as far as it, I will in the very ſame inſtant ſtabbe my ſelfe into the heart with this poyniard, which I hold in my hand: and before thou doeſt ſpeake or anſwer me any word I would firſt haue thee to liſten to a few of mine, for after thou maieſt ſay what thou pleaſeſt. Firſt of all I would haue thee, O *Lothario*, to ſay whether thou knoweſt my husband *Anſelmo*, and what opinion thou haſt of him? And next I would haue thee to tel

me if thou knoweſt my ſelfe? Anſwer to this without delay, nor do not ſtand long thinking on what thou art to anſwer, ſeeing they are no deepe queſtions which I propoſe vnto thee. *Lotharie* was not ſo ignorant, but that from the very beginning when *Camila* requeſted him to perſwade her husband to hide himſelfe behinde the tapiſtry, he had not falne on the driſt of her inuention, and therefore did anſwere her intention ſo aptly and diſcreetly, as they made that vntruth paſſe betweene them for a more then manifeſt verity: and ſo he anſwered to *Camila* in this forme, I did neuer coniecture beautifull *Camila*, that thou wouldeſt haue called me here to demaund of me things ſo wide from the purpoſe for which I come: if thou doeſt it to deferre yet the promiſed fauour, thou mighteſt haue intertained it yet farther off; for the good deſired afflicteth ſo much the more, by how much the hope to poſſeſſe it is neere. But becauſe thou mayeſt not accuſe me for not anſwering to thy demaunds, I ſay that I know thy husband *Anſelmo*, and both of vs know one another euen from our tender infancie, and I will not omit to ſay that, which thou alſo knoweſt of our amity, to make me thereby a witneſſe againſt my ſelfe of the wrong which loue compels me to doe vnto him, yet loue is a ſufficient excuſe and excuſer of greater errors then are mine. Thee doe I likewiſe know and hold in the ſame poſſeſſion that he doth: for were it not ſo, I ſhould neuer haue beene won by leſſe perfections then thine, to tranſgreſſe ſo much that which I owe to my ſelfe, and to the holy lawes of true amitie, now broken and violated by the tyrannie of ſo powerfull an aduerſary as loue hath proued. If thou doſt acknowledge that replied *Camila*, O mortall enemy of all that which iuſtly deſerueth loue, with what face dareſt thou then appeare before that which thou knoweſt to be the mirror wherin he lookes, in whom thou alſo oughteſt to behold thy ſelfe, to the end thou mighteſt perceiue vpon how little occaſion thou doſt wrong him? but vnfortunate that I am, I fall now in the reaſon which hath moued thee to make ſo little account of

Digitized by Google

thine owne duety, which was perhaps ſome negligent or light behauiour of mine, which I will not call diſhoneſty, ſeeing that as I preſume, it hath not proceeded from me deliberately, but rather through the careleſnes that women which thinke they are not noted do ſometimes vnwittingly commit. If not, ſay traytor, when did I euer anſwere thy prayers with any word or token, that might awake in thee the leaſt ſhadow of hope to accompliſh thine infamous deſires? When were not thine amorous intreaties reprehended and diſperſed by the roughneſſe and rigour of mine anſwers? When were thy many promiſes and larger gifts euer beleeued or admitted? But for as much as I am perſwaded that no man can perſeuere long time in the amorous cõtention, who hath not beene ſuſtayned by ſome hope, I will attribute the fault of thine impertinence to my ſelfe: for doubtleſly ſome careleſneſſe of mine hath hitherto ſuſtained thy care, and therefore I will chaſtiſe and giue to my ſelfe the puniſhment which thy fault deſerueth. And becauſe thou mighteſt ſee that I being ſo inhumane towards my ſelfe, could not poſſibly be other then cruell to thee, I thought fit to call thee to be a witneſſe of the ſacrifice which I meane to make to the offended honor of my moſt honourable husband, tainted by thee, with the blackeſt note that thy malice could deuiſe, and by me through the negligence that I vſed, to ſhun the occaſion, if I gaue thee any, thus to nouriſh and canonize thy wicked intentions. I ſay againe that the ſuſpition I haue that my little regard hath ingendred in thee theſe diſtracted thoughts, is that which afflicteth me moſt, and that which I meane to chaſtice moſt with mine owne hands: for if another executioner puniſhed me, then ſhould my crime become more notorious; but before I doe this, I dying will kill, and carie him away with me that ſhall end and ſatisfie the greedy deſire of reuenge which I hope for, and I haue; ſeeing before mine eyes whereſoeuer I ſhall go, the puniſhment which diſingaged iuſtice ſhall inflict, it ſtill remayning vnbowed or ſuborned by him, which hath brought me to ſo deſperate termes. And

And hauing ſaid theſe wordes, ſhe flew vpon *Lotharto* with incredibible force and lightneſſe, and her poyniard naked, giuing ſuch arguments and tokens that ſhee meant to ſtabbe him, as he himſelfe was in doubt whether her demonſtrations were falſe or true; wherfore he was driuen to helpe himſelfe by his wit and ſtrength for to hinder *Camila* from ſtriking of him, who did ſo liuely acte her ſtrange guile and fiction, as to giue it colour ſhe would giue it a bluſh of her owne blood: for perceiuing, or elſe fayning that ſhee could not hurt *Lotharto*, ſhe ſaid ſeeing that aduerſe fortune will not ſatisfie throughly my iuſt deſires, yet at leaſt it ſhall not be potent wholly to croſſe my deſignes, and then ſtriuing to free the dagger hand, which *Lotharto* held faſt, ſhe ſnatched it away, and directing the point to ſome place of her bodie, which might hurt her but not very grieuouſly, ſhe ſtabd her ſelfe, and hid it in her apparrell neere vnto the left ſhoulder, and fell forthwith to the ground, as if ſhe were in a traunce. *Lotharto* and *Leonela* ſtood amazed at the vnexpected euent, and ſtill reſted doubtfull of the truth of the matter, ſeeing *Camila* to lie on the ground bathed in her bloud: *Lotharto* ranne all wan and pale very haſtily to her to take out the poyniard, and ſeeing how little bloud followed, he loſt the feare that he had conceiued of her greater hurt, and began a new to admire the cunning wit, and diſcretion of the beautifull *Camila*: but yet that he might play the part of a friend, he began a long and dolefull lamentation ouer *Camilas* bodie, euen as ſhe were dead, & began to breath forth many curſes and execrations not onely againſt himſelfe, but alſo againſt him that had imployed him in that vnfortunate affaire. And knowing that his friend *Anſelmo* did liſten vnto him, he ſaid ſuch things as would moue a man to take more compaſſion of him then of *Camila* her ſelfe, although they accounted her dead. *Leonela* tooke her vp betweene her armes, and laid her on the bedde, and intreated *Lotharto* to goe out, and finde ſome one that would vndertake to cure her ſecretly. She alſo demaunded of him his aduice, touch-

ing the excuſe they might make to *Anſelmo* concerning her Miſtreſſe her wound, if hee came to towne before it were fully cured. He anſwered that they might ſay what they pleaſed, for hee was not in an humour of giuing any counſell worth the following: And onely ſayd this, that ſhee ſhould labour to ſtaunch her Ladies bloud, for hee meant to goe there, whence they ſhould heare no newes of him euer after: And ſo departed out of the houſe with verie greate tokens of griefe and feeling, and when hee was alone in place where no bodie perceiued him, hee bliſt himſelfe a thouſand times, to thinke of *Camilas* Art, and the geſtures ſo proper and accommodated to the purpoſe, vſed by her mayde *Leonela*. Hee conſidered how aſſured *Anſelmo* would remayne, that hee had a ſecond *Porta* to wife, and deſired to meete him, that they might celebratte together the fiction, and the beſt diſſembled truth that could bee euer imagined. *Leonela* as is ſaid, ſtaunched her Ladies bloud, which was iuſt as much as might ſerue to colour her inuention and no more, and waſhing the wound with ſome wine, ſhee tyed it vp the beſt that ſhee could, ſaying ſuch words whileſt ſhe cured her, as were able, though nothing had beene done before to make *Anſelmo* beleeue that hee had an Image of honeſty in *Camila* to the plants of *Leonela*, *Camila* added others terming her ſelfe a coward of baſe ſpirit, ſince ſhe wanted time, (being a thing ſo neceſſary) to depriue her life which ſhe hated ſo mortally, ſhe demaunded counſell of her maiden whether ſhee would tell, or conceale all that ſucceſſe to her beloued ſpouſe: and ſhe anſwered that it was beſt to conceale it, leſt ſhe ſhould ingage her husband to be reuenged on *Lothario*, which could not be done without his very great peril, and that euery good wife was bound not to giue occaſion to her husband of quarrelling, but rather to remoue from him as many as was poſſible. *Camila* anſwered, that ſhe allowed of her opinion, and would follow it. And that in any ſort they

muſt ſtudie ſome deuice to cloake the occaſion of her hurt from *Anſelmo*, who could not chuſe but eſpie it. To this *Leonela* anſwered that ſhe her ſelfe knew not how to lie, no not in very ieſt it ſelfe. Well friend quoth *Camila*, and I, what do I know? for I dare not to forge, or report an vntruth, if my life lay on it. And if wee knew not how to giue it a better iſſue, it will be better to report the naked truth, then to be ouertaken in a leeſing: doe not trouble your ſelfe Madame quoth *Leonela*, for I will bethinke my ſelfe of ſomewhat betweene this and to morrow morning, and perhaps the wound may be concealed from him, by reaſon that it is in the place where it is, and heauen perhaps may be pleaſed to fauour our ſo iuſt and honourable thoughts: Be quiet good Madam, and labour to appeaſe your alteration of mind, that my Lord at his returne may not find you perplexed, and leaue all the reſt to Gods and my charge, who doth alwaies aſſiſt the iuſt.

With higheſt attention ſtood *Anſelmo* liſtening and beholding the tragedie of his dying honours, which the perſonages thereof had acted with ſo ſtrange and forceable effects as it verily ſeemed, that they were transformed into the oppoſite truth of their well contriued fiction, he longed greatly for the night, and leaſure to get out of his houſe, that hee might goe and congratulate with his good friend *Lothario*, for the precious Iewell that he had found in this laſt triall of his wife. The Maſter and Mayden had as great care to giue him the oportunitie to depart, and he fearing to looſe it, iſſued out in a trice, and went preſently to finde *Lothario*, who being found, it is not poſſible to recount the embracements he gaue vnto him, the ſecrets of his contentment that he reuealed, or the attributes and praiſes he gaue to *Camila*. All which *Lothario* heard, without giuing the leaſt argument of loue: hauing repreſented to his minde at that very time, how greatly deceiued his friend liued, and how iniuſtly hee himſelfe had iniuried him. And although that *Anſelmo* noted that *Lothario* tooke no delight at his relation, yet did he be-

leeue that the cauſe of his ſorrow proceeded from hauing left *Camila* wounded, and he himſelfe giuen the occaſion thereof. And therefore among many other words ſaid vnto him, that there was no occaſion to grieue at *Camilas* hurt, it doubtleſly being but light; ſeeing ſhe and her mayde had agreed to hide it from him; and that according vnto this there was no great cauſe of feare, but that from thence forward he ſhould liue merily and contentedly with him, ſeeing that by his induſtrie and meanes, hee found himſelfe raiſed to the higheſt felicitie that might be deſired: and therefore would from thenceforth ſpend his idle times in writing of verſes in *Camilas* praiſe, that he might eternize her name, and make it famous in inſuing ages. *Lotharie* commended his reſolution therein, and ſaid that he for his part would alſo helpe to raiſe vp ſo noble an edifice, and herewithall *Anſelmo* reſted the moſt ſoothingly and contentedly deceiued, that could bee found in the world: and then himſelfe tooke by the hand to his houſe (beleeuing that he bore the inſtrument of his glory) the vtter perdition of his fame. *Camila* entertained him with a frowning countenance, but a cheerefull minde, the fraude reſted vnknowne a while, vntill at the end of certaine monethes fortune turned the wheele, and the wickedneſſe that was ſo artificially cloaked, iſſued to the publike notice of the world, and *Anſelmo* his impertinent curioſitie coſt him his life.

CAAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. VIII.

Wherein is ended the Historie of the curious impertinent: and likewise recounted the rough incounter and conflict passed betweene Don-Quixote *and certaine bagges of red wine.*

A Little more of the nouell did reſt vnread, when *Sancho Panca* all perplexed ran out of the chamber where his Lord repoſed, crying as loud as hee could. Come good Sirs ſpeedily, and aſſiſt my Lord who is ingaged in one of the moſt terrible battailes, that euer mine eyes haue ſeene. I ſweare that he hath giuen ſuch a blow to the Giant, my Ladie the Princeſſe *Micomicona* her enemie, as hee hath cut his head quite off as round as a Turnep. What ſayeſt thou friend, quoth the *Curate*, (leauing off at that word to proſecute the reading of his nouell) art thou in thy wits *Sancho*? what a Diuell man how can that be, ſeeing the Giant dwels at leaſt two thouſand leagues from hence. By this they heard a maruailous great noyſe within the chamber, and that *Don-Quixote* cried out aloud. Stay falſe Thieſe, Robber ſtay, for ſince thou art here, thy Cimitar ſhall but little auaile thee, and therewithall it ſeemed that he ſtruck a number of mighty blowes on the wals. And *Sancho* ſaid, there is no neede to ſtand this liſtening abroade, but rather that you goe in, and part the fraye, or elſe aſſiſt my Lord. Although I thinke it be not very neceſſary, for the Giant is queſtionleſſe dead by this, and giuing account for the ill life hee ledde. For I ſawe his bloud runne all about the houſe, and his heade cut off, which is as great as a great Wine bagge. I am content to bee hewen in peeces, quoth the Innekeeper, hearing of this, if *Don-Quixote* or *Don-Diuell* haue not giuen ſome blow to one of the wine bagges that ſtood filled

at his beds head, and the ſhedde wine muſt needes bee that which ſeemes bloud to this good man, and ſaying ſo, he entred into the roome, and all the reſt followed him, where they found *Don-Quixote* in the ſtrangeſt guiſe that may bee imagined: hee was in his ſhirt, the which was not long enough before to couer his thighes, and it was ſixe fingers ſhorter behinde: his legges were very long and leane, full of haire and horrible dirtie. Hee wore on his head a little red very greaſie night cap, which belonged to the Inkeeper, he had wreathed on his left arme the couerlet of his bedde, on which *Sancho* looked very often and angerly, as one that knew well the cauſe of his owne malice to it, and in his right hand he griped his naked ſword, wherewithall he laid round about him many a thwacke and withall ſpake, as if he were in battaile with ſome Giant: and the beſt ſport of all was that he held not his eyes open, for he was indeede a ſleepe, and dreaming that he was in fight with the Giant. For the imagination of the aduenture which hee had vndertaken to finiſh, was ſo bent vpon it, as it made him to dreame that he was already arriued at the Kingdome of *Micomicon*, and that he was then in combate with his enemie: and hee had giuen ſo many blowes on the wine bagges, ſuppoſing them to be the Giant, as all the whole chamber flowed with wine. Which being perceiued by the Hoſt all inflamed with rage, he ſet vpon *Don-Quixote* with drie fiſts, and gaue vnto him ſo many blowes, that if *Cardenio* and the Curate had not taken him away, he would doubtleſly haue finiſhed the warre of the Giant, and yet with al this did not the poore knight awake vntill the Barber brought in a great Kettle full of cold water from the Well, and threw it all at a clap vpon him, and therewithall *Don-Quixote* awaked but not in ſuch ſort, as he perceiued the manner wherein he was. *Dorotea* ſeeing how ſhort and how thin her Champion was arrayed, would not go in to ſee the conflict of her combatant & his aduerſarie.

Sancho went vp and downe the floure ſearching for the Giants head, and ſeeing that he could not finde it, hee ſaid,

now doe I see very well that all the things of this house are inchantments, for the last time that I was here in this very same roome, I got many blowes and buffets, and knew not who did strike me, nor could I see any body: and now the head appeares not which I saw cut off with mine owne eyes, and yet the bloud ranne as swiftly from the body as water would from a fountaine. What bloud or what fountaine dost thou tattle of here, thou enemie of God and his Saints, quoth the Inkeeper? thou theefe, dost not thou see that the bloud and the fountaine is no other thing, then these wine bagges which are slashed here, and the wine redde that swimmes vp and downe this chamber, and I wish that I may see his soule swimming in hell which did bore them? I know nothing replied *Sancho*, but this that if I cannot finde the Giants head, I shall become so vnfortunate, as mine Earledome will dissolue like salt cast into water. And certes, *Sancho* awake, was in worse case then his Master sleeping, so much had his Lords promises distracted him. The Inkeeper on the other side was at his wits end to see the humour of the Squire, and vnhappinesse of his Lord, and swore that it should not succeed with them now as it had done the other time, when they went away without payment: and that now the priuiledges of Chiualrie should not auaile him, but hee should pay both the one and other, yea euen for the very patches that were to be set on the boared wine bagges.

The Curate held fast *Don-Quixote* by the hands, who beleeuing that he had atchieued the aduenture, and was after it come into the Princesse *Micomicona* her presence, he laid "himselfe on his knees before the Curate, saying: Well "may your greatnesse, high, and famous Ladie, liue from "hence forth secure from any danger, that this vnfortunate "wretch may doe vnto you; and I am also freed from this "day forward from the promise that I made vnto you, see-"ing I haue by the assistance of the heauens, and through "her fauour by whom I liue and breathe, so happely accom-"plished it. Did not I say so, quoth *Sancho*, hearing of his Master?

Maſter? yea, I was not drunke, ſee, if my Maſter hath not powdred the Giant by this? the matter is queſtionleſſe, and the Earledome is mine owne, who would not laugh at theſe rauing fits of the Maſter and Man? all of them laughed ſaue the Inkeeper who gaue himſelfe for anger to the Diuel more then a hundred times. And the Barber *Cardenio* and the Curate got *Don-Quixote* to bed againe not without much adoe, who preſently fell aſleepe with tokens of marualous wearineſſe. They left him ſleeping and went out to comfort *Sancho Panca* for the griefe hee had, becauſe hee could not finde the Giants head: but yet had more adoe to pacifie the Inkeeper, who was almoſt out of his wits for the vnexpected and ſuddaine death of his wine bagges.

The Hoſteſſe on the other ſide went vp and downe whining and ſaying, in an ill ſeaſon and an vnlucky houre did this Knight errant enter into my houſe; Alas, and I would that mine eyes had neuer ſeene him, ſeeing hee coſts mee ſo deere. The laſt time that hee was heere, hee went away ſcot-free for his ſupper, bedde, ſtraw, and barley, both for himſelfe & his man, his horſe, and his Aſſe, ſaying, that he was a knight aduenturous (and God giue to him ill venture, and to all the other aduenturers of the world) and was not therefore bound to pay any thing, for ſo it was written in the ſtatutes of Chiualry. And now for his cauſe came the other Gentleman, and tooke away my good taile, and hath returnd it me backe, with two quarters of damage. For all the haire is falne off, and it cannot ſtand my husband any more in ſteed for the purpoſe he had it; and for an end and concluſion of all to breake my wine bagges and ſhedde my wine: I wiſh I may ſee as much of his bloud ſhedde. And do not think otherwiſe, for by my fathers old bones, and the life of my mother, they ſhall pay me euery doit, one quart on an other, or elſe I will neuer be called as I am, nor be mine own fathers daughter. Theſe and ſuch like wordes ſpake the Inkeepers wife with very great fury, and was ſeconded by her good ſeruant *Maritornes*. The daughter held her peace, and would

would now and then ſmile a little : but Maſter Parſon did quiet and pacifie all, by promiſing to ſatisfie them for the damages as well as he might, as well for the wine as for the bagges, but chiefly for her taile, the which was ſo much accounted of, and valued ſo highly. *Dorotea* did comfort *Sancho* ſaying to him, that whenſoeuer it ſhould be verified that his Lord had ſlaine the Giant, and eſtabliſhed her quietly in her kingdome, ſhe would beſtow vpon him the beſt Earledome thereof. With this he tooke courage, and aſſured the Princeſſe that he himſelfe had ſeene the Giants head cut off, and for a more certaine token thereof, he ſaid that hee had a beard that reached him downe to his gyrdle; and that if the head could not now be found, it was by reaſon that all the affaires of that houſe were guided by Inchantment, as he had made experience to his coſt the laſt time that he was lodged therein. *Dorotea* replyed that ſhe was of the ſame opinion, and bad him to be of good cheere, for all would be well ended to his hearts deſire. All parties being quieted, the Curate reſolued to finiſh the end of his nouell, becauſe he perceiued that there reſted but a little vnread thereof. *Cardenio*, *Dorotea*, and all the reſt intreated him earneſtly to finiſh it. And he deſiring to delight them all herein, and recreate himſelfe, did proſecute the tale in this manner.

It after befell that *Anſelmo* grew ſo ſatisfied of his wiues honeſtie, as he led a moſt contented and ſecure life : and *Camila* did for the nonce looke ſourely vpon *Lothario* to the end *Anſelmo* might conſter her mind amiſſe: and for a greater confirmation thereof, *Lothario* requeſted *Anſelmo* to excuſe his comming any more to his houſe, ſeeing that hee cleerely perceiued how *Camila* could neither brooke his company nor preſence. But the hoodwink'd *Anſelmo* anſwered him, that he would in no wiſe conſent thereunto, and in this manner did weaue his owne diſhonour a thouſand waies, thinking to worke his contentment. In this ſeaſon ſuch was the delight that *Leonela* tooke alſo in her affections, as ſhe ſuffered her ſelfe to be borne away by them headlongly without

any care or regard confident, becauſe her Ladie did couer it, yea, and ſometimes inſtructed her how ſhe might put her deſires in practiſe, without any feare or danger. But finally *Anſelmo* heard on a night ſome body walke in *Leonelas* chamber, and being deſirous to know who it was, as he thought to enter, he felt the doore to be held faſt againſt him, which gaue him a greater deſire to open it, and therfore he ſtrugled ſo long, and vſed ſuch violence, as he threw open the dore, and entred iuſt at the time that another leaped out at the window, and therefore he ran ouer to ouertake him, or ſee wherein he might know him, but could neyther compaſſe the one or the other, by reaſon that *Leonela* embracing him hardly, with-held him and ſaid, pacifie your ſelfe good Sir, and be not troubled, nor follow him that was here, for he is one that belongs to mee, and that ſo much as he is my ſpouſe. *Anſelmo* would not beleeue her, but rather blinde with rage, he drew out his poyniard, and would haue wounded her, ſaying, that ſhe ſhould preſently tell him the truth, or elſe he would kill her. She diſtracted with feare, ſaid, without noting her owne words: Kill me not Sir, and I will acquaint you with things which concerne you more then you can imagine. Say quickly then, quoth *Anſelmo*, or elſe thou ſhalt die. It will be impoſsible, replied *Leonela*, for me to ſpeake any thing now I am ſo affrighted, but giue me reſpite till morning, and I will recount vnto you things that will maruellouſly aſtoniſh you, and in the meane time reſt ſecure; that he which leaped out of the window is a young man of this citie, betwixt whom and me hath paſſed a promiſe of marriage. *Anſelmo* was ſomewhat ſatisfied by theſe words, and therefore reſolued to expect the terme which ſhe had demaunded to open her minde; for hee did not ſuſpect that he ſhould heare any thing of *Camila*, by reaſon that he was already ſo aſſured of her vertue: and ſo departing out of the chamber, and ſhutting vp *Leonela* therin, threatning her withall that ſhe ſhould neuer depart thence, vntill ſhe had ſaid all that ſhe promiſed to reueale vnto him.

Digitized by Google

He

He went presently to *Camila* to tell vnto her all that whic his mayden had said, and the promise she had passed, to disclose greater and more important things; whether *Camila* hearing this, were perplexed or no, I leaue to the discreete readers iudgement: for such was the feare which she conceiued, beleeuing certainely (as it was to be doubted) that *Leonela* would tell to *Anselmo* all that she knew of her disloyalty, as she had not the courage to expect and see whether her surmise would become false or no: but the very same night as soone as she perceiued *Anselmo* to be asleepe, gathering together her best iewels and some money, she departed out of her house vnperceiued of any, and went to *Lotharios* lodging, to whom she recounted al that had past, and requested him eyther to leaue her in some safe place, or both of them to depart to some place, where they might liue secure out of *Anselmos* reach. The confusion that *Camila* strucke into *Lotharo*, was such, as he knew not what to say, and much lesse how to resolue himself what he might do. But at last he determined to carie *Camila* to a Monastery wherin his sister was Prioresse; to which shee easily condiscended, and therefore *Lotharo* departed, and left her there with all the speed that the case required, and did also absent himselfe presently from the citie, without acquainting any body with his departure.

Anselmo as soone as it was day, without heeding the absence of his wife, arose and went to the place where he had shut vp *Leonela*, with desire to know of her what she had promised to acquaint him withall: he opened the chamber dore and entred, but could finde no body therein, but some certaine sheets knit together, & tied to the window as a certaine signe how *Leonela* had made an escape by that way. Wherfore he returned very sadde, to tell to *Camila* the aduenture; but when he could neither finde her at bedde, nor in the whole house, he remained astonied, and demaunded for her of his seruants, but none of them could tell him any thing. And as he searched for her, hee hapned to see her

Digitized by Google

cofers lye open, and moſt of her jewels wanting, and heerewithall fell into the true account of his diſgrace, and that *Leonela* was not the cauſe of his misfortune, and ſo departed out of his houſe ſadde and penſiue, euen as hee was, halfe ready and vnapparelled to his friend *Lotharios*, to recount vnto him his diſaſter: but when hee found him to bee likewiſe abſented, and that the ſeruants told him how their maſter was departed the very ſame night and had borne away with him all his money, hee was ready to runne out of his wits. And to conclude, hee returned to his owne houſe againe wherein he found no creature, man or woman, for all his folke were departed, and had left the houſe alone and deſert: he knew not what he might thinke, ſay, or doe, and then his iudgement beganne to faile him. There he did contemplate and behold himſelfe in an inſtant, without a wife, a friend, and ſeruants: abandoned (to his ſeeming) of heauen that couered him, and chiefly without honour, for hee clearly noted his owne perdition in *Camilas* crime. In the end he reſolued, after he had bethought himſelfe a great while to goe to his friends Village wherein hee had beene all the while that hee afforded the leiſure to contriue that diſaſter, and ſo ſhutting vp his houſe, he mounted a horſe-backe, and rode away in languiſhing and dolefull wiſe. And ſcarce had he ridden the halfe way when he was ſo fiercely aſſaulted by his thoughts, as hee was conſtrained to alight, and tying his horſe to a tree, he leaned himſelfe to the trunke thereof, and breathed out a thouſand pittifull and dolourous ſighes: and there hee abode vntill it was almoſt night; about which houre hee eſpied a man to come from the Cittie a horſe-backe by the ſame way, and hauing ſaluted him, he demaunded of him what newes he brought from *Florencia*? the Cittizen replyed that the ſtrangeſt that had hapned there many a day, for it is there reported publikly that *Lothario* the great friend of the rich man, hath carried away the ſaid *Anſelmos* wife *Camila* this night, for ſhee is alſo miſſing, all which a waiting maide of *Camilas* hath

confeſt, whom the gouernour apprehended yeſternight, as ſhee ſlipt downe at a window by a paire of ſheets, out of the ſaid *Anſelmos* houſe. I know not particulary the truth of the affaire, but well I wote, that all the Cittie is amazed at the accident, for ſuch a fact would not bee as much as ſurmiſed, from the great and familiar amitie of them two, which was ſo much, as they were called the two friends. Is it perhaps yet knowen, quoth *Anſelmo*, which way *Lothario* and *Camila* haue taken? in no wiſe replyed the Cittizen, although the Gouernour hath vſed all poſſible diligence to finde them out. Farewell then good Sir, ſaid *Anſelmo*; and with you Sir, ſaid the trauailer, and ſo departed.

With theſe ſo vnfortunate newes poore *Anſelmo* arriued not only to termes of looſing his wits, but alſo welnigh of looſing his life: and therefore ariſing as well as he might, he came to his friends houſe, who had heard nothing yet of his diſgrace; but perceiuing him to arriue; ſo wanne, pyned and dried vp, he preſently coniectured that ſome grieuous euill afflicted him. *Anſelmo* requeſted him preſently that hee might be carried to his chamber, and prouided of paper and inke to write withall; all was done, and he left at bed, and alone, for ſo he deſired them; and alſo that the dore ſhould bee faſt locked: and being alone the imagination of his miſfortune gaue him ſuch a terrible charge, as he clearely perceiued that his life would ſhortly faile him, and therefore reſolued to leaue notice of the cauſe of his ſuddaine and vnexpected death: and therefore he beganne to write it, but before hee could ſet an end to his diſcourſe, his breath failed, and yeelded vp his life into the hands of ſorrowe which his impertinent curioſitie had ſtirred vp in him. The Gentleman of the houſe ſeeing that it grew late, and that *Anſelmo* had not called, determined to enter and know whether his indiſpoſition paſſed forward: and hee found him lying on his face, with halfe of his body in the bed, and the other halfe leaning on the table whereon hee lay, with a written paper vnfolded: and held the pen alſo yet in his hand. His Hoſt

drew neare vnto him, and firſt of all hauing called him, hee tooke him by the hand: and ſeeing that hee anſwered not, and that it was cold, he knew that he was dead: and greatly perplexed and grieued thereat, hee called in his people that they might alſo be witneſſes of the diſaſtrous ſucceſſe of *Anſelmo*: and after all he tooke the paper and read it, which he knew to bee written with his owne hand, the ſubſtance whereof was this:

A fooliſh and impertinent deſire hath diſpoiled mee of life. If the newes of my death ſhall arriue to Camila, *let her alſo know that I doe pardon her, for ſhee was not bound to worke miracles; nor had I any needs to deſire that ſhee ſhould worke them. And ſeeing I was the builder and contriuer of mine owne diſhonour, there is no reaſon.*

Hitherunto did *Anſelmo* write, by which it appeared, that his life ended in that point ere he could ſet an end to the reaſon he was to giue. The next day inſuing, the Gentleman his friend, acquainted *Anſelmos* kinsfolke with his death: the which had already knowledge of his misfortune, and alſo of the Monaſterie wherein *Camila* had retyred her ſelfe, being almoſt in termes to accompany her husband in that forcible voyage; not for the newes of his death, but for griefe of others which ſhe had receiued of her abſent friend. It is ſaid that although ſhee was a widdow, yet would ſhee neither depart out of the Monaſterie, nor become a religious woman, vntill ſhee had receiued within a few dayes after newes how *Lotharo* was ſlaine in a battaile giuen by *Monſieur de Lautrec* to the great Captaine *Goncalo Fernandez* of *Cordoua*. In the Kingdome of *Naples*: and that was the end of the late repentant friend, the which being knowen to *Camila* ſhe made a profeſſion, and ſhortly after deceaſed betweene the rigorous hands of ſorrow and melancholie, and this was the end of them all, ſprung from a raſh and inconſiderate beginning.

This nouell, quoth the Curate, hauing read it is a prettie one, but yet I cannot perſwade my ſelfe that it is true, and if

if it be a fiction, the authour erred therein, for it cannot bee imagined, that any husband would be so fooliſh, as to make ſo coſtly an experience as did *Anſelmo*. But if this accident had beene deuiſed betwixt a Gentleman and his loue, then were it poſſible, but being betweene man and wife, it containes ſomewhat that is impoſſible and vnlikely: but yet I can take no exception againſt the manner of recounting thereof.

CHAP. IX.

Which treates of many rare ſucceſſes, befallen in the Inne.

WHilſt they diſcourſed thus, the Inkeeper who ſtood all the while at the dore, ſaid, heere comes a faire troupe of gueſts: and if they will here alight, wee may ſing *Gaudeamus*. What folke is it, quoth *Cardenio*, foure men a horſe-backe, quoth the Hoſt, and ride gennet wiſe, with launces and targets, and maskes on their faces, and with them comes likewiſe a woman apparelled in white, in a ſide ſaddle, and her face alſo masked: and two lackeys that run with them a foote: are they neare, quoth the Curate? ſo neare, replyed the Inkeeper, as they do now arriue. *Dorotea* hearing him ſay ſo, couered her face, and *Cardenio* entred into *Don-Quixotes* Chamber, and ſcarce had they leiſure to doe it, when the others of whom the Hoſt ſpake, entred into the Inne: and the foure horſemen allighting, which were all of very comely and gallant diſpoſition, they went to helpe downe the Lady that rode in the ſide ſaddle, and one of them taking her downe in his armes, did ſeat her in a chaire that ſtood at the chamber dore, into which *Cardenio* had entred, and all this while neither ſhee, nor they, tooke off their maskes, or ſpake a word, onely the Gentlewoman at her

ſitting downe in the chaire breathed forth a very deep ſigh, and let fall her armes like a ſicke and diſmayed perſon. The Lackeyes carried away their horſes to the ſtable. Maſter Curate ſeeing and noting all this, and curious to know what they were that came to the Inne in ſo vnwonted an attyre, and kept ſuch profound ſilence therein, went to the Lackeies and demaunded of one of them that which hee deſired to know. Who anſwered him, In good faith Sir I cannot tell you what folke this is, only this I know, that they ſeeme to be very Noble, but chiefly hee that went and tooke downe the Ladie in his armes that you ſee there: and this I ſay becauſe all the others doe reſpect him very much, and nothing is done, but what hee ordaines and commaunds. And the Ladie, what is ſhee, quoth the Curate? I can as hardly informe you, quoth the Lackey, for I haue not once ſeene her face in all this iourney, yet I haue heard her often grone and breathe out ſo profound ſighes, as it ſeemes ſhee would giue vp the Ghoſt at euery one of them; and it is no maruaile that wee ſhould know no more, then wee haue ſaid, for my companion and my ſelfe haue beene in their companie but two dayes: for they incountred vs on the way and prayed and perſwaded vs to goe with them vnto *Andaluzia*, promiſing that they would recompence our paines largely. And haſt thou heard them name one another, ſaid the Curate? no truly anſwered the Lackey, for they all trauaile with ſuch ſilence, as it is a wonder, for you ſhall heare not a word among them, but the ſighes and throbs of the poore Ladie, which doe moue in vs very great compaſſion, and wee doe queſtionleſſe perſwade our ſelues that ſhee is forced, whereſoeuer ſhee goes, and as it may bee collected by her attyre ſhee is a Nunne, or as is moſt probable goes to be one, and perhaps ſhee goeth ſo ſorrowfull as it ſeemes, becauſe ſhee hath no deſire to become religious. It may very well be ſo, quoth the Curate; and ſo leauing them hee returned to the place where he had left *Dorotea*, who hearing the diſguiſed Ladie to ſigh ſo often mooued by the natiue compaſſion of that

that ſexe, drew neare her and ſaid, what ailes you good Madame? I pray you thinke if it be any of thoſe inconueniences to which women bee ſubiect, and whereof they may haue vſe and experience to cure them, I doe offer vnto you my ſeruice, aſſiſtance, and good will, to helpe you as much as lies in my power. To all thoſe complements the dolefull Ladie anſwered nothing, and although *Dorotea* made her againe larger offers of her ſeruice, yet ſtood ſhee euer ſilent vntill the bemasked Gentleman (whom the Lackey ſaid the reſt did obay) came ouer and ſaid to *Dorotea*: Ladie doe not trouble your ſelfe, to offer any thing to that woman, for ſhee is of a moſt ingratefull nature, and is neuer wont to gratifie any curteſie, nor doe you ſeeke her to anſwere vnto your demaunds, if you would not heare ſome lie from her mouth. I neuer ſaid any (quoth the ſilent Lady) but rather becauſe I am ſo true & ſincere without guiles, I am now drowned here in thoſe misfortunes, & of this I would haue thy ſelfe beare witnes, ſeeing my pure truth makes thee to be ſo falſe & diſloyal.

Cardenio ouerheard theſe words very cleere and diſtinctly, as one that ſtood ſo neere vnto her that ſaid them, as onely *Don-Quixotes* chamber doore ſtood betweene them, and inſtantly when he heard them, he ſaid with a very loud voice, good God, what is this that I heare? what voyce is this that hath touched mine eare? The Ladie moued with a ſodaine paſſion turned her head at thoſe outcries, and ſeeing ſhee could not perceiue him that gaue them, ſhe got vp, and would haue entred into the roome, which the Gentleman eſpying, withheld her, and would not let her ſtirre out of the place: and with the alteration and ſodaine motion the maske fell off her face, and ſhe diſcouered an incomparable beautie, and an angelicall countenance, although it was ſomewhat wanne and pale, and turned heere and there with her eies to euery place ſo earneſtly as ſhe ſeemed to be diſtracted: which motions without knowing the reaſon why they were made, ſtrucke *Dorotea* and the reſt that beheld her into very great compaſſion. The Gentleman held her very ſtrongly faſt by

Digitized by Google

the ſhoulders, that hee more on his owne face that was falling, and was ſo buſied therein, as hee could not hold vp the maske, as it did in the end wholy: *Dorotea* who had likewiſe embraced the Ladie, lifting vp her eyes by chance, ſaw that he which did alſo embrace the Ladie was her ſpouſe *Don Fernando*: and ſcarce had ſhe knowne him when breathing out along and moſt pitifull *Alas* from the bottome of her heart ſhe fell backward in a trance. And if the Barber had not bin by good hap at hand, ſhe would haue falne on the ground with all the waight of her bodie: the Curate preſently repaired to take off the vaile of her face, and caſt water thereon, & as ſoone as he did diſcouer it, *Don Fernando*, who was he indeed that held faſt the other, knew her, & looked like a dead man as ſoone as he viewed her, but did not all this let go *Luſcinda*, who was the other whom he held ſo faſt, and that laboured ſo much to eſcape out of his hands. *Cardenio* likewiſe heard the *Alas* that *Dorotea* ſaid, when ſhe fell into a trance, and beleeuing that it was his *Luſcinda*, iſſued out of the chamber greatly altered, and the firſt he eſpied was *Don Fernando*, which held *Luſcinda* faſt; who forthwith knew him: and all the three, *Luſcinda*, *Cardenio*, and *Dorotea* ſtood dumbe and amazed, as folke that knew not what had befalne vnto them. All of them held their peace, and beheld one another. *Dorotea* looked on *Don Fernando*. *Don Fernando* on *Cardenio*, *Cardenio* on *Luſcinda*, and *Luſcinda* againe on *Cardenio*: but *Luſcinda* was the firſt that broke ſilence, ſpeaking to *Don Fernando* in this manner. Leaue me off Lord *Fernando*, I coniure thee, by that thou ſhouldeſt bee, for that which thou art; if thou wilt not doe it for any other reſpect: let me cleaue to the wall, whoſe Iuie I am, to the ſupporter from whom neither thy importunities nor threats, promiſes or gifts could once deflect mee. Note how heauen by vnuſuall, vnfrequented, and from vs concealed waies, hath ſet my true ſpouſe before mine eyes: and thou doeſt know well by a thouſand coſtly experiences, that onely death is potent to blot forth his remembrance out of

thou muſt doe none other) to conuert thine affliction into rage, and thy good will into deſpight, and there withall end my life, for if I may render vp the ghoſt in the preſence of my deere ſpouſe, I ſhall account it fortunately loſt. Perhaps by my death he will remaine ſatisfied of the faith, which I euer kept ſincere towards him, vntill the laſt period of my life. By this time *Dorotea* was come to her ſelfe, and liſtned to moſt of *Luſcindas* reaſons, and by them came to the knowledge of her ſelfe: but ſeeing that *Don Fernando* did not yet let her depart from betweene his armes, nor anſwere any thing to her words: encouraging her ſelfe the beſt that ſhe might, ſhe aroſe, and kneeling at his feete, and ſhedding a number of Criſtall and penetrating teares ſhe ſpoke to him thus.

If it be not ſo my Lord, that the beames of that Sunne which thou holdeſt eclipſed betwene thine armes, doe darken and depriue thoſe of thine eyes, thou mighteſt haue by this perceiued how ſhe that is proſtrated at thy feet is the vnfortunate (vntill thou ſhalt pleaſe) and the diſtaſtrous *Dorotea*. I am that poore humble countriwoman, whom thou eyther through thy bountie, or for thy pleaſure didſt deigne to raiſe to that height that ſhe might call thee her owne. I am ſhe which ſometime immured within the limits of honeſtie did lead a moſt contented life, vntil it opened the gates of her recollection and wearineſſe, to thine importunitie, and ſeeming iuſt, and amorous requeſts, and rendred vp to thee the keyes of her liberty, a greeſe by thee ſo ill recompenſed, as the finding my ſelfe in ſo remote a place as this: wherein you haue met with mee, and I ſeene you, may cleerely teſtifie, but yet for all this, I would not haue you to imagine that I come heere guided by diſhonourable ſteps being onely hither conducted by the tracts of dolour, and ſeeling to ſee my ſelfe thus forgotten by thee. It was thy will, that I ſhould be thine owne, and thou didſt deſire it in ſuch a manner, as although now thou wouldſt not haue it ſo, yet canſt not thou poſſibly leaue off to be mine. Know my deare Lord that the matchleſſe affection that I doe beare towards thee, may re-

compenſe and be equiualent to her beautie and nobilitie, for whom thou doeſt abandon mee. Thou canſt not be the beautifull *Luſcinda*, becauſe thou art mine: nor ſhe thine, for as much as ſhe belongs to *Cardenio*, and it will be more eaſier, if you will note it well, to reduce thy will to loue her that adores thee, then to addreſſe hers that hates thee, to beare thee affection: Thou diddeſt ſollicite my wretchieſneſſe; thou prayedſt to mine integrtie, and waſt not ignorant of my qualitie: thou knoweſt alſo very well vpon what termes I ſubiected my ſelfe to thy will, ſo as there remaines no place, nor colour to terme it a fraud or deceit. And all this being ſo, as in veritie it is, and that thou beeſt as Chriſtian as thou art noble, why doeſt thou with theſe ſo many vntoward wreathings dilate the making of mine ende happy, whoſe commencement thou diddeſt illuſtrate ſo much? and if thou wilt not haue me for what I am, who am thy true and lawfull ſpouſe; yet at leaſt take and admit mee for thy ſlaue, for ſo that I may be in thy poſſeſſion, I will account my ſelfe happy and fortunate. Doe not permit that by leauing and abandoning mee, meetings may be made to diſcourſe of my diſhonour. Doe not vexe thus the declining yeares of my parents, ſeeing that the loyall ſeruices which they euer haue done as vaſſailes to thine, deſerue not ſo honeſt a recompence. And if thou eſteemeſt that thy bloud by medling with mine ſhall be ſtayned or embaſed: conſider how fewe Noble howſes or rather none at all are there in the world, which haue not runne the ſame way: and that the womans ſide is not eſſentially requiſite for the illuſtrating of noble deſcents, how much more, ſeeing that true nobilitie conſiſts in vertue, which if it ſhall want in thee by refuſing that which thou oweſt mee ſo iuſtly, I ſhall remaine with many more degrees of nobilitie then thou ſhalt. And in concluſion that which I will laſtly ſay is, that whether thou wilt or no I am thy wife, the witneſſes are thine owne words, which neither ſhould nor ought to lie, if thou doeſt prize thy ſelfe of that for whoſe want thou deſpiſeſt mee. Witneſſe ſhall

alſo

alſo be thine own hand writing Witneſſe heauen which thou didſt moake to beare witneſſe of that which thou didſt promiſe vnto mee: and when all this ſhall faile, thy very conſcience ſhall neuer fayle from vſing clamours being ſilent in thy mirth and turning for this truth, which I haue ſaid to thee now, ſhall trouble thy greateſt pleaſure and delight.

Theſe and many other like reaſons did the ſweetely grieued *Dorothea* vſe with ſuch feeling and abundance of teares, as all thoſe that were preſent, as well ſuch as accompanied *Don Fernando*, as alſo the others that did accompany her. *Don Fernando* liſtened to her without replying a word, vntill ſhe had ended her ſpeech, and giuen beginning to ſo many ſighes and ſobs, as the heart that could indure to beholde them without mouing, were harder then braſſe. *Luſcinda* did alſo regard her, no leſſe compaſsionate of her ſorrow then admired at her diſcretion and beautie: and although ſhe would haue approched to her, and vſed ſome conſolatorie wordes, yet was ſhe hindred by *Don Fernandoes* armes, which held her ſtill embraced; who full of confuſion and maruell, after ſhe had ſtood very attentiuely beholding *Dorotea* a good while, opening his armes, and leauing *Luſcinda* free, ſaid, Thou haſt vanquiſhed; O beautifull *Dorotea*, thou haſt vanquiſhed me. For it is not poſſible to reſiſt or denie ſo many vnited truthes. *Luſcinda* through her former traunce and weakeneſſe, as *Don Fernando* left her was like to fall, if *Cardenio* who ſtood behinde *Don Fernando* all the while, leſt he ſhould be knowne, ſhaking off all feare and indangering his perſon, had not ſtarted forward to ſtay her from falling, and claſping her ſweetly betweene his armes, he ſaid, if pittifull heauen be pleaſed, and would haue thee now at laſt take ſome eaſe my loyall, conſtant and beautifull ladie, I preſume that thou canſt not poſſeſſe it more ſecurely, then betweene theſe armes which doe now receiue thee, as whilome they did when fortune was pleaſed, that I might call thee mine own: and then *Luſcinda* firſt ſeuering her eyelids, beheld *Cardenio*, and hauing firſt taken notice of him by

his voyce,& confirmed it againe by her ſight, like one quite diſtracted,without farther regarding modeſt reſpects,ſhecaſt both her arms about his neck,& ioyning her face to his,ſaid; yea,thou indeed art my Lord: thou, the true owner of this poore captiue,howſoeuer aduerſe fortune ſhall thwart it, or this life,which is only ſuſtained and liues by thine, be euer ſo much thretned.This was a maruellous ſpectacle to *Don Fernando*,& all the reſt of the beholders, which did vniuerſally admire at this ſo vnexpected an euent: and *Dorotea* perceiuing *Don Fernando* to change color,as one reſoluing to take reuenge on *Cardenio*,for he had ſet hand to his ſword;which ſhe coniecturing,did with maruellous expedition kneele,and catching holde on his legges,kiſsing them, ſhe ſtrained them with ſo louing embracements as he could not ſtirre out of the place,and then with her eyes ouerflowen with teares, ſaid vnto him: what meaneſt thou to doe my onely refuge in this vnexpected traunce? Thou haſt heere thine owne ſpouſe at thy feete,and her whom thou wouldeſt faine poſſeſſe, is betweene her owne husbands armes: iudge then whether it become thee, or is a thing poſsible to diſſolue that which heauen hath knit, or whether it be any wiſe laudable to indeauour to raiſe and equall to thy ſelfe her, who contemning all dangers and inconueniences, and confirmed in faith and conſtancy,doth in thy preſence bathe her eyes with amorous liquor of her true loues face and boſom. I deſire thee for Gods ſake,and by thine owne worths, I requeſt thee that this ſo notorious a verity may not onely aſſwage thy choler,but alſo diminiſh it in ſuch ſort, as thou mayeſt quietly & peaceably permit thoſe two louers to enioy their deſires without any encumbrance, all the time that heauen ſhall graunt it to them: and herein thou ſhalt ſhew the generoſitie of thy magnanimous and noble breaſt, and giue the world to vnderſtand how reaſon preuaileth in thee, and dominereth ouer paſſion. All the time that *Dorotea* ſpoke thus to *Don Fernando*, although *Cardenio* held *Luſcinda* betweene his armes yet did he neuer take his eye of *Don Fernando*

Fernando, with resolution, that if he did see him once stir in his preiudice, he would labour both to defend himselfe, & offend his aduersary, & all those that should ioine with him to do him any harme as much as he could, although it were with the rest of his life: but *Don Fernandos* friends, the Curate and Barber who were present and saw all that was past repayred in the meane season, without omitting the good *Sancho Panca*, and all of them together compassed *Don Fernando*, intreating him to haue regard of the beautifull *Doroteas* teares, and it being true (as they beleeued it was) which she had said he should not permit her to remain defrauded of her so iust & lawful hopes. And that he should ponder how it was not by chance, but rather by the particular prouidence and disposition of the heauens, that they had al met together so vnexpectedly. And that he should remember as Master Curate said very wel, that only death could seuer *Luscinda* from her *Cardenio*. And that although the edge of a sword might deuide and part them a sunder, yet in that case they would account their death most happie, and that in irremediless euents, it was highest prudence, by straining and ouercomming himselfe to shew a generous minde, permitting that he might conquer his owne will they two should ioy that good, which heauen had alreadie granted to them, and that he should conuert his eyes to behold the beautie of *Dorotea*, and he should see that few or none could for feature paragon with her; and much lesse excell her, and that he should confer her humilitie and extreme loue which she bore to him, with her other indowments; and principally that if he gloried in the titles of Nobilitie or Christianitie, hee could not doe any other then accomplish the promise that he had past to her: and that by fulfilling it, hee should please God, and satisfie discreet persons, which know very well, how it is a speciall prerogatiue of beautie, though it be in an humble and meane subiect, if it bee consorted with modestie and vertue, to exalt and equall it selfe to any dignitie, without disparagement of him which doth helpe to raise, or vnite it to himselfe. And when the

the ſtrong lawes of delight are accompliſhed (ſo that there intercurre no ſinne in the acting thereof) hee is not to bee condemned which doth follow them. Finally, they added to theſe reaſons, others ſo many and forcible, that the valerous breaſt of *Don Fernando* (as commonly all thoſe that are warmed and nouriſhed by Noble bloud are wont) was mollified, and permitted it ſelfe to bee vanquiſhed by that truth which he could not denie though hee would: and the token that hee gaue of his being ouercome, was to ſtoupe downe and imbrace *Doroteа*, ſaying vnto her, ariſe Ladie, for it is not iuſt that ſhee bee proſtrated at my feete; whoſe Image I haue erected in my minde, and if I haue not hitherto giuen demonſtrations of what I owe auerre, it hath perhaps befallen through the diſpoſition of heauen, to the end that I might by noting the conſtancie and faith wherewithall thou doſt affect me, know after how to valewe and eſteeme thee according vnto thy merits: and that which in recompence thereof I doe intreate of thee is, that thou wilt excuſe in me mine ill maner of proceeding, and exceeding careleſneſſe in repaying thy good will. For the very occaſion and violent paſſions that made me to accept thee as mine, the very ſame did alſo impell me againe not to be thine: and for the more verifying of mine aſſertion, doe but once behold the eyes of the now contented *Luſcinda*, and thou mayeſt reade in them a thouſand excuſes for mine errour: and ſeeing ſhe hath found and obtained her hearts deſire: and I haue in thee alſo gotten what is moſt conuenient; for I wiſh ſhe may liue ſecurely and ioyfully, many and happy yeares with her *Cardenio*, for I will pray the ſame, that it will licenſe me to enioy my beloued *Doroteа*: and ſaying ſo, he embraced her againe, and ioyned his face to hers with ſo louely motion, as it conſtrayned him to holde watch ouer his teares, leaſt violently burſting forth, they ſhould giue doubtleſſe arguments of his feruent loue, and remorſe.

Cardenio, *Luſcinda*, and almoſt all the reſt could not doe ſo,

ſo, for the greater number of them ſhed ſo many teares, ſome for their priuate contentn ent, and others for their friends, as it ſeemed, that ſome grieuous and heauy misfortune had betided them all: euen very *Sancho Panca* wept, although he excuſed it afterward, ſaying, that he wept onely becauſe that he ſaw that *Dorotea* was not the Queene *Micomicona* as he had imagined, of whom he hoped to haue receiued ſo great gifts and fauours. The admiration and teares ioyned, indured in them all for a pretty ſpace, and preſently after *Cardenio* and *Luſcinda* went and kneeled to *Don Fernando*, yeelding him thankes for the fauour that hee had done to them, with ſo courteous complements, as he knew not what to anſwere; and therfore lifted them vp, and embraced them with very great affection and kindeneſſe; and preſently after he demaunded of *Dorotea* how ſhe came to that place, ſo farre from her owne dwelling? And ſhe recounted vnto him all that ſhe had tolde to *Cardenio*: whereat *Don Fernando* and thoſe which came with him tooke ſo great delight as they could haue wiſhed that her ſtory had continued a longer time in the telling then it did, ſo great was *Doroteas* grace in ſetting out of her misfortunes. And as ſoone as ſhe had ended, *Don Fernando* tolde all that had befalne him in the Citie, after that he had found the ſcroule in *Luſcindas* boſome, wherein ſhe declared *Cardenio* to be her husband; and that he therefore could not marry her, and alſo how he attempted to kill her, and would haue done it, were it not that her parents hindred him, and that he therefore departed out of the houſe full of ſhame and deſpite, with reſolution to reuenge himſelfe more commodiouſly; and how he vnderſtood the next day following, how *Luſcinda* was ſecretly departed from her fathers houſe, and gone no body knew where; but that he finally learned within a few moneths after that ſhe had entred into a certain Monaſtery, with intention to remain there all the daies of her life, if ſhe could not paſſe them with *Cardenio*: and that as ſoone as he had learned that, chooſing thoſe three Gentlemen for his aſſociates, hee

Digitized by Google

came

came to the place where she was, but would not speake to her, fearing lest that as soone as they knew of his being there they would increase the guardes of the Monastery, and therfore expected vntill he found on a day the gates of the Monastery open; and leauing two of his fellowes to keepe the doore, he with the other entred into the Abbey in *Luscindas* search, whom they found talking with a Nunne in the Cloyster, and snatching her away er'e she could retire her selfe, they brought her to a certaine village, where they disguised themselues in that sort they were; for so it was requisite for to bring her away. All which they did with the more facility, that the Monastery was seated abroad in the fields, a good way from any village. He likewise told, that as soone as *Luscinda* saw her selfe in his power, she fell into a sound, and that after she had returned to her selfe, she neuer did any other thing but weepe and sigh, without speaking a word; and that in that manner, accompanied with silence and teares, they had arriued to that Inne, which was to him as gratefull as an arriuall to heauen, wherein all earthly misha;s are concluded and finished.

CHAP. X.

Wherein is prosecuted the Historie of the famous Princesse Micomicona, *with other delightfull aduentures.*

SAncho gaue eare to all this with no small griefe of minde, seeing that all the hopes of his Lordship vanished away like smoake, and that the faire Princesse *Micomicona* was turned into *Dorotea*, and the Giant into *Don Fernando*, and that his Master slept so soundly and careleſſe of all that had hapned. *Dorotea* could not yet assure her selfe whether the happinesse that she possest was a dreame, or no. *Cardenio* was in the very same taking, and

and also *Luscindas* thought, runne the same race. *Don Fernando* yeelded many thankes vnto heauen for hauing dealt with him so propitiously, and vnwinded him out of the intricate *Labyrinth*, wherein straying, he was at the point to haue lost at once his soule and credite, and finally, as many as were in the Inne were very glad and ioyfull of the successe of so thwart, intricate, and desperate affaires. The Curate compounded and ordered all things through his discretion, and congratulated euery one of the good he obtained: but she that kept greatest *Iubilee* and ioy, was the Hostesse for the promise that *Cardenio* and the Curate had made to pay her the damages and harmes committed by *Don-Quixote*; onely *Sancho* as we haue said, was afflicted, vnfortunate and sorrowfull. And thus he entred with melancholy semblance to his Lord, who did but then awake, and said to him.

Well and securely may you sleepe *Sir Knight of the heauie countenance*, as long as it shall please your selfe, without troubling your selfe with any care of killing any Giant, or of restoring the Queene to her Kingdome, for all is concluded & done already. I beleeue thee very easily, replyed *Don-Quixote*, for I haue had the monstrousest and most terrible battell with that Giant, that euer I thinke to haue all the dayes of my life with any; and yet with one thwart blow thawacke I ouerthrew his head to the ground: and there issued so much bloud, as the streames thereof ran along the earth, as if they were of water. As if they were of red wine, you might better haue said, replied *Sancho Panca*: for I would let you to vnderstand, if you know it not already, that the dead Giant is a bored wine bagge: and the bloud, sixe and thirty gallons of redde wine which it contained in his belly: the head that was slasht off so neatly is the whoore my mother, and let the Diuell take all away for me. And what is this thou sayest madde man (quoth *Don-Quixote*?) Art thou in thy right wits? Get vp Sir (quoth *Sancho*) and you your selfe shall see the faire stuffe you haue made, and what we haue to pay, and you shall beholde the Queene transf-

transformed into a particular Ladie called *Dorotea*, with other ſucceſſes, which if you may once conceiue them aright, will ſtrike you into admiration, I would maruell at nothing, quoth *Don-Quixote*, for if thou beeſt well remembred, I tolde thee the other time that we were here, how all that ſucceeded in this place, was done by inchantment, and what wonder then if now the like ſhould eftſoones befall? I could eaſily be induced to beleeue all, replied *Sancho*, if my canuaſſing in the Couerlet were of that nature. But indeed it was not, but moſt reall and certaine. And I ſaw well how the Inkeeper that is here yet this very day aliue, held one end of the Couerlet, and did toſſe me vp towards heauen with very good grace and ſtrength, no leſſe merrily then lightly: and where the notice of parties intercurs, I doe beleeue, although I am a ſimple man, and a ſinner, that there is no kinde of inchantment, but rather much trouble, bruiſing and misfortune. Well God will remedie all, ſaid *Don-Quixote*, and giue me mine apparrell, for I will get vp and goe forth, and ſee thoſe ſucceſſes and transformations which thou ſpeakeſt of. *Sancho* gaue him his clothes, and whilſt he was a making of him readie, the Curate recounted to *Don Fernando* and to the reſt, *Don Quixotes* mad prankes, and the guile hee had vſed to bring him away out of the poore Rocke, wherein he imagined that hee liued exiled through the diſdaine of his Lady. Hee told them moreouer all the other aduentures, which *Sancho* had diſcouered, whereat they did not laugh a little and wonder withall, becauſe it ſeemed to them all to bee one of the extrauaganteſt kinds of madneſſe, that euer befell a diſtracted braine. The Curate alſo added, that ſeeing the good ſucceſſe of the Lady *Dorotea* did impeach the farther proſecuting of their deſigne, that it was requiſite to inuent & finde ſome other way, how to carry him home to his own village. *Cardenio* offred himſelf to proſecute the aduenture, & *Luſcinda* ſhold repreſent *Doroteas* perſon. No, quoth *Don Fernãdo*, it ſhal not be ſo, for I wil haue *Dorotea* to proſecute her own inuention. For ſo that the village of this good Gentleman be not very far off from hence, I will be very glad

to procure his remedy. It is no more then two daies iourney from hence said the Curate, wel though it were more replied *Don Fernando*, I wold be pleased to trauel them, in exchange of doing so good a worke. *Don-Quixote* sallied out at this time completely armed with *Mambrinos* helmet, although with a great hole in it on his head, his target on his arme, & leaned on his Trunke or Iaueline: his strange countenance & gate amazed *Don Fernando* and his companions very much, seeing his ilfauoured visage so withered and yealow, the inequalitie and insutability of his armes, and his graue manner of proceeding: and stood all silent to see what he would: who casting his eyes on the beautifull *Dorotea* with very great grauity and stayednesse said.

I am informed (beautifull Ladie) by this my Squire, that your greatnesse is annihilated, and your being destroyed: for of a Queene and mightie Princesse which you were wont to bee, you are now become a particular Damzell: which if it hath bene done, by particular order of the magicall king your father, dreading that I would not be able to giue you the necessarie and requisite helpe for your restitution; I say that he neither knew nor doth know the one halfe of the enterprise, and that he was very little acquainted with Histories of chiualry, for if he had read them, or passed them ouer with so great attention and leasure, as I haue done and read them, he should haue found at euery other step how other knights of a great deale lesse fame then my selfe haue ended more desperate aduentures, seeing it is not so great a matter to kill a Giant be he euer so arrogant: for it is not many howres since I my selfe fought with one, and what insued I will not say, least they should tell me that I doe lie, but time the detector of all things will disclose it, when we do least thinke thereof, thou foughtest with two wine bagges, and not with a Giant quoth the host at this season, but *Don Fernando* commaunded him to be silent and not interrupt *Don-Quixote* in any wise, who prosecuted his speech saying. In fine I say high and disenherited Ladie, that if your

father

father hath made this *metamorphoſes* in your perſon for the cauſes related, giue him no credit: for there is no perill ſo great on earth, but my ſword ſhall open a way through it, wherewithall I ouerthrowing your enemies head to the ground, will ſet your crowne on your owne head within a few dayes. Heere *Don-Quixote* held his peace, and awaited the Princeſſes her anſwere, who knowing *Don Fernandos* determination and will, that ſhe ſhould continue the commenced guile vntil *Don-Quixote* were carried home againe, anſwered with a very good grace and countenance in this manner. Whoſoeuer informed you valorous Knight *of the ill fauored face*, that I haue altered and changed my being, hath not told you the truth: for I am the very ſame to day, that I was yeſterday: true it is, that ſome vnexpected, yet fortunate ſucceſſes haue wrought ſome alteration in me, by beſtowing on me better hap, then I hoped for, or could wiſh my ſelfe: but yet for all that I haue not left off to be that which before, or to haue the very ſame thoughts, which I euer had, to helpe my ſelfe by the valour of your moſt valorous and inuincible arme. And therefore I requeſt you good my Lord of your accuſtomed bounty to returne my father his honour againe, and account of him as of a very diſcreete and prudent man: ſeeing that he found by this skill, ſo eaſie and ſo infallible a way to redreſſe my diſgraces. For I doe certainly beleeue, that if it had not beene by your meanes, I ſhould neuer haue hapned to attaine to the good fortune, which now I poſſeſſe, as all theſe Noblemen preſent may witneſſe: what therefore reſts, is, that to morrow morning we doe ſet forward, for to day is now alreadie ſo ouergone, as we ſhould not be able to trauaile very farre from hence: as for the concluſion of the good ſucceſſe that I do howerly expect, I referre that to God, and the valour of your inuincible arme.

This much the diſcreet *Dorotea* ſaid, and *Don-Quixote* hauing heard her, he turned him to *Sancho* with very manifeſt tokens of indignation and ſaid. Now I ſay vnto thee little

Sancho

Sancho, that thou art the veryeſt raſcall that is in all *Spaine*: tell me theefe and vagabond, didſt not thou but euen very now ſay vnto me that this Princeſſe was turned into a Damſell, and that called *Dorotea*? and that the heade which I thought I had ſlaſhed from a giants ſhoulders, was the whore which bore thee? with a thouſand other follies, which did plunge men into the greateſt confuſion that euer I was in, in my life? I vow (and then he looked vp on heauen, and did craſh his teeth together) that I am about to make ſuch a wracke on thee, as ſhall beate wit into the pates of all the lying Squires that ſhall euer hereafter ſerue Knights errant in this world. I pray you haue patience good my Lord anſwered *Sancho*, for it may very well befall mee, to be deceiued in that which toucheth the tranſmutation of the Ladie and Princeſſe *Micomicona*: but in that which concerneth the Giants head, or at leaſt the boaring of the wine bagges, and that the bloud was but red wine, I am not deceiued I ſweare. For the bagges lie yet wounded there within at your owne beds head: and the red wine hath made a lake in the chamber: and if it bee not ſo, it ſhall be perceiued at the frying of the egges, I meane that you ſhall ſee it, when Maſter Inkeepers worſhip, who is heere preſent ſhall demaund the loſſe and dammage: I ſay the *Sancho* quoth *Don-Quixote* that thou art a madcap, pardon me, and ſo it is enough. It is enough indeed quoth *Don Fernando*, and therefore let me intreate you to ſay no more of this, and ſeeing my Ladie the Princeſſe ſaies ſhe will go away to morrow, ſeeing it is now to late to depart to day, let it be ſo agreed on, and we will ſpend this night in pleaſant diſcourſes vntill the approach of the inſuing day, wherein we will all accompany and attend on the worthy Knight Sir *Don-Quixote*, becauſe we would be eye-witneſſes of the valorous and vnmatchable feates of armes, which he ſhall doe in the purſuit of this waightie enterprize, which he hath taken vpon him: I am he that will ſerue and accompany you good my Lord replyed *Don-Quixote*, and I doe highly gratifie the honour

Digitized by Google

that is done mee, and the good opinion that is held of me, the which I will indeuour to verifie and approoue, or it shall cost mee my life, or more, if more it might cost mee.

Many other words of complement and gratification past betweene *Don-Quixote* and *Don Fernando*: but a certaine passenger imposed silence to them all, by his arriuall to the Inne, in that very season, who by his attire shewed that hee was a *Christian* newly returned from among the *Moores*, for he was apparrelled with a short skirted cassocke of blew cloth, sleeues reaching downe halfe the arme, and without a coller; his breeches were likewise of blew linnen, and hee wore a bonnet of the same colour, a payre of date colour buskins, and a Turkish Cimitar hanging at his necke in a scarfe: which went athwart his breast, there entred after him riding on an Asse a woman clad like a *Moore*, and her face couered with a peece of the vaile of her head, she wore on her head a little cap of cloath of gold, and was couered with a little Turkish mantle, from the shoulders downe to the feete. The man was of strong and comely making, of the age of fortie yeares or there abouts, his face was somewhat tanned, he had long *Mostachoos*, and a very hansome beard. To conclude, his making was such as if he were well attired, men would take him to be a person of quality, and good birth: he demaunded a chamber as soone as hee had entred, and being answered that there was no one vacant in the Inne, he seemed to be grieued, and comming to her which in her attire deuoted her selfe to be a *Moore*, he tooke her downe from her Asse. *Luscinda*, *Dorotea*, the hostesse, her daughter, and *Maritornes*, allured to behold the new and strange attire of the *Moore* compassed her about and *Dorotea*, who was alwaies most gracious, courteous, and discreete, deeming that both she and her that had brought her were discontented for the want of a lodging she said. Ladie be not grieued for the trouble you are heere like to endure for want of meanes to refresh your selfe, seeing it is

an

an vniuerſall and vſuall vice of all Innes to be defectiue herein: yet notwithſtanding if it ſhall pleaſe you to paſſe away the time among vs (pointing to *Luſcinda*) perhaps you haue met in the diſcourſe of your trauels, other worſe places of intertainment then this ſhall proue. The diſguiſed Lady made none anſwere, nor other thing then ariſing from the place wherein ſhe ſate, and ſetting both her hands a croſſe on her boſome, ſhe inclined her head, and bowed her bodie in ſigne that ſhe rendred them thanks: by her ſilence they doubtleſly coniectured her to bee a *Moore*, and that ſhee could not ſpeake the *Caſtilian* tongue. In this, the captiue arriued who was otherwiſe imployed vntill then, and ſeeing that they all had inuironed her that came with him, and that ſhe made no anſwere to their ſpeech, he ſaid. Ladies this maiden ſcarce vnderſtands my tongue yet, nor doth ſhe know any other thē that of her owne countrey, and therefore ſhe hath not, nor can make any anſwere to your demaunds: We dmaund nothing of her quoth *Luſcinda*, but onely doe make her an offer of our companies for this night, and part of her roume where we our ſelues ſhall be accommodated, where ſhe ſhall be cheriſhed vp as much as the commodity of this place, and the Obligatiō wherin we be tied to ſhew courteſies to ſtrangers that may want it, doe binde vs, eſpecially ſhe being a woman, to whom we may do this ſeruice. Sweet Lady I kiſſe your hands both for her & my ſelfe replied the captiue, and I do highly prize, as it deſerueth the fauour you haue profered, which in ſuch an occaſion, & offred by ſuch perſons as you ſeeme to be, doth very plainly ſhew how great it is: tell me good Sir quoth *Dorotea*, whether is this Lady a *Chriſtian* or a *Moore*? for by her attire & ſilence ſhe makes vs ſuſpect that ſhe is, that we would not wiſh ſhe were. A *Moore* ſhe is in attire & body, anſwered the captiue: but in mind ſhe is a very feruent *Chriſtian*, for ſhe hath very expreſly deſired to become one. Then ſhe is not yet baptized, ſaid *Luſcinda*? there hath beene no oportunitie offered to vs quoth the captiue to chriſten her ſince ſhe departed from *Argell*,

which is her Towne and Country: and ſince that time ſhee was not in any ſo eminent a danger of death, as might oblige her to be baptized, before ſhee were firſt inſtructed in al the ceremonies which our holy Mother the Church commandeth: but I hope ſhortly (if it ſhall pleaſe God) to ſee her baptized with that decency, which her quality and calling deſerues, which is greater then her attire or mine makes ſhew of.

Theſe wordes inflamed all the hearers with a great deſire to know, who the *Moore* and her captiue were; yet none of them would at that time intreate him to ſatisfie their longing, becauſe the ſeaſon rather inuited them to take ſom order how they might reſt after their trauailes, then to demaund of them the diſcourſe of their liues. *Dorotea* then taking her by the hand, cauſed her to ſit downe by her ſelfe, and prayed her to take off the veile from her face: ſhee inſtantly beheld the Captiue, as if ſhee demaunded of him, what they ſaid; and hee in the *Arabicall* language told her, how they deſired her to diſcouer her face and bad her to do it, which preſently ſhee did, and diſcouered ſo beautifull a viſage, as *Dorotea* eſteemed her to bee fairer then *Luſcinda*, and *Luſcinda* prized her to excell *Dorotea*, and all the beholders perceiued, that if any one could ſurpaſſe them both in beautie, it was the *Moore*; and there were ſome that thought ſhee excelled them both in ſome reſpects. And as beautie hath euermore the prerogatiue and grace to reconcile mens minds, and attract their wils to it; ſo all of them forthwith dedicated their deſires to ſerue and make much of the louely *Moore*. *Don Fernando* demaunded of the Captiue, how ſhee was called, and hee anſwered that her name was *Lela Zoraida*, and as ſoone as ſhee heard him, and vnderſtood what they had demaunded, ſhee ſuddainely anſwered with anguiſh, but yet with a very good grace, no, not *Zoraida*, but *Maria*, *Maria*, giuing them to vnderſtand that ſhee was called *Maria*, and not *Zoraida*. Theſe wordes and the great affect and vehemencie wherewithall the *Moore* deli-

Digitized by Google

uered them, extorted more then one teare from the hearers, especially from the women, who are naturally tender hearted and compassiue. *Luscinda* embraced her then with great loue, and said. I, I, *Maria, Maria,* to which shee answered, I, I, *Maria*; *Zoraida mancange*: that is, and not *Zoraida*. By this it was growen some foure of the clocke in the afternoone, and by order of those which were *Don Ferdinandos* companions, the Inkeeper had prouided for them as good a beauer as the Inne could in any wise affoord vnto them. Therefore it being the houre, they sate downe altogether at a long table, for there was neuer a square or round one in all the house, and they gaue the first and principall end (although hee refused it as much as hee could) to *Don-Quixote*, who commaunded that the Ladie *Micomicona* should sit at his elbow, seeing hee was her champion, presently were placed *Luscinda*, and *Zoraida*, and *Don Fernando*, and *Cardenio* right ouer against them, and after the Captiue and other Gentlemen, and on the other side the Curate and Barber: and thus they made their drinking with very great recreation, which was the more augmented to see *Don-Quixote*, leauing of his meate, and moued by the like spirit of that which had made him once before talke so much to the Goate-heards, beginne to offer them an occasion of speech in this manner.

Truely, good Sirs, if it be well considered, those which professe the order of Knighthood doe see many great, and vnexpected things. If it be not so, say, what mortall man aliue is there that entring in at this Castle gate, and seeing of vs all in the manner we be now present here, can iudge and beleeue that we are those which wee be? who is it that can say, that this Ladie which sits here at my sleeue, is the great Queene that wee all know her to bee, and that I am that *Knight of the heauie countenance*, that am so much blab'd of abroade by the mouth of fame? therefore it cannot be now doubted but that this arte and exercise excelleth all the others which euer humane wit, the vnderminer of nature in-

Digitized by Google

uented, and it is the more to be prized, by how much it expoſeth it ſelfe more then other trades to dangers and inconueniences. Away with thoſe that ſhall affirme learning to ſurpaſſe armes, for I will ſay vnto them, be they what they liſt, that they know not what they ſay. For the reaſon which ſuch men doe moſt vrge, and to which they moſt relye, is, that the trauailes of the ſpirit doe farre exceede thoſe of the body: and that the vſe of armes are only exerciſed by the body, as if it were an office fit for porters, for which nothing were requiſite but bodily forces, or as if in that which wee that profeſſe it doe call armes, were not included the acts of Fortitude, which require deepe vnderſtanding to execute them, or as if the Warriours minde did not labour as well as his body, who had a great armie to leade and command, or the defence of a beſieged Cittie. If not, ſee if hee can arriue by his corporall ſtrength, to know or ſound the intent of his enemy, the deſignes, ſtratagems, and difficulties, how to preuent iminent dangers, all theſe being operations of the vnderſtanding, wherein the body hath no medling at all: it being therefore ſo, that the exerciſe of armes require ſpirit as well as thoſe of learning; let vs now examine which of the two ſpirits, that of the Scholler, or Souldier, doe take moſt paine? and this may bee beſt vnderſtood by the end, to which both of them are addreſſed, for that intention is moſt to be eſteemed, which hath for obiect the moſt Noble end. The end and concluſion of learning is, I ſpeake not now of Diuinitie whoſe ſcope is to leade and addreſſe ſoules to heauen, for to an end ſo much without end as this, no other may be compared, I meane of humane ſciences and arts, to maintaine *diſtributiue iuſtice* in his perfection, and giue to euery one that which is his owne: to indeauour and cauſe good lawes to bee religiouſly obſerued; an end moſt certainely, generous, high, and worthy of great praiſe: but not of ſo much as that, to which the exerciſe of armes is annext, which hath for his obiect and end, peace: which is the greateſt good men can deſire in this life: and therefore the

firſt good newes that euer the world had, or men receiued, were thoſe which the Angels brought on that night which was our day when they ſung in the skies : *Glorie bee in the heights, and peace on earth, to men of good mindes.* And the ſalutation which the beſt Maſter that euer was on earth or in heauen, taught to his Diſciples and fauourites, was that, when they entred into any houſe, they ſhould ſay : *Peace be to this houſe* : and many other times he ſaid : *I giue vnto you my peace; I leaue my peace vnto you : peace bee amongſt you :* It is a good, as precious as a jewell, and a gift giuen, and left by ſuch a hand : a jewell without which neither on earth or in heauen can there bee any perfect good. This peace is the true end of warre, for armes, and warre are one and the ſelfe ſame things. This truth being therefore preſuppoſed, that the end of warre is peace, and that herein it doth excell the end of learning : let vs deſcend to the corporall labours of the Scholler, and to thoſe of him which profeſſeth armes, and conſider which of them are more toileſome.

Don-Quixote did proſecute his diſcourſe in ſuch ſort, and with ſo pleaſing termes, as he had almoſt induced his audients to eſteeme him, to be at that time at leaſt, exempt from his frenſie : and therefore by reaſon that the greater number of them were Gentlemen, to whom the vſe of armes is in a manner eſſentiall and proper, they did willingly liſten to him, and therefore hee continued on with his diſcourſe in this manner. I ſay then that the paines of the Studient are commonly theſe : principally pouerty (not that I would maintaine that all Students are poore, but that I may put the caſe in the greateſt extremity it can haue) and by ſaying that he may be poore, me thinks there may be no greater aggrauation of his miſery. For he that is poore, hath no perfection : and this pouerty is ſuffered by him ſundry waies, ſometimes by hunger, other times by cold or nakedneſſe, and many times by all of them together. Yet it is ueuer ſo extreme, but that he doth eate, although it be ſomewhat later

then the cuſtome; or of the ſcraps and reuerſion of the rich-man: and the greateſt miſery of the Student is that which they terme, to liue by ſaps and pottage: and though they want fire of their owne, yet may they haue recourſe to their neighbours chimney, which if it doe not warme, yet will it weaken the cold; and finally, they ſleepe at night vnder a roofe. I will not deſcend to other trifles, to wit, the want of ſhirts and ſhoes, the bareneſſe of their clothes: or the ouerloading of their ſtomacks with meate, when good fortune lends them as good a meale: for by this way which I haue decyphered ſo rough and difficult: ſtumbling here, falling there, getting vp againe on the other ſide, and refalling on this, they attaine the degree which they haue deſired ſo much, which many hauing compaſſed as wee haue ſeene, which hauing paſſed through theſe difficulties, and ſailed by *Scylla* and *Charibdis* (borne away flying in a manner by fauourable fortune) they command and gouerne all the world from a chaire, turning their hunger into ſacietie, their nakedneſſe into pompe, and their ſleeping on a matte, into a ſweet repoſe among Hollands and Damaske: a reward iuſtly merited by their vertue; but their labours confronted and compared to thoſe of the militant Souldier, remaine very far behinde, as I will preſently declare.

CHAP. XI.

Treating of the curious diſcourſe made by Don-Quixote *vpon the exerciſes of Armes and Letters.*

DON-QVIXOTE continuing his diſcourſe ſaid. Seeing wee beginne in the Student with pouerty and her parts, let vs examine whether the Souldier be richer? certainely wee ſhall finde that no man can exceede the Souldier in pouerty it ſelfe. For hee is tyed

to

to his wretched pay which comes either late or neuer: or else to his owne shifts with notable danger of his life and conscience, and his nakednesse is oftimes so much as many times a leather jerken gashed, serues him at once for a shirt and an ornament: and in the midst of winter he hath sundry times no other defence or helpe to resist the inclemencies of the aire in the midst of the open fields, then the breath of his mouth; which I verily beleeue doth against nature come out cold, by reason it sallies from an emptie place: expect there till the night fall, that hee may repaire all these discommodities, by the easinesse of his bed, the which if it be not through his owne default, shall neuer offend in narrownesse, for hee may measure out for it on the earth as many foot as he pleaseth, and tumble himselfe vp and downe in it without indangering the wrinckling of his sheetes. Let after all this the day and houre arriue, wherein he is to receiue the degree of his profession. Let, I say, a day of battaile arriue, for there they will set on his head, the Cappe of his dignitie, made of lints to cure the wound of some bullet that hath past throw and throw his temples, or hath maimed an arme or a legge, and when this doth not befall, but that heauen doth piously keepe and preserue him whole and sound; he shall perhaps abide still in the same pouerty wherein hee was at the first; and that it bee requisite that one and another battaile doe succeede, and he come of euer a victour to the end that he may prosper, and be at the last aduanced. But such miracles are but few times wrought, and say good Sirs if you haue noted it, how few are those which the warres rewards, in respect of the others that it hath destroyed? you must answere without question that there can be no comparison made betweene them, nor can the dead be reduced to any number, but all the liuing and such as are aduanced, may be counted easily with three arithmeticall figures; all which fals out contrary in learned men, for all of them haue wherewithall to entertaine and maintaine themselues by skirts, I will say nothing of sleeues: So that although the Souldiers labour is greater,

Digitized by Google

greater, yet is his reward much leſſe. But to this may be anſwered, that it is eaſier to reward two hundred thouſand learned men, then thirty thouſand Souldiers; for they may be aduanced by giuing vnto them offices which muſt of neceſſity be beſtowed on men of their profeſſion: but Souldiers cannot be recompenſed otherwiſe then by the Lords ſubſtance and wealth whom they ſerue; and yet this obiection and impoſſibility doth fortifie much more my aſſertion.

But leauing this apart which is a labyrinth of very difficult iſſue, let vs returne to the preeminency of armes ouer learning, which is a matter hitherto depending, ſo many are the reaſons that euery one alleageth for himſelfe: and among thoſe which I my ſelfe haue repeated, then learning doth argue thus for it ſelfe, that armes without it cannot be long maintained, for as much as the warre hath alſo lawes, and is ſubiect to them, and that the lawes are contayned vnder the title of learning, and belong to learned men. To this obiection, Armes doe make anſwere, that the lawes cannot be ſuſtained without them, for commonwelths are defended by armes, and Kingdomes preſerued, Citties fenced, high waies made ſafe, the Seas freed from Pirates: and to be briefe, if it were not for them, Commonwelths, Kingdomes, Monarchies, Citties, and wayes by Sea and Land, would be ſubiect to the rigour and confuſion which attendeth on the warre all the time that it indureth, and is licenſed to practiſe his prerogatiues and violence: And it is a knowen truth, that it which coſt moſt is or ought to be moſt accounted of, that one may become eminent in learning, it coſts him time, watchings, hunger, nakedneſſe, head-aches, rawneſſe of ſtomacke, and other ſuch inconueniences, as I haue partly mentioned already. But that one may arriue by true termes to be a good Souldier, it coſts him al that it coſts the Studient, in ſo exceeding a degree, as admits no compariſon, for he is at euery ſtep in jeoperdie to looſe his life. And what feare of neceſſity, or pouerty, may befall or moleſt a Studient ſo fiercely as it doth a Souldier, who ſeeing himſelf

at

at the siege of some impregnable place, and standing Centinell in some Raueline or halfe Moone, seeles the enemies vndermining neere to the place where he is, and yet dares not to depart or abandon his stand, vpon no occasion whatsoeuer, or shunne the danger which so nearely threatens him; but that which he only may doe, is to aduice his Captaine of that which passeth, to the end he may remedy it by some countermine, whilest he must stand stil fearing and expecting when he shal suddainly flie vp to the clowds without wings, and after descend to the depths against his will. And if this appeare to be but a small danger, let vs way whether the grapling of two gallies, the one with the other in the midst of the spacious Maine, may be compared, or doe surpasse it, the which nailed and grapled fast the one to the other, the Souldier hath no more roome in them, then two foot broad of a planke on the battailings, and notwithstanding, although he clearly see laid before him so many ministers of death, for all the peeces of artillery that are planted on the aduerse side, doe threaten him, and are not distant from his body the length of a launce: and seeing that if he slipt euer so little aside, he should fall into the deepes: doth yet neuertheleffe with vndaunted heart, borne away on the wings of honour, which spurreth him onward, oppose himselfe as a worke to all their shot, and striues to passe by that so narrow away into the enemies vessell: And what is most to bee admired, is to behold how scarce is one fallen into that place; from whence hee shall neuer after arise vntill the worldes end, when another takes possession of the same place: and if he doe likewise tumble into the Sea, which gapes like an enemy for him also, another and another will succeede vnto him, without giuing any respite to the times of their death, valour, and boldnesse, which is the greatest that may be found among all the traunces of warfare. Those blessed ages were fortunate which wanted the dreadfull furie of the diueliſh and murdering peeces of Ordenance, to whose inuentor I am verily perswaded that they render in hell

hell an eternall guerdon for his Diabolicall inuention; by which he hath giuen power to an infamous, baſe, vile and daſtardly arme, to bereaue the moſt valorous Knight of life; and that without knowing how or from whence, in the midſt of the ſtomacke and courage that inflames and animates valorous mindes, there arriues a wandring bullet (ſhot off perhaps by him that was affraid, and fledde at the very blaze of the powder, as he diſcharged the accurſed engine) and cuts off and finiſheth in a moment the thoughts and life of him who merited to enioy it many ages.

And whileſt I conſider this I am about to ſay that it grieues me to haue euer vndertaken the exerciſe of a Knight errant in this our deteſtable age; for although no danger can affright me, yet notwithſtanding I liue in iealouſie to thinke how powder and Lead might depriue me of the power to make my ſelfe famous and renouned by the ſtrength of mine arme & edge of my ſword throughout the face of the earth. But let heauen diſpoſe as it pleaſeth, for ſo much the more ſhal I be eſteemed, if I can compaſſe my pretentions, by how much the dangers were greater, to which I oppoſed my ſelfe, then thoſe atchieued in foregoing times by Knights aduenturous.

Don-Quixote made all this prolixe ſpeech, whileſt the reſt of his company did eate, wholly forgetting to taſte one bit, although *Sancho Panca* did now and then put him in remembrance of his victuals, ſaying that hee ſhould haue leiſure enough after, to ſpeake as much as he could deſire. In thoſe that had heard was againe renued a kinde of compaſſion, to ſee a man of ſo good a witte as he ſeemed to be, and of ſo good diſcourſe in all the other matters which he tooke in hand, to remaine ſo cleerely deuoyd of it, when any occaſion of ſpeech were offered, treating of his accurſed Chiualrie. The Curate applauded his diſcourſe, affirming that hee produced very good reaſons for al that he had ſpoken in the fauour of armes, and that he himſelfe (although he was learned and Graduated) was likewiſe of his opinion. The Beauer

uer being ended, and the table clothes taken away, whileſt *Maritornes* did helpe her Miſtreſſe & her daughter to make ready the roome where *Don-Quixote* had ſlept for the Gentlewomen, wherein they alone might retire themſelues that night. *Don Fernando* intreated the captiue to recount vnto them the hiſtory of his life, for as much as he ſuſpected that it muſt haue beene rare and delightfull, as he gathered by the tokens he gaue, by comming in the louely *Zoraydas* companie. To which the captiue replied, that he would accompliſh his deſire with a very good will, and that onely he feared that the diſcourſe would not proue ſo ſauory as they expected. But yet for all that he would tell it, becauſe hee would not diſobey him: the Curate and all the reſt thanked him for his promiſe, and turned to requeſt him againe to begin his diſcourſe; and he perceiuing ſo many to ſollicite him, ſaid, that prayers were not requiſite, when commaundements were of ſuch force, and therefore I deſire you, quoth he, to be attentiue, and you ſhall heare a true diſcourſe, to which perhaps no fained inuention may be compared for variety or delight. The reſt animated by theſe his wordes, did accommodate themſelues with very great ſilence, and he beholding their ſilence and expectation of his hiſtory, with a modeſt and pleaſing voyce, began in this manner.

CHAP. XII.

Wherein the captiue recounteth his life, and other accidents.

IN a certaine village of the Mountaines of *Liſon*, my lineage had beginning, wherewithall nature dealt much more liberally then fortune, although my father had the opinion amidſt the penury and pouerty of that people, to be a rich man, as indeed he might haue beene, had he but vſed

vsed as much care to hoard vp his wealth, as prodigality to spend it. And this his liberall disposition proceeded from his being a souldier in his youthfull yeares: for warre is the schoole wherein the miser is made francke, and the francke man prodigall: and if among souldiers wee finde some wretches and niggards, they are accounted Monsters which are seldome seene. My father passed the bounds of liberality, and touched very neerely the confines of prodigality; a thing nothing profitable for a matried man, who had children that should succeed him in his name and being. My father had three sonnes, all men, and of yeares sufficient to make an election of the state of life they meaned to leade. Wherefore he perceiuing as he himselfe was wont to say, that he could not bridle his nature in that condition of spending, he resolued to depriue himselfe of the instrument and cause, which made him such a spender and so liberall, to wit, of his goods; without which *Alexander the great* himselfe would be accounted a miser: and therefore calling vs all three together on a day into his chamber, he vsed these or such like reasons to vs.

Sonnes, to affirme that I loue you well, may be presumed, seeing I terme you my sonnes: and yet it may be suspected that I hate you, seeing I doe not gouerne my selfe so well as I might, in the husbanding and increasing of your stocke. But, to the end that you may from henceforth perceiue that I doe affect you with a fatherly loue, and that I meane not to ouerthrow you like a step-father, I will doe one thing to you which I haue pondered, and with mature deliberation purposed these many dayes: You are all of age to accept an estate, or at least to make choice of some such exercise, as may turne to your honour and profite at riper yeares: and therefore that which I haue thought vpon, is to deuide my goods into foure parts; the three I will bestow vpon you, to euery one that which appertaines to him, without exceeding a iot, and I my selfe will reserue the fourth, to liue and maintaine me with as long as it shall please heauen to lend mee breath.

breath. Yet I doe greatly desire that after euery one of you is possest of his portion, hee would take one of the courses which I meane to propose. There is an old prouerbe in this our *Spaine*, in mine opinion very true, (as ordinarily all prouerbs are, being certaine briefe sentences collected out of long and discreete experiences) and it is this; *The Church, the Sea, or the Court:* The meaning whereof is, That whosoeuer would become wealthy, or worthy must either follow the Church, haunte the Seas by exercising the trade of Merchandizes, or get him a place of seruice, and entertainement in the Kings house, for men say that *A Kings crumme is more worth then a Lords loafe.* This I say because I desire, and it is my will, that one of you doe follow his booke, an other merchandize, and the third the warre; seeing that the seruice of his owne house is a difficult thing to compasse. And although the warre is not wont to inrich a man, yet it addes vnto him great worth and renoume. Within these eight dayes I doe meane to giue you all your portions in money, without defrauding you of a mite, as you shall see in effect. Therefore tell me now whether you meane to follow mine opinion and aduice in this which I haue proposed. And then he commaunded me by reason that I was the eldest, to make him an answere.

I, after I had intreated him not to make away his goods, but to spend and dispose of them as he listed, seeing that we were both young and able enough to gaine more; at last I concluded that I would accomplish his will, and that mine was to follow the wars, therein seruing God and my King together. The second brother made the same offer, and imploying his portion in commodities, would venter it to the *Indias*. The youngest, and as I deeme the discreetest, said, that eyther he would follow the Church, or goe at the least to *Salamanca* to finish his already commenced studies. And as soone as we had ended the agreement and election of our vocations, my father embraced vs all, and afterwards performed vnto vs, in as short a time as he had mentioned, all that

he

he promiſed; giuing vnto each of vs a portion, amounting, if doe well remember, to three thouſand duckats a piece in money: for an vncle of ours bought all the goods and paide ready money, becauſe he would not haue them made away from our owne familie and lineage. We all tooke our leaue of our good father in one day, and in that inſtant it ſeeming to me a great inhumanity to leaue my father ſo old, and with ſo little meanes; I dealt ſo with him, as I conſtrayned him to take backe againe two thouſand duckats of the three he had giuen me, for as much as the reſt was ſufficient to furniſh me in very good ſort with all things requiſite for a ſouldier. My brothers, moued by mine example, did each of them giue him a thouſand crownes: ſo that my father remained with foure thouſand crownes in money, and three in goods, as they were valued; which goods he would not ſell, but keepe them ſtill in ſtocke. Finally, we bad him (and our ſaid vncle) farewell, not without much feeling and many teares on both ſides: and they charged vs that we would from time to time acquaint them with our ſucceſſes, whether proſperous or aduerſe. We promiſed to performe it, and then embracing vs, and giuing vs his bleſſing, one departed towards *Salamanca*, another to *Siuill*, and my ſelfe to *Alicante*. I arriued proſperouſly at *Genoua*, and from thence went to *Milaine*, where I did accommodate my ſelfe with armes, and other braueries vſed by ſouldiers, and departed from thence to ſettle my ſelfe in *Piemonte*, and being in my way towards the Citie of *Alexandria de la Paglia*, I heard newes that the great Duke of *Alua* did paſſe towards *Flanders*. Wherefore changing my purpoſe, I went with him, and ſerued him in all the expeditions he made: I was preſent at the beheading of the Earles of *Egmont* and *Hornes*, and obtained at laſt to be enſigne to a famous Captaine of *Guada-laſara*, called *Diego de Vrbina*. Within a while after mine arriuall to *Flanders* the newes were diuulged of the league that *Pius quintus* the Pope of famous memory, had made with the *Venetians*, and the King of *Spaine*, againſt our common enemy the *Turke*, who had

gained

gained by force the famous Iland of *Cypres*, much about the same time, which Iland belonged to the state of *Venice*, and was an vnfortunate & lamentable losse. It was also certainly known, that the most noble *Don Iohn of Austria*, our good King *Don Philips* naturall brother did come downe for generall of this league, & the great prouision that was made for the warre was published euery where.

All this did incite and stirre on my minde and desire to be present at that expedition so much expected: and therefore although I had coniectures, and halfe promises to be made a Captaine in the first occasion that should be offered, yet I resolued to leaue all those hopes, and goe into *Italie*, as in effect I did. And my good fortune so disposed, as the Lord *Don Iohn of Austria* arriued iust at the same time at *Genoua*, and went towards *Naples*, to ioyne himselfe with the *Venetian* Nauie, as he did after at *Messina*. In this most fortunate iourney I was present, being by this made a Captaine of foote: to which honourable charge, I was mounted rather by my good fortune, then by my deseres. And that very day which was so fortunate to all *Christendome*: for therein the whole world was vndeceiued, and all the nations thereof freed of all the errour they held, and beliefe they had, that the *Turke* was inuincible at Sea: in that very day I say, wherin the swelling stomacke, and *Ottomanicall* pride was broken among so many happy men as were there (for the *Christians* that were slaine were much more happy then those which they left victorious aliue) I alone was vnfortunate, seeing that in exchange of some *Naual* crowne, which I might expect, had I liued in the times of the auncient *Romanes*, I found my selfe the night ensuing, that so famous a day with my legges chained, and my hands manacled, which befell in this manner: that *Vchali* King of *Argiers*, a bolde and venturous Pirate, hauing inuested and distressed the Admirall of *Malta* (for onely three Knights remained aliue, and those very sore wounded) *Iohn Andreas* chiefe Gallie came to her succour, wherein I went with my company: and doing what

was requisit in such an occasion, I leapt into the enemies vessel, the which falling off from that which had assaulted her, hindred my souldiers from following me; by which means I saw my selfe alone amidst mine enemies, against whō I could make no long resistance, they were so many. In fine, I was taken full of wounds. Now as you may haue heard, *Vchali* saued himselfe and all his squadron, whereby I became captiue in his power, and onely remained sorrowfull among so many ioyfull, and captiue among so many freed: for that day fifteene thousand *Christians*, which came slaues and inchained in the *Turkish Gallies* recouered their desired liberty. I was carried to *Constantinople*, where the great *Turke Selim*, made my Lord Generall of the Sea, by reason that he had so well performed his duety in the battell; hauing brought away for a witnesse of his valour the Standard, of the order of *Malta*. I was the yeare insuing of 1572. in *Nauarino*, rowing in the Admirall of the three *Lanthornes*, and saw and noted there the oportunity that was lost, of taking all the *Turkish* Nauie within the hauen: for all the *Geniſaries* and other souldiers that were in it, made full account, that they should be set vpon, euen within the very port, and therfore trussed vp all their baggage, and made ready their shoes to flie away presently to the land, being in no wise minded to expect the assault, our Nauie did strike such terrour into them. But God disposed otherwise of the matter, not through the fault or negligence of the Generall that gouerned our men, but for the sinnes of *Christendome*, and because God permits and wils, that we haue alwaies some executioners to chastice vs. In summe, *Vchali* got into *Modon*, which is an Island neere to *Nauarino*, and landing his men there, he fortified the mouth of the hauen, and there remained vntil *Don Iohn* departed. In this voyage was taken the Gally called *Presa*, whereof the famous Pirate *Barbarossas* his sonne was Captaine: it was surprised by the head Galley of *Naples* called the *Shee Wolfe*, that was commaunded by the thunderbolt of warre, the father of souldiers, that fortunate and ne-

uer

uer ouerthrowne *Don Aluaro de Bacan*, the *Marqueſſe of Santa Cruez*. And here I will not forget to recount what befell at the taking of the Preſa: this ſonne of *Barbaroſſas* was ſo cruell, and vſed his ſlaues ſo ill, that as ſoone as they that were rowing perceiued the ſhee Wolfe to approach them, and that ſhe had ouertaken them, they caſt away their Oares all at one time, and laying hands on their Captain that ſtood on the *Poope, crying to them to row with more ſpeede, and paſſing him from one bancke to another, from the Poope to the Prow, they tooke ſo many bits out of him, as he had ſcarce paſſed beyond the Maſt, when his ſoule was already waſted to hell: ſuch was the cruelty wherewithall he intreated them, and ſo great the hate they alſo bore towards him. We returned the next yeare after to *Conſtantinople*, being that of ſeuenty and three, and there we learned how *Don Iohn* had gained *Tunez*, and taking that Kingdom away from the *Turkes* had by inſtalling *Muley Hamet* therin, cut away all *Muley Hamedas* hopes to raigne againe there, who was the moſt cruell and valiant *Moore* that euer liued.

* *Eſtanderil. p. 442.*

The great *Turke* was very much grieued for this loſſe, and therefore vſing the ſagacity wherewithall all his race were indued, he made peace with the *Venetians*, which wiſhed for much more then he did himſelfe: and the yeare after of ſeuenty and foure he aſſaulted the fortreſſe of *Goleta*, and the other fortreſſe that *Don Iohn* had raiſed neere vnto *Tunez*: and in all theſe occaſions I was preſent, tyed to the Oare, without any hope of liberty; at leaſt wiſe by ranſome, being reſolued neuer to ſignifie by letter my misfortunes to my father. The *Goleta* was loſt in fine, and alſo the Fortreſſe before which two places lay in ſiege ſeuenty fiue thouſand *Turkes*, and more then foure hundred thouſand *Moores*, and other *Saraſins* of all the other parts of *Affrica*, being furniſhed with ſuch abundance of munition and warlike engines, and ſo many Pioners as were able to couer *Goleta* and the Fortreſſe, if euery one did caſt but his handfull of earth

vpon them. Thus was *Goleta* accounted, vntill then impregnable, firſt loſt, the which did not happen through default of valour in the defendants, who in defence thereof did all they could, or ought to haue done; but becauſe experience ſhewed the facilitie wherewithall trenches might be raiſed in that deſert ſand; for though water had beene found in it within two ſpannes depth, the *Turkes* could not finde it in the depth of two yeards; and therefore filling many ſacks full of ſand, they raiſed their trenches ſo high, as they did ſurmount the walles of the Sconce, and did ſo gall the defendants from them with their ſhot, as no one could ſtand to make any defence: it was a comon report, that our men would not immure themſelues within *Goleta*, but expect the enemy in the champaine, at their diſembarquing: but thoſe that gaue this out ſpake widely, as men very little acquainted with the like affaires: for if in *Goleta* and the Fortreſſe, there were ſcarce ſeuen thouſand Souldiers, how could ſo few a number were they euer ſo reſolute, make a ſallie, and remaine in the Forts, againſt ſo great a number of enemies? or how is it poſſible, that the forces which are not ſeconded and ſupplyed, ſhould not be ouercome, ſpecially being beſieged by many, and obſtinate enemies, and thoſe in their owne Countrey. But many others eſteemed, and ſo did I likewiſe among the reſt, that almighty God did a particular grace and fauour vnto *Spaine*, in that manner permitting to bee deſtroyed the ſlop and cloake of all wickedneſſe; and the ſponge and Moath of innumerable ſummes of money ſpent there vnprofitably, without ſeruing to any other end, then to preſerue the memory of being gayned by the Emperour *Charles* the fift, as if it had been requiſite for the keeping of it eternall (as it is, and ſhall bee euer) that thoſe ſtones ſhould ſuſtaine it. The Fortreſſe was alſo wonne, but the *Turkes* were conſtrained to gaine it, ſpan by ſpanne, for the Souldiers which defended it fought, ſo manfully and reſolutely, as the number of the enemies ſlaine in two and twenty generall aſſaults which they gaue vnto

it,

it, did passe fiue and twenty thousand. Neuer a one was taken prisoner, but three hundred which suruiued their fellowes, a certayne and manifest token of their valour and strength, and how well they had defended themselues and kept their fortresses: a little Fort or turret that stood in the midst of the place.

Vnder the command of *Don Iohn Zanoguera a Valentian* Gentleman, and famous Souldier, was yeelded vp on composition, and *Don Pedro de Puertocarrero* Generall of *Goleta* was taken prisoner, who omitted no diligence possible to defend the place: but yet was so grieued to haue lost it as he dyed for very griefe on the way towards *Constantinople* whither they carried him Captiue. The Generall likewise of the Fort, called *Gabriel Cerbellon*, being a Gentleman of *Milan*, and a great enginer, and most resolute Souldier was taken: and there dyed in both the places many persons of worth, among which *Pagan de Oria* was one, a Knight of the order of S^t. *Iohn*, of a most noble disposition, as the exceeding liberality which he vsed towards his brother the famous *Iohn Andrea de Oria* clearly demonstrates, and that which rendred his death more deplorable, was, that he was slaine by certaine *Sarracines* (which he trusted, perceiuing how the Fort was lost) who had offered to conuey him thence in the habit of a *Moore* to *Tabarca*, which is a little hauen or cricke possest by the *Genoueses*, that fish for *Corral* in that coast. These *Sarracens* cut off his head, and brought it to the Generall of the *Turkish* armie, who did accomplish in them the Spanish prouerbe; *That although the treason pleaseth, yet is the Traitor hated:* and so it is reported, that he commanded those to bee hanged that had brought him the present, because they had not brought it aliue.

Among the *Christians* that were lost in the Fort, there was one called *Don Pedro de Aguilar*, borne in *Andulizia*, in some Towne whose name I haue forgotten, he had beene Auncient in the Fortresse, and was a Souldier of great account, and of a rare vnderstanding, and specially had a par-

ticular grace in *Poetrie*, this I say, because his fortune brought him to be slaue to my Patron, euen into the very same Galley and bench whereon I sate. This Gentleman made two Sonnets in forme of Epitaphes, the one for the *Goleta*, the other for the Fort: and I will repeate them, because I remember them very well, and doe beleeue that they will be rather gratefull, then any thing distastfull to the audients, as soone as euer the Captiue named *Don Pedro de Aguilar*, *Don Fernando* beheld his *Camaradas*, and they all three did smile, and when he beganne to talke of the Sonnets, one of them said, before you passe further, I beseech you good Sir let me intreate you to tell me, what became of that *Don Pedro de Aguilar*, whom you haue named? that which I know of that affaire, answered the Captiue, is, that after he had beene two yeares in *Constantinople*; he fledde away in the attyre of an *Armenian*, with a *Greeke* spie, and I cannot tell whether he recouered his liberty, or no; although I suppose he did, for within a yeare after I saw the *Greeke* in *Constantinople*, but I had not the oportunity to demaund of him, the successe of that voyage. He came then into *Spaine*, quoth the Gentleman: for that same *Don Pedro* is my brother, and dwels now at home in our owne Towne, very well, rich, marryed, and a Father of three Sonnes. God bee thanked, quoth the Captiue, for the infinite fauour he hath shewed vnto him: for in mine opinion there is not on earth any contentment able to be compared to that of recouering a mans lost liberty. I doe moreouer, said the Gentleman, know the Sonnets which my brother composed, I pray you then good Sir, quoth the Captiue, repeate them, for perhaps you can say them better then I; with a very good will, answered the Gentleman; and that of the *Goleta* is thus.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. XIII.

Wherein is prosecuted the Historie of the Captive.

A SONNET.

O Happy soules, which from this mortall vaile
Freed and exempted, through the good you wrought,
Safe from the harmes, that here did you assaile;
By your deserts, to hiest Heauen were brought.
Which here inflam'd by wrath, and noble thought
Shewed how much your forces did auaile:
When both your owne, and forraine bloods you taught
From sandy shoares, into the deep's to traile.
Your lines before your valours end, decreased
In your tyr'd armes; which though they were a dying
And vanquish't; yet on victorie haue seazed.
And this your life from seruile thraldome flying:
Ending, acquires, betweene the sword and wall,
Heauens glorie there, fame here on earth, for all.

I haue it euen in the very same manner, quoth the Captiue: well then, said the Gentleman, that of the Fort is thus, if I doe not forget it:

A SONNET.

From midst the barren earth, here ouerthrowne
In these sad clods, which on the ground doe lie,
Three thousand Souldiers holy soules are flow'n,
And to a happier mansion, gone on hie.
Here when they did in vaine the vigour trie
Of their strong armes, to coste, of many a one,
After the most through extreame toile did die:
The cruell sword, a few did light vpon.
And this same plot, eternally hath beene,

Digitized by Google

With thouſand dolefull memories repleate,
As well this age, as in foregoing time.
But from his cruell boſome Heau'n ne're yet
Receau'd ſincerer ſoules, then were the laſt,
Nor earth ſo valiant bodies, aye poſſeſt.

The Sonnets were not miſliked: and the Captiue was greatly recreated with the newes which he receiued of his companion, and proſecuting his Hiſtorie, he ſaid: The *Goleta*, and the Fort being rendred, the *Turkes* gaue order to diſmantell *Goleta*, for the Fort was left in ſuch ſort, as there remained nothing vp that might be ouerthrowen: and to do it with more breuity and leſſe labour, they vndermined it in three places, but that which ſeemed leaſt ſtrong could not be blowen vp by any of them, which was the old walles; but all that which had remained a foote of the new fortifications and workes of *Fratin* fell downe to the ground with great facility: and this being ended the Nauie returned triumphant and victorious to *Conſtantinople*: where within a few moneths afterward my Lord *Vchali* died, whom they called *Vchali Fartax*, which ſignifies in the *Turkiſh* language the ſcald or ſcurfie renegate, for he was ſuch; and it is a cuſtome among the *Turkes* to giue one another nicke names either of the defects, or perfections and vertues which they haue, and the reaſon hereof is, that among them all they haue but foure linages that haue ſurnames, and theſe doe contend with that of *Ottomanes*, for Nobility of bloud: and all the reſt, as I haue ſaid doe take denomination, ſometime from the blemiſhes of the body, and ſometime from the vertues of the minde: and this ſcruie fellow did row fourteene yeares, being the great *Turkes* ſlaue, and did renounce his faith, being foure and thirty yeares old, for deſpight, and becauſe he might be reuenged on a *Turke*, that gaue him a cuffe on the face as he rowed; and his valour was ſo great, as without aſcending by the diſhonourable meanes and waies vſually taken, the greateſt minions about the great

Turke, he came first to be King of *Argiers*, and after to be Generall of the Sea, which is the third most Noble charge and dignitie of all the *Turkish* Empire. He was borne in *Calabria*, and was a good morall man, and vsed with great humanity his slaues, whereof hee had aboue three thousand, which were after his death deuided, as he had left in his Testament, betweene the great *Turke* (who is euer an inheritour to euery dead man, and hath a portion among the deceased his children) and his runnegates. I fell to the lot of a *Venetian* runnegate, who being a shippe-boy in a certaine vessell, was taken by *Uchali*, who loued him so tenderly, as he was one of the dearest youthes he had, and he became after the most cruell runnegate that euer liued. He was called *Azanaga*, and came to be very rich, and King of *Argiers*: with him I came from *Constantinople*, somewhat contented in minde, because I should be nearer vnto *Spaine*; not for that I meaned to write vnto any one of my vnfortunate successe, but only to see whether fortune would proue more fauourable to me in *Argiers*, then at *Constantinople*; where I had attempted a thousand waies to escape, but none of them sorted vnto any good effect: and I thought to search out in *Argiers* some other meanes to compasse that which I so greedily desired; for the hope of attayning liberty sometime had neuer abandoned me, and when in the contriuing, I thought, or put my designes in practise, and that the successe did not answere mine expectation, presently without forsaking me, it forged and fought out for another hope, that might sustaine me, although it were debile, and weake.

With this did I passe away my life, shut vp in a prison or house, which the *Turks* call Bathes, wherein they do inclose the Captiue Christians as well those that belong to the king as other particular mens, and those which they call of the *Almazen*, which is as much to say, as slaues of the Counsell who are deputed to serue the Citie in the publike works and other affaires thereof, and these of all other Captiues doe with most difficulty attaine to liberty; free by reason they be-

belong to the communalty, and haue no particular master, there is none with whom a man may treate of their redemption, although they should haue the price of their ransay. To these Bathes as I haue said, some particular mē carry their Captiues to be kept, chiefly if they be to be ransomed; for there they haue them at their ease & secure, vntill they be redemed. The Kings Captiues of ransome also, do not go forth to labour with the other poore crew, if it be not when the paying of their ransom is deferred; for then, to the end they may make them write for money more earnestly, they make them labour, and goe to fetch wood with the rest which is no small toyle and trouble. I then was one of those of ransome; for as soone as it was knowne how I was a Captaine, notwithstanding that I told them of my little possibilitie, and want of meanes, all could not preuaile to diffwade thē from consorting me with the multitude of Gentlemen, and those of ransome, they put on me then a chaine, rather to be a token that I was there for my ransome, then to keepe me the better with it, and so I passed away my time there with many other Gentlemen, and men of marke held and kept in there for their ransome. And although both hunger and nakednesse did vexe vs now and then, or rather euermore, yet nothing did afflict vs so much as to heare and see euery moment the cruelties that my master vsed towardes *Christians*. Euery day he hanged vp one, he set this man on a stake, and would cut off the others eares, and that, for so little occasion, or wholy without it, as the very *Turks* themselues perceiued, that he did it not for any other cause, but because he had a will to doe it, and that it was his naturall inclination to be a homicide of all humane kind. Onely one *Spanish* soldier called Sacha one of *Saauedra* was in his good grace, who although hee did sundrie things that will remaine in the memory of that Nation for many yeares, and all to the end to get his liberty; yet he neuer strucke him, nor commaunded him to be strucken, nor said as much as an euill word vntó him; and yet we all feared that hee should

be

be broached on a stake for the least of many things which he did, and himselfe did also dread it more then once; and if it were not that time denieth me leasure to doe it, I would recount vnto you things done by this souldier, which might both entertaine and astonish you much more then the relation of my life.

There were ouer the square court of our prison certaine windowes that looked into it, and belonged to a certaine rich and principall *Moore*; the which windowes (as ordinarily are all the *Moores* windowes) rather seemed to be holes then windowes: and euen these were also very closely couered and shut fast with linnen coueringes. It therefore befell that standing one day vpon the battlements of our prison with other three companions, trying which of vs could leape best in his shakles to passe away the time; and being alone (for all the other Christians were gone abroad to labour) I lifted vp by chance mine eyes, and I saw thrust out at one of those so close-shut windowes a cane, and a linnen tied at the end thereof, and the cane was moued and wagged vp and downe, as if it had made signes, that we should come and take it: we looked vpon it, and one of my companions went vnder the cane, to see whether they would let it fall, or what they would doe else; but as soone as he approached it, the Cane was lifted vp, and did stirre it to eyther side, as if they had said (with wagging of the head) no the Christian returned to vs; and the Cane being eftsoones let fall, and beginning to moue as it had done before, an other of my fellowes went, and the same succeeded vnto him, that did to the first. Finally, the third approached it, with no better successe then the former two, which I perceiuing, would not omit to trie my fortune, and as soone as I came neere to stand vnder the Cane, it was let slip and fel within the Bathes iust at my foote: I forthwith went to vntie the linnen which was knotted, wherein I found tenne *Zianys*, which are certaine peeces of base gold, vsed among the *Moores*, and worth each of them tenne rials of our money.

Digitized by Google

I leaue to your discretion to thinke if I was not glad of my bootie, certes my ioy and admiration was much, to thinke whence that good might come vnto vs, but specially to my selfe, since the signes of refusall, to let it fall to the other did confirme cleerly that the fauour was only addrest to my selfe. I tooke my welcome money, broke the Cane, and returned to the battlements, and viewed the window earnestly, and perceiued a very beautifull hand issue out thereat, which did open and shut it againe very speedily. By which imagining and thinking that some woman that dwelled in that house, had done vs the charitie and benefit, in token of our thankfull minds, we made our courtesies after the *Moorish* fashion by inclining of our heads, bending of the bodie, and pressing our hands to our breasts, within a while after, there appeared out of the same window a little crosse made of Canes, which presently was taken in againe, this signe did confirme vs in the opinion that there was some *Christian* woman captiue in that place, and that it was shee which did to vs the courtesie: but the whitenesse of her hand, and her rich bracelets destroyed this presumption: although we did notwithstanding coniecture that it was some renegate *Christian*, whom their masters there do very ordinarily take to wiues, yea and account verie good hap to light on one of them, for they are much more accounted of, then the women of the nation it selfe.

Yet in all these discourses we strayed very farre from the truth of the accident; and so from thence forward all our passing of the time was imployed in beholding that window as our North, wherein had appeared the starre of the Cane: but fifteene daies past ouer, or we could descrie either it, or the hand againe, or any other signe. And although in the meane time we endeuored all that we might to know who dwell in that house, or whether there were any renegate *Christian* therein, yet neuer a one could tell vs any other things but that it belonged to a very rich and noble *Moore* called *Agumorato* who had beene Constable of the *Pata*, dignitie

dignitie among them of very great qualitie. But when we thought leaſt that it would raine any more *Zianys* by that way we ſaw the Cane ſuddenly to appeare, and another linnen hanging on it, whoſe bulke was much greater: and this befell when the bath was freed of concourſe, and void, as the other time before. We made the accuſtomed triall, euery one approaching it before mee, but without effect, vntill I came, forpreſently as I approached it, it was permitted to fall. I vntied the knots and found inwreathed in it fortie duckets of Spaniſh gold, with a letter written in the *Arabian* tongue, and at the end therof was drawne a very great croſſe. I kiſſed the croſſe, tooke vp the money, and returned againe to the battlements, and we altogether made our receiuers, the hand alſo appeared, I made ſignes that I would reade the paper, and the window was ſhut incontinently. All of vs were maruellouſly aſtoniſhed, yet ioyfull at that which had befallne vs, and by reaſon that none of vs vnderſtood the *Arabian* tongue, the deſire that we had to vnderſtand the contents of the letter was ſurpaſſing great, but greater the difficultie to finde out ſome truſtie perſon that might reade it. In the end, I reſolued to truſt in this affaire a renegate of *Murcia*, who did profeſſe himſelf to be my very great friend, & hauing by my liberality & other good turnes done ſecretly obliged him to be ſecret in the affaire wherein I would vſe him: for ſome renegates are accuſtomed when they haue an intention to turne into the *Chriſtian* countries to bring with them the teſtimonies of the moſt principall captiues, wherein they informe, and in the ampleſt manner they may, how the bearer is an honeſt man, and that he hath euer done many good turnes to the *Chriſtians*, and that he hath himſelfe a deſire to eſcape by the firſt commoditie. Some renegates there are, which procure thoſe teſtimonies ſincerely, and with a good intention, others take the benefit of them eyther by chance or induſtrie; who intending to goe and rob into the countries of *Chriſtians*, if by chance they be aſtray or taken, bring forth their teſtimonies and ſay, that by thoſe papers

Digitized by Google

papers may be collected the purpose wherwith all they came that is, to remaine in *Christian* countries, and that therefore, they came abroad a pyrating with the other *Turks*: and by this meanes they escape that first brunt, and are reconciled againe to the Church, without receiuing any harme at all: and when they espie their time doe returne againe into *Barbaria*, to be such as they were before. Others there are, which procure those writings with a pure intention, and doe after stay in *Christian* countries. Well this my friend was a renegate of his last kinde: who had the testimonies of all my companions, wherein we did commend him, as amply as we could deuise: and certainly if the *Moores* had found those papers about him, they would haue burnt him for it. I vnderstand how he could speake the *Arabian* tongue very perfectly, and not onely that alone, but also write it withall: yet before I would wholy breake my minde to him, I requested him to reade mee that scroule, which I had found by chance in a hole of my cabin, he opened it, and stood a good while beholding and construing thereof, murmuring somewhat betweene his teeth. I demaunded therefore of him whether he vnderstood it? and he answered that he did, very well: and that if I desired to haue it translated *verbatim*, I should bring vnto him Pen and Ink, to the end he might do it more completely: we presently gaue vnto him that which he asked, and he did translate it by little and little; and hauing finisht it, he said all that is heere in Spanish, is punctually without omitting a letter, the contentes of the *Moorish* paper, and heere you must note, that where it sayes *Lela Marien*, it meanes *our Ladie the blessed Virgine Marie*. We read the paper, whereof the contents were these which ensue.

WHen I was a child, my father had a certaine Christian woman captiue, that taught mee in mine owne tongue all the Christian Religion, and tolde mee many things of Lela Marien. The Christian died, and I know shee went

went not to the fire, but to Ala, *for shee appeared to mee twice after her death, and bade mee goe to the Christian countrey, to see* Lela Marien, *who loued mee much: I knowe not how I may goe: I haue seene many Christians through this window, and none of them hath seemed to mee a Gentleman but thy selfe: I am very beautifull and young, and I haue a great deale of riches to carry away with mee. See thou whether thou canst contriue the way how wee may depart, and thou shalt there be my husband, if thou pleasest; and if thou wilt not, I doe not greatly care, for* Lela Marien *will prouide mee of a husband. I wrote my selfe this billet, be therefore wary, whom thou trustest to reade it: doe not trust any* Moore, *for they are all of them deceiptfull traytours. It is this that grieues mee most of all, for I would not haue thee, if it were possible, to disclose the matter to any liuing bodie; for if my father did know it, hee would throw mee downe into a well, and oppresse mee in it with stones. I will hang a threede to the end of the Cane, and therein thou mayest tie thine answere. And if thou canst not write the Arabian, tell mee thy minde by signes, for* Lela Marien *will make mee to vnderstand it. Who with* Ala *preserue thee, and this crosse which I doe many times kisse, for so the Captiue commaunded mee to doe.*

See, good Sir, if it was not great reason, that the reasons comprehended in this Letter should recreate and astonish vs. And certainly the one and the other was so great, as the runnagate perceiued well that the paper was not found by chance, but was really addressed vnto some one of vs: and therefore desired vs earnestly, that if that were true which he suspected, that we would trust and tell it vnto him, and hee would aduenture his life to procure our liberties: and saying this, he tooke out of his bosome a Crucifixe of mettle, and protested with very many teares by the God which that Image represented, in whom he, although a sinner and wicked man, did most firmely beleeue, that he would be most

loyall

loyall and ſecret to vs in all that which we would diſcouer vnto him; for it ſeemed to him, and he almoſt deuined that both himſelfe and we all ſhould recouer our liberties by her meanes that did write the Letter: and he ſhould then alſo ſee himſelfe in the ſtate which he moſt deſired, to wit, in the boſome of his mother the holy Catholicke Church; from which through his ignorance and ſinne, he was departed and deuided as an vnprofitable and corrupt member. The Renegate ſaid this with ſo many teares, and ſuch euident tokens of repentance, as all of vs conſented to open our mindes vnto him, and declare the truth of the matter; and ſo wee recounted vnto him the whole diſcourſe, without concealing any circumſtance; and ſhewed vnto him the window by which the Cane was wont to appeare, and he marked the houſe from thence, and reſted with ſpecial charge to informe himſelfe well of thoſe that dwelled therein. We thought alſo that it was requiſite to anſwere the *Mooriſh* Ladies Letter: and therefore hauing him preſent that could ſo well performe that taske, we cauſed the renegate to draw out an anſwer preſently as I did dilate it to him, which was punctually ſuch as I will recount: for of all the moſt ſubſtantial points that befell me in that affaire, no one is falne out of my memorie, nor ſhall euer as long as I haue breath. In effect that which I anſwered to the *Moore*, was this.

THE true Alà preſerue you deere Ladie, and that bleſſed Marian, *who is the true mother of God, & is ſhe that hath put in your minde the deſire to goe into the Chriſtian Countries, becauſe ſhe doth loue you wel: pray vnto her that ſhe will vouchſafe to inſtruct you, how you may bring the matter to paſſe, which ſhe commaundeth you to doe; for ſhe is ſo good as ſhe will eaſily condeſcend to doe it. As for my part I doe promiſe, as well for my ſelfe, as for theſe other Chriſtians that are with me, to do for you all that we are able to doe vntill death. Doe not omit to write vnto me, and acquaint me with your purpoſes, and I will anſwer you euery time: for great* Alà *hath giuen vs a captiue*

Christian, that can write and reade your language well, as you may perceiue by this paper. So that you may securely, and without any dread, aduise vs of all that you shall thinke good. And as concerning that which you say, that you will become my wife, after we arriue to the Christian countries, I doe promise you the same, as I am a good Christian: and you shall vnderstand that the Christians do accomplish their wordes far better then do the Moores. Alà *and* Marien *his mother preserue you my dearest Ladie.*

This Letter being written and inclosed, I expected two dayes, that the Bathes might be free of concourse, as it was wont, which assoone as it befel, I went vp to my accustomed place of the battlements, to see whether the Cane appeared; which was presently afterthrust out at the window. And soone as I perceiued it, although I could not note who it was that set it, I shewed my paper, to giue them warning to set on the threed: but it was already hanging thereon. To the which I tied the Letter, and within a while after began to appeare our Starre, with the white flagge of peace, and the knotted linnen; which they let fall, and I tooke vp, and I found therein in diuers sorts of money and golde more then fiftie duckats, which redoubled our ioyes more then fifty times, and confirmed the hope wee conceiued of attayning libertie. The very same night our Renegate returned to vs, and tolde, how he had learned that the very same *Moore* which wee were informed of before called *Aguimorata* dwelt there, and was excessiue rich, and had one only daughter, the heire of all his goods; of whom the common opinion throughout the citie was, that she was the faireſt woman of all Barbarie: and that many of the *Viceroyes* that came there had demaunded her to wife, but she would neuer condiscend to any motion of mariage: and that he likewise had vnderstood, that she had somtimes a *Christian* captiue, which now was deceased, all which agreed with the contents of the Letter. We presently entred in counsell with the Renegate, about the meanes we were to vse, to fetch away the

Digitized by Google

Moore, and come all of vs to Chriſtian landes, and in the end we concluded to attend for that time, the ſecond aduice of Zoraida (for ſo was ſhe then called, who now meanes to name her ſelfe Maria) for as much as we cleerely perceiued that it was ſhee, and none other that could miniſter to vs the meanes to remoue all theſe difficulties. After we had reſted on this reſolution, the Renegate bid vs be of good courage, for he would ingage his life, or ſet vs at liberty. Foure dayes after the Bathes were troubled with people: which was an occaſion that the Cane appeared not all that while. But that impediment being remoued, and the accuſtomed ſolitude returned, the Cane did againe appeare with a linnen hanging thereat ſo groſſely impregned, as it promiſed to be deliuered of a moſt happie burden. Both Cane and linnen bent themſelues to me, and in them I found another paper and a hundred duckats in golde, beſides other ſmall money. The Renegate was preſent, and we gaue him the Letter to reade, the effect whereof was this.

I Know not, good Sir, what order to giue for our going into Spaine, nor hath Lela Marien *tolde me any thing concerning it, although I haue demaunded her counſaile. That which may be done is, that I will through this window giue vnto you great ſtore of money, wherewith you may redeeme your ſelfe, and your friends: and let one of you goe into the* Chriſtians *countrey, and buy a Barke, and after returne for his fellowes, and he ſhall finde me in my fathers garden, which is at the gate of* Babazon, *neere to the Sea coaſt, where I meane to ſtay all this Sommer, with my father and my ſeruants: from whence you may take mee out boldly by night, and carry me to the Barke. And ſee well that thou wilt be my husband; for if thou wilt not, I will demaund of* Marien *to chaſtiſe thee: and if thou dareſt truſt no body to goe for the veſſell, redeeme thy ſelfe and goe, for I know thou wilt rather returne then another, ſeeing thou art a Gentleman and a Chriſtian; learne out the garden: and when I ſee thee walke there where thou now arte, I will make account that the Bath is*

emptie, and will giue thee great ſtore of money. Alà *preſerue thee my deere friend.*

Theſe were the contents of the ſecond Letter, which being heard by vs all, euery one offered to bee himſelfe the ranſomed perſon, and promiſed to goe and returne with all punctuality, and I alſo made a proffer of my ſelfe: to all which reſolutions the Renegate oppoſed himſelfe, ſaying that he would conſent in no wiſe that any one of vs ſhould be freed, vntill we were all together deliuered: for experience had taught him how euill ranſomed men were wont to keepe thoſe promiſes which they paſſed in the times of their thraldome: for many times certaine prineipall captiues had made that kinde of triall, redeeming of ſome one or other that ſhould goe to *Valentia* or *Mallorca*, with money to freight a Barke or Fregat, and returne for him that had ranſomed them, and did neuer returne againe: for the recouered liberty, and the feare of aduenturing to loſe it againe, concurring, did blot out of their memory all the other obligations of the world. And to confirme the truth which he auerred, he briefly recounted vnto vs an accident which befel much about the ſame time to certaine *Chriſtian* Gentlemen, the ſtrangeſt, as I ſuppoſe, that euer hapned in thoſe quarters, wherein do ſucceede euery other day euents full of wonder and admiration, and therfore concluded, that what ought and might be done, was, that they ſhould giue vnto him to buy a Barke, ſuch money as they meant to imploy in the ranſome of a captiue, & he would buy it there in *Argiers*, vnder pretext of becomming a merchant & ſayler in *Tetuan* & that coſt: & being once owner of a Barke, he would eaſily deuiſe how to haue them out of the Baths & imbarke them all: how much more if the *Mooriſh* Ladie did, as ſhe promiſed, giue them money enough to ranſom them all, was it a moſt eaſie thing they being free, to embark themſelues at midday: but the greateſt difficultie in this affaire was, that the *Moores* vſe not to permit any Renegate to buy any Barke or other ſmall veſſell, but onely great veſſels of warre: for they ſuſpect that

he that buyes a Barke, eſpecially if he be a *Spaniard*, does it for no other end but to runne away to Chriſtian countries. And yet he knew how to facilitate that inconuenience, by inducing a *Tangerine Moore* to become his partner of the Barke, and the gaines that ſhould be gotten by the commodities thereof, and with this ſhaddow hee would become Lord of it himſelfe, and therewithall accounted the matter ended. And although that both my ſelfe and my *Camaradas* held it the better courſe to ſend vnto *Mallorca* for one (as the *Mooriſh* Lady ſaid, yet durſt we not contradict him, fearefull that if we did not what he would haue vs to doe, he would diſcouer vs, and indanger our liues, if he did once detect *Zoraidas* practiſes; for the ſafeguard of whoſe life wee would all of vs moſt willingly aduenture our owne: and therfore we determined to put our ſelues into Gods and the Renegates hands. And ſo we anſwered at the ſame inſtant to *Zorayda*, telling her that we would accompliſh all that ſhe had admoniſhed vs, becauſe ſhe had aduertiſed vs as wel as if *Lela Marien* had told her what ſhe ſhould ſay, and that the dilating or ſhortning of the affair did conſiſt only in her ſelfe. I did offer my ſelfe anew to become her husband: and with this the day enſuing, wherein the Bath was alſo free, ſhe ſent me downe at diuers times by the Cane two thouſand Duckats, and a Letter, wherein ſhe ſaid that ſhe would goe to her fathers garden the next *Iumia*, that is the Friday following, and that before ſhe went away ſhe would giue vs more money. And that, if it were not enough we ſhould aduiſe her, and ſhe would giue vnto vs as much as we would demaund; for her father had ſo much treaſure, as he would neuer perceiue it, how much more ſeeing ſhe had, and kept the Keyes of all. We gaue fiue hundred crownes preſently to the Renegate to buy a Barke, and with eight hundred I redeemed my ſelfe, giuing the money to a *Valentian* Merchant, which was at that ſeaſon in *Argiers*, who did ranſome me of the King, taking me forth on his word, which he paſſed to pay my ranſome, at the arriuall of the firſt Ship that

ſhould come from *Valentia*. For if hee had deliuered the money inſtantly, it would haue giuen occaſion to the King to ſuſpect that my ranſome was many dayes before in *Argiers*, and that the Merchant had kept it ſilently, to make his benefite thereof. Finally, my Maſter was ſo cauilous as I durſt not in any wiſe pay him preſently.

The Thurſday before the Friday of the beautiful *Zoraidas* departure towards the garden, ſhe gaue vnto vs other two thouſand duckats, and did likewiſe aduiſe vs of her going away, intreating me that as ſoone as I had ranſomed my ſelfe I ſhould learne the way to the garden, and take occaſion howſoeuer to goe to it, and ſee her. I anſwered her briefly, that I would doe ſo, and prayed her that ſhe would carefully commend our proceedings to *Lela Marien*, with thoſe prayers which the captiue had taught her. This being done, order was alſo giuen for the ranſoming of my three companions, to facilitate our iſſue out of the Bathes, and alſo that they ſeeing me free, and themſelues vndeliuered, might not be troubled or perſwaded by the Diuell, to doe any thing in preiudice of *Zoraydа*. For although that they, being the men of that quality they were, might aſſure me from this feare, I would not for all that, aduenture the matter, and therefore I cauſed them to bee ranſomed by the ſame meanes that I was redeemed my ſelfe, giuing all the money to the Merchant, that he might with the more ſecurity paſſe his word for vs: to whom yet we neuer did diſcouer our practiſe and ſecret, by reaſon of the eminent danger of the diſcouery thereof.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. XIIII.

Wherein the captiue prosecuteth the pleasant narration of his life.

FIfteene dayes were not fully expired, when the Renegate had bought him a very good Barke, able to holde thirty persons or more; and for the better colour and assurance of his businesse, he made a voyage to a place called *Sargel*, which is thirty leagues distant from *Argiers* towards the side of *Oran*, and is a great place of traffique for drie Figges. He made this voyage twise or thrise in company with the *Tagarins*, of whom we made mention: and the name of *Tagarino* is in *Barbary* giuen to the *Moors* of *Arragon*, *Granada*, and *Mudesares*. And in the Kingdome of *Fez* those *Mudesares* are called *Elches*, and are the Nation which that King doth most imploy in warlike affaires. You shall therefore vnderstand that euery time he passed by with his Barke he did cast Ancre in a little creeke, twise the shot of a Crosbow from the garden wherein *Zoraydas* attended; and there the Renegate would in very good earnest exercise himselfe with the Moores that rowed, either to flie or else to assault one another in iest, as he meant to doe after in good earnest: and would now and then goe to *Zoraydas* garden, and demaund fruits, which her father would bestow vpon him, without knowing what hee was: and although hee desired to haue spoken with *Zoraydas*, as hee tolde mee afterward himselfe, and haue informed her, how it was hee that was to carry her away by my direction into the land of *Christians*, and that shee should therefore liue chearfull and secure, yet was it neuer possible, forasmuch as the women of that nation do not suffer themselues to be viewed by any *Moore* or *Turke* if he be not their husband, or that their parents command them, yet do they

haunt and communicate themselues to *Christian* captiues freely, and that sometimes more then is conuenient, and truly it would haue grieued me, that he should haue spoken vnto her, for perhaps it would haue perplexed her extraordinarily, to see her affaire committed to the trust of a runnegate: but God who did otherwise dispose it, did not concurre with this good desire of our renegate: who seeing how safely he went and returned from *Sargel*, and that he founded when and where he pleased; and that the *Tagarmo* his partner did only what he liked, and that I was ransomed, and nothing else wanting, but to finde out some *Christians* that would row, hee bad mee bethinke my selfe what men I would bring away with mee besides those that I had ransomed, and that I should warne them to bee ready against the next Friday, wherein hee was resolued that wee should depart.

Seeing this, I spake to twelue Spaniards very lusty rowers, and those that could with most liberty get out of the Citty: and it was not a little matter to finde so many there at that time, for there were twenty gallies abroad a robbing, which had carried all the other rowers with them, and these were left behinde because their Master did keepe at home that Sommer to finish a galley that was on the Stockes a making. To these I said nothing else, but only warned them that the Friday ensuing in the euening, they should closely steale out by one and one, and goe towards *Agnimorates* Garden, and there expect me vntill I came vnto them. I gaue this aduice to euery one of them a part, with order also, that although they saw any other *Christians* there, they should tell them nothing else, but that I had commaunded them to expect me in that place. This diligence being vsed, yet wanted there another, which was the most expedient of all, to wit, to aduise *Zoraida* of the termes wherein our affaires did stand, to the end shee might be likewise ready and prepared, and not affrighted though wee did assault her before the time that shee could imagine the barke of the *Christians* to

Digitized by Google

be come to fetch her away; and therefore I reſolued to goe my ſelfe vnto the Garden and ſee whether I might ſpeake with her: and taking the occaſion to goe and gather ſome hearbs, I went vnto it the day before our departure, and the firſt perſon with whom I encountred was her father, who demanded of me in a language which in all *Barbarie* and *Conſtantinople* is vſually ſpoken by the *Moores* to their captiues, and is neither, *Arabian*, *Spaniſh*, nor of any other nation, but rather a mixture of all languages wherewith all of vs vnderſtand one another: he, I ſay, in that kinde of ſpeech demanded of me, what I ſought for in that his garden, and to whom I did belong? I anſwered that I was one *Arpante Mami* his ſlaue (and this, becauſe I was very certainely informed that he was his intire friend) and that I came thither to gather of all ſorts of hearbs to make a ſallade: he conſequently asked of me whether I was a man of ranſome or no, and how much my Maſter demaunded for me? and being in thoſe queſtions and demaunds, the beautifull *Zoraida* deſcended from the houſe into the garden, who had eſpyed me a good while before: and as the *Mooriſh* women doe not greatly eſtrange themſelues from the ſight of *Chriſtians*, we are in their behauiour or conuerſation with them any thing ſqueamiſh, as we haue ſaid already, ſhee did not greatly feare to approch the place where her father talked with mee: but rather, her father perceiuing that ſhee came on ſomewhat ſlowly, did call, and commanded her to draw neare.

It were a thing impoſſible for mee to recount the great beauty and gallant diſpoſition, or the brauery and riches of attyre, wherein my beloued *Zoraida* then ſhewed her ſelfe to mine eyes. I will only ſay this, that there hanged more Pearles at her eares, ſuperlatiue faire necke, and haire, then ſhee hath haires on her head, about the wreſts of her legges, which were naked after the manner of her Countrey, ſhee wore two *Carcaxes* (for ſo the manicles or bracelets of the feete are called in the *Moriſco* tongue) of the fineſt gold, wherein were inchaced ſo many Diamonds, that as ſhee told

me after her father valued them at twenty thousand crowns; and those about the wrests of her hands, were of equall esteeme. Her pearles were many, and those most Orient; for all the chiefe brauery and ornament of the *Mooriſh* Ladies consists in the adorning of themselues with Pearles & Pearle seede; by reason whereof there is more Pearles and Pearle-seede to be found among the *Moores* then among all the other nations of the world: and *Zoraidas* father had the fame to haue many, and those the very best that were in *Argiers*; and also aboue two hundred thousand Duckats of Spanish gold: of all which was shee the Lady, who now is mine. And if with all this ornament shee could then seeme faire, by the relikes that haue remained vnto her among so many labors, may bee easily ghessed, what shee would haue beene in the time of prosperity? for all of vs doe know that the beauty of some women hath limited dayes and seasons, and requireth certayne accidents either to diminish or increase it, and it is a thing naturall to the passions of the minde, either to raise, or abase it, but most commonly they wholly destroy it. To be briefe, I say, that shee arriued to the place where we discourſed at that time most richly attyred, and beautifull beyond measure, or I at last deemed her the faireſt that I had euer beheld vntill then: and herewithall remembring the obligation wherein shee had tyed me, thought that some Deitie had presented it selfe to my view, being come from heauen to the earth, for my recreation and relieſe.

As soone as shee was arriued her father told her in her owne language, how I was his friend *Arnaute Mami* his captiue, and that I came there to gather a sallade: then shee taking the speech, demaunded in that medly of tongues of which I haue spoken, whether I was a Gentleman, and what the reason was why I redeemed not my selfe? I made answere, that I was already ransomed, and by the ransome might be coniectured, in how much my Master valued me, seeing hee had for my liberty a thousand and fiue hundred *Coltamis*, to this shee answered; In good sooth, if thou

Digitized by Google

werſt

werſt my fathers, I would cauſe him not to giue thee for twice as much more: for you *Chriſtians* are great lyars, and doe make euery one of your ſelues poore men, to defraude the *Moores* of their due ranſome. It may well bee ſo Madame, quoth I, but I haue for my part vſed all truth in this affaire with my Maſter, and doe, and will, vſe truth with as many perſons as I ſhall euer haue occaſion to treate with in this world, and when doſt thou goe away, quoth *Zoraida*? to morrow as I beleeue, quoth I. For there is a French veſſell here, which ſets forth to morrow, and I meane to depart in her: were it not better, replyed *Zoraida*, to expect vn till veſſels come out of *Spaine*, and goe away with them, then with thoſe of *France*, which are not your friends? no, quoth I, although if it were true as the newes runne, that there comes a veſſell from *Spaine*, I would attend it; but yet it is more certaine that I ſhall depart to morrow: for the deſire I haue to ſee my ſelfe at home in my Countrey, and with thoſe perſons whom I loue is ſo great, as it will not permit me to expect any other commodity, that foreſlowes it ſelfe bee it neuer ſo good. Thou art doubtleſly marryed in thy Countrey, ſaid *Zoraida*, and therefore deſireſt to goe ſee thy wife? I am not married, quoth I, but I haue paſſed my word to marry, as ſoone as I am there ſafely arriued. And is ſhee beautifull to whome thou haſt paſt it, quoth *Zoraida*? ſo beautifull, ſaid I, as to indeere it and tell you the truth, ſhee is very like vnto your ſelfe. Hereat her father laughed very hartily, and ſaid. In good earneſt *Chriſtian* ſhee muſt be very fair that may compare with my daughter, who is the moſt beautifull of all this Kingdome: and if thou wilt not beleeue me looke on her well, and thou ſhalt ſee that I tell thee but the truth. He himſelfe, as moſt perfect in the tongue, did ſerue for the interpreter of moſt of our ſpeeches; for although ſhee could ſpeake that illegitimate language which is there in vſe, yet did ſhee manifeſt her mind more by ſignes then by wordes.

Whilſt thus wee reaſoned of many matters, there came

Digitized by Google

running towards vs a certaine *Moore*, and told his Master how foure *Turkes* had leaped ouer the Garden walles, and were gathering the fruits although they were not yet ripe. The old man and his daughter *Zoraida* started here at; for it is an vniuersall and naturall defect in the *Moores* to feare the *Turkes*, but specially the Souldiers of that nation, who are commonly so insolent, and haue such command ouer the *Moores* that are their subiects, as they doe vse them worse then if they were their slaues. Therefore *Zoraidas* father said vnto her; daughter retyre thy selfe into the house, and keep thy selfe in whilest I goe speake to those dogges; and thou *Christian* goe and seeke out thine hearbs, and depart in good houre, and I pray *Ala* to conduct thee safely to thy Country. I inclined my selfe to him, and he departed to search out the *Turkes*, leaning me alone with *Zoraida*, who began to make adoe as if she went whither her father had commanded her; but scarce was hee couered among the trees of the Garden when shee returned to me, with her eyes full of teares, said. *Amexi Christiano Amexi*, that is, goest thou away *Christian*, goest thou away? I answered, yes Ladie, that I doe, but I will neuer depart away without thee: expect mee the next Friday, and be not affrighted when thou shalt see vs, for we will goe to the *Christian* Countrey then, without all doubt. This I said to her in such sort as she vnderstood all my words very well, and casting her arme ouer my necke, shee began to trauaile with languishing steps towards the house, and fortune would (which might haue beene very ill, if heauen had not rectified it) that as we walked together in that manner and forme, her father, who did by this returne after hee had caused the *Turkes* to depart, espyed vs, and we saw also very well how he had perceiued vs: wherefore *Zoraida*, who is very discreet, would not take away her arme from my necke, but rather drew neerer vnto me, and laid her head on my breast, and bowed her knees a little, with euident token that shee swouned, and I likewise made as though I did sustaine her vp by force. Her father came run[illegible]wards vs,

Digitized by Google

vs, and ſeeing his daughter in that ſtate, demanded the cauſe of her, but ſeeing ſhee made no anſwere, hee himſelfe ſaid, ſhe doubtleſly is diſmaide by the ſuddaine affright ſhe tooke at the entrance of thoſe Dogges: and taking her away from me, he bowed her to his owne breſt: and ſhee breathing out a ſigh, with her eyes yet full of teares, ſaid againe, *eAmexi Chriſtiano Amexi*, goe away *Chriſtian*, goe away: to which her father replyed, there is no cauſe daughter why the *Chriſtian* ſhould goe away, for he hath done thee no harme, and the *Turkes* are already departed. Sir they haue affrighted her (quoth I) as you haue ſaid, but yet ſince ſhee hath commanded mee to goe away, I will not offend her; therefore reſt in peace, for I will returne, if it pleaſe you to giue mee leaue, for hearbs to this garden, when it is needfull; for my Maſter ſaies there are none better to be found for ſallades in any other garden, then you haue here in this: come as oft as thou wilt, ſaid *Aguimorato*, for my daughter ſaies not this, in reſpect that thou or any other *Chriſtian* hath offended her, but that, meaning to ſay, that the *Turkes* ſhould goe away, ſhee bad thee to depart, or elſe ſhee ſpake it, becauſe it is time for thee to gather thine hearbs.

With this I tooke leaue of both, and ſhe ſeemed at the inſtant of my departure to haue had her heart torne away from her, as ſhe departed with her father; and I vnder colour of ſeeking herbs, went about all the garden at my leaſure, and viewed all the ſallies, and the entrances thereof, the ſtrength of the houſe, and the commodities that might bee offered to facilitate our enterpriſe. This being done, I came home and made a relation to the renegate, and my other fellowes of all that had paſſed: and did long infinitely to ſee the hower wherein I might, without any affright or danger, poſſeſſe that happineſſe which fortune in the faire and louely *Zoraida*, offered vnto mee. In fine the time paſſed ouer, and the ſo much deſired day and terme arriued: and euery one of vs following the order, which with mature conſideration and long diſcourſe wee had agreed on, we found the good

succeſſe we deſired. For the very Friday following the day wherein I had ſpoken with *Zoraida* in the garden, *Morrenago* (for ſo was the renegate called) neere night caſt anchor almoſt right before the place wherein the beautifull *Zoraida* remained. The *Chriſtians* alſo that were to row, were readie, and hidden in ſundrie places there abouts. All were ſuſpended, and reſolutely expected my comming, deſirous to ſet vpon the Barke that was before their face: for they knew not of the agreement that was betweene mee and the renegate; but rather made full account that they were to gaine their liberty by force of armes, and killing the *Moores* that came in that veſſell.

It therefore befell, that as ſoone as I and my fellowes appeared, all the reſt that were hidden, and eſpied vs, made forthwith ouer towards vs. This was at an howre when the Citie gates were ſhut, and neuer a bodie abroad among all thoſe fields: and when wee were altogether, wee were in doubt whether it would be beſt, firſt to goe and fetch *Zoraida*, or to imprison & ſlone the *Tagarine Moores*, that rowed in the frigat. And being in this doubt, the renegate came to vs, asking vpon what we ſtayed, for it was now high time to be going away and all his *Moores* were wretchleſſe, and the greater number of them aſleepe: We told him then the cauſe of our ſtay, and he anſwered that it was of moſt importance, firſt to ſubiect the veſſell which might be done with very great facilitie, and without any perill, and that we might goe after for *Zoraida*. His opinion liked vs all verie well, and therefore without lingring any longer, he leading the way we came to the veſſell, and he himſelfe leaping in firſt of all ſet hand to his faulchion and ſaid, in *Moriſco* let none of you that is, heere ſtirre himſelfe, if he loue his life. And ſaying ſo all the reſt of the *Chriſtians* entred the *Moores* which were of little ſpirit, hearing their maſter ſay ſo, were maruellouſly amazed, and without daring, any one of them to ſet hand to their armes, which were but a few at all, they ſuffered [illegible] lues very quietly to be taken and bound

by the *Chriſtians*, which did it very dexteriouſly, threatning them that if they did let ſlip the leaſt outcry, they ſhould preſently be all put to the ſword: this being finiſhed, and the halfe of our people remaining in their guard, wee that were left, conducted alſo by the renegate, went towards *Aquimoratus* garden, the doore thereof did, by very good hap, open with as little noiſe as if it it had had no locke at all: Whereupon we went with great quietneſſe and ſilence towards the houſe vnfelt or eſpied of any.

The beautifull *Zoraida* was the while expecting vs at a window, and as ſoone as ſhe felt people approach, demanded with a low voice whether we were *Nizarani*, as if ſhe would ſay or aske, whether we were *Chriſtians*? I anſwered that we were, and willed her to come downe. As ſoone as ſhe knew mee, ſhe ſtayed not a minute, but without anſwering any word, came downe in an inſtant; and opening the doore, ſhewed her ſelfe to vs all more beautifull, and richly attired, then I am able in any ſort to expreſſe. As ſoone as I ſaw her, I tooke her by the hand, and kiſſed it, the ſame did the renegate, and my two *Camarades*; and all the reſt which knew not the matter, did as they had ſeene vs doe before them; for it ſeemed that wee did no more but giue her thankes, and acknowledge her the auctreſſe of all our liberties. The renegat demaunded of her in her owne language, whether her father were in the garden or no? ſhe anſwered that he was, & that he ſlept; then wil it be requiſite quoth the renegat, to rouſe him, & beare him, & al the other things of worth in this garden away with vs: that ſhal not be ſo, (quooth ſhe, for I will haue no man to touch my father, and in this houſe there is nothing of value, but that which I meane to carry away with my ſelfe, which is ſo much as will be ſufficient to cheere and inrich you all: as if you will ſtay but a while, you ſhall perceiue. And ſaying ſo, ſhe entred againe into the houſe, promiſing to returne to vs ſpeedily, and bade vs ſtand ſtill without making any noiſe. I demanded of the renegate what ſpeech had paſſed betweene them,

Digitized by Google

and he told me all she had said, and I answered him againe that I would not haue *Zoraidas* will transgresse in any sort: by this time she returned loden with a little Casket full of gold, so that she was scarce able to beare it. And her father in the meane season, by bad fortune awaked, and heard the noyse that was beneath in his garden, and looking out at a window he perceiued that they were all *Christians* that were in it, & therfore cried out in a loud and vnmeasurable maner in the *Arabian* tongue, *Christians, Christians, Theeues, Theeues*; by which cries we were all of vs strucken into very great feare and confusion: but the renegate seeing the perill wherein we were, and how neerely it concerned him to come off from that enterprize, before he were discouered, ranne vp very speedily to the place where *Aquimorato* stood, and some of our fellowes accompanied him (for I durst not abandon *Zoraida*, who had saine betweene mine armes all amazed) and in conclusion those which had mounted behaued themselues so well, as they brought *Aquimorato* downe in a trice, hauing tied his hand, and set a gagge in his mouth, which hindred his speech, threatning him that if hee did speake but a word, it should cost him his life.

When his daughter saw him, she couered her eyes because she would not behold him, and he maruelled; wholy ignoring with how good a will she came away with vs: but then considering that nothing was so requisite as our legges, we did with al velocity & diligence get into the frigat, for our companions did perplexedly expect our returne, halfe afraid that some disgrace had befalne vs. Scarse were two houres of the night ouerrunne when we were all imbarked: and then we vnmanacled *Zoraidas* fathers hands, and tooke the cloath out of his mouth. But the renegate did againe admonish him, that as he tendred his life he should not speake one word, he beholding his daughter likewise there, beganne to sigh very feelingly, but chiefly perceiuing me to hold her so straightly embraced, and that [illegible] made no resistance, nor did

did complaine or seeme coy, but stood quiet. But yet for all that he kept silence, fearing lest they should put the renegates menaces in execution. *Zoraida* seeing her selfe now safe within the Barke, and that we were readie to row away, looking on her father, and the other *Moores* that were tied therein, she intreated the renegate to tell me how she desired me to doe her the fauour to set those *Moores* and her father at liberty, for she would rather cast her selfe into the Sea then see a father, who had loued her so dearely, caried away captiue before her eyes, and that also by her occasion. The renegate told me her minde, and I answered how I was very well pleased it should be so: but he replied, that it was in no sort expedient, by reason that if they were landed there, they would presently raise the countrey, and put the whole Citie into a tumult, and cause certaine light Frigats to bee manned, and sent out in our pursuite; and lay both Sea and land for vs in such sort as it would be impossible for vs to escape: but that as might bee done was to giue them liberty at the first *Christian* countrey whereat we arriued: All of vs agreed to this opinion, and *Zoraida* also (to whom reason was giuen of the motiues we had not to free them forthwith and accomplish her will therein) remained satisfied: and therefore presently with ioyfull silence, and cheerefull diligence euery one of our lustie rowers, ceasing vpon his oare, we beganne, after we had commended our selues vnto Almighty God, to lanch forth, and addresse our course towards the Iles of *Mallorca*, which is the neerest *Christian* country: but by reason that the wind blew somwhat from the mountaines, and that the Sea began to be rough, it was not possible to continue that course; and so wee were forced to approach the shore, & go by little and little towards *Oran*, not without great griefe and anguish, for feare to be espied by the towne of *Sargell*, vvhich is on that coast, and falles some seuentie leagues beyond *Argiers*: and vve did likewise feare to meete in that passage some galleat of those vvhich come ordinarily vvith merchandize from *Tetuan*, although euerie

one of vs for himself,& for altogether,did presume,that if we encountred a galliot of merchandize,so it were not a Pirate, that not only we wold not be lost,but rather would take the vessell that therein we might with more security finish our voyage. *Zoraida* whilst thus we sailed,went with her head between my hands,because she would not looke on her father, and I felt her,how she was still inuoking of *Lela Marien* to assist vs,and hauing sailed about some thirty leagues, the morning ouertook vs about some three Musket shot frō land, in a place that seemed to be desart, and free from all accesse of those that might discouer vs; and yet for all that, we got by might and maine,somewhat further into the Seas, that now were become a little calmer, and hauing entred some two leagues into the maine,order was giuen,that they should row by turnes,whilst they did refresh themselues and take a little sustenance,for the Barke was very well furnished with victuals, although those which did rowe, refused the offer saying,that then it was no time to repose,and that they should set those that did not row to dinner, for they would not yet in in any sort let go their Oates. It being done as they had said,the wind did rise so much as it made vs abandoning our Oares, to set saile and direct our Boat towards *Oran*,being vnable to take any other course: all was done with very great speed, & so we made by the saile more then eight miles an hower, free from all other feare, then that of encountring some vessell of war. We gaue the *Moores* our prisoners their dinner,and the renegate conforted them,saying,that they went not as prisoners, for they should receiue their liberty, vpon the first commodity that were proferd. The same was likewise said to *Zoraidas* father,who returned them this answere. I would easily expect and beleeue any other thing O *Christians* of your liberality & honorable manner of proceeding, but do not thinke that I am so simple as once to imagine that you will giue me my liberty, for you did neuer expose your selfe to the danger of dispoiling me thereof,with intention to returne it me so prodigally againe,

Digitized by Google

especially knowing as you do, who I am, and the profit which you may reape by giuing me it againe, to which profit if you wil put a name, & tel me how much would you demand, I do euen from hence offer vnto you all that which you will seeke for me, & for that vnfortunate daughter of mine, or if you wil not deliuer me, I will giue you it for her alone, who is the greatest, & the best part of my soule. And saying so, he began to weep so bitterly, as he moued vs all to cõpassion, & forced *Zoraida* to looke vpon him; who seeing him weepe, was so strangely moued as arising frõ my feet, she went & embraced her father, and laying her face vpon his, they began together so tender a lamentation, as many of vs that were in the Bark were forced to keep thee cõpany: but when her father noted her to be so richly adorned, & with so many Iewels on, he asked her in his own language, how haps this daughter that yesternight late before this terrible disaster befel vs, wherin we are plunged, I saw thee attired in thine ordinary houshold aray, & that now without hauing had any leasure to apparrel thy self, or hauing giuẽ thee any glad tidings, for whose solẽnizing, thou oughtest to adorne & publish thy selfe, I do view thee thus clad in the richest attire which I could bestow vpon thee, when our fortune was most fauourable. Answer me to this, for thou hast suspended and astonished mee more then the very disgrace it selfe wherein I am.

All that the *Moore* said to his daughter the renegate declared vnto vs, and she did not answere a word to him: but when he saw the little coffers lie at one side of the Barke, wherein she was wont to keepe her Iewels, and that hee knew very well she had left at *Argiers*, and not brought to the garden, he was much more amazed, and demaunded of her how that coffer was come into our possession, and what things she had therewithin? to which the renegate without attending that *Zoraida* should answere him, said, Sir do not trouble your selfe by demanding so many things of your daughter *Zoraida*, for with one that I will say, I shal satisfie them all: and therefore you shall vnderstand that shee

is a *Christian*, and hath been the file that cut off our chaines, and is the liberty it selfe of our captiuitie, and she goeth along with vs of her owne free will, as content (if mine imagination doth not wrong me) to see her selfe in this state, as he is that commeth out of darkenesse to the light, from death vnto life, and out of paine into glory. Is it true daughter, which this man sayes, quoth the Moore? It is, answered *Zorayda*: that thou in effect art a *Christian*, replyed the old man, and she that hath put her father into his enemies hands? To which *Zorayda* answered, I am she that is a *Christiã*, but not she that hath brought thee to this passe: for my desire did neuer so estrange it selfe from thee, as to abandon or harme thee, but only endeuored to do my self good. And what good hast thou done thy self daughter? demand that, said she of *Lela Marien*, for she can therin informe thee better then I can.

Scarce had the Moore heard her say so, when with incredible haste he threw himselfe headlong into the Sea, wherein hee had beene questionlesly drowned, if the long apparell he wore on, had not kept him vp a while aboue the water. *Zoraida* cried out to vs to saue him, and so we all presently ranne, and laying hold on a part of his Turkish robe, drew him vp halfe drowned, and wholly deuoyde of feeling. Whereat *Zorayda* was so grieued, that she lamented him as dolefully as if he had beene dead. There we laid him with his mouth downward, and he auoyded a great quantity of water, and after the space of two houres returned to himselfe againe: and in the meane time the winde also turning, it did driue vs towards the coast; so that we were constrayned to keepe our selues by very force of armes from striking vpon it, and our good fortune directing vs, we arriued to a little creeke at the side of a certaine Cape or Promontory, called by the *Moores* the Cape of the *Cana Rumia*, which in our language signifies *the ill Christian woman*: and the *Moores* hold it for a tradition, that in the very same place was the *Cana* buried, for whom Spaine was lost, and conquered by the *Moores*: for *Cana* in their language signifies *an ill woman*.

man, and *Rumia a Chriſtian*: yea, and they holde it for a ſigne of misfortune to arriue or caſt Ancre there, when meere neceſſity driues them thither: without which they neuer approach it, yet did it not proue to vs the ſhelter of an ill woman, but the ſecure hauen of our ſafery. We ſent our Centinels a ſhore, and neuer let the Oares ſlip out of our hands: We did likewiſe eate of the Renegates prouiſion, and heartily beſought Almightie God and our Ladie to aſsiſt and fauour vs with a happy end, to ſo luckie a beginning. And we agreed vpon *Zoraydas* intreatie, to ſet her father and the other Moores that we had tied, a land in that place: for ſhe was of ſo tender and compaſsionate a minde, as ſhe could in no wiſe brooke to ſee her father tied in her preſence, or her countreymen borne away captiues: wherfore we made her a promiſe that we wold at our departure let them go al away, ſeeing we incurd no danger by leauing them in that inhabitable deſart: our prayers were not ſo vain, but that they found gentle acceptance in heauen, which preſently changed the winde and appeaſed the Sea, inuiting vs cheerfully to returne to it againe, and proſecute our commenced voyage.

Seeing that the weather was fauourable, we looſed the *Moors* & ſet them al a land one by one; and comming to diſmbark *Zoraydas* father, who was by that time wholly come to himſelfe, he ſaid, For what doe you coniecture *Chriſtians*, that this bad woman is glad that you giue me libertie? Do you thinke that ſhe doth it for pitie that ſhe takes of me? No truely, but ſhe doth it onely to remoue the hinderance my preſence gaue her when ſhe would execute her vnlawful deſires. Nor ought you to beleeue that ſhee is moued to change religion, by reaſon that ſhe vnderſtands yours to be better then her owne, but onely becauſe ſhe knowes licentiouſneſſe to be more publickely and freely practiſed in your countrey then among vs: & then turning to *Zoraydas*, whom I and another Chriſtian held faſt by both the armes leſt ſhee ſhould do ſome deſperate acte, he ſaid, O infamous girle, and il-aduiſed mayden, where doſt thou runne thus blinded and diſtract-

distracted, in the power of those dogges our naturall enemies? Cursed be the houre wherein I engendred thee, and cursed the delights and pleasures wherin thou wast nousled. I perceiuing that he was not like to make an end of his execrations so soone as I could wish, had him set on shore, and thence he prosecuted his maledictions, and plaints praying vnto *Mahomet* that he would intercede with *Alà*, that we might be all destroyed, confounded, & cast away. And when we could heare his words no longer, by reason that we set saile, we perceiued his works, that were, to plucke his beard, teare his haire, and cast himselfe on the ground: but once he did lift vp his voyce so high, as that we heard him say, return beloued daughter, returne to the land, for I doe pardon thee all that thou hast done, and deliuer that money to those men, for it is now their owne, and returne thou to comfort thy sadde and desolate father, who will forsake his life on these desolate sands, if thou dost abandon him.

Zorayda heard him say all this, and lamented thereat, but knew not how to speake, or answere him any other thing but this, Father mine, I pray *Alà* that *Lela Marien*, who hath beene the cause of my becomming a *Christian*, may likewise comfort thee in thy sorrow. *Alà* knowes well that I could do none other then I did, & that these *Christians* do owe me nothing for my good wil, seeing that though I had not come away with them, but remained at my house, yet had it beene impossible (such was the hast wherewithall my soule pressed me) not to haue executed this my purpose, which seemes to me to be as good, as thou O beloued father, dost account it wicked. She said this in a time that neither her father could heare her, nor we beholde him: and therefore after I had comforted *Zorayda*, we did thenceforth onely attend our voyage, which was so much holpen by the fauorable winde, as we made full account to bee the next day on the coast of Spaine: but as good very seldome or rather neuer, betides a man thoroughly and wholly, without being accompanied or followed by some euill which troubles and assaults it, our

fortune would, or rather the maledictions of the *Moore* powred on his daughter: (for the curſes of any father whatſoeuer are to bee feared) that being ingulfed three houres within night, and going before the winde with a full ſayle, and our Oares ſet vp, becauſe the proſperous winde had rid vs of the labour of rowing: we ſaw neere vnto vs, by the light of the Moone that ſhined very cleerely, a round veſſel, which with all her ſailes ſpread, did croſſe before vs in the Sea, and that ſo neerely as we were faine to ſtrike down her ſaile, that we might auoide the ſhog ſhe was like to giue vs; and thoſe that were in her had on the other ſide laboured alſo what they might, to turne her out of our way, ſtanding all of them on the hatches to demaund of vs what we were, from whence we came, and whither vve did ſaile? But by reaſon that they ſpake French, the Renegate bad vs not to ſpeake a word, ſaying, Let none anſwer, for theſe are French Pirates which make their bootie of euery body. For this cauſe none of vs anſwered: and being paſſed a litle forward, and that the Ship remained in the Lee of vs, they ſuddenly ſhotte off two pieces of Artillery, and as I thinke both of them had chaine bullets, for with the one they cut our Maſt aſunder, and ouerthrew it and the ſaile into the ſea, and inſtantly after they diſcharged another, and the bullet alighting in our barke did pierce it thorow and thorow, without doing any other hurt, but we, ſeeing that our veſſell beganne to ſinke, beganne all to crie out, and requeſt them to ſuccour vs, and prayed them that they would take vs into their veſſell, for we were a drowning. Then they amaine, and caſting out their Cocke-boate, there entred into it as good as a douzen Frenchmen, wel appointed with their Harcabuzes and Matches lighted, and ſo approched vnto vs; and perceiuing how few we were, and that the Barke did ſinke, they receiued vs into their boate, ſaying that becauſe we had vſed the diſcourteſie of not making them anſwere, that misfortune had befalne vs. Our Renegate about this time tooke the coffin wherein *Zoraydas* treaſures were kept, and threw it into the ſea vnperceiued of any.

Digitized by Google

In

In concluſion, we went all of vs into the great veſſel with the Frenchmen, who after they had informed themſelues of all that which they deſired to know, as if they were our capitall enemies, they afterward diſpoyled vs of all that euer we had about vs, and of *Zorayda* they tooke all, euen vnto her very bracelets, that ſhe wore on the wreſts of her feete. But the wrong they did to *Zorayda* did not afflict mee ſo much as the feare I conceiued, that after they had taken away from her, her moſt rich and pretious jewels, they would alſo depriue her of the jewell of moſt price, and which ſhee valued moſt. But the deſires of that nation extend themſelues no farther, then to the gaine of money: and their auarice in this is neuer throughly ſatisfied; and at that time was ſo great, as they would haue taken from vs the very habites of ſlaues, that we brought from *Barbarie*, if they had fonnd them to haue beene worth any thing: and ſome there were of opinion among them, that we ſhould be al inwreathed in a ſaile, and throwen into the Sea, becauſe they had intention to traffique into ſome hauens of *Spaine*, vnder the name of *Britaines*, and that if they caried vs aliue, they ſhould be puniſhed, their robery being detected: but the Captaine, who was he that had pilled my beloued *Zorayda*, ſaid, that hee was ſo contented with his booty, as he meaned not to touch any part of Spaine, but would paſſe the ſtreights of *Gibraltar* by night, or as he might, and ſo returne againe to *Rochel*, from whence he was come: and there vp on they all agreed to giue vs their Cock-boate, and all that was neceſſary for our ſhort voyage, as indeed they performed the day enſuing when we were in the view of Spaine, with the ſight whereof all our griefes and pouerties were as quite forgotten as if we neuer had felt any; ſo great is the delight a man takes to recouer his liberty. It was about midday when they put vs into the Cocke, giuing vnto vs two Barrels of water and ſome Bisket; and the Captaine moued with ſome compaſſion, as the beautifull *Zorayda* embarqued her ſelfe, beſtowed on her about fortie crownes in gold; nor would he per-

mit his Souldiers to diſpoyle her of theſe very garments, which then and now ſhe weares.

We entred into the cockboate, and giuing them thankes for the good they did, and ſhewing at our departure more tokens of thankfulnes, then of diſcontent; they ſailed preſently away from vs towards the ſtraights, and we without looking on any other north or ſtarre, then the land it ſelf which appeared before vs, did row towards it ſo luſtily, that at the Sunneſet we were ſo neare, as we made full account to arriue before the night were farre ſpent. But by reaſon that the Moone did not ſhine, and the night was very darke, and that wee knew not where wee were, wee did not hold it the beſt courſe to approch the ſhore too neare; yet others there were that thought it conuenient and good, deſiring that wee ſhould make to it, although we ran the boate on the rocks, and farre from any dwelling; for by doing ſo, we ſhould free our ſelues from the feare which we ought of reaſon to haue, leſt there ſhould bee vp and downe on that coaſt any Frigats of the Pyrates of *Tetuan*, which are wont to leaue *Barbarie* ouer night, and be on the coaſt of *Spaine* ere morning, and ordinarily make their booty and turne to their ſupper againe to *Barbarie* the night following: but of the contrary opinions that which was followed was, that wee ſhould draw neare the land by little and little, and that if the quietneſſe of the Sea would permit it, wee ſhould take land where wee might beſt and moſt commodiouſly doe it. This was done, and a little before midnight we arriued to the foot of a high and monſtrous mountaine, which was not altogether ſo neare to the Sea, but that it did grant a litle patch of ground, whereon we might commodiouſly diſembarke. Wherefore we ranne our ſelues on the ſands, and came all a land and kiſſed the earth, and with teares of moſt ioyfull content and delight, gaue thankes vnto our Lord God, for the incomparable fauours which hee had done vs in our voyage: then tooke we out our vittailes from the boate, and drew it ſelfe vp on the ſhore, and aſcended a great part of the mountaine,

Digitized by Google

for

for although we were in that place, yet durſt wee not aſſure our ſelues, nor did throughly beleeue that it was a *Chriſtian* Country whereon we did treade.

The day breaking ſomewhat ſlower then I could haue wiſhed it; we aſcended the mountaine wholly, to ſee whether we might diſcouer any dwelling, or ſheepfoulds from thence; but although wee extended our ſight vnto euery quarter, yet could we neither deſcry dwelling, perſon, path, nor high way: yet did we reſolue notwithſtanding to enter into the land, ſeeing that wee could not chooſe but diſcouer ere long ſome body who might giue vs notice of the place where we were: and that which afflicted me moſt of all was, to ſee *Zoraida* goe a foote through thoſe rugged places; for although I did ſometimes carry her on my ſhoulders, yet did the toile I tooke more weary her, then the repoſe ſhee got could eaſe her; and therefore would neuer after the firſt time ſuffer me to take that paines againe, and ſo ſhee went euer after a foot with great patience, and tokens of ioy, I holding her ſtill by the hand; and hauing trauailed little leſſe then a quarter of a league, we heard the noiſe of a little bell, an infallible argument that neare at hand there was ſome cattle; whereupon all of vs looking very wiſtly to ſee whether any body appeared, wee might perceiue vnder a Corke-tree a young ſheep-heard, who very quietly and careleſly was caruing of a ſticke with a knife: we called to him, and he leaped vp lightly on foote, and (as we afterwards learned) the firſt that he got ſight of, were the renegate and *Zoraida* whom he ſeeing apparelled in the *Moriſco* habit, thought that all the people of *Barbarie* had been at his heeles, and therefore running very ſwiftly into the wood, he cryed all along with maruailous lowdneſſe, *Moores, Moores*, are in the land; *Moores, Moores*, arme, arme. Theſe outcryes ſtrucke vs a new into a great perplexity, and ſcarce did wee know what vve ſhould doe: but conſidering how the ſheep-heards alarme would cauſe all the Country to riſe vp, and that the horſemen that kept the coaſt would preſently come to ſee

what

vvhat it was; we all agreed that the renegate ſhould put off his *Turkiſh* attyre, and put on a captiues caſſocke, which one of the company gaue vnto him forthwith, although the giuer remained after in his ſhirt, and thus committing the affaire vnto almighty God, we followed on by the ſame way, which we ſaw the ſheep-heard had taken, alwaies expecting when the horſemen of the coaſt would fall vpon vs, and we were not deceiued in our expectation, for within two houres after, hauing iſſued out of thoſe woods into a plaine, we diſcouered about ſome fifty horſemen which came running towards vs as ſwiftly as their horſes could driue, and hauing perceiued them we ſtood ſtill, and ſtayed vntill they came to vs, and ſaw, in ſteed of the *Moores*, they ſought for, ſo many poore *Chriſtians*, and remayned ſomewhat aſhamed thereat: and one of them demaunded whether we were the occaſion that a ſheep-heard had giuen the alarme: yes, quoth I, and as I was about to informe what I was, and of all our aduenture, and from whence we came; one of the *Chriſtians* that came with vs, did take notice of the horſeman who had ſpoken vnto vs, and ſo interrupting my ſpeech, he ſaid. Sirs let God be praiſed which hath brought vs to ſo good a place as this is, for if I be not deceiued the earth which we treade is of *Veley Malaga*; and if the yeares of my captiuity haue not confounded my memory, you likewiſe Sir that demaunds vvhat we be, are *Peter* of *Buſtamonte*, mine Vncle. As ſoone as euer the *Chriſtian* captiue had ſpoken thoſe wordes, the horſeman leaping of his horſe ranne and embraced him, ſaying, O nephew as deare to me as my ſoule and life, now I doe know thee very well, and many a day ſince haue I wept for thee, thinking thou vvaſt dead, and ſo hath my ſiſter thy mother, and all the reſt of thy friends which doe liue yet, and God hath been pleaſed to preſerue their liues, that they may inioy the pleaſure to behold thee. We knew very vvell that thou vvaſt in *Argiers*, and by the ſignes and tokens of thy clothes, and that of all the reſt here of thy companions, I ſurmiſe that your eſcape hath beene miraculous: it was ſo, replyed

plyed the Captiue, and vve ſhall haue time, I hope, to recount vnto you the manner.

As ſoone as the horſemen had vnderſtood, that vve vvere *Chriſtian* captiues, they allighted of their horſes, and euery one of them inuited vs to mount vpon his owne, to carry vs to the Citty of *Veley Malaga*, vvhich vvas yet a league and a halfe from that place, and ſome of them vvent to the place vvhere vve had left the boate, to bring it to the Citty; whom vve informed firſt of the place where it lay; others did mount vs vp a horſebacke behind themſelues, and *Zoraida* rode behind the captiues Vncle: all the people iſſued to receiue vs being premoniſhed of our arriuall by ſome one that had ridden before. They did not wonder to ſee Captiues freed, nor *Moores* captiued there, being an ordinary thing in thoſe parts, but that whereat they wondred, was the ſurpaſſing beauty of *Zoraida*, which at that ſeaſon and inſtant vvas in her prime, as vvell through the warmth ſhee had gotten by her trauaile, as alſo through the ioy ſhe conceiued to ſee her ſelfe in *Chriſtian* lands, ſecure from all feare of being ſurpriſed or loſt: and theſe things called out to her face ſuch colours, as if it be not that affection might then haue deceiued mee, I durſt auer, that a more beautifull then ſhee was, the world could not affoord, at leaſt among thoſe which I had euer beheld.

We went directly to the Church to giue thanks vnto almighty God, for the benefit receiued, and as ſoone as *Zoraida* entred into it, ſhee ſaid there were faces in it, that reſembled very much that of *Lela Marien*: we told her that they were her images, and the renegate as well as the breuitie of the time permitted, inſtructed her what they ſignified, to the end ſhee ſhould doe them reuerence, as if euery one of them were truly that ſame *Lela Marien*, which had ſpoken vnto her. She who hath a very good vnderſtanding, and an eaſie and cleare conceit, comprehended preſently all that was told vnto her concerning Images: from thence they carryed vs, and deuided vs among different houſes of the Citty, but the

Chriſtian

Chriſtian that came with vs carryed the Renegate, *Zoraida*, and me to the houſe of his parents, which were indifferently accommodated, and ſtored with the goods of Fortune, and did entertaine me with as great loue and kindneſſe, as if I were their owne ſonne. We remayned ſixe dayes in *Veley*, in which time the renegate hauing made an information of all that which might concerne him, hee went to the Citty of *Granada* to be reconciled, by the holy *Inquiſitions* meanes, to the boſome of our holy Mother the Church. The reſt of the freed captiues tooke euery one the way that he pleaſed, and *Zoraida* and I remained behinde, with thoſe Duckats only which the Frenchmans curteſie was pleaſed to beſtow on *Zoraida*, and with part of that ſumme I bought her this beaſt whereon ſhee rides: I my ſelfe ſeruing her hitherto as her Father and her Squire, and not as her Spouſe, we trauaile with intention to ſee whether my father be yet liuing, or any of my brothers haue had more proſperous hap then my ſelfe, although ſeeing that heauen hath made mee *Zoraidas* conſort, mee thinkes no other good Fortune could arriue were it neuer ſo great, that I would hold in ſo high eſtimation. The patience wherewithall ſhee beares the incommodities vſually annext vnto pouerty, and the deſires ſhee ſhewes to become a *Chriſtian*, is ſuch and ſo great, as it ſtrikes mee into an admiration, and doth moue mee to ſerue her all the dayes of my life: although that the delight which I take to ſee my ſelfe hers, and ſhee mine, is oftimes interrupted and almoſt diſſolued by the feare which I haue, that I ſhall not finde in mine owne Countrey ſome little corner wherein I may entertayne her; and that time and death haue wrought ſuch alteration in the goods and liues of my fathers and brothers, as I ſhall ſcarce finde any one at home that knowes mee. I haue no more good Sirs, to tell you of my liues Hiſtorie, then which whether it be pleaſing, and rare, or no, your cleare conceipts are to iudge: as for my ſelfe I dare ſay, that if it had beene poſſible, I would haue told it with more breuitie; fearing it might bee tedious

vnto

vnto you, I purposely omitted many delightfull circumstances thereof.

CHAP. XV.

Which speakes of that which after befell in the Inne; and of sundry other things worthy to be knowne.

THe Captiue hauing said this, held his peace, and *Don Fernando* replyed to him thus. Truly Captaine, the manner wherewithall you haue recounted this marualous succesſe hath beene such, as it may be parrangond to the nouelty and strangenesse of the euent it self, and so great is the delight we haue taken in the hearing thereof, as I doe beleeue, that although wee had spent the time from hence till to morrow in listning to it, yet should we be glad to heare it told ouer once againe, & saying so, *Cardenio*, and all the rest did offer themselues and their meanes to his seruice as much as lay in them with so cordiall and friendly words, as the Captaine remained throughly satisfied with their good wits: but specially *Don Fernando* offered, that if hee would returne with him hee would cause the *Marquesse* his brother to be *Zoraida* her Godfather in Baptisme, and that hee for his part, would so accommodate him with all things necessary, as he might enter into the towne, with the decency and authority due to his person. The Captiue did gratifie his large offers very curteously, but would not accept any of them at that time: by this the night drew on, and about the fall thereof, there arriued at the Inne a coatch with some men a horsebacke, and asked for lodging: to whom the Hostesse answered, that in all the Inne there was not a spanne free. The number of her guests was already so many: well, although that be so, quoth one of the horsemen that had entred, yet must there be a place found for Master

Iustice,

Iuſtice, who comes in this Coach. At this name, the Hoſteſſe was affraid, and ſaid, Sir the misfortune is, that I haue no beds, but if Maſter *Iuſtice* brings one with him, as it is probable he doth, let him enter in boldly, and I and my husband will leaue our owne chamber to accommodate his worſhip. So be it, quoth the Squire, and by this time allighted out of the Coach, a man whoſe attyre did preſently denote his dignity and office; for his long gowne and his great and large ſleeues did ſhew that he was a Iudge, as the Seruingman affirmed. He led a young maiden by the hand, of about ſome ſixteene yeares old, apparelled in riding attyre, but ſhe was therewithall of ſo diſpoſed, beautifull, and chearfull a countenance, as her preſence did ſtrike them all into admiration: ſo as if they had not ſeene *Dorotea*, *Luſcinda*, and *Zoraida*, which were then in the Inne, they would hardly haue beleeued that this Damzels beauty might any where haue beene matched.

Don-Quixote was preſent at the Iudges, and the Gentlewomans entry, and ſo, as ſoone as he had ſeene him, he ſaid, Sir you may boldly enter, and take your eaſe in this Caſtle, which although it be but little, and ill accommodated, yet there is no narrowneſſe nor diſcommodity in the world, but makes place for armes, and learning, and ſpecially if the armes and letters bring beauty for their guide and leader, as your learning doth, conducted by this louely Damzell, to whom ought not only Caſtles to open and manifeſt themſelues, but alſo rocks to part and deuide their cliffes, and mountaines to bow their ambitious creſts, to giue and make her a lodging. Enter therefore, I ſay, Worſhipfull Sir, into this Paradiſe, wherein you ſhall finde Starres and Sunnes, to accompany this skie which you bring in your company. Here ſhall you find armes in their height, and beauty in her prime. The Iudge marualled greatly at *Don-Quixots* ſpeech, whom he began to behold very earneſtly, and wondered no leſſe at his ſhape then at his words, and knowing not what anſwere he might returne him, he was diuerted on the other ſide, by

the ſuddaine approch of the three Ladies *Luſcinda*, *Dorotea*, and *Zoraida*, which ſtood before him, for hauing heard of the arriuall of new gueſts, and alſo being informed by the Hoſteſſe of the young Ladies beauty, they were come forth to ſee, and entertaine her. But *Don Fernando*, *Cardenio*, and the *Curate*, did giue him more compleate and courtly entertainment then the ruſty Knight. In effect the Iudge was marualouſly amazed at that which hee ſawe and heard in that Inne; and the faire gueſts thereof, bad the beautifull maiden welcome. The Iudge perceiued very well, that the gueſts of the Inne were all men of account, but *Don-Quixotes* feature viſage, and behauiour, did ſet him out of all byas, being not able to coniecture what he might be: and after ſome court-like intercourſes paſſed, and the commodities of the Inne examined, they all agreed againe, as they had done before, that all the women ſhould enter into *Don-Quixotes* roome, and the men remaine without in their guarde. And ſo the Iudge was content that the Damzel, who was his daughter, ſhould alſo goe with thoſe Ladies, which ſhee did with a very good will: and with a part of the Inkeepers narrow bed, and halfe of that which the Iudge had brought with him, they made ſhift to paſſe ouer that night the beſt they could.

The Captiue, who from the inſtant that he had firſt ſeene the Iudge, did greatly ſuſpect that he was his brother, demaunded of one of his ſeruants, how he was called, & where he was borne. The other anſwered, how he was called the *Licenciat Iohn Perez of Uiedma*, and as hee had heard, hee was borne in a Village of the mountaines of *Leon*. With this relation and the reſt that he had noted, he finally confirmed his opinion that it was the brother, who following his fathers aduice, had dedicated himſelfe to his ſtudies, and full of ioy and contentment, calling a ſide *Don Fernando*, *Cardenio*, and the *Curate*, he certified them of all that paſſed, and that the Iudge was his brother. The ſeruingman told him likewiſe how he went towards the *Indies*, where he had his place and office in the Courts of *Mexico*: and alſo that the young

young Gentlewoman was his daughter, of whoſe birth her mother had died, and he euer after remained a widdower, and very rich, by her dowry and portion that ſhee had left to her daughter: he demanded of them aduice how he might diſcouer himſelfe to his brother, or firſt know, whether after he had detected himſelfe, he would receiue him with a good countenance and affection, and not be aſhamed to acknowledge him for his brother, ſeeing him in ſo poore an eſtate: leaue the triall of that experience to mee, quoth the *Curate*, and the rather becauſe there is no occaſion why you Sir Captaine ſhould not be kindly entertained by him: for the prudence, worths, and good countenance of your brother, giue manifeſt tokens that he is nothing arrogant. For all that ſaid the Captaine, I would not make my ſelfe knowen on the ſuddaine, but would vſe ſome pretty ambages to bring him acquainted with me: I ſay vnto you, quoth the *Curate*, that I will trace the matter in ſuch ſort, as we all wil reſt ſatisfied.

Supper was by this made ready, and all of them ſate down to the table, the Captiue excepted and Ladies, which ſupped together within the roome: and about the midſt of ſupper the *Curate* ſaid, Maſter Iuſtice, I haue had in times paſt a *Comrades* of your very ſurname in *Conſtantinople*, where I was ſometime Captiue, who was one of the moſt valiant Souldiers and Captaines that might be found among all the *Spaniſh* foote: but he was as vnfortunate as he was valorous and reſolute. And how was that Captaine called good Sir, quoth the Iudge? his name was, replyed Maſter *Curate*, *Ruy Perez of Viedma*, and he was borne in a Village of the mountaines of *Leon*; and he recounted vnto me an occurrence hapned betweene his father, him, and his other brethren, which if I had not beene told by a man of ſuch credit and reputation as he was, I would haue eſteemed for one of theſe fables which old Wiues are wont to rehearſe by the fire ſide in winter: for hee ſaid to me that his father had deuided his goods among his three ſons, and gaue them withall certaine precepts, better then thoſe of *Cato*; and I know well

well, that the choise which he made to follow the warre, had such happy successe, as within a few yeares, through his forwardnesse and valour, without the helpe of any other arme, he was aduanced to a company of foot, and made a Captain, and was in the way and course of becomming one day a Collonell, but fortune was contrary to him, for euen there, where he was most to expect her saugur, he lost it, with the losse of his liberty, in that most happy iourney wherein so many recouered it, to wit, in the battell of *Lepanto*. I lost mine in *Goleta*, and after by different successe wee became companions in *Constantinople*, from whence we went to *Argiers*, where did befall him one of the most notable aduentures that euer happed in the world; and there the Curate with succinct breuity recounted all that had happened betweene the Captaine and *Zorayda*: to all which the Iudge was so attentiue, as in all his life he neuer listned to any cause so attentiuely, as then. And the *Curate* onely arriued to the point wherein the *Frenchmen* spoiled the *Christians* that came in the Barke, and the necessity wherein his companion and the beautifull *Zoraida* remained: of whom he had not learned any thing after, nor knew not what became of them or whether they came into Spaine, or were caried away by the Frenchmen to Fraunce.

The Captaine stood listening somewhat a loose off, to all the *Curates* wordes, and noted the while the motions and gestures of his brother; who seeing that the *Curate* had now made an end of his speech, breathing forth a great sigh, and his eyes being filled with teares, he said: O Sir, if you had known the neeves which you haue told me, and how neerely they touch me in some points, whereby I am constrained to manifest these teares which violently breake forth in despight of my discretion, and calling, you would hold me excused for this excesse. That Captaine of whom you spoke, is my eldest brother, who, as one stronger, and of more noble thoughts then I or my younger brother, made election of the honourable military calling; one of the three estates

which our father propoſed to vs, euen as your *Comrade* informed you, when as you thought he related a fable. I followed my booke, by which God and my diligence raiſed me to the ſtate you ſee: my younger brother is in *Peru*, and with that which he hath ſent to my father and my ſelfe, hath bountifully recompenced the portion he caried, and giuen to him ſufficient to ſatisfie his liberall diſpoſition, and to me, wherewithall to continue my ſtudies, with the decencie and authority needfull to aduance me to the ranke which now I poſſeſſe. My father liues yet, but dying through deſire to learne ſomewhat of his eldeſt ſonne, and doth daily importune God with inceſſant prayers, that death may not ſhut his eyes vntill he may once againe ſee him aliue. I only maruell not a little, conſidering his diſcretion, that among all his labours, afflictions, or proſperous ſucceſſes, he hath beene ſo careleſſe in giuing his father notice of his proceedings: for if eyther he, or any one of vs had knowne of his captiuity, he ſhould not haue needed to expect the miracle of the Cane for his ranſome. But that which troubles me moſt of all, is, to thinke whether theſe Frenchmen haue reſtored him againe to libertie, or elſe ſlaine him, that they might conceale their robberie the better: all which will be an occaſion to me to proſecute my voyage, not with the ioy wherewithall I begunne it, but rather with melancholy and ſorrow. O deere brother, I would I might know now where thou art, that I my ſelfe might goe and ſearch thee out, and free thee from thy paines, although it were with the hazard of mine owne. O who is he that could carrie newes to our olde father, that thou wert but aliue, although thou wert hidden in the moſt abſtruſe dungeons of Barbarie; for his riches, my brothers and mine would fetch thee from thence. O beautifull and bountifull *Zorayda*, who might be able to recompence thee for the good thou haſt done to my brother? How happy were he that might be preſent at thy ſpirituall birth and baptiſme, and at thy nuptials, which would be ſo gratefull to vs all? Theſe and many other ſuch wordes did the

Iudge deliuer, so full of compassion for the ieweles that he had receiued of his brother, as all that heard him kept him company, in shewing signes of compasion for his sorrow.

The Curate therfore perceiuing the happy succesſe wherto his designe and the Captaines desire had sorted, would hold the company fast no longer, and therefore arising from the table, and entring into the roome wherin *Zorayda* was, he tooke her by the hand, and after her followed *Luscinda*, *Dorotea*, and the Iudge his daughter. The Captaine stood still to see what the Curate would doe; who taking him fast by the other hand matched ouer with them both towards the Iudge and the other Gentlemen, & said: Suppresse your teares Master Iustice, and glut your desire with all that good which it may desire, seeing you haue here before you your good brother, and your louing sister in law: this man whom you view here is the Captaine *Viedma*, and this the beautifull Moore, which hath done so much for him. The Frenchmen which I told you of, haue reduced them to the pouerty you see, to the end that you may shew the liberality of your noble breſt. Then did the Captaine draw neere to embrace his brother, but he held him off a while with his arms, to note whether it was he or no; but when he once knew him, he embraced him so louingly, and with such aboundance of teares, as did attract the like from all the beholders. The wordes that the brothers spoke one to another, or the feeling affection which they shewed, can hardly be conceiued, and therfore much lesse written by any one whatsoeuer. There they did briefly recount the one to the other their succesſes: there did they shew the true loue and affection of brothers in his prime: there did the Iudge embrace *Zorayda*: there he made her an offer of all that was his: there did hee also cause his daughter to embrace her: there the beautifull *Christian*, and the most beautiful *Moore* renued the teares of them al: there *Don-Quixote* was attentiue, without speaking a word, pondering of these rare occurrences, and attributing them to the *Chimeras*, which he imagined to be incident to Chiualrie:

and there they agreed that the Captaine & *Zorayda* should returne with their brother to *Sinill*, and thence aduise their father of his finding and liberty, that he as well as he might should come to *Sinill* to the baptisme and marriage of *Zoraida*, because the Iudge could not possibly return, or discontinue his iourney, in respect that the *Indian* Fleete was to depart within a moneth from *Sinill* towards *New Spaine*.

Euery one in conclusion, was ioyful & glad at the captiues good successe; and two parts of the night being vvelnigh spent, they all agreed to repose themselues a while. *Don-Quixote* offered himselfe to watch and guard the Castle whilst they slept, lest they should be assaulted by some Giant or other miscreant, desirous to robbe the great treasure of beautie that was therein immured and kept. Those that knew him rendred vnto him infinite thankes: and withall informed the Iudge of his extrauagant humour, whereat hee was not a little recreated: onely *Sancho Panca* did fret, because they went so slowly to sleepe, and he alone was best accommodated of them all, by lying downe on his beasts furniture, vvhich cost him deerely, as shall be after recounted. The Ladies being vvithdrawne into their chamber, and euery one laying himselfe downe vvhere best he might, *Don-Quixote* sallied out of the Inne, to be Centinell of the Castle as he had promised. And a little before day it hapned, that so sweete and tunable a voyce touched the Ladies eares, as it obliged them all to listen vnto it very attentiuely, but chiefly *Dorotea*, who first awaked, & by whose side the yong Gentlevvoman *Donna Clara of Viedma* (for so the Iudges daughter was called) slept. None of them could imagine who it vvas that sung so vvell without the helpe of any instrument: sometimes it seemed that he sung in the yard, others that it was in the stable: and being thus in suspence *Cardenio* came to the chamber dore, and said, Whosoeuer is not asleepe, let them giue eare, and they shall heare the voice of a Lackey that so chants, as it likewise inchants. Sir, quoth *Dorotea*, vve heare him very vvell: vvith this *Cardenio* de-

parted, and *Dorotea* vsing all the attention possible, heard that his song vvas this following.

CHAP. XVI.

Wherin is recounted the History of the Lackey, with other strange aduentures befalne in the Inne.

I Am a Mariner to loue,
Which in his depths profound
Still sailes, and yet no hope can proue
Of comming aye to the ground.
I following go a glistring starre,
Which I aloose descry,
Much more resplendent, then those are
That Palinure *did spye:*
I know not where my course to bend,
And so confusedly,
To see it onely I pretend
Carefull and careles'ly.
Her too impertinent regard,
And too much modestie,
The clouds are which mine eyes haue bard
From their deserued fee.
O cleere and soule reuiuing starre,
Whose sight doth trie my trust,
If thou thy light from me debar,
Instantly die I must.

The Singer arriuing to this point of his song, *Dorotea* imagined that it would not be amisse to let *Donna Clara* heare so excellent a voyce, and therfore she iogged her a little on the one and other side, vntill she had awaked her, and then said, Pardon me childe for thus interrupting your sweete repose, seeing I doe it to the end you may ioy, by hearing one

of the best voyces that perhaps you euer heard in your life. *Clara* awaked at the first drowsily, and did not well vnderstand what *Dorotea* said, and therefore demaunding of her what she said, she told it her againe; wherupon *Donna Clara* was also attentiue: but scarce had she heard two verses repeated by the early Musitian, when a maruellous trembling inuaded her, euen as if she had then suffered the grieuous fit of a quartane Ague. Wherefore imbracing *Dorotea* very straightly, she said, Alas deere Ladie, why did you awake me, seeing the greatest hop that fortune could in this instant haue giuen me, was, to haue mine eyes and eares so shut, as I might neither see, nor heare that vnfortunate Musitian: what is that you say childe, quoth *Dorotea*, did you not heare one say that the Musitian is but a horseboy? Hee is no horseboy, quoth *Clara*, but a Lord of many townes; and he that hath such fast possession of my soule, as if hee himselfe will not reiect it, he shall neuer be depriued of the dominion thereof. *Dorotea* greatly wondred at the passionate wordes of the young gyrle, wherby it seemed to her that she far surpassed the discretion which so tender yeares did promise: and therefore she replied to her, saying, You speake so obscurely Lady *Clara*, as I cannot vnderstand you; expound your selfe more cleerly, and tel me what is that you say of soules, and townes, and of this Musitian, whose voyce hath altred you so much: but doe not say any thing to me now; for I would not lose, by listening to your discourse, the pleasure I take to heare him sing, for me thinkes he resumes his musicke with new verses, and in another tune: in a good houre, quoth *Donna Clara*; and then because shee her selfe would not heare him, she stopt her eares with her fingers; whereat *Dorotea* did also maruell: but being attentiue to the Musicke, she heard the Lackey prosecute his song in this maner.

O *Sweet and constant hope,*
That breakst impossibilities and bryars,

Digitized by Google

And firmely runne the scope
Which thou thy selfe dost forge to thy desires.
Be not dismaide to see
At euery step thy selfe, nigh death to bee.
Sluggards doe not deserue
The glorie of triumphs or victorie,
Good hap doth neuer serue
Those, which resist not Fortune manfully,
But weakely fall to ground:
And in soft sloth, their senses all confound.
That loue his glories hold
At a high rate, it reason is and iust:
No precious stones nor gold
May be at all compared with loues gust.
And tis a thing most cleare:
Nothing is worth esteeme that cost not deare.
An amarous perseuance
Obtaineth oftimes things impossible
And so though I resistance
Finde of my soules desires, in her sterne will;
I hope, time shall be giuen
When I from earth to mayreach her glorious heauen.

Heere the voyce ended, and *Donna Clara* sighes began; all which inflamed *Doroteas* desire to know the cause of so sweete a song, and so sad a plaint. And therefore she eftsoones required her, to tell her now what she was about to haue said before. Then *Clara* timerous, lest *Luscinda* should ouerheare her, imbracing *Doroteo* very neerely, laid her mouth so close to *Doroteas* eare, as she might speake securely without being vnderstood by any other, and said; he that sings is, deere Ladie, a Gentlemans sonne of the Kingdome of *Aragon*, whose father is Lord of two townes, and dwelled right before my fathers house at the Court, and although the windowes of our house were in Winter couered with seare cloth, and in Sommer with lattice, I know not

how it happened, but this Gentleman, who went then to the ſchole eſpied me, and whether it was at the Church, or elſe where, I am not certaine. Finally, he fell in loue with mee, and did acquite me with his affection from his owne windowes that were oppoſite to mine, with ſo many tokens and ſuch abundance of teares, as I moſt forceably beleeued, and alſo affected him, without knowing how much he loued me among the ſignes that he would make me one was to ioyne the one hand to the other, giuing me thereby to vnderſtand that he would marry me: and although I would be very glad that it might be ſo; yet as one alone, & without a mother, I knew not to whó I might cómunicate the affaire, & did therfore let it reſt without affording him any other fauour, vnleſſe it were when my father & his were gone abroad, by lifting vp the lattice or Searecloth only a little, & permitting him to be hold me; for vvhich fauor he vvould ſhew ſuch ſignes of ioy, as a man vvould deeme him to be reft of his vvits. The time of my fathers departure arriuing, & he hering of it, but not from me (for I could neuer tell it to him) he fell ſicke, as farre as I could vnderſtand for griefe, and therefore I could neuer ſee him all the day of our departure, to bid him farevvell at leaſt vvith mine eyes: but after me had trauelled tvvo daies iuſt as vve entred into an Inne in a village a daies iourney from hence, I ſaw him at the lodging doore, apparrelled ſo properly like a Lacky, as if I had not borne about me his purtrature in my ſoule, it had bene impoſſible to know him. I knew him, and wondred, and was glad withall; and he beheld me vnwitting my father, from whoſe preſence he ſtil hides himſelfe when he croſſes the waies before me as we trauell, or after we arriue at any Inne. And becauſe that I know what he is, and do conſider the paine hee takes by comming thus a foote for my ſake, and that with ſo great toyle, I die for ſorrow, and where he puts his feete I alſo put mine eyes. I know not vvith vvhat intention he comes, nor how he could poſſibly thus eſcape from his father, vvho loues him beyond meaſure, both becauſe he hath none other hayre, and be-

cause the young Gentleman also deserues it, as you vvill perceiue vvhen you see him: and I dare affirme besides, that all that vvhich he saies he composes *extempore*, and vvithout any studie; for I haue heard that he is a fine student, and a great Poet. And euery time that I see him, or do heare him sing, I start and tremble like an Aspen leafe, for feare that my father should know him, and thereby come to haue notice of our mutuall affections. I haue neuer spoken one word to him in my life, & yet I do neuertheleſſe loue him so much as without him I shall not be able to liue. And this is all, deere Ladie, that I am able to say vnto you of the Musician whose voyce hath pleased you so well, as by it alone you might coniecture, that he is not a horse-boy as you said, but rather a Lord of soules, and townes, as I affirmed.

Speake no more Ladie *Clara* (quoth *Dorotea*, at that season kissing her a thousand times:) speake no more I say, but haue patience vntill it be day-light; for I hope in God so to direct your affaires, as that they shall haue the fortunate successe, that so honest beginning deserue. Alas Madam, quoth *Donna Clara*, what end may be expected, seeing his father is so noble and rich, as he would scarce deeme me worthy to be his sonnes seruant, how much leſſe his spouse? and for mee to marry my selfe vnknowne to my father, I would not doe it for all the world. I desire no other thing, but that the young Gentleman would returne home againe, and leaue me alone; perhaps, by not seeing him, and the great distance of the way which we are to trauell, my paine which now so much presseth me, will be somewhat attained, although I dare say, that this remedie which now I haue imagined would auaile me but little: for I know not whence with the vengeance, or by what way this affection which I beare him got into me, seeing both I and he are so young as we be, for I beleeue we are much of an age, and I am not yet full sixteene; nor shall be as my father saies, vntil Michaelmas next. *Dorotea* could not contain her laughter, hearing how childishly *Donna Clara* spoke, to whom she said, Lady let vs re-

pose againe, and sleepe that little part of the night which remaines, and when God sends day light we will prosper, or my hands shall faile me: with this they held their peace, and all the Inne was drowned in profound silence; only the Inkeepers daughter, and *Maritornes* were not a sleepe, but knowing very wel *Don-Quixotes* peccant humor, and that he was armed and on horseback without the Inne keeping guard, both of them consorted together, and agreed to be someway merry with him, or at least to passe ouer some time, in hearing him speake rauingly.

It is therefore to be vnderstood that there was not in all the Inne any window, which looked out into the field, but one hole in a barne, out of which they were wont to cast their straw: to this hole came the two demy-damzels, and saw *Don-Quixote* mounted and leaning on his Iauelin, and breathing forth, euer and anone, so dolefull and deepe sighes as it seemed his soule was plucked away by euery one of them: and they noted besides how he said with a soft and amorous voice: *O my Ladie Dulcinea of Toboso*, the sonne of all beauty, the end and quintessence of discretion, the treasury of sweet countenance and carriage, the storehouse of honesty: and finally the *Idea* of all that which is profitable, modest, or delightfull in the world, and what might thy Ladiship be doing at this present? Hast thou perhaps thy mind now vpon thy captiue knight, that most wittingly exposeth himselfe to so many dangers for thy sake, giue vnto me tidings of her, O thou Luminary of the three faces, peraduenture thou dost now with enuy enough behold her, either walking through some gallery of her sumptuous Pallaces, or leaning on some bay window: and thinking how (sauing her honour and greatnesse) she shall mitigate, and asswage the torture which this mine oppressed hart indures for her loue, what glory she shall giue for my paines, what quiet to my cares, what life to my death, and what guerdon to my seruices. And thou soune, which art as I beleeue, by this time sadling of thy horses to get away earely, and go out to see my

Mistresse, I request thee as soone as thou shalt see her to salute her in my behalfe, but beware that when thou lookest on her, and dost greet her, that thou doe not kisse her on the face, for if thou dost I wil become more iealous of thee, then euer thou wast of the swift ingrate which made thee to run and sweat so much through the plaines of *Thessalia*, or the brinks of *Peneo*, for I haue forgotten through which of them thou ranneſt so iealous and inamored. To this point arriued *Don-Quixote*, whē the Inkeepers daughter began to cal him softly vnto her and say; Sir Knight approach a little hitherward if you please. At which voice *Don-Quixote* turned his head and saw by the light of the *Moone* which shined then very clearely, that hee was called too from the hole, which he accounted to be a faire window ful of yron barres, & those costly gylded with gold, well befitting so rich a Castle as he imagined that Inne to be, and presently in a moment he forged to his owne fancie, that once againe as shee had done before, the beautifull Damzell daughter to the Ladie of that Castle, ouercome by his loue, did returne to solicite him: and with this thought, because he would not shew himselfe discourteous and vngratefull, he turned *Rozinante* about, and came ouer to the hole, and then hauing beheld the two wench hee said: I take pitie on you beautiful Lady, that you haue placed your amorous thoughts in a place whence it is not possible to haue any correspondence answerable to the desert of your high worth and beauty, whereof you are in no sort to cōdemne this miserable knight errant, whom loue hath wholy disabled to surrender his will to be any other then to her, whom at the first sight he made absolute mistresse of his soule. Pardon me therefore good Ladie and retire your selfe to your chamber, and make me not, by any further insinuation of your desires, more vnthankfull and discourteous then I would be: and if through the loue that yon beare me, you find in me any other thing wherewethall I may serue and pleasure you, so that it be not loue it selfe, demaund it boldly, for I do sweare

vnto

Digitized by Google

vnto you by mine absence yet sweetest enemy, to bestow it vpon you incontinently, yea though it be a loke of *Medusas* haires, which are all of *Snakes*, or the very Sunne beames inclosed in a violl of glasse.

My Ladie needes none of those things Sir Knight answered *Maritornes*: what doth shee then want discreet Matron, quoth *Don-Quixote*? only one of your faire hands, said *Maritornes*, that therewithall shee may disburden her selfe of some part of those violent desires, which compelled her to come to this window, with so great danger of her honour; for if her Lord and Father knew of her comming, the least slice he would take of her should bee at the least an eare. I would faine once see that, quoth *Don-Quixote*, but I am sure he will beware how he doe it, if he haue no list to make the most disastrous end that euer father made in this world, for hauing laied violent hands on the delicate limmes of his amorous daughter. *Maritornes* verily perswaded her selfe, that *Don-Quixote* would giue vp his hand as he was requested; and hauing already contriued in her minde what shee would doe, descended with all hast from the hole, and going into the stable, fetched out *Sancho Pancas* his Asses halter, and returned againe with very great speede, iust as *Don-Quixote* (standing vp on *Rozinantes* saddle, that hee might the better reach the barred windowes, whereat he imagined the wounded Damzel remained) did, stretching vp his hand, say vnto her. Hold Lady the hand, or as I may better say, the executioner of earthly miscreants: hold I say that hand, which no other woman euer touched before, not euen shee her selfe that hath intyre possession of my whole body, nor doe I giue it to you, to the end you should kisse it; but that you may behold the contexture of the sinnewes, the knitting of the muscles, and the spaciosity and breadth of the veines, whereby you may collect how great ought the force of that arme to be whereunto such a hand is knit. We shall see that presently, quoth *Maritornes*, and then making a running knot on the halter, shee cast it on the wrest of his hand, and

then

then descending from the hole, shee tyed the other end of the halter very fast to the locke of the barne dore. *Don-Quixote* feeling the roughnesse of the halter about his wrest, said; It rather seemes that you grate my hand, then that you cherish it: but yet I pray you, not to handle it so roughly, seeing it is in no fault of the euill which my will doth vnto you: nor is it comly that you should reuenge or disburden the whole bulke of your indignation on so small a part: remember that those which loue well, doe not take so cruell reuenge. But no body gaue eare to these wordes of *Don-Quixote*: for as soone as *Maritornes* had tyed him, shee and the other almost burst for laughter, ranne away, and left him tyed in such manner, as it was impossible for him to loose himselfe.

He stood as we haue recounted, on *Rozinante* his saddle, hauing all his arme thrust in at the hole, and fastned by the wrest to the locke: and was in very great doubt and feare, that if *Rozinante* budged neuer so little on any side hee should fall and hang by the arme; and therefore he durst not once vse the least motion of the world, although he might well haue expected from *Rozinantes* patience, and mild spirit, that if he were suffered, he would stand still a whole age without stirring himselfe. In fine, *Don-Quixote* seeing himselfe tyed, and that the Ladies were departed, began straight to imagine that all that had beene done by way of inchauntment, as the last time, when in the very same Castle the inchanted *Moore* (the Carrier) had so fairely belaboured him: and then to himselfe did he execrate his own want of discretion & discourse, seeing that hauing escaped out of that castle so euill dight the first time, he would after aduenture to enter into it the second: for it was generally obserued by Knights errant, that when they had once tried an aduenture, & could not finish it, it was a token that it was not reserued for them, but for some other; and therefore would neuer proue it againe. Yet for all this he drew forward his arme, to see if he might deliuer himselfe; but he was so well bound, as all his

indeauours proued vaine. It is true that he drew it very warily, leaſt *Rozinante* ſhould ſtirre: and although hee would faine haue ſet, and ſetled himſelfe in the ſaddle, yet could he doe no other but ſtand, or leaue the arme behinde. There was many a wiſh for *Amadis* his ſword, againſt which no inchauntment whatſoeuer could preuaile: there ſucceeded the malediction of his fates; there the exaggerating of the want that the world ſhould haue of his preſence, all the while hee aboade inchaunted (as he infallibly beleeued he was) in that place. There he a new remembred his beloued Lady *Dulcinea of Toboſo*: There did hee call oft enough on his good Squire *Sancho Panca*, who intombed in the bowels of ſleep, and ſtretched along on the pannell of his Aſſe, did dreame, at that inſtant, but little of the mother that bore him. There he inuoked the wiſemen *Lirgandeo* and *Alquife*, to helpe him: and finally, the morning did alſo there ouertake him, ſo full of deſpaire and confuſion, as hee roared like a Bull; for hee had no hope that by day light any cure could bee found for his care, which he deemed would be euerlaſting, becauſe he fully accompted himſelfe inchaunted; and was the more induced to thinke ſo, becauſe he ſaw that *Rozinante* did not moue little nor much, and therefore he ſuppoſed, that both he and his horſe ſhould abide in that ſtate without eating, drinking, or ſleeping, vntill that either the malignant influence of the Starres were paſſed, or ſome greater inchaunter had diſenchaunted him.

But he deceiued himſelfe much in his beleefe; for ſcarce did the day begin to peepe, when there arriued foure horſemen to the Inne dore very well appointed, and hauing their ſnaphaunces hanging at the pomell of their ſaddles. They called at the Inne dore (which yet ſtood ſhut) and knocked very hard; which being perceiued by *Don-Quixote* from the place where he ſtood Centinel, he ſaid with a very lowd, and arrogant voice. Knights or Squires, or whatſoeuer elſe yee be, you are not to knocke any more at the gates of that Caſtle, ſeeing it is euident, that at ſuch houres as this, either

they which are within, doe repose them, or else are not wont to open Fortresses vntill *Phœbus* hath spread his beames ouer the earth: therefore stand backe, and expect till it bee cleare day, and then we will see whether it be iust or no that they open their gates vnto you. What a Diuell, what Castle or Fortresse is this, quoth one of them, that it should bind vs to vse all those circumstances? if thou beest the Inkeeper, command that the dore bee opened; for we are trauailers, that will tarry no longer then to bait our horses, and away, for we ride in post haste. Doth it seeme to you, Gentlemen, quoth *Don-Quixote*, that I looke like an Inkeeper? I know not what thou lookest like, answered the other, but well I know that thou speakest madly, in calling this Inne a Castle. It is a Castle, replyed *Don-Quixote*, yea and that one of the best in this Prouince, and it hath people within it which haue had a Scepter in hand, and a Crowne on their head: It were better said quite contrary, replyed the trauailer, the Scepter on the head, and the Crowne in the hand. But perhaps (and so it may well be) there is some company of players within, who doe very vsually hold the Scepters, and weare those crownes whereof thou talkest: for in such a paultry Inne as this is, and where I heare so little noise, I cannot beleeue any one to be lodged worthy to weare a crowne, or beare a scepter. Thou knowest but little of the world, replyed *Don-Quixote*, seeing thou dost so much ignore the chances that are wont to befall in Chiualry. The fellowes of him that entertained this prolixe dialogue with *Don-Quixote*, waxed weary to heare them speake idlely so long together, and therefore turned againe to knocke with great fury at the dore; and that in such sort, as they not only waked the Inkeeper, but also all the guests: and so he arose to demaund their pleasure.

In the meane while it hapned, that one of the horses whereon they rode drew neare to smell *Rozinante*, that melancholy and sadly with his eares cast downe, did sustayne without mouing his outstretched Lord: and he being indeed

of

of flesh and bloud, although hee resembled a blocke of wood, could not choose but feele it, and turne to smell him againe, who had thus come to cherish and entertaine him: and scarce had he stirred but a thought from thence, when *Don-Quixotes* feete, that were ioyned, slipt asunder, and tumbling from the saddle, had doubtlesly fallen to the ground, had he not remayned hanging by the arme: a thing that caused him to indure so much paine, as he verily beleeued that either his wrest was a cutting, or his arme a tearing off from his body: and he hung so neare to the ground, as he touched it with the tops of his toes; all which turned to his preiudice; for hauing felt the little which he wanted to the setting of his feete wholly on the earth, hee laboured and drew all that he might to reach it; much like vnto those that get the *strapado*, with the condition to touch or not to touch; who are themselues a cause to increase their owne torture, by the earnestnesse wherewith they stretch themselues; deceiued by the hope they haue to touch the ground if they can stretch themselues but a little further.

CHAP. XVII.

Wherein are prosecuted the wonderfull aduentures of the Inne.

SO many were the outcryes which *Don-Quixote* made, as the Inkeeper opened the dore very hastily and affrighted, to see who it was that so roared: and those that stoode without did also the same. *Maritornes*, whom the cryes had also awaked, imagining streight what it might be, went into the barne, and vnperceiued of any, loosed the halter that sustained *Don-Quixote*, and forthwith hee fell to the ground in the presence of the Inkeeper and the trauailers; who comming towardes him,

demaunded the occasion why he did so vnmeasurably roare? he without making any answere tooke off the halter from his wrest, and getting vp, he leaped vpon *Rozinante*, imbraced his target, set his launce into the wrest, and wheeling about a good part of the field, returned with a halfe gallop, saying: whosoeuer shall dare to affirme that I haue not been with iust title inchaunted: if my Lady the Princesse *Micomicona* will giue me leaue to doe it, I say that he lyes, and I doe presently challenge him to single combat. The new trauailers were amazed at *Don-Quixotes* wordes, but the Host remoued that wonder by informing them what hee was, and that they should make no account of his words, for the man was bereft of his wits: then they demanded of the Inkeeper, if there had arriued to his Inne, a young stripling of some fifteene years old or thereabouts, apparelled like a horseboy, and hauing such and such markes and tokens: and then gaue the very signes of *Donna Claras* louer. The Host made answere that there were so many people in his Inne as hee had taken no notice of him for whom they demaunded. But one of them hauing seene the Coach wherein the Iudge came, said: questionlesly he must be here, for this is the Coach that they say, he hath followed: let therefore one of vs remayne at the dore, and the rest enter to seeke him out. Yea and it will not be from the purpose, if one of vs ride about without the Inne, lest he should make an escape from vs by the wals of the yard. We will doe so, said another of them, and thus two of them entred into the house, one staied at the dore, and the other did compasse the Inne about. The Inkeeper beheld all, but could neuer iudge aright the reason why they vsed all this diligence, although he easily beleeued that they sought for the youth whose marks they had told vnto him.

By this the day was growen cleere, and as well by reason thereof, as through the outcries of *Don-Quixote*, all the strangers were awake, and did get vp, especially both the Ladies *Clara* and *Dorotea*: for the one through feare to haue her louer so neere, & the other with desire to see him, could

sleepe but very little all that night. *Don-Quixote* perceiuing that none of the foure trauellers made any account of him, or answered his challenge, was ready to burst with wrath and despite: and if he could any wise haue found that it was tollerated by the statutes of Chiualry, that a Knight errant might haue lawfully vndertaken any enterprise, hauing plight his word and faith, not to attempt any, vntill he had finished that which he had first promised, he would haue assailed them all, and made them maugre their teeth to haue answered him. But because it seemed to him not so expedient nor honourable, to begin any new aduenture vntill he had installed *Micomicona* in her Kingdome, he was forced to be quiet, expecting to see whereunto the indeauours and diligence of those foure trauellers tended: the one whereof found out the youth that lay searched, asleepe by another Lackey, little dreaming that any bodie did looke for him; and much lesse would finde him out thus. The man drew him by the arme, and said, truly *Don Lewis*, the habite that you weare answers very well your calling, and the bedde whereon you lie, the care and tenderneſſe wherewith your mother did nurse you: the youth hereat rub'd his drowsie eyes, and beheld very leisurely him that did hold him fast, and knew him forthwith to be one of his fathers seruants; wherat he was so amazed as hee could not speake a word for a great while: and the Seruingman continuing his speech, said, Here is nothing else to be done, Lord *Lewes*, but that you be patient and depart againe with vs towards home, if you be not pleased to haue your father and my Lord depart out of this world to the other, for no lesse may be expected from the woe wherein he rests for your absence. Why how did my father know, said *Don Lewis*, that I came this way, and in this habite? A Student, answered the other, to whom you bewrayed your intention, did discouer it, moued through the compassion he tooke to heare your fathers lamentations when he found you missing: & so he dispatcht foure of his men in your search, and we are al at your seruice, more

ioyfull then may be imagined, for the good dispatch wherewithall we shall returne, and carie you to his sight, which do loue you so much. That shall be as I please, or heauen will dispose, said *Don Lewis*. What would you please, or what should heauen dispose of other then that you agree to returne; for certainly you shall not doe the contrary, nor is it possible you should? All these reasons that passed betweene them both, did the Lackey that lay by *Don Lewis* here, and arising from thence, he went and tolde all that passed to *Don Fernando*, *Cardenio*, and all the rest that were gotten vp. To whom he tolde how the man gaue the title of *Don* to the boy, and recounted the speech he vsed, and how hee would haue him returne to his fathers house: which the youth refused to doe. Whereupon, and knowing already what a good voyce the heauens had giuen him, they greatly desired to be more particularly informed what he was: and intended also to helpe him, if any violence were offered vnto him, and therefore went vnto the place where he was, and stood contending with his seruant.

Dorotea issued by this out of her chamber, and in her companie *Donna Clara*, all perplexed. *Dorotea* calling *Cardenio* aside, tolde vnto him succinctly all the historie of the Musitian, and *Donna Clara*: and he rehearsed to her againe all that passed of the Seruingmens arriuall that came in his pursuit, which he did not speake so low, but that *Donna Clara* ouerheard him, whereat she indured such alteration, as she had fallen to the ground, if *Dorotea* running towards her, had not held her vp. *Cardenio* intreated *Dorotea* to returne with the other to her chamber, and he would endeauour to bring the matter to some good passe, which they presently performed. The foure that were come in *Don Lewis* his search were by this all of them entred into the Inne, and had compassed him about, perswading him that he would, cutting off all delayes, returne to comfort his father. He answered that he could not doe it in any sort, vntill he had finished an aduenture, which imported him no lesse then his life, his ho-

nour, and his ſoule. The ſeruants vrged him then ſaying, that they would in no ſort goe backe without him, and therefore would carrie him home, whether he would or no. That ſhall not you doe, quoth *Don Lewis*, if it be not that you carrie me home dead; and in this ſeaſon all the other Gentlemen were come in to the contention, but chiefly *Cardenio*, *Don Fernando* and his *Comaradas*, the Iudge, the Curate, and the Barber, and *Don-Quixote*; for now it ſeemed to him needleſſe to guard the Caſtle any more. *Cardenio* who knew already the Hiſtory of the youth, demaunded of thoſe that would carie him away, what reaſon did moue them to ſeeke to take that ladde away againſt his will? We are moued vnto it, anſwered one of them by this reaſon that we ſhall thereby ſaue his fathers life, who for the abſence of this Gentleman is in danger to looſe it. To this ſaid *Don Lewis*, it is to no end to make relation of mine affaires here. I am free, and will returne if I pleaſe, and if not, no one ſhall conſtraine me to doe it perforce. Reaſon ſhall conſtraine you good Sir to doe it, quoth the man, and when that cannot preuaile with you, it ſhall with vs, to put that in execution for which we be come, and which we are bound to do. Let vs know this affaire from the beginning; ſaid the Iudge then to thoſe men: Sir, quoth one of them, who knew him very well, as his Maſters next neighbour: Maſter Iuſtice doth not your worſhip know this Gentleman, who is your neighbours ſonne, and hath abſented himſelfe from his fathers houſe in an habite ſo vndecent and diſcrepant from his calling, as you may perceiue? The Iudge beheld him then ſomewhat more attentiuely, knew him, and imbracing of him, ſaid, What toyes are theſe *Don Lewis*, or what cauſe hath beene of efficacie ſufficient to moue you to come away in this manner and attire, which anſwers your calling ſo ill? The teares ſtucke then in the young Gentlemans eyes, and hee could not anſwere a word to the Iudge, who bad the foure Seruingmen appeaſe themſelues, for all things ſhould be done to their ſatisfaction, and then taking *Don Lewis* apart, he intreated him to tell

him

him the occasion of that his departure.

And whilest hee made this and other demaunds to the Gentleman, they heard a great noise at the Inne doore; the cause whereof was, that two guests, which had line there that night, seeing all the people busied to learne the cause of the foure horsmens comming, had thought to haue made an escape scot-free, without defraying their expenses: but the Inkeeper who attended his owne affaires with more diligence then other mens did stay them at their going forth, and demaunded his money, vpbraiding their dishonest resolution with such wordes, as moued them to returne him an answere with their fists, which they did so roundly as the poore Host was compelled to raise the crie, and demaund succour. The Hostesse and her daughter could see no man so free from occupation as *Don-Quixote*, to whom the daughter said, I request you, Sir Knight, by the vertue that God hath giuen you to succour my poore father, whom two hadde men are grinding like corne. To this *Don-Quixote* answered very leisurely, and with great grauity; Beautifull damzell, your petition cannot preuaile at this time, for as much as I am hindred from vndertaking any other aduenture, vntill I haue finished one wherein my promise hath ingaged me; and all that I can now doe in your seruice, is, that which I shall say now vnto you: run vnto your father, and bid him continue and maintaine his conflict manfully, as the best that he may, vntill I demaund license of the Princesse *Micomicona* to helpe him out of his distresse; for if she will giue it vnto me, you may make ful account that hee is deliuered. Sinner that I am (quoth *Maritornes*, who was by and heard what he said) before you shall be able to obtaine that license, of which you speake, my Master will be departed to the other world. Worke you so Lady, quoth *Don-Quixote*, that I may haue the license; for so that I may haue it, it will make no great matter, whether hee be in the other world or no: for euen from thence would I bring him backe againe, in despite of the other world it selfe, if it durst contra-

dict me: or at leaſt wiſe I will take ſuch a reuenge of thoſe that doe ſend him to the other world, as you ſhall remaine more then meanely contented: and ſo without replying any more, he went, and fell on his knees before *Dorotea*, demanding of her in Knightly and errant phraſes, that ſhe would deigne to licenſe him to goe and ſuccour the Conſtable of that Caſtle, who was then plunged in a deepe diſtreſſe: The Princeſſe did graunt him leaue very willingly; and he preſently buckling on his Target, & laying hand on his ſword, ranne to the Inne dore, where yet the two gueſts ſtood hanſomly tugging the Inkeeper. But as ſoone as he arriued, he ſtopt & ſtood ſtill, although *Maritornes* and the Hoſteſſe demaunded of him twiſe or thriſe the cauſe of his reſtineſſe in not areſting her Lord and husband. I ſtay, quoth *Don-Quixote*, becauſe according to the lawes of armes, it is not permitted to me to lay hand to my ſword againſt Squire-like men that are not dubbed Knights. But call to me heere my Squire *Sancho*, for this defence and reuenge concernes him, as his duety. This paſſed at the Inne dore, where fiſts and blowes were interchangeably giuen and taken in the beſt ſort, although to the Inkeepers coſt; and to the rage and griefe of *Maritornes*, the Hoſteſſe and her daughter, who were like to runne wood, beholding *Don-Quixotes* cowardiſe, and the miſchiefe their Maſter, husband, and father endured. But here let vs leaue them; for there ſhall not want one to ſuccour him, or if not let him ſuffer: and all thoſe that wittingly vndertake things beyond their power and force: and let vs turne backeward to heare that which *Don-Lewis* anſwered the Iudge, whom we left ſomewhat apart with him, demaunding the cauſe of his comming a foot, and and in ſo baſe array: to which the youth wringing him hard by the hands, as an argument that ſome extraordinary griefe pinched his heart, and ſhedding many teares, anſwered in this manner.

I know not what elſe I may tell you deere Sir, but that from the inſtant that heauen made vs neighbours, and that I

saw *Donna Clara* your daughter and my Ladie, I made her commaundresse of my will; and if yours, my true Lord and Father, doe not hinder it, she shall be my spouse this very day. For her sake haue I abandoned my fathers house, and for her I did on this attire, to follow her whereſoeuer she went, as the arrow doth the marke, or the marriner the North starre: she is, as yet, no further acquainted with my desires, then as much as she might vnderstand some times, by the teares which she saw mine eyes distill a farre off. Now Sir, you know the riches and nobilitie of my discent, and how I am my fathers sole heire, and if it seeme vnto you that these be conditiõs, wherupon you may venture to make me throughly happy, accept of me presently for your sonne in law: for if my father, borne away by others his designes shall not like so well of this good which I haue sought out for my selfe, yet time hath more force to vndoe, and change the affaires, then mens wils: Heere the amorous Gentleman held his peace, and the Iudge remained astonied as well at the grace and discretion wherewith *Don Lewis* had discouered his affections vnto him, as also to see himselfe in such a passe, that as he knew not what course he might best take in so sadaine, and vnexpected a matter: and therefore he answered no other thing at that time, but onely badde him to settle his minde, and incertaine the time with his seruants, and deale with them, to expect that day, because he might haue leasure to consider what might be most conuenient for all. *Don Lewis* did kisse his hands perforce, and did bathe them with teares, a thing able to moue a heart of Marble, and much more the Iudges who (as a wise man) did presently perceiue, how beneficiall and honourable was that preferment for his daughter: although hee could haue wished, if it had beene possible to effect it with the consent of *Don Lewis* his father, who he knew did purpose to haue his sonne made a Noble man of title.

By this time the Inkeeper and his guests had agreed, hauing paid him all that they ought more by *Don-Quixotes*

Digitized by Google

perswasions, and good reasons, then by any menaces. And *Don Lewes* his seruants expected the end of the Iudges discourse, and his resolution: when the diuel (who never sleeps) would haue it, at that very time entred into the Inne, the Barber from whom *Don Quixote* tooke away the helmet of *Mambrino*, & *Sancho Pancas* the furniture of the Asse, whereof he made an exchange for his owne: which Barber leading his beast to the stable, saw *Sancho Pancas*, who was mending some part of the pannell, and as soone as he had eyed him, he knew him, and presently set vpon *Sancho* saying; Sir, These haue I found you heere with all the furniture, whereof you robbed mee? *Sancho* that saw himselfe thus assaulted vnexpectedly, and had heard the disgracefull termes which the other vsed, laying fast hold on the pannell with the one hand, gaue the Barber such a buffet with the other, as he bathed all his teeth in bloud: but yet for all that the Barber held fast his gripe of the pannell, and therewithall cried out so loud, as all those that were in the house came to the noyse, and conflict, and he said, I call for the king and Iustice, for this theefe and robber by the high waies goeth about to kill me, because I seeke to recouer mine owne goods, thou lyest quoth *Sancho*, for I am not a robber by the high waies; for my Lord *Don Quixote* wonne those spoiles in a good warre. By this time *Don Quixote* himself was come thither, not a little proud to see how well his Squire defended himselfe, and offended his aduersary, and therefore hee accounted him from thenceforth to be a man of valour, and purposed in his mind to dubbe him Knight, on the first occasion that should be offered, because he thought that the order of Knighthood would be well imployed by him.

Among other things that the Barber said in the discourse of his contention, this was one: Sirs, this pannell is as certainly mine as the death which I owe vnto God, and I know it as well as if I had bred it, & there is my Asse in the stable, who will not permit me to tell a lie: or otherwise do but trie the pannell on him, and if it fit him not iustly, I am content

sent to remaine infamous: and I can say more, that the very day wherein they tooke my pannell from mee, they robbed mee likewise of a neerer brazen Basen, which was neuer vsed, and cost mee a crowne. Heere *Don-Quixote* could no longer containe himselfe from speaking, and so thrusting himselfe betweene them two, and putting them asunder, and causing the pannell to be laid publikely on the ground, vntill the truth were decided; he said To the end that you may perceiue the cleere and manifest error, wherein this good Squire liues, see how he cals that a basen, which is, was, and shall be the helmet of *Mambrino*, which I tooke away perforce from him in faire warre, and made my selfe Lord therof, in a lawfull and warlike manner. About the pannell I will not contend, for that which I can say therein is, that my Squire *Sancho* demaunded leaue of me, to take away the furniture of this vanquished cowards horse, that he might adorne his owne withall: I gaue him authoritie to doe it, and he tooke them: and for his conuerting thereof from a horses furniture into a pannell, I can giue none other reason then the ordinary, one, to wit, that such transformations are vsually seene in the successes of chiualry: for confirmation whereof, friend *Sancho*, run speedily, and bring me out the helmet which this good man auoucheth to be a basen: by my faith Sir, quoth *Sancho*, if we haue no better proofe of our intention, then that which you say, I say that the helmet of *Mambrino* is as arrant a basen as this good mans furniture is a pannell: Doe what I commaund, said *Don-Quixote*; I cannot beleeue that all the things in this Castle will be guided by enchantment. *Sancho* went for the basen, & brought it, & as soone as *Don-Quixote* saw it, he tooke it in his hands and said: See Sirs with what face can this impudent Squire affirme, that this is a basen, and not the helmet that I haue mentioned: and I sweare to you all by the order of Knighthood which I professe, that this is the very same helmet which I wan from him, without hauing added or taken any thing from it. That it is questionlesse

leſſe quoth *Sancho*, for ſince the time that my Lord wonne it vntill now, he neuer fought but one battell with it, when he deliuered the vnlucky chained men; And but for this *Baſon-Helmet*, he had not eſcaped ſo free as hee did, ſo thicke a ſhower of ſtones rained all the time of that conflict.

CHAP. XVIII.

Wherein are decided the controuerſies of the Helmet of Mambrinus, *and of the pannell, with other ſtrange and moſt true aduentures.*

GOod Sirs quoth the Barber, what do you thinke of that which is affirmed by theſe Gentlemen, who yet contend that this is not a baſen but a helmet? He that ſhall ſay the contrary, quoth *Don-Quixote*, I will make him know that he lies, if he be a Knight; and if he be but a Squire, that he lies and lies againe a thouſand times. Our Barber, who was alſo preſent as one that knew *Don-Quixotes* humour very wel, would fortifie his folly, and make the ieſt paſſe yet a little farther, to the end that they all might laugh: and therefore ſpeaking to the other Barber, he ſaid. Sir Barber, or what elſe you pleaſe, know that I am alſo of your occupation, and haue had my writ of examination and approbation in that trade more then theſe thirty yeares, and am one that knowes very well all the inſtruments of Barbery whatſoeuer; I and haue beene beſides in my youthfull daies a ſouldier, and doe therefore likeſe know what is a helmet, and what a morrion, and what a cloſe Caſtle, and other things touching warfare, I meane all the kinde of armes that a ſouldier ought to haue: and therefore I ſay, (ſtill ſubmitting my ſelfe to the better opinion) that this peece, which is laid heere before vs, and which this

good Knight holdes in his hand, not onely is not a Barbars baſen, but alſo is ſo farre from being one, as is white from blacke, or veritie from vntruth, yet doe I withall affirme, that although it is an helmet, yet it is not a compleate helmet. No truly, quoth *Don-Quixote*, for it wants the halfe, to wit, the neather part, and the beauer. It is very true, quoth the *Curate*, who very well vnderſtood his friend the Barber his intention; and the ſame did *Cardenio*, *Don Fernando*, and his fellowes confirme: yea and euen the Iudge himſelfe, had not *Don Lewis* his affaire perplexed his thoughts, would for his part haue holpen the jeſt well forward. But the earneſtneſſe of that affaire held his minde ſo buſied, as he litle or nothing attended the paſtime. Lord haue mercy vpon me, quoth the other Barber, then halfe beſide himſelfe, and is it poſſible that ſo many Honourable men ſhould ſay that this is no baſon, but a helmet? this is a thing able to ſtrike admiration into a whole Vniuerſitie, how diſcreet ſoeuer it were: tis enough if this baſen muſt needes be a helmet, the pannell muſt alſo be a horſes furniture, as this Gentleman ſayes. To mee it ſeemes a pannell, quoth *Don-Quixote*, but as I haue ſaid, I will not meddle with it, nor determine whether it be a pannell or the cappariſon of a horſe. Therein is nothing elſe to be done, ſaid the Curate, but that Sir *Don-Quixote* ſay it once; for in theſe matters of Chiualrie, all theſe Noblemen, and my ſelfe, doe giue vnto him the pricke, and the price. I ſweare vnto you by Ioue good Sirs, quoth *Don-Quixote*, that ſo many and ſo ſtrange are the things which haue befallen me in this Caſtle, theſe two times that I haue lodged therein, as I dare auouch nothing affirmatiuely of any thing that ſhall be demaunded of me concerning the things contayned in it, for I doe infallibly imagine, that all the aduentures which paſſe in it, are guided by inchauntment: the firſt time I was very much vexed by an inchaunted *Moore*, that is in it: and *Sancho* himſelfe ſped not very well with the *Moores* followers: and yeſternight I ſtood hanging almoſt two houres ſpace by this

arme,

arme, without knowing how, or how that disgrace befell me, so that for me to medle now in so confused and difficult a matter, as to deliuer mine opinion, were to passe a rash iudgement: So that which they say, that this is a bason, and no helmet, I haue already made answere; but whether this be a pannell, or furniture, I dare pronounce no definitiue sentence, but only remit it to your discreet opinions: perhaps because you are not dubbed Knights as I am, the inchauntments of this place, will haue no power ouer you, and your vnderstandings shall be free, and able to iudge of the things in this Castle really, and truly, and not as they seeme vnto me. Doubtlesse, quoth *Don Fernando*, *Don-Quixote* saies very well, that the definition of this case belongs vnto vs; and therefore, and because we may proceede in it vpon the better and more solid grounds, I will secretly take the suffrages of all those Gentlemen, and afterwards make a cleare and full relation of what shall come of them.

To those that knew *Don-Quixote* his humour, this was a matter of marualous laughter, and sport; but to such as were not acquainted therewithall, it seemed the greatest folly of the world, especially to *Don Lewis*, and his foure seruants, & with other three passengers that had arriued by chance to the Inne, and seemed to be troupers of the holy Brotherhood, as indeede they were: but he that was most of all beside himselfe for wrath, was the Barber, whose bason they had transformed before his owne face into the helmet of *Mambrino*, and whose pannell he made full account should likewise be turned into the rich furniture, and equippage of a great horse. All of them laughed hartily to see *Don Fernando* goe vp and downe taking the suffrages of this man and that, and rounding euery one of them in the eare, that they might declare in secret whether that was a pannell or a furniture, for which such deadly contention had passed. After that hee had taken the suffrages of so many as knew *Don-Quixote*, he said very lowdly, The truth is good fellow that I grow weary of demaunding so many opinions;

for

for I can no sooner demaund of any man what I desire to know, but they forthwith answere me, how it is meere madnesse to affirme, that this is the pannell of an Asse, but rather the furniture of a Horse, yea and of a chiefe horse of seruice; and therefore you must haue patience: for in despite both of you and of your Asse, and notwithstanding your weake allegations and worse prooues, it is, and will continue, the furniture of a great horse. Let me neuer inioy a place in heauen, quoth the Barber, if you all be not deceiued; and so may my soule appeare before God, as it appeares to mee to be a pannell, and no horse furniture: but the law carries it away, and so fare well it, and yet surely I am not drunke; for vnlesse it be by sinning, my fast hath not beene broken this day.

The follies which the Barber vttered, stirred no lesse laughter among them, then did the rorings of *Don-Quixote*, who then spoke in this manner: here is now no more to be done, but that euery man take vp his owne goods, and to whom God hath giuen them, let S. *Peter* giue his blessing. Then said one of the foure Seruingmen, if this were not a jest premeditated, and made of purpose, I could not perswade my selfe that men of so good vnderstanding as al these are, or seeme to be, should dare to say, and affirme, that this is not a basen, nor that a pannell: but seeing that they auerre it, so constantly I haue cause to suspect, that it cannot bee without mistery to affirme a thing so contrary to that which very truth it selfe and experience demonstrate vnto vs, for I doe vow (and saying so he rapt out a round oth or two) that as many as are in the world, should neuer make me beleeue that this is no basen, nor that no panuell of a hee Asse: it might as well bee of a shee Asse, quoth the *Curate*: that comes all but to one, replyed the other; for the question consists not therein, but whether it be a pannell or not, as you doe auouch? Then one of the Troupers of the holy Brotherhood (who had listned to their disputation, and was growne full of choler to heare such an errour maintayned, said:

Digitized by Google

ſaid: it is as very a pannell as my father is my father; and hee that hath ſaid, or ſhall ſay, the contrary is, I beleeue, turned into a grape. Thou lyeſt like a clownish knaue, quoth *Don-Quixote*, and lifting vp his *Iauelin*, which he alwayes held in his hand, he diſcharged ſuch a blow at the Troupers pate, as if hee had not auoided, it would haue throwen him to the ground: the *Iauelin* was broken by the force of the fall into ſplinters, and the other Troupers, ſeeing their fellow ſo miſvſed, cryed out for help, and aſſiſtance for that holy Brotherhood: the Inkeeper who alſo was one of the ſame fraternity, ranne in for his rod of Iuſtice and his ſword, and then ſtood by his fellowes. *Don Lewis* his foure ſeruants compaſſed him about, leſt he ſhould attempt to eſcape whilſt the tumult indured. The Barber ſeeing all the houſe turned vpſide downe, laid hand againe vpon his pannell, and the ſame did *Sancho*.

Don-Quixote ſet hand to his ſword, and aſſaulted the Troupers: *Don Lewis* cryed to his Seruingmen, that they ſhould leaue him, and goe to helpe *Don-Quixote*, *Cardenio*, and *Don Fernando*; for all of them tooke *Don-Quixotes* part. The Curate cryed out, the Hoſteſſe ſhriked, her daughters ſqueaked, *Maritornes* howled, *Donotea* ſtood confuſed, *Luſcinda* amazed, and *Donna Clara* diſmayed: the Barber battered *Sancho*, and *Sancho* pounded him againe. *Don Lewis*, on whome one of his Seruingmen had preſumed to lay hands, and hold him by the arme, gaue him ſuch a paſh on the mouth, as hee broke his teeth, and then the Iudge tooke him into his owne protection. *Don Fernando* had gotten one of the Troupers vnder his feete, whom he ſtoode belabouring at his pleaſure. The Inkeeper renewed his outcry, and reinforced his voice, demaunding aide for the holy Brotherhood: ſo that all the Inne ſeemed nothing elſe but plaints, cryes, ſhrikes, confuſions, feares, dreades, diſgraces, ſlaſhes, buffets, blowes, ſpurnings, and effuſion of bloud.

In the midſt of this *Chaos*, and Labyrinth of things, *Don-Quixote* beganne to imagine, and fancie to himſelfe, that he

was at that very time plunged vp to the eares in the discord, and conflict of King *Agrumante* his camp; and therefore he said with a voice that made all the Inne to tremble. All of you hold your hands, all of you put vp your swords, all of you be quiet, and listen to me, if any of you desire to continue aliue: That great and monstrous voice made them all stand still; thereupon he thus proceeded: did not I tell you, Sirs, that this Castle was inchaunted, and that some legion of Diuels did inhabit it? in confirmation whereof I would haue you but to note with your owne eyes, how the very discord of King *Agrumants* camp is transferred hither, and passed euer among vs: looke how there they fight for the sword, here for the horse, yonder for the Eagle, beyond that for the helmet; and all of vs fight, and none of vs know for what. Come therefore you Master *Iustice*, and you Master *Curate*, and let the one represent King *Agrimant*, and the other King *Sobrino*, and make peace and attonement among vs: for I sweare by almighty Ione, that it is great wrong and pity, that so many Noblemen as we are here, should be slaine for so slight causes.

The troupers which did not vnderstand *Don-Quixotes* manner of speech, and saw themselues very ill handled by *Don Fernando* and *Cardenio*, would in no wise be pacified; but the Barber was content, by reason that in the conflict both his beard and his pannell had beene torne in pieces. *Sancho* to his Masters voyce was quickly obedient, as became a dutifull seruant. *Don Lewis* his foote Seruingmen stood also quiet, seeing how little was gained in being other: only the Iakeeper persisted as before, affirming that punishment was due vnto the insolencies of that mad man, who euery foote confounded & disquieted his Inne. Finally, the rumor was pacified for that time; the pannell remained for a horse furniture vntill the day of iudgment; the bason for a helmet, and the Inne for a Castle in *Don-Quixotes* imagination. All the broiles being now appeased, and all men accorded by the Iudges and Curates perswasions. Then began *Don Lewis*

his

his ſeruants againe to vrge him to depart with them, and whileſt he and they debated the matter together, the Iudge communicated the whole to *Don Fernando*, *Cardenio*, and the Curate deſiring to know their opinions concerning that affaire, and telling them all that *Don Lewis* had ſaid vnto him; whereupon they agreed that *Don Fernando* ſhould tell the Seruingmen what he himſelfe was, and how it was his pleaſure that *Don Lewis* ſhould goe with him to *Andaluzia*, where he ſhould be cheriſhed, and accounted of by the Marqueſſe his brother, according vnto his calling and deſerts: for he knew well *Don Lewis* his reſolution to be ſuch as he would not returne into his fathers preſence at that time, although they tore him into pieces. *Don Fernando* his quality and *Don Lewis* his intention being vnderſtood by the foure, they agreed among themſelues that three of them ſhould goe backe, to beare the tidings of all that had paſſed to his father, and the other ſhould abide there to attend on him, and neuer to leaue him vntill they returned to fetch him home, or knew what elſe his father would commaund. And in this ſort was that monſtrous bulke of diuiſion and contention, reduced to ſome forme by the authority of *Agramant*, and the wiſe dome of King *Sobrino*.

But the enemy of concord, and the aduerſary of peace, finding his proiects to be thus illuded, and contemned, and ſeeing the little fruite he had gotten by ſetting them all by the eares, reſoluted once againe to trie his wits, and ſtirre vp new diſcords and troubles, which befell in this manner: The Troupers were quieted, hauing vnderſtood the calling of thoſe with whom they had contended, and retyred themſelues from the braule, knowing that howſoeuer the cauſe ſucceeded they themſelues ſhould haue ſtill the worſt end o' the ſtaffe: but one of them, who was the very ſame whom *Don Fernando* had buffeted ſo well, remembred how among many other warrants which hee had to apprehend malefactors, he had one for *Don Quixote*, whom the *Holy brotherhood* had commaunded to be apprehended for freeing of the

Gally-slaues(a disaster which *Sancho* had before hand with very great reason feared.) As soone as he remembred it, hee would needes trie whether the signes that were giuen him of *Don Quixote* did agree with his person, and so taking out of his bosome a scroule of parchment, hee presently found out that which he looked for, and reading it a while very leisurely, as one that was himselfe no great Clerke, at euery other word he looked on *Don-Quixote*, and confronted the markes of his warrant with those of *Don-Quixotes* face, and found that he was infallibly the man that was therein mentioned: and scarce was he perswaded that it was hee, when foulding vp his parchment, and holding the warrant in his left hand, he laid holde on *Don-Quixotes* choller with the right so strongly, as he could hardly breath: and cried out aloude, saying, Aide for the *Holy Brotherhood*; and that you may perceiue how I am in good earneſt, reade that warrant, wherein you shall finde that this robber by the high way side is to be apprehended. The Curate tooke the warrant, and perceiued very well that the Trouper said true, and that the markes agreed very neere with *Don-Quixotes*; who seeing himselfe so abused by that base rascall, as he accounted him, his choler being mounted to her height, and all the bones of his body crashing for wrath, he seised as well as he could, with both his hands on the Troupers throate, and that in such sort, as if he had not beene speedily succoured by his fellowes, he had there left his life ere *Don-Quixote* would haue abandoned his gripe.

The Inkeeper who of force was to assist his fellow in office, forthwith repayred vnto his ayde. The Hostesse seeing her husband re-enter into contentions and brabbles, raised a new crie, whose burden was borne by her daughter and *Maritornes*, asking succour of heauen and those that were present. *Sancho* seeing all that passed; said, By the Lord, all that my Master hath said of the inchantments of this Castle is true; for it is not possible for a man to liue quietly in it one houre together. *Don Fernando* parted the Trouper and *Don*

Quixote, and with the good will of both, vnfastned their holdes: but yet the Troupers for all this desisted not to require their prisoner, and withall, that they should helpe to get him tyed, & absolutely rendred vnto their wils; for so it was requisite for the King & the *Holy Brotherhood*, in whose name they did againe demand their helpe and assistance for the arresting of that publike robber and spoyler of people in common pathes and high wayes.

Don-Quixote laughed to heare them speake so idely, as he imagined, and said with very great grauity, Come hither you filthy base extractions of the dunghill, dare you terme the loosing of the inchained, the freeing of prisoners, the assisting of the wretched, the raising of such as are falne, and the supplying of those that are in want? Dare you (I say) terme these things robbing on the high way? O infamous brood, worthy for your base and vile conceipt, that heauen should neuer communicate with you the vallour included in the exercise of Chiualry, we giue you to vnderstand the sinne and errour wherin you are, by not adoring the very shadow, how much more the assistance of a Knight errant? Come hither O you that be no Troupers but theeues in troupe, and robbers of high wayes by permission of the *Holy brotherhood*: Come hither, I say, and tell me, who was that jolthead that did subscribe or ratifie a warrant for the attaching of such a Knight as I am? Who was he that knowes not how Knights errant are exempted from all Tribunals? and how that their sword is the law, their valour the Bench, and their wils the statutes of their Courts? I say againe, what madman was he that knowes not how that no priuiledge of Gentry enioyes so many preeminences, immunities, and exemptions, as that which a Knight errant acquires the day wherein he is dubd, and vndertakes the rigorous exercise of arms? What Knight errant did euer pay tribute, subsidie, tallage, carriage, or passage ouer water? What Taylor euer had money for making his clothes? What Constable euer lodged him in Castle that made him after to pay for the shot? What King hath not

Digitized by Google

placed him at his owne table? what Damzell hath not faine in loue with him, and permitted him to vſe her as hee liked? and finally what knight errant was there euer, is, or euer ſhall be in the world, which hath not the courage himſelfe alone to giue foure hundred blowes with a cudgell to foure hundred troupers that ſhall preſume to ſtand before him in hoſtile manner?

CHAP. XIX.

In which is finiſhed the notable aduenture of the troupers, and the great ferocitie of our good Knight Don-Quixote, *and how he was inchanted.*

WHileſt *Don-Quixote* ſaid this, the *Curate* laboured to perſwade the troupers, how the Knight was diſtracted, as they themſelues might collect by his workes and words, and therefore it would be to no end to proſecute their deſigne any further, ſeeing that although they did apprehend and carry him away, he would be preſently deliuered againe, as a madman. To this, he that had the warrant made anſwere, that it concerned him not to determine whether he was mad or no, but onely to obey and execute his ſuperiours commaund; and that he being once priſoner, they might deliuer him three hundred times, and if it were their good pleaſure: for all that quoth the *Curate*, you may not carry him with you at this time, nor as I ſuppoſe will he ſuffer himſelfe to be taken. To be briefe, the *Curate* ſaid ſo much, and *Don-Quixote* plaid ſo many mad prankes, as the troupers themſelues would haue proued greater fooles then he, if they had not manifeſtly diſcerned his defect of iudgement: and therefore they held it to be the beſt courſe to let him alone, yea and to be compounders of peace and

amitie betweene *Sancho Panca* and the Barber, which ſtill continued their moſt rancorous & deadly contention. Finally they as the officers of Iuſtice, did meditate the cauſe, and were arbiters thereof, in ſuch ſort, as both the parties remained, though not wholy contented, yet in ſome ſort ſatisfied, for they onely made them exchange their pannels, but not their gyrts or headſtals.

As touching *Mambrinos* helmet, the Curate did vnawares to *Don-Quixote*, giue to the Barber eight reals by it, and the Barber gaue backe vnto him an acquittance of the receit thereof, and an euerlaſting releaſe of all actions concerning it. Theſe two diſcords which were the moſt principall, and of moſt conſequence, being thus accorded, it onely reſted that three of *Don Lewis* his ſeruingmen would be content to returne home, and leaue the fourth to accompany his maſter whither *Don Fernando* pleaſed to carry him. And as good hap and better fortune had already begun to breake Lances, and facilitate difficulties, in the fauour of the louers, and worthie perſons of the Inne, ſo did it reſolue to proceede forward, and giue a proſperous ſucceſſe vnto all: for the ſeruingman were content to doe whatſoeuer their maſter would haue them: whereat *Donna Clara* was ſo cheerfull, as no one beheld when her face in that ſeaſon, but might reade therein the inward contentment of her mind. *Zorayda* although ſhe did not very well vnderſtand all the ſucceſſes of the things ſhe had ſeene, yet was ſhe interchangeably grieued and cheered according to the ſhewes made by the reſt, but chiefly by her *Spanyard*, on whom her eyes were alwaies fixed, and all the affects of her minde depended. The Inkeeper, who did not forget the recompence made by the Curate to the Barber, demaunded of him *Don-Quixotes* expences, and ſatisfaction for the dammage he had done to his wine bags, and the loſſe of his wine, ſwearing that neither *Rozinãte*, nor *Sancho* his Aſſe ſhould depart out of the Inne vntill he were paid the very laſt farthing. All was quietly ended by the *Curate*, and *Don Fernando* paid the whole

ſumme ; although the iudge had alſo moſt liberally offered to doe it ; and all of them remained afterwards in ſuch quietneſſe and peace, as the Inne did no longer reſemble the diſcorded campe of *Agramante*, (as *Don-Quixote* termed it) but rather enioyed the very peace and tranquility of the Emperours *Octauians* time : for all which, the cõmon opinion was, that thanks were iuſtly due to the ſincere proceeding and great eloquence of Maſter *Curate*, and to the incomparable liberality, and goodneſſe of *Don Fernando*. *Don-Quixote*, perceiuing himſelfe free, and deliuered from ſo many difficulties, and brabbles, wherewith as well he, as his Eſquire had beene perplexed) held it hightime to proſecute his commenced voyage, and bring to an end the great aduenture vnto which he was called and choſen. Therefore with reſolute determination to depart, he went and caſt himſelfe on his knees before *Dorotea*, who not permitting him to ſpeake vntill he aroſe, he to obey her, ſtood vp, and ſaid. It is a common prouerbe, beautifull Ladie, *That diligence is the mother of goodhap* : and in many and graue affaires, experience hath ſhewed, that the ſollicitude and ſore of the ſuiter oft brings a doubtfull matter to a certaine and happy end. But this truth appeares in nothing more cleerly, then in matters of warre; wherein celerity and expedition preuent the enemies deſſignes, and obtaine the victory before an aduerſary can put himſelfe in defence : all this I ſay, high and worthy Ladie, becauſe it ſeemes to mee that our abode in this Caſtle is nothing profitable, and many therewithall turne ſo farre to our hinderance, as we may palpably feele it one day. For who knowes but that your enemie, the Giant hath learned by ſpies, or other ſecreet intelligence and meanes, how I meane to come and deſtroy him, and (oportunitie fauouring his diſſignes) that he may haue fortified himſelfe in ſome inexpugnable Caſtle or Fortreſſe, againſt the ſtrength whereof neither mine induſtrie, nor the force of mine inuincible arme can much preuaile; wherefore, deare Ladie, let vs preuent (as I haue ſayde by our diligence, and let vs preſently depart

vnto the place wherunto we are called by our good fortune, which ſhalbe deferred no longer then I am abſent from your highneſſe ſoe. Heere he held his peace, and did expect, with great grauitie the beautifull Princeſſe anſwere: who with debonary countenance, and a ſtile accommodated vnto *Don-Quixote*, returned him this anſwere. I do gratifie and thanke Sir Knight, the deſire you ſhew to aſſiſt me in this my great neede: which denotes very cleerely the great care you haue to fauour orphanes and diſtreſſed wightes: and I beſeech God that your good deſires and mine may bee accompliſhed, to the ende that you may ſee how there are ſome thankfull women on earth: as touching my departure, let it be forthwith, for I haue none other will, thē that which is yours; therfore you may diſpoſe of me at your owne pleaſure, for ſhe that hath once committed the defence of her perſon vnto you, and hath put into your hands the reſtitution of her eſtate, ought not to ſeeke to do any other thing then that which your wiſedome ſhall ordaine. In the name of God (quoth *Don-Quixote*) ſeeing that your highnes doth ſo humble your ſelfe vnto mee, I will not loſe the occaſion of exalting it, and inſtalling it againe in the throne of your inheritance. Let our departure be incontinent for my deſires, and the way, and that which they call the danger that is in delay, doe ſpurre me on. And ſeeing that heauen neuer created, nor hell euer beheld any man that could affright me, or make a coward of me, go therefore *Sancho* and ſaddle *Rozinante*, and empannell thine Aſſe, and make readie the Queenes palfrey, and let vs take leaue of the Conſtable and theſe other Lords, and depart away from hence inſtantly.

Then *Sancho* (who was preſent at all this) wagging of his head, ſaid: O my Lord, my Lord, how much more knauerie (be it ſpoken with the pardon of all honeſt kercheſes) is there in the little village then is talked of? what ill can there be in any village, or in all the Cities of the world, able to impaire my credite, thou villaine? If thou be angrie, quoth

Sancho, I will hold my tongue, and omit to say that which by the dutie of a good Squire, and of an honest seruant I am bound to tell you, say what thou wilt quoth *Don-Quixote*, so thy words be not addrest to make me afraid; for if thou beest frighted, thou doest onely like thy selfe; and if I bee deuoid of terrour, I also doe that which I ought, it is not that which I meane quoth *Sancho*, but that I doe hold for most sure & certaine that this Ladie which cals her selfe Queene of the great Kingdome of *Micomicon*, is no more a Queene then my mother; for if she were what she saies, she would not at euery corner, and at euery turning of a hand be billing as she is, with one that is in this good company: *Dorotea* blushed at *Sanchos* words; for it was true indeede that her spouse *Don Fernando* would now and then priuately steale from her lips some part of the reward which his desires did merit, (which *Sancho* espying, it seemed to him, that that kinde of wanton familiarity was more proper to curtesans, then becomming the Queene of so great a Kingdome) and yet she neither could, nor would reply vnto him, but let him continue his speech, as followeth: This I doe say, good my Lord quoth he, to this end, that if after wee haue runne many waies and courses, and indured bad nights and worse daies, he that is in this Inne, sporting himselfe, shall come to gather the fruit of our labours, there is no reason to hasten me thus to saddle *Rozinante*, or empannell the Asse, or make readie the Palfrey, seeing it would bee better that we stayed still, and that euery whoore spunne, and we fell to our victuals.

O God, how great was the fury that inflaming *Don Quixote*, when he heard his Squire speake so respectlesly. I say it was so great, that with a shaking voyce, a faultering tongue, and the fire sparking out of his eyes he said. O villanous peasant, rash, vnmannerly, ignorant, rude, blasphemous, bold murmurer, and detractor, hast thou presumed to speake such words in my presence, and in that of these noble Ladies? and hast thou dared to entertaine such rash and dishoneſt surmises

into thy confuſed imagination? depart out of my ſight thou monſter of nature, ſtorehouſe of vntruthes, armorie of falſhood, ſincke of roguerie, inuentor of villanie, publiſher of rauings, and the enemie of that decency which is to be vſed towards royall perſons. Away villaine, and neuer appeare before mee, vnder paine of mine indignation: and ſaying ſo he bended his browes, fild vp his cheekes, looked about him on euery ſide, and ſtrucke a great blow with his right foote on the ground; all manifeſt tokens of the rage which inwardly fretted him: at which words and furious geſtures poore *Sancho* remained ſo greatly affrighted, as he could haue wiſhed in that inſtant, that the earth opening vnder his feete would ſwallow him vp. And knew not what to doe, but turne his backe, and get him out of his Lords moſt furious preſence: but the diſcreete *Dorotea* (who was now ſo well ſchooled in *Don-Quixotes* humour) to mitigate his yre ſaid vnto him; be not offended good *Sir Knight of the ſad face*, at the idle words which your good Squire hath ſpoken: for perhaps he hath not ſaide them without ſome ground, nor of his good vnderſtanding and Chriſtian mind can it be ſuſpected, that he would wittingly ſlaunder or accuſe any body falſely: And therefore we muſt beleeue, without all doubt, that as in this Caſtle as you your ſelfe haue ſaid, Sir Knight all things are repreſented, and ſucceed by manner of inchantment, I ſay it might befall, that *Sancho* may haue ſeene by diabolicall illuſion, that which he ſaies, he beheld ſo much to the preiudice of my reputation, I vow by the omnipotent *Ioue*, quoth *Don-Quixote*, that your highnes hath hit the very pricke, & that ſome wicked viſion appeared to this ſinner, my man *Sancho*, that made him to ſee that which otherwiſe were impoſſible to be ſeene by any other way then that of inchantment: for I know very well the great goodneſſe, and ſimplicitie of that poore wretch is ſuch, as hee knowes not how to inuent a lye on any bodie liuing. It is euen ſo, and ſo it ſhall be quoth *Don Fernando*: and therefore good Sir *Don-Quixote* you muſt pardon him, & reduce

Digitized by Google

him againe to the bosome of your good grace: *Sicut erat in principio*, and before the like visions did distract his sense. *Don-Quixote* answered, that he did willingly pardon him: and therefore the *Curate* went for *Sancho*, who returned very humbly, and kneeling downe on his knees demaunded his Lords hand, which he gaue vnto him, and after that hee had permitted him to kisse it, he gaue him his blessing, saying. Now thou shalt finally know *Sancho*, that which I haue told thee diuers times, how that all the things of this Castle are made by way of inchauntment. So doe I verily beleeue, said *Sancho*, except that of the Canuassing in the blanquet, which really succeeded by an ordinary and naturall way: doe not beleeue that, said *Don-Quixote*; for if it were so, I would both then, and also now haue taken a dire reuenge: but neither then, nor now could I euer see any, on whom I might reuenge that thine iniurie. All of them desired greatly to know what that accident of the blanquet was, and then the Inkeeper recounted it point by point, the flights that *Sancho Panca* made, whereat they all did laugh not a little, and *Sancho* would haue beene ashamed no lesse, if his Lord had not anew perswaded him, that it was a meere inchauntment: And yet *Sanchos* madnesse was neuer so great as to beleeue that it was not a reall truth, verily befallen him without any colour, or mixture of fraude, or illusion: but that hee was tossed by persons of flesh, bloud, and bone, and not by dreamed and imagined shadowes or spirits, as his Lord beleeued, and so constantly affirmed.

Two dayes were now expired, when all that Noble company had soiourned in the Inne, and then it seeming vnto them high time to depart, they deuised how (without putting *Dorotea* and *Don Fernando* to the paines, to turne back with *Don-Quixote* to his Village, vnder pretence of restoring the Queene *Micomicona*) the Curate and Barber might carry him backe as they desired, and indeauour to haue him cured of his folly in his owne house. And their inuention was this; they agreed with one, who by chaunce passed by that way

way with a Teame of Oxen, to carry him in this order following. They made a thing like a Cage of timber, ſo bigge as that *Don-Quixote* might ſit, or lye in it at his eaſe: and preſently after *Don Fernando*, and his fellowes, with *Don Lewis* his ſeruants, the Troupers, and the Inkeeper, did all of them by Maſter Curates direction couer their faces and diſguiſe themſelues, euery one as he might beſt, ſo that they might ſeeme to *Don-Quixote* other people then ſuch as he had ſeene in the Caſtle. And this being done, they entred with very great ſilence into the place where hee ſlept, and tooke his reſt after the related conflicts: and approching him who ſlept ſecurely, not fearing any ſuch accident, and laying hold on him very ſtrongly, they tyed his hands and his feete very ſtrongly, ſo that when hee ſtarted out of his ſleepe, hee could not ſtirre himſelfe, nor doe any other thing, then admire, and wonder at thoſe ſtrange ſhapes which he ſaw ſtanding before him: and preſently he fel into the conceipt which his continuall and diſtracted imagination had already ſuggeſted vnto him, beleeuing that all thoſe ſtrange figures were the ſpirits and ſhadowes of that inchaunted Caſtle, and that he himſelfe was now without doubt inchaunted, ſeeing hee could neither moue nor defend himſelfe. All this ſucceeded iuſt as the Curate (who plotted the jeſt) made full account it would. Only *Sancho*, among all thoſe that were preſent, was in his right ſenſe and ſhape; and although hee wanted but little to be ſicke of his Lords diſeaſe, yet for all that hee knew all thoſe counterfait Ghoſts: but hee would not once vnfold his lips, vntill hee might ſee the end of that ſurpriſall and impriſonment of his Maſter. Who likewiſe ſpoke neuer a word, but only looked to ſee what would be the period of his diſgrace. Which was, that bringing him to the Cage, they ſhut him within, and afterwards nailed the barres thereof ſo well as they could not be eaſily broken. They preſently mounted him vpon their ſhoulders, and as he iſſued out at the chamber dore, they heard as dreadfull a voice as the Barber could deuiſe (not he of the pannell but the other) which

ſaid

said: *O Knight of the ſadde countenance bee not grieued at the impriſonment whereinto thou art led, for ſo it muſt bee, that thereby the aduenture into which thy great force and valour haue thruſt thee, may bee the more ſpeedily ended; and ended it will be when the furious Manchegal Lyon, and the white Toboſian Doue, ſhall be vnited in one, and after they haue humbled their lofty creſt vnto the ſoft yoke of wedlocke: from whoſe wonderfull conſort, ſhall iſſue to the light of the Orbe, fierce whelps which ſhal imitate the raunching pawes of their valorous father, and this ſhall bee, before the purſuer of the fugitiue nymphe doe with his ſwift and naturall courſe make two turnes, in viſitation of the gliſtring Images; And thou O the moſt noble, and obedient Squire, that euer had ſword at a gyrdle, beard on a face, or dent in a noſe, let it not diſmay, or diſcontent thee to ſee carried away before thy eyes the flower of all Chiualrie errant. For very ſpeedily, if it pleaſe the framer of the world, thou ſhalt ſee thy ſelfe ſo exalted and ennobled, as thou ſhalt ſcarce knowe thy ſelfe: Nor ſhalt thou bee defrauded of the promiſes made vnto thee by thy Noble Lord: and I doe aſſure thee, from the wiſe* Mentironiana, *that thy wages ſhall be payed thee, as thou ſhalt quickly ſee in effect: and therefore follow the ſteps of the valorous and inchaunted Knight; for it is neceſſary, that thou goe to the place where you both ſhall ſtay: and becauſe I am not permitted to ſay any more, farewell; for I doe returne I well know whither.* Towards the end of this prophecie, he lifted vp his voice, and afterwards leſned it with ſo ſlender an accent, that euen thoſe which were acquainted with the jeſt, almoſt beleeued what they had heard.

Don-Quixote was very much comforted by the prophecie; for hee preſently apprehended the whole ſenſe thereof, and perceiued how hee was promiſed in marriage his beloued *Dulcinea of Toboſo*, from whoſe happy wombe ſhould ſally the Whelps (which were his ſonnes) to the eternal glory of the *Mancha*. And beleeuing all this moſt firmely, hee eleuated his voice, and breathing forth a great ſigh, thus ſaid: *O thou whatſoeuer thou beeſt, which haſt prognoſticated ſo great*

Digitized by Google

good to me, I deſire thee to requeſt in my name, the wiſeman who hath charge to record mine acts, that he permit me not to periſh in this priſon (to which they now do carry me) before the accompliſhment of ſo ioyfull and incomparable promiſes, as now haue beene made vnto me. For ſo that this may befall, I will account the paines of my priſon a glory, and the chaines that inuiron me an eaſe: and will not eſteeme this bed whereon I am laid a hard field of battaile, but a ſoft ticke, and a moſt fortunate lodging. And as concerning the conſolation of my Squire Sancho Panca, *I truſt in his goodneſſe, and honeſt proceeding, that he will not abandon me in good or bad fortune: for though it ſhould fall out through his, or my hard hap, that I ſhall not bee able to beſtow on him an Iland, or other equiualent thing, as I haue promiſed, his wages at leaſt cannot be loſt, for in my Teſtament, which is made already, I haue ſet downe what he is to haue, though not conformably to his many good ſeruices, yet according to my poſſibility. Sancho Panca* bowed his head with great reuerence, and kiſſed both his hands (for one alone he could not by reaſon they were bound together) and preſently thoſe viſions did lift vp the cage, and accommodate it on the Teame of Oxen.

CHAP. XX.

Wherein is proſecuted the manner of Don-Quixotes *inchauntment, with other famous occurrences.*

WHen *Don-Quixote* ſaw himſelfe to bee incaged after that manner, and placed in the Cart he ſaid, I haue read many and very graue hiſtories of Knights errant, but I neuer read, ſaw, nor heard, that they were wont to carry Knights errant inchaunted after this manner, and with theleiſure that thoſe ſlothfull and heauy beaſts doe threaten: forthey were euer accuſtomed to be carried in

the aire with wonderful speed, shut in some duskie & obscure clowd; or in som fiery chariot; or on som *Hippogrifus*, or some other such like beast: but that they cary me now on a Teame of Oxen, I protest it driues me into a great amazement, but perhaps both Chiualrie, and the inchauntments of those our times, doe follow a course different from those of former ages: and peraduenture it may also bee, that as I am a new Knight in the world, and the first that hath againe reuiued the now-neglected, and forgotten exercise of armes, so haue they also newly inuented other kinds of inchauntments, and other manners of carrying away inchaunted Knights. What doest thou thinke of this Sonne *Sancho*? I know not, quoth *Sancho*, what to thinke, because I am not so well seene in Scriptures errant as you are; but for all this I durst affirme and sweare, that these visions which goe vp and downe in this place are not altogether Catholike. Catholikes, my father, quoth *Don-Quixote*, how can they bee Catholikes, when they be all Diuels, which haue assumed phantasticall bodies to come and put me into this state? and if thou wilt proue the truth hereof, doe but touch and feele them, and thou shalt finde them to haue no bodies, but of aire, and that they consist of nothing but an outward appearance. Now by my faith Sir, quoth *Sancho*, I haue already touched them, and find this Diuell that goeth there so busily vp and downe, both plump and soft fleshed; and that hee hath besids an other property very different from that which I haue heard say Diuels haue: for it is said, that they smell all of brimstone and other filthy things; but one may feele at least halfe a league off, the ambar that this Diuell smels off. *Sancho* spoke this of *Don Fernando*, who belike (as Lords of his ranke are wont) had his attyre perfumed with Ambar.

Maruell not thereat friend *Sancho*, quoth *Don-Quixote*, for the diuels are very craftie; and although they bring smels or perfumes about them, yet they themselues smell nothing (because they are spirits) or if they doe smell ought it is

not

not good, but euill and ſtinking ſauors: the reaſon is, for that as they doe alwayes beare whereſoeuer they be, their hell about them, and can receiue no kind of eaſe of their torments, and good ſmels bee thinges that delight and pleaſe; it is not poſſible that they can ſmell any good thing: and if it ſeeme to thee, that that diuell whom thou doſt mention, ſmels of *Ambar*, either thou art deceiued, or he that would deceiue thee, by making thee to thinke that he is no diuell. All theſe diſcourſes paſſed betweene the Maſter and the man; the whilſt *Don Fernando* and *Cardenio* (fearing leaſt *Sancho* ſhould finde out the deceit whereto he was already come very neere) reſolued to haſten the Knights departure; and therefore calling the Inkeeper aſide, they commaunded him to ſaddle *Rozinante*, and empannell *Sancho* his beaſt; which he did with all expedition: and the Curate agreed with the Troupers for ſo much a day to accompany him vnto his village. *Cardenio* hanged at the pommell of *Rozinantes* ſaddle, the Target on the one ſide, and on the other the Baſon, and by ſignes commaunded *Sancho* to get vp on his Aſſe and leade *Rozinante* by the bridle; and afterwards placed on either ſide of the Cart two Troupers with their firelockes.

But before the Cart departed, the Hoſteſſe, her daughter, and *Maritornes* came out to bid *Don-Quixote* farewell, fayning that they wept for ſorrow of his diſaſter; to whom *Don-Quixote* ſaid: My good Ladies doe not weepe for all theſe miſchances are incident to thoſe which profeſſe that which I doe: and if theſe calamities had not befalne me, I would neuer haue accounted my ſelfe for a famous Knight errant: for the like chances neuer happen to Knights of little name or renoune, becauſe there are none in the world that makes any mention of them. But they often befall to the valorous, who haue emulators of their vertue and valour, both many Princes and many other Knights that ſtriue by indirect meanes to deſtroy them. But for all that, vertue is ſo potent, as by her ſelfe alone (in deſpite of all the Nigro-

Digitized by Google

mancy that euer the first inuenter thereof *Zoroastes* knew) she will come off victorious from euery danger, and will shine in the world as the Sunne doth in heauen. Pardon me faire Ladies if by any careleſneſſe I haue done you any diſpleaſure, for with my will and knowledge I neuer wronged any. And pray vnto God for me, that he will pleaſe to deliuer me out of this priſon, whereinto ſome ill meaning inchanter hath thruſt me; for if I once may ſee my ſelfe at liberty againe, I will neuer forget the fauours which you haue done me in this Caſtle, but greatly acknowledge and recompence them as they deſerue. Whileſt the Ladies of the Caſtle were thus intertained by *Don-Quixote*, the Curate and Barber tooke leaue of *Don Fernando* and his companions, of the Captaine and his brother, and of all the contented Ladies, ſpecially of *Dorotea* and *Luſcinda*, all of them embraced and promiſed to acquaint one another with their ſucceeding fortunes. *Don Fernando* intreating the Curate to write vnto him what became of *Don-Quixote*, aſſuring him that no affaire he could informe him of ſhould pleaſe him better then that, and that he would in lieu thereof acquaint him with all occurrences which he thought would delight him eyther concerning his owne marriage or *Zoraydas* baptiſme, or the ſucceſſe of *Don Lewis*, and *Luſcindas* returne into her houſe.

The Curate offered willingly to accompliſh to a haire all that he had commaunded him: and ſo they returned once againe to embrace one another, & to renew their mutuall & complement all offers. The Inkeeper came alſo to the Curate, and gaue him certaine papers, ſaying, that he had found them within one of the linings of the wallet, wherein the Tale of the curious impertinent was had; and that ſince the owner did not returne to fetch it, he bad him take them all with him: for ſeeing he could not reade, hee would keepe them no longer. Maſter Curate yeelded him many thanks; and then opening them, found in the beginning therof theſe wordes: *The Tale of Riconnette and Cortadillo*; by which he

Digitized by Google

vnderſtood that it was ſome Hiſtory, and collected that it muſt be a good one, ſeeing that of the curious Impertinent, contriued perhaps by the ſame Authour, had proued ſo well, and therefore he laid it vp, with an intention to reade it as ſoone as he had oportunity. Then hee mounted on horſe-backe with his friend the Barber; and both of them putting on their maskes that they might not quickly be knowne by *Don-Quixote*, they trauelled after the teame, which held on in this order; firſt went the Cart, guided by the Carter: on both ſides thereof the Troupers rode with their firelockes: then followed *Sancho* vpon his Aſſe, leading *Rozinante* by the bridle; and laſt of all came the Curate and Barber vpon their mighty Mules, and with their faces couered: all in a graue geſture, and with an Alderman-like pace, and trauelling no faſter then the ſlow ſteps of the heauie Oxen permitted them. *Don-Quixote* ſate with his hands tyed, his legges ſtretched out, and leaning againſt the barre of the Cage, with ſuch a ſilence, and patience, as he rather ſeemed a ſtatue then a man. In this quiet and leiſurely manner they trauelled for the ſpace of two leagues, when arriuing to a valley, it ſeemed to their Conductor a fit place to repoſe and bait his Oxen. And acquainting the Curate with his purpoſe, the Barber was of opinion that they ſhould yet goe on a little further, becauſe he knew that there lay behinde a little mountaine, which was within their view a certaine vale, much better furniſhed with graſſe then that wherein hee meant to abide. The barbarous opinion was allowed, and therefore they continued on their trauell, when the Curate looking by chance behinde him, ſaw comming after them ſixe or ſeauen men on horſebacke, and very well appointed, who quickly got ground of them; for they came not the lazie and flegmaticke pace of Oxen, but as men that were mounted on Canons Mules, and pricked forward with a deſire to paſſe ouer the heat of the day in their Inne, which was not much more then a league from thence. Finally, thoſe diligent trauellers ouertooke our ſlouthfull ones, and ſalu-

ted them courteously, and one of them that was a Canon of *Toledo*, and Master of the rest, noting the orderly procession of the Cart, Troupers, *Sancho*, *Rozinante*, the Curate and Barber, but chiefly the ingaged *Don-Quixote*, he could not forbeare to demand what meaned the carriage of that man, in so strange a manner, although he did already coniecture by obseruation of the Troupers that hee was some notable robber or other delinquent, the punishment of whom belonged to the *Holy Brotherhood*. One of the Troupers to whom the demaund was made, did answere in this manner: Sir we know not wherefore this Knight is caried in this forme, and therefore let he himselfe, who best may, tell you the reason thereof.

Don-Quixote had ouerheard their discourse, and said, if Gentlemen you be conuersant and skilfull in matters of Chiualry, I will communicate my misfortunes with you, but if you be not, I haue no reason to trouble my selfe to recouer them. The Curate and Barber seeing the trauellers in talke with *Don-Quixote*, drew neere to make answere for him, in such sort that their inuention might not be discouered; the which the Canon replied to the Knight, and said, Truely brother I am better acquainted with bookes of Knighthood then with *Villapandas* Logicke: and therefore if all the difficultie rest onely in that, you may safely communicate whatsoeuer you will with me. A Gods name be it, quoth *Don-Quixote*: You shall therefore vnderstand Sir Knight, that I am caried away inchanted in this Cage, through the enuie and fraude of wicked Magicians, *For vertue is much more persecuted of the wicked, then honoured of the good.* I am a Knight errant, but none of those whose names are not recorded in the bookes of fame, but one of those who in despite of enuie it selfe, and of all the Magicians of *Persia*, the Bracmanes of *India*, or the Gymnosophists of *Æthiopia* shal hang his name in the Temple of *Eternity*, that it may serue as a modell and patterne to insuing ages; wherein Knights errant may view the steps which they are to follow if they

meane to aſpire to the toppe and honourable height of armes. The Knight Sir *Don-Quixote* ſaith true, quoth the Curate, ſpeaking to the trauellers, that he is carried away in this Chariot inchanted, not through his owne default or ſinnes, but through the malignant treacherie of thoſe, to whom vertue is loathſome and valour odious. This is good Sir, the *Knight of the ſad countenance* (if you haue at any time heard ſpeake of him) whoſe valorous acts ſhall remaine inſculped in ſtubborne Braſſe, and time-ſuruiuing Marble, though Enuie and Malice doe labour neuer ſo much to obſcure them.

When the Canon heard the impriſoned man and the free ſpeake thus in one tenour, hee was about to bleſſe himſelfe for wonder, and could not coniecture what had befallen him, and into no leſſe admiration were they brought that came with him. But *Sancho Panca* hauing in the meane time approched to heare their ſpeech, to plaiſter vp the matter, added: now Sirs, whether you will loue me well or ill, for what I ſhall ſay, the very truth of the matter is, that my Lord *Don-Quixote* is as much inchaunted as my mother, and no more. For his iudgement is yet whole and ſound; hee eates, and drinks, and doth his neceſſities as other men doe, and as he himſelfe did yeſterday, and other daies before they incaged him: all which being ſo, how can you make me beleeue that he goeth inchaunted, for I haue heard many perſons auouch, that inchaunted perſons neither eate, nor drinke, nor ſpeake, and yet my Lord, if he be not thwarted, will talke more then twentie barreſters, and then turning towards the Curate, he ſaid: O Mr. Curate, Mr. Curate, doe you thinke that I doe not know you? and thinke you that I doe not ſuppoſe, yea and preſage whereto theſe new inchauntments are addreſſed? well know then, that I know you well, although you couer your face neuer ſo much, and that I vnderſtand your meaning, how deepely ſoeuer you ſmother your drifts: but in fine, where emulation and enuy raines, vertue cannot liue; where pinching ſwayes, liberali-

tie

tie goes by. A pox take the Diuell, for but for your reuerence my Lord had ere this time beene wedded to the Princesse *Micomicona*, and I my selfe had beene created an Earle at least, for no lesse might be expected either from the bountie of my Lord, or the greatnesse of my deserts: but now I perceiue that to bee true, which is commonly said, *That the wheele of Fortune turnes about more swiftly, then that of a mil: and that they which were yesterday on the top thereof, lye to day all along on the ground.* I am chiefly grieued for my wife and children; for whereas they ought and might hope to see their father come in at his gates, made a Gouernour, or Viceroy of some Ile, or Kingdome, they shall now see him returne vnto them no better then a poore horse-boy. All which I haue vrged so much, Mr. Curate, only to intimate to your paternitie, how you ought to haue remorse, and make a scruple of conscience, of treating my deare Lord as you do, and looke to it well that God doe not one day demaund at your hands, in the other life, amends for the prison wherein you carry him: and that you bee not answerable for all the succours and good deedes, which hee would haue afforded the world in this time of his captiuitie. Snuffe me those candles, quoth the Barber, hearing him speake so: what *Sancho*, art thou also of thy Masters confraternitie? I sweare by the Lord, I beginne to see that thou art very like to keepe him company in the cage, and that thou shalt bee as deepely inchaunted as hee, for the portion which thou hast of his humour, and Chiualrie. Thou wast in an ill houre begotten with child by his promises, and in a worse did the Ile, which thou so greatly longest for, sinke into thy pate: I am not with child by any body, said *Sancho*, nor am I a man of a humour to let any body get me with child, no though it were the King himselfe: and although I be poore, yet am I a *Christian*, and owe nothing to any one; and if I desire Ilands, others there are that desire worse things, *and euery one is the sonne of his owne workes*: and vnder the name of a man, I may become Pope, how much more the Gouernour of an Iland;

and chiefly ſeeing my Lord may gaine ſo many as hee may want men to beſtow them on, and therefore Mr. Barber you ſhould take heede how you ſpeake; for all conſiſts not in trimming of beards: and there is ſome difference betweene *Peter* and *Peter*. I ſay it becauſe all of vs know one another, and no man ſhall vnperceiued put a falſe Die vpon mee. As concerning my Lords inchantment, God knowes the truth, and therefore let it reſt as it is, ſeeing it is the worſe for the ſtirring in. The Barber would not reply vnto *Sancho*, leaſt that with his ſimplicities, hee ſhould diſcouer what the Curate and himſelfe did, laboured ſo much to conceale, and the Curate doubting the ſame, had intreated the Canon to prick on a little forward, and he would vnfold to him the myſterie of the encaged Knight, with other matters of delight. The Canon did ſo, and taking his men along with them, was very attentiue to all that he rehearſed, of the condition, life, madneſſe, and faſhions of *Don. Quixote*. There did he briefly acquaint him with the originall cauſe of his diſtraction, and all the progreſſe of his aduentures, vntill his ſhutting vp in that cage: and their owne deſigne in carrying home to his Countrey, to trie whether they might by any meanes finde out a remedy for his frenſie. The Canon and his men againe admired to heare ſo ſtrange a Hiſtorie as that of *Don-Quixote*, and as ſoone as the Curate had ended his relation, the Canon ſaid.

Verily Maſter Curate I doe finde by experience that thoſe bookes which are inſtituted of chiualrie, or knighthood, are very preiudiciall to wel gouerned commonwealths: and although (borne away by an idle and curious deſire) I haue read the beginning of almoſt as many as are imprinted, of that ſubiect, yet could I neuer indure my ſelfe to finiſh and reade any one of them through: for me thinks that ſomewhat more or leſſe, they all import one thing, and this hath no more then that, nor the other more then his fellow. And in mine opinion this kind of writing and inuention fals within the compaſſe of the fables called *Muleſie*, which are wandring

dring and idle tales, whose onely scope is delight, and not instruction; quite contrary to the proiect of those called *Fabula Apologa*, which delight and instruct together. And though that the principall ende of such bookes be recreation, yet cannot I perceiue how they can yeelde it, seeing they be forced with so many, and so proportionlesse vntruthes. For the delight that the mind conceiues, must proceed from the beautie, and conformitie which it sees or contemplates in such things as the sight, or imagination represents vnto it; and all things that are deformed, or discordant must produce the contrary effect. Now then what beautie can there be, or what proportion betweene the parts, and the whole, or the whole and the parts, in a booke or fable, wherein a youth of sixteene yeares of age giues a blow to a Giant as great as a Ieawes, and with that blow deuides him in two as easily as if he were a pellet of Sugar. And when they describe a battell, after that they haue told vs how there were at least a million of men on the aduerse side, yet if the Knight of the booke be against them, wee must of force, and whether we will or no, vnderstand that the said Knight obtained the victory through the inuincible strength of his arme? what then shall we say of the facilitie wherewithall the Inheretrix of a Kingdome, or Empyre falles betweene the armes of one of those errant and vnknowne knights? what vnderstanding, if it be not altogether barren or barbarous, can delight it selfe, reading how a great tower full of knights doth passe through the Sea as fast as a ship with the most prosperous wind? And that going to bed a man is in *Lombardie*, and the next morning findes himselfe in *Prester Iohns* countrey, among the *Indians*) or in some other Region which neuer was discoueted by *Ptolomeus*, nor seene by *Marcus Polus*? and if I should be answered, that the inuentors of such bookes do write them as fables: and therefore are not bound vnto any respect of circumstances, or obseruation of truth, I would reply, that an vntruth is so much the more pleasing, by how much the neerer it resembles a

truth; and so much the more grateſull, by how much the more it is doubtfull and poſſible: for lying fables muſt bee ſuited vnto the readers vnderſtanding, and ſo written, as that facilitating impoſſible things, leuelling vntrue things, and holding the mind in ſuſpence, they may rauiſh a more delight and entertaine ſuch manners, as pleaſure and wonder may ſtep by ſtep walke together, all which things hee that writes not likelihoods, ſhall neuer be able to performe. And as touching Imitation (wherein conſiſtes the perfection of that which is written) I haue not ſeene in any bookes of Knighthoode, an entire bulke of a fable, ſo proportioned in all the members thereof, as that the middle may anſwere the beginning, & the end the beginning and middle. But rather they haue compoſed them of ſo many members, as it more probably ſeemes, that the authors intended to frame *Chimeraes*, or monſters, then to deliuer proportionate figures, moſt harſh in their ſtile, incredible in exploits, impudent in loue matters, abſurd in complements, prolixe in battels, fond in diſcourſes, vncertaine and ſenſeleſſe in voyages; and finally, deuoide of all diſcretion, art, and ingenious diſpoſition. And therefore they deſerue (as moſt idle and friuolous things) to be baniſhed out of all Chriſtian commonwealthes.

Maſter Curate did liſten to the Canon with very great attention; and he ſeemed vnto him to be a man of good vnderſtanding, and that he had great reaſon for what hee had alledged: and therfore ſaid, that in reſpect they did concurre in opinions, and that he had an old grudge to the vanity of ſuch bookes, he had likewiſe fired all *Don-Quixotes* library, conſiſting of many bookes of that ſubiect: And then he recounted to him the ſearch and inquiſition hee had made of them; and which he had condemned, and which reſerued; whereat the Canon laughed heartily, and ſaid, that notwithſtanding all the euill he had ſpoken of ſuch bookes, yet did he find one good in them, to wit, the ſubiect they offered a good wit to worke vpon, and ſhew it ſelfe in them;

for

for they displayed a large and open plaine, through which the Pen might runne without let or incumbrances; describing of shipwracks, tempests, incounters, and battels: delineating a valorous Captaine, with all the properties required in him; as wisedome to frustrate the designes of his enemie; eloquence to perswade or dissuade his souldiers; ripenesse in aduice; promptnesse in execution; as much valour in attending as in assaulting of an enemie. Deciphering now a lamentable and tragicall successe, then a ioyfull and vnexpected euent; there a most beautifull, honest, and discreete Ladie, heere a valiant, courteous, & Christian knight, there an vnmeasurable barbarous braggard; heere a gentle, valorous, and wise Prince: Representing the goodnesse and loyalty of subiects, the magnificence and bountie of Lords: Sometimes he may shew himselfe an *Astrologian*, sometimes a Cosmographer, sometimes a Musitian, sometimes a Statist, and sometimes if he please, he may haue occasion to shew himselfe a Nigromancer: There may he demonstrate the subtiltie of *Vlisses*, the pietie of *Æneas*, the valour of *Achilles*, the misfortunes of *Hector*, the trechery of *Sinon*, the amitie of *Euriales*, the liberality of *Alexander*, the resolution of *Cæsar*, the clemency and truth of *Traianus*, the fidelitie of *Zopirus*, the prudence of *Cato*; and finally all those parts that make a worthy man perfect: one whiles by placing them all in one subiect; another by distributing them among many: and this being done, and set out in a pleasing stile, and a wittie fashion that approacheth as neere as is possible vnto the truth, will questionlesse remaine a worke of many faire draughts, which being accomplished, will represent such beauty and perfection, as shall fully attaine to the best end aymed at in all writing, that is, as I haue said, ioyntly to instruct, and delight: for the irregularity, and liberality of those bookes giuen to the author, the means to shew himselfe an *Epicke*, *Lyricke*, *Tragedian*, and *Comedian*; with all other things which the most gracefull and pleasant sciences of Poetry and Oratorie include in themselues.

ſelues. For the *Epickes* may be as well written in proſe as in verſe.

CHAP. XXI.

Wherein the Canon proſecutes his diſcourſe vpon bookes of Chiualrie, and many other thinges worthy of his wit.

OU ſay very true, quoth the Curate; and for this very reaſon are they, which haue hitherto inuented ſuch bookes, the more worthy of reprehenſion, becauſe they neither heeded the good diſcourſe, the arte, nor the rules, by which they might haue guided themſelues, and by that meanes haue growen as famous for their proſe as be the two Princes of the *Greeke* and *Latin* Poetrie for their verſe. I haue for my part, quoth the Canon, at leaſt attempted to write a booke of Chiualrie, obſeruing therein all the points by me mentioned; and in truth I haue written aboue a hundred ſheetes thereof: and to the end that I might trie whether they were correſpondent to my eſtimation, I did communicate them, both with certaine skilfull and wiſe men, that are maruailouſly affected to that ſubiect, and with ſome ignorant perſons that only delight to heare fanaticall inuentions; and I haue found in them all a gratefull approbation of my labours: yet would I not for all that, proſecute the worke, as well becauſe it ſeemed vnfit for my profeſſion, as alſo becauſe I finde the number of the ignorant to exceede that of the iudicious: and though more good come to a man by the praiſe of a few wiſemen, then hurt by the ſcoffes of a number of fooles, yet would I not willingly ſubiect my ſelfe to the confuſed iudgement of the ſenſeleſſe vulgar, who commonly giue themſelues moſt vnto the reading of ſuch bookes. But that which moſt of all rid

my hands, yea and my memorie of all desire to end it, was this argument, drawne from our moderne Comedies, and thus made to my selfe: If those, (as well the fictions, as historical ones) are all or the most part of them notorious fopperies, and things without either head or foote, and yet are by the vulgar heard with such delight, and held and approued for good: and both the Authors that compose them, and actors that represent them, say, that they must be such as they be for to please the peoples humors, and not more conformable to reason or truth, and that because those wherein *Decorum* is obserued, and the fable followed according to the rules of Art, serue onely for three or foure discreete men (*If so many may be found at a Play*) which doe attend vnto them, and all the rest of the Auditours remaine fasting, by reason they cannot conceiue the artificiall contexture thereof; therefore is it better for them to gaine good money and meanes by many, then bare opinion or applause by a few. The very same would be the end of my Booke after I had vsed all possible industrie, to obserue the aforesaid precept; and I should remaine onely for a neede, and as the Taylour that dwels in a corner, without trade or estimation.

And although I haue sundry times indeuoured to perswade the Players that their opinion was erronious herein, and that they would attract more people and acquire greater fame by acting artificiall Comedies then those irregular, and methodicall Playes then vsed: yet are they so wedded to their opinion, as no reason can wooe, nor demonstration winne them from it. I remember how dealing vpon a day with one of those obstinate fellowes, I said vnto him: doe not you remember how a few yeeres agoe were represented in *Spaine* three Tragedies, written by a famous Poet of our Kingdome, which were such as delighted, yea and amazed all the auditours as well the learned as the simple, the exact as the sleight ones; and that the Players got more by those three alone, then by thirtie of the best that were penned, or Acted since that time? You meane without que-

Digitized by Google

stion

ſtion, quoth the Actor anſwering mee, *Iſabella, Filis,* and *Alexandra.* The very ſame quoth I; and note whether in them were not rightly obſerued all the rules and precepts of Art, and yet thereby they neither wanted any part of their dignitie, nor the approbation of all the world. So that I inferre the fault not to be in the vulgar that couets idle toyes, but rather in thoſe which know not how to penne or Act any other thing, for no ſuch fond ſtuffe was in the Comedie of *Ingratitude reuenged*: nor found in *Numantia,* nor perceiued in that of the *Amorous Merchant,* and much leſſe in the *Fauourable enemy,* nor in ſome others made by iudicious Poets, which both redounded to their infinite fame and renowne, and yeelded vnto theſe Actors aboundant gaine. To theſe I added other reaſons, wherewith I left him, in mine opinion, ſomewhat perplexed, but not ſatisfied, or deſirous to forgoe his erronious opinion.

Truely M. *Canon,* quoth the *Curate,* you haue touched a matter that hath rowſed an ancient rancour and heart-burning of mine againſt the Comedies now in requeſt; the which is equall to the grudge that I beare to Bookes of Knighthood. For ſeeing the Comedie as *Tully* affirmes ought to be a mirrour of mans life, a patterne of manners, and an Image of truth: Thoſe that are now exhibited, are mirrours of vanitie, patternes of folly, and Images of voluptuouſneſſe. For what greater abſurditie can be in ſuch a ſubiect, then to ſee a child come out, in the firſt *Scene* of the firſt Act, in his ſwadling cloutes, and iſſue in the ſecond already growne a man, yea a bearded man? And what greater vanitie then to preſent before vs, a valiant old man, and a young coward? A Lay man become a Diuine, a Page a Counſellour, a King a ſcoundrell, and a Princeſſe a ſcowre-kettle? What ſhould I ſay, of the little care had of the due obſeruation of time, for the ſucceeding of that they repreſent, other then that I my ſelfe haue ſeene Comedies, whoſe firſt Act began in *Europe,* the ſecond in *Aſia,* and the third ended in *Africa,* and truely if there had beene a fourth, it would

Digitized by Google

would queſtionleſſe haue finiſhed in *America*, and by conſequence we ſhould haue ſeene a round walke about the foure parts of the world. And fayning an exployt performed in the time of King *Pepin*, or of *Charlemaine*, they make the principall Actors thereof, either *Heraclius* the Emperour that entred into *Hieruſalem* bearing of the holy Croſſe; or *Godfree* of *Bulloin* that recouered the Holy-land; Many yeeres, yea and ages hauing occurred betweene the times of the one and the other: yea and the Comedie being grounded on a fiction, to attribute vnto it the verities of a Hiſtorie, and mingle it and patch it vp, with peeces of others, hauing relation to different perſons, and times; and this with no plauſible inuention, or draught reſembling the truth, but rather with palpable, groſſe, and inexcuſable errours. And which is worſe, ſome guls are found to affirme, that all perfection conſiſts herein, and that they are too daintie that looke for any other.

Now if wee would paſſe further to examine the diuine Comedies that treate of God, or the liues of Saints, what a multitude of falſe miracles doe the compoſers deuiſe? what a bulke of matters Apocriphall, and ill-vnderſtood? attributing to one Saint the miracles done by another: yea and in humane Comedies they preſume to doe miracles (without farther reſpect, or conſideration, but that ſuch a miracle or ſhew, as they terme it, would doe well in ſuch a place) to the end that the ignorant folke may admire them, and come the more willingly to them: all which doth preiudice truth, diſcredit hiſtories, and turne to the diſgrace of our *Spaniſh* wits: for ſtrangers which doe with much punctualitie obſerue the method of Comedies, hold vs to be rude and ignorant, when they ſee ſuch follies, and abſurdities eſcape vs: and it will be no ſufficient excuſe for this errour, to ſay, that the principall end of well gouerned Commonwealths, in the permitting of Comedies, is only to entertaine the Comunaltie with ſome honeſt paſtime, and thereby diuert the exorbitant and vicious humours which idleneſſe is wont to ingender:

Digitized by Google

gender: and seeing that this end is attained to by whatsoeuer Comedies good or bad, it were to no purpose to appoint any lawes, or limits vnto them; or to tie the composers to frame, or actors to play them, as they should doe: For herevnto I answere, that this end would without all comparison be compassed, better by good Comedies then by euill ones: for the auditour, hauing heard an artificiall and well ordered Comedie, would come away delighted with the jests, & instructed by the truths thereof: wondering at the successes, grow discreeter by the reasons, warned by the deceits, become wise by others example, incensed against vice, and enamoured of vertue; al which affects a good Comedie should stirre vp in the hearers minde, were hee neuer so grosse or clownish: And it is of all impossibilities the most impossible, that a Comedie consisting of all these parts, should not entertaine, delight, satisfie, and content the mind much more, then another that should bee defectiue in any of them, as most of our now-a day Comedies bee. Nor are the Poets that pen them chiefly to be blamed for this abuse: for some of them know very well where the errour lurkes, and know also as well how to redresse it. But because that Comedies are become a vendible merchandize, they affirme, and therein tell the plaine truth, that the players would not buy them, if they were of any other, then the accustomed kinde, and therefore the Poet indeauours to accommodate himselfe to the humour of the Player, who is to pay him for his labour, and that this is the truth may bee gathered by an infinite number of Comedies, which a most happy wit of this Kingdome hath composed, with such delicacy, so many good jests so elegant a verse, so excellent reasons, so graue sentences, and finally with so much eloquence, and such a loftinesse of stile, as hee hath filled the world with his fame: and yet by reason that hee was forced to accommodate himselfe to the Actors, all of them haue not arriued to the height of perfection which Arte requires. Others there are that write without any iudgement, and with so little heede of what they do,

Digitized by Google

as

as after their workes haue once beene acted, the Players are constrained to run away and hide themselues, fearing to bee punished, as often they haue beene, for acting things obnoxious to the Prince, or scandalous to some families.

All which inconueniences might be redressed, if there were some vnderstanding and discreet person ordained at the Court, to examine all Comedies before they were acted, and that not only such as were played at the Court it selfe, but also all others that were to be acted throughout *Spaine*, without whose allowance, vnder his hand and seale, the Magistrate of no Towne should permit any Comedie to bee played: By which meanes the players would diligently send their plaies to the Court, and might boldly afterwards act them, and the composers would with more care and studie examine their labours; knowing that they should passe the strict censure of him that could vnderstand them: and by this meanes would good Comedies be written, and the thing intended by them most easily attained to, *viz.* the entertainement of the people, the good opinion of *Spanish* wits, the profit and securitie of the players, and the sauing of the care that is now imployed in chastising their rashnesse. And if the same charge were giuen to this man, or to some other, to examine the bookes of Knighthood, which should be made hereafter, some of them doubtlesse would be put forth adorned with that perfection whereof you spoke but now: inriching our language with the pleasing and pretious treasure of eloquence; and being an occasion that the old bookes would become obscure in the bright presence of those new ones published, for the honest recreation, not only of the idler sort, but also of those that haue more serious occupations. For it is not possible for the bow to continue still bent: nor can our humane and fraile nature sustaine it selfe long, without some helpe of lawfull recreation.

The Canon and Curate had arriued to this point of their discourse, when the Barber spurring on, & ouertaking them, said to the Curate, this is the place I lately told you was fit

Digitized by Google

to

to passe ouer the heate of the day in, while the Oxen baited amidst the fresh and abundant pastures: it likes me very wel, quoth the Curate: and telling the Canon what he meant to doe, he also was pleased to remaine with them, as well inuited by the prospect of a beautifull vally, which offered it selfe to their view, as also to inioy the Curates conuersation, towards whom he beganne to beare maruailous affection: and lastly with the desire hee had to bee throughly acquainted with *Don-Quixotes* aduentures, therefore he gaue order to some of his men, that they should ride to the Inne, which was hard by, and bring from thence what meate they could finde sufficient to satisfie them all, because he likewise meant to passe the hot time of the day in that place: to which one of his men did answere, that their sumpture Mule was by that time, as he thought, in the Inne, so copiously furnished with prouision of meate, that as hee supposed, they needed not buy any thing there but barly for their Mules: if it bee so, quoth the Canon, let our Mules be carryed thither, and the sumpture one returned hither.

Whilest this passed, *Sancho* being free from the continuall presence of the Curate and Barber, whom he held as suspected persons, thought it a fit time to speake with his Lord, and therefore drew neare to the cage wherein he sate, and said to him in this manner. Sir, that I may discharge my conscience, I will reueale vnto you all that hath past in this affaire of your inchauntment: which briefly is, that those two which ride with their faces couered, are the Curate of our Village and the Barber, and as I imagine they both are the plotters of this your kinde of carrying away, for meere emulation that they see you surpasse them both in atchieuing of famous acts. This truth being presupposed, it followes, that you are not inchaunted, but bee gulled and made a foole. For the proofe whereof I will but demaund of you one question, and if you doe answere me according to mine expectation, as I beleeue you will, you shall feele the deceipt with your owne handes, and perceiue how you are not in-

chaunted,

chaunted, but rather haue your wits turned vpside-downe. Sonn *Sancho* demaund what thou wilt, quoth *Don-Quixote*, and I will satisfie thee, and answere directly to thy desire: But as touching thy auerment, that those which goe along with vs be the Curate, and Barber, our Gossips, and old acquaintance; it may well befall that they seeme to bee such; but that they are so really, and in effect, I would not haue thee beleeue in any manner. For that which thou art to beleeue, and shouldest vnderstand in this matter is, that if they be like those our friends as thou sayest, it must needs be that those which haue inchaunted mee, haue assumed their semblance, and likenesse (for it is an easie thing for Magicians to put on any shape they please) thereby to giue thee occasion to thinke that which thou doest, to driue thee into such a labyrinth of imaginations, as thou shalt not afterwards know how to sallie out, although thou hadst the assistance of *Theseus* clew: and withall to make me wauer in mine vnderstanding, to the end I may not coniecture from whence this charme is deriued vnto me: for if thou on the one side doest affirme, that the Barber, and Curate of our Village doe accompany me; and I on the other side finde my selfe incaged, and am so assured of mine owne force, that no humane strength bee it not supernaturall, is able thus to incage mee, what wouldest thou haue mee say, or thinke, but that the manner of mine inchantment exceeds as many as euer I read throughout all the Histories, intreating of Knights errant which haue beene inchaunted. Wherefore thou maiest very well appease, and quiet thy selfe in that point of beleeuing, then to be those thou saist; for they are those as much, as I am a Turke: and as touching thy desire to demaund somewhat of me, speake, for I will answere thee, although thou putteest me questions vntill to morrow morning.

Our Ladie assist me quoth *Sancho* (as loude as he could) and is it possible that you are so brainsicke, and hard headed as you cannot perceiue that I affirme the very pure truth, and that malice hath a greater stroake in this your disgrace, and im-

imployment, then any inchantments. But ſeeing it is ſo, I will proue euidently that you are not inchanted: if not, tell me, as God ſhall deliuer you out of this tempeſt, and as you ſhall ſee your ſelfe, when you leaſt thinke of it in my Ladie *Dulcineas* armes: make an end of coniuring mee, ſaid *Don-Quixote*, and aske me what queſtion thou wilt; for I haue alreadie told thee that I will anſwere with all punctuality: that is it I demaund quoth *Sancho*; and the thing I would know is, that you tell me without adding or diminiſhing ought, but with all truth vſed or looked for of all thoſe which profeſſe the exerciſe of armes as you doe, vnder the title of Knights errants? I ſay anſwered *Don-Quixote*, that I will not lie a iot: make therefore a beginning, or an ende of his demaunds, for in good ſooth thou doſt weary me with ſo many ſalutations, petitions and preuentions? *Sancho* replied, I ſay that I am ſecure of the bountie and truth of my Lord: and therefore, becauſe it makes to the purpoſe in our affaire, I doe with all reſpect, demaund, whether your worſhip ſince your incagement, and as you imagine inchantment in that coope, haue not had a deſire to make greater or leſſe water, as men are wont to ſay. I do not vnderſtand good *Sancho*, that phraſe of making water: and therefore explicate thy ſelfe if thou wouldeſt haue me to anſwere thee directly: and is it poſſible, replied he, that your worſhip vnderſtands not what it is to make great or little waters? then goe to ſome ſchoole, and learne it of the boyes, and know that I would ſay, haue you had a deſire to doe that which cannot be vndone? O now, now, I vnderſtand thee *Sancho*; yes verie many times, yea and euen now I haue, wherefore, I pray thee, deliuer mee from the extremitie thereof, for I promiſe thee I am not altogether ſo cleane as I would be.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. XXII.

Wherein the discreete discourse that passed betweene Sancho Panca *and his Lord* Don-Quixote, *is expressed.*

HA, quoth *Sancho*, haue I caught you at last? this is that which I desired to know, as much as my soule or life. Come now Sir, and tell me, can you denie that which is wont to be said, when a bodie is ill disposed, I know not what ayles such a one; for hee neither eates nor drinkes, nor sleepes, nor answeres directly to that which is demaunded him, so as it seemes that he is inchanted? by which may be collected, that such as neither eate, drinke, sleepe, nor do the other naturall things you wote of are inchanted: but not those which haue a desire as you haue, and eate meate, when they get it, and drinke drinke when it is giuen them, and answere to all that is propounded vnto them? Thou sayest true *Sancho* quoth *Don-Quixote*: but I haue told thee alreadie, that there are diuers sorts of inchantments, and perhaps they change with the times from one kinde into another; and that now the inchanted vse to doe all that which I doe, although they did not so in times past; and therefore there is no disputing or drawing of conclusions against the customes of the time. I know, and doe verily perswade my selfe, that I am inchanted, and that is sufficient for the discharge of my conscience, which would be greatly burdened if I thought that I were not inchanted, and yet permitted my selfe to be borne away in this Cage idlely, and like a coward withholding the succour I might giue to many distressed and needie persons, which euen at this houre be like enough to haue extreame want of mine aide, and assistance. Yet say I notwithstanding replied *Sancho*, that for more abundant satisfaction your worship might do wel to attempt

the getting out of this prison, the which I do oblige my selfe with all my power to facilitate, yea and to get you out, and then you may recount eftsoons on the good *Rozinante*, who also seemes inchanted, so sad and melancholy he goes: And this being done, we may againe assay the fortune of seeking aduentures, which if it haue no good successe, we haue time enough to returne to our Cage; wherein I promise, by the faith of a good and loyall Squire, to shut vp my selfe together with you, if you shall proue so vnfortunate, or I so foolish, as not to bring our designes to a good issue. I am content to doe what thou sayest, brother *Sancho*, replied *Don-Quixote*, and when thou seest oportunity offered to free me, I will be rated by thee in euery thing, but yet thou shalt see, how far thou art ouerwrought in the knowledge thou wilt seeme to haue of my disgrace.

The Knight errant, and the ill errant Squire beguiled the time in these discourses, vntill they arriued vnto the place where the Canon, Curate, and Barber expected them; and then *Sancho* allighting, & helping to take downe the Cage, the waineman vnyoaked his Oxen, permitting them to take the benefit of pasture in that greene and pleasant valley, whose verder inuited not such to inioyne it as were inchanted like *Don-Quixote*, but rather such heedfull and discreete persons as was his man, who intreated the *Curate* to licence his Lord to come out, but a little while, for otherwise the prison would not be so cleanly as the presence of so worthie a Knight as his Lord was required. The Curate vnderstood his meaning, and answered that he would satisfie his request very willingly, but that hee feared that when he saw himselfe at liberty, he would play then some pranke or other, and goe whither no bodie should euer set eye on him after: I will be his surety that he shall not flie away quoth *Sancho*: and I also, quoth the Canon, if he wil but promise mee, as he is a knight, that he will not depart from vs without our consent. I giue my word that I will not, said *Don-Quixote* (who heard all that they had said) and the rather

Digitized by Google

ther becauſe that inchanted bodies haue not freewill to diſpoſe of themſelues as they liſt; for he that inchanted them, may make them vnable to ſtirre from one placein three daies: and if they make an eſcape, he can compell them to returne flying: and therefore ſince it was ſo, they might ſecurely ſet him at liberty, eſpecially ſeeing that it would redound ſo much to all their benefits: for if they did not free him, or get further off, he protefted that he could not forbeare to offend their noſes. The Canon tooke his hand (although it were bound) and by his faith, and word, that he would not depart, and then they gaue him liberty; whereat he infinitely reioyced, eſpecially ſeeing himſelfe out of the Cage. The firſt thing that he did after was to ſtretch all his bodie, and then he went towards *Rozinante*, and ſtriking him twice or thrice on the buttocks, he ſaid: I hope yet in God, and his bleſſed mother: O flower and mirrour of horſes, that wee two ſhall ſee our ſelues very ſoone in that ſtate which our hearts deſire; thou with thy Lord on thy backe, and I mounted on thee, and exerciſing the function for which God ſent mee into this world. And ſaying ſo, *Don-Quixote* with his Squire *Sancho*, retired himſelfe ſomewhat from the companie, and came backe ſoone after a little more lightned, but greatly deſiring to execute his Squires deſignes.

The Canon beheld him very earneſtly, and with admiration wondering to ſee the ſtrangeneſſe of his fond humour, and how that he ſhewed, in whatſoeuer he vttered, a very good vnderſtanding, and onely left the ſtirrops (as is ſaid before) when any mention was made of Chiualrie; and therefore moued to compaſsion, after they were all laide downe along vpon the graſſe, expecting their dinner, hee ſaid vnto him: Gentlemen, is it poſsible that the idle and vnſauourie lecture of Bookes of Knighthood, hath ſo much diſtracted your wit, as thus to beleeue, that you are caried away inchanted, with other things of that kind, as much wide from truth, as vntruths can be from veritie it ſelfe? Or how is it poſsible that any humaine vnderſtanding can fraine

it ſelfe to beleeue, that in this world haue beene ſuch an infinitie of *Amadiſes*, ſuch a crew of famous Knights, ſo many Emperours of *Trabiſonda*, ſuch a number of *Felixmartes* of *Hyrcania*; ſo many Palfrayes, Damzels errant, Serpents, Robbers, Giants, Battailes, vnheard of aduentures, ſundrie kinds of inchantments, ſuch vnmeaſurable in Counters, ſuch brauerie of apparell, ſuch a multitude of enamoured and valiant Princeſſes, ſo many Squires-Earles, wittie Dwarfes, Viragoes, Loue letters, amorous dalliances; and finally ſo many, ſo vnreaſonable, and impoſsible aduentures, as are contained in the Bookes of Knighthood. This much I dare auouch of my ſelfe, that when I read them as long as I doe not thinke that they are all but toyes and vntruthes, they delight me: but when I ponder ſeriouſly, what they are, I throw the very beſt of them againſt the wals, yea and would throw them into the fire if they were neere me, or in my hands. Hauing well deſerued that ſeueritie, as falſe Impoſtures, and ſeducers of common ſence; as broachers of new Sects, and of vncouth courſes of life; as thoſe that giue occaſion to the ignorant vulgar to beleeue in, ſuch exorbitant vntruthes as are contained in them. Yea, and are withall ſo preſumptuous, as to dare to confound the wits of the moſt diſcreete, and beſt diſcended Gentlemen; as we may clearely perceiue by that they haue done to your ſelfe, whom they haue brought to ſuch termes as it is neceſſarie to ſhut you vp in a Cage, and carie you on a Teame of Oxen, euen as one caries a Lion or Tygre from place to place, to gaine a liuing by the ſhewing of him. Therefore, good *Don-Quixote*, take compaſsion of your ſelfe, and returne into the boſome of diſcretion; and learne to imploy the moſt happie talent of vnderſtanding, and abundance of wit, wherewith bountifull heauen hath inriched it, yet ſome other courſe of ſtudie, which may redounde to the profit of your ſoule, and aduancement of your credit and eſtate. And if, borne away by your naturall diſpoſition; you will yet perſiſt in the reading of warlike, & Knight-

ly discourses; Reade in the holy Scripture the Acts of Iudges, for there you shall find surpasing feates and deedes, as true, as valorous. *Portugall* had a *Viriate*. *Rome* a *Cæsar*. *Carthage* an *Hannibal*, *Greece* an *Alexander*, *Castile* an Earl, *Fernan Goncalez*, *Valencia* a *Cid*, *Andaluzia* a *Goncalo Fernandez*, *Estremaduza* a *Diego Garcia de Paredes*, *Xerez* a *Garci Perez de Varras*, *Toledo* a *Garci Lasso*, *Sinil* a *Don Manuel de Leon*, The discourses of whose valorous Actes, may entertaine, teach, delight, and make wonder, the most sublime wit that shall reade them. Yea, this were indeed a studie fit for your sharpe vnderstanding, my deere Sir *Don-Quixote*, for by this you should become learned in Histories, enamoured of vertue, instructed in goodnesse, bettered in maners, valiant without rashnesse, bold without cowardice: and all this to Gods honour, your owne profit, and renowme of the *Mancha*, from whence, as I haue learned, you deduce your beginning and progenie.

Don-Quixote listned with all attention vnto the Canons admonition, and perceiuing that he was come to an end of them, after he had looked vpon him a good while, he said, me thinkes Gentleman, that the scope of your discourse hath beene addrest to perswade me, that there neuer were any Knights Errant in the world; and that all the bookes of Chiualrie are false, lying, hurtfull, and vnprofitable to the Common-wealth; and that I haue done ill to reade them, worse to beleeue in them, and worst of all to follow them, by hauing thus taken on mee the most austere profession of wandring Knighthood, where of they intreate: denying moreouer that there were euer any *Amadises*, either of *Gaul* or *Greece*; or any of all the other Knights, wherewith such Bookes are stuffed; All is iust as you haue said, quoth the *Canon*: whereto *Don-Quixote* replied thus, You also added, that such Bookes had done me much hurt, seeing they had turned my iudgement, and immured me vp in this Cage; and that it were better for me, to make some amendment, and alter my studie, reading other that are more authenticall,

Digitized by Google

and delight and instruct much better. It is very true answered the Canon. Why then, quoth *Don-Quixote*, I finde by mine accounts, that the inchanted, and senslesse man is your selfe; seeing you haue bent your selfe to speak so many blasphemies against a thing so true, so currant, and of such request in the world, as hee that should denie it, as you doe, merites the same punishment, which as you say you giue to those Bookes, when the reading thereof offends you: For to goe about to make men beleeue, that *Amadis* neuer liued, nor any other of those Knights, wherewith Histories are fully repleniished, would bee none other then to perswade them, that the Sunne lightens not, the Earth sustaines not, nor the Ice makes any thing cold. See what witte is there in the world so profound, that can induce another to beleeue, that the Historie of *Guy* of *Burgundy*, and the Princes *Floripes*, was not true? Nor that of *Fierabras*, with the bridge of *Mantible*, which befell in *Charlemaines* time, and is, I sweare, as true, as that it is day at this instant; and if it be a lie, so must it bee also, that euer there was an *Hector Achilles*, or the warre of *Troy*, *The twelue Peeres of France*, or King *Arthur of Britaine*, who goes yet about the world in the shape of a Crow, and is euery foote expected in his Kingdome. And they will as well presume to say, that the Historie of *Guarino Mezquino*, and of the quest of the holy *Sangreall* be lies, and that for the loue betweene Sir *Tristram* and *La Bella Yfonde*, and betweene Queene *Guenenor* and Sir *Lancelot Dulak*, we haue no sufficient Authoritie, and yet there bee certaine persons aliue, which almost remember, that they haue seene the Lady *Quintaniona*, who was one of the best skinkers of Wine that euer Great *Brittaine* had; and this is so certaine, as I remember that one of my Grandmothers of my Fathers side, was wont to say vnto me, when shee saw my matrone, with a long and reuerend kerchiefe or vaile, my boy, that woman resembles very much Lady *Quintaniona*, from which I argue, that either shee knew her selfe, or at the least, had seene some portraiture

traiture of hers. Who can moreouer denie the certaintie of the Historie of *Peter* of *Prouaunce*, and the beautifull *Magolona*, seeing that vntill this very day one may behold in the Kings Armorie, the Pinne wherewith he guided, and turned any way he listed, the Horse of wood; whereupon he rode thorow the Ayre; which Pinne, is a little bigger then the Thill of a Cart, and neere vnto it is also seene *Babieca* his saddle: and in *Roncesuals* there yet hangs *Rowlands* hornes, which is as bigge as a verygreat Ioyst, whence is inferred, that there were twelue Peeres, that there was a *Pierres* of *Prouaunce*; that also there were *Cides*, and other such Knights as those which the world termes aduenturers; if not, let them also tell me, that the valiant *Lusitanian*, *Iohn de Melo*, was no Knight Errant, who went to *Burgundie*, and in the Citie of *Ras* fought with the famous Lord of *Charni* called *Mosen Pierres*, and after with *Mosen Henry* of *Rameston* in the Citie of *Basilea*, and bore away the victorie in both the conflicts; to his eternall fame; and that there were no such curres as the aduentures, and single combats begunne, and ended in *Burgundie*, by the valiant Spaniards *Pedro Barba*, and *Gutierre Quixada* (from whom I my selfe am lineally discended) who ouercame the Earle of Saint *Pauls* sonnes. They may also auerre vnto me, that *Don Fernando de Guenarra* went not to seeke aduentures in *Germanie*, where he fought with *Micer George* a Knight of the Duke of *Austria* his house: Let them likewise affirme, that *Suero de Quinones* of the passage, his lustes were but iestes; as also the enterprise of *Mosen Lewis de falses*, against *Don Goncalo de Guzman* a Gentleman of *Castile*, with many other renoumed Acts, done as well by *Christian* Knights of this Kingdome, as of other forraine lands, and so authenticall and true, as that I am compelled to reiterate what I said before, that whosoeuer denies them, is defectiue of reason and good discourse.

Full of admiration remained the good Canon, to heare the composition, and medly, that *Don-Quixote* made of

truths, and fictions together; and at the great notice he had of all things that might any way concerne his Knighthood errant: and therefore he ſhaped him this anſwere: I cannot denie Sir *Don-Quixote*, but that ſome part of that which you haue ſaid is true, ſpecially touching thoſe *Spaniſh* aduenturers of whome you haue ſpoken; and will likewiſe graunt you, that there were twelue Peeres of *France*, but I will not beleeue that they haue accompliſhed all that which the *Archbiſhop Turpine* hath left written of them: for the bare truth of the affaire is, that they were certaine Noblemen choſen out by the Kings of *France*, whom they called *Peeres*, becauſe they were all equall in valour, qualitie, and worth; or if they were not, it was at leaſt preſumed that they were; and they were not much vnlike the militarie orders of Saint *Iames*, or *Calatrana*, were in requeſt, wherein it is preſuppoſed that ſuch as are of the profeſſion, are, or ought to be valorous, and well deſcended, Gentlemen: and as now they ſay, a Knight of St. *Iohn*, or *Alcantara*, ſo in thoſe times they ſaid; a Knight of the twelue *Peeres*; becauſe they were twelue equals, choſen to be of that military order. That there was a *Cid*, and a *Bernard* of *Carpio*, is alſo doubtleſſe; that they haue done the acts recounted of them, I beleeue there is very great cauſe to doubt. As touching the pinne of the good Earle *Pierres*, and that it is by *Babieca* his ſaddle in the kings Armourie, I confeſſe that my ſin hath made me ſo ignorant, or blind, that although I haue the ſaddle very well, yet could I neuer get a ſight of that Pinne, how great ſoeuer you affirme it to bee. Well, it is there without queſtion, ſaid *Don-Quixote*, and for the greater confirmation thereof they ſay it is laid vp in a caſe of Neates leather, to keepe it from ruſting. That may very well ſo be, ſaid the Canon, yet by the orders that I haue receiued, I doe not remember that euer I ſaw it: and although I ſhould graunt it to be there, yet doe I not therefore oblige my ſelfe to beleeue the Hiſtories of all the *Amadiſes*, nor thoſe of the other rabblement of Knights, which bookes doe mention vnto vs: nor is it reaſon

that

that so Honorable a man, adorned with so many good parts, and indowed with such a wit, as you are, should beleeue, that so many, and so strange follies, as are written in the rauing bookes of Chiualrie, can be true.

CHAP. XXIII.

Of the discreet contention betweene Don-Quixote *and the Canon, with other accidents.*

THat were a jest indeed, quoth *Don-Quixote*, that books which are printed with the Kings licence, and approbation of those to whom their examination was committed, and that are read with vniuersall delight and acceptance; and celebrated by great and little, rich, and poore, learned and ignorant, Plebeans and Gentlemen, and finally by all kinde of persons of what state or condition soeuer, should be so lying and fabulous; specially seeing they haue such probabilitie of truth; seeing they describe vnto vs the Father, Mother, Countrey, Kinsfolke, Age, Towne, and Acts of such a Knight, or Knights, and that so exactly, point by point, and day by day: Hold your peace and neuer speake againe such a blasphemie, and beleeue me, for I doe sincerely counsaile you what you, as a discreet man, ought to doe herein; and if not, reade them but once, and you shall see what delight you shall receiue thereby: if not, tell me what greater pleasure can there be, then to behold (as one would say) euen here and before our eyes, a great lake of pitch boiling hot, and many Serpents, Snakes, Lizarts, and other kinds of cruell and dreadfull beasts swimming a thwart it, and in euery part of it, and that there issues out of the lake a most lamentable voice, saying. *O thou Knight, whatsoeuer thou art, which doest behold the fearefull lake, if thou desirest to obtaine the good concealed vnder these ho.vide*

Digitized by Google

horride and blacke waters, shew the valour of thy strong brest, and throw thy selfe into the midst of this sable, and inflamed licour; for if thou doest not so, thou shalt not be worthy to discouer the great wonders hidden in the seuen Castles of the seuen Fates, which are seated vnder these gloomie waues: and that scarce hath the Knight heard the fearefull voice, when without entring into any new discourses, or once considering the danger whereinto he thrusts himselfe, yea or easing himselfe of the waight of his ponderous armour, but only commending himselfe vnto God, and his Ladie Mistris, hee plunges into the midst of that burning puddle, and when he neither cares nor knowes what may befall him, hee finds himselfe in the midst of flourishing fields, with which the very *Elisean* plaines can in no sort be compared; There it seemes to him that the element is more transparent, and that the Sunne shines with a cleerer light then in our Orbe: there offers it selfe to his greedie and curious eye, a most pleasing forrest replenished with so greene, and well-spred trees, as the verdure thereof both ioyes and quickens the sight; whilest the eares are entertained by the harmonious, though artlesse songs of infinite and enamelled birds, which trauerse the intricate bowes of that shadie habitation: Here hee discouers a small streame, whose fresh waters resembling liquid *Cristall*, slides ouer the small sands, and white litle stones, which resemble sifted gold wherein Orientall Pearles are inchaced: there he discernes an artificiall Fountaine wrought of mouly Iasper and smooth Marble: and hard by it an other, rudely and negligently framed, wherein the sundry Cockle shels with the wreathed white & yellow houses of the Peruincle, and Snaile intermingled, and placed after a disorderly order (hauing now and then peeces of cleare *Cristall*, and counterfait *Emeralds* mingled among them) do make a worke of so gracefull varietie, as Arte imitating Nature, doth herein seeme to surpasse her. Suddainely he discouers a strong Castle or goodly Palace, whose walles are of beaten gold, the pinacles of *Diamonds*, the gates of *Iacints*; finally, it is of so

Digitized by Google

exquisite workemanship, as although the materials whereof it is built, are no worse then *Diamonds*, *Carbuncles*, *Rubies*, *Emeralds*, *Pearles*, and *Gold*, yet is the Architecture thereof of more estimation & value then they, and is there any more to be seene, after the seeing hereof, then to see sallie out at the Castle gates, a goodly troupe of louely Damzels, whose braue and costly attyre, if I should attempt to describe as it is laid downe in Histories, wee should neuer make an end? and shee that seemes the chiefest of all to take presently our bold Knight, that threw himselfe into the boiling lake, by the hand, and carry him into the rich Castle or Palace without speaking a word, and cause him to strip himselfe as naked, as he was when his Mother bore him, and bathe him in verytemperate waters, and afterward annoint him all ouer with precious ointments, and put on him a shirt of most fine, odoriferous, and perfumed Sendall; and then another Damzell to come suddainely, and casts on his backe a rich mantel, which they say is wont to bee worth, at the very least a rich City, yea and more? then what a sport it is, when they tell vs after, that after this hee is carried into another Hall, where he finds the tables couered so orderly as he rests amazed? what, to see cast on his hands water distilled all of Ambar, and most fragrant flowers? what, to see him seated in a chaire of Yuorie? what, to see him serued by all the Damzels with maruailous silence? what, the setting before him such variety of accates, and those so excellently dressed, as his appetite knowes not to which of them it shall first addresse his hand? what, to heare the Musicke which sounds whilst he is at dinner, without knowing who makes it, or whence it comes? and after that dinner is ended, and the tables taken away, the Knight to remaine leaning on a chaire, and perhaps picking of his teeth, as the custome is, and on a suddaine to enter at the Hal-dore another much more beauful Damzell then any of the former, and to sit by his side and beginne to recount vnto him what Castle that is, and how shee is inchaunted therein, with many other things that amazed

Digitized by Google

mazed the Knight, and amazed the Readers. I will not enlarge my ſelfe any more in this matter, ſeeing that you may collect out of that which I haue ſaid, that any part that is read of any booke of a Knight errant, will delight, and aſtoniſh him, that ſhall peruſe it with attention: and therefore I pray you beleeue me, & as I haue ſaid already, reade thoſe kinde of bookes, and you ſhall finde that they will exile all the melancholie that ſhall trouble you, and rectifie your diſpoſition, if by fortune it be depraued: for I dare affirme of my ſelfe that ſince I am become a Knight errant, I am valiant, curteous, liberall, well mannered, generous, gentle, bold, mild, patient, an indurer of labours, impriſonments, and inchauntments: and although it be but ſo little a while ſince I was ſhut vp in a cage like a mad man, yet doe I hope by the valour of mine arme (heauen concurring and fortune not croſſing me) to ſee my ſelfe within a few dayes, the King of ſome Kingdome, wherein I may ſhew the bounty and liberalitie included within my breſt. For in good truth Sir, a poore man is made vnable to manifeſt the vertue of liberalitie towards any other, although he virtually poſſeſſe it himſelfe in a moſt eminent degree: and the will to gratifie which only conſiſts of will, is as dead a thing, as Faith without Workes. For which cauſe I doe wiſh, that fortune would quickly preſent me ſome occaſion, whereby I might make my ſelfe an Emperour; that I may diſcouer the deſire I haue to doe good vnto my friends, but eſpecially to this my poore Squire *Sancho Panca*, who is one of the honeſteſt men in the world, on whome I would faine beſtow the Earledome which I promiſed him many dayes paſt, but that I feare mee he will not be able to gouerne his ſtate.

Sancho ouerhearing thoſe laſt words of his maſters ſaid, labour you, Sir *Don-Quixote*, to gette mee that Earledome as often promiſed by you, as much longed for by me, and I promiſe you that I will not want ſufficiency to gouerne it, and though I ſhould, yet haue I heard ſay, that there are men in the world who take Lordſhips to farme, paying the Lord

Digitized by Google

ſo

so much by the yeare, and vndertaking the care of the gouernment thereof, whilst the Lord himselfe with outstretched legs doth liue at his ease, enioying the rents they bring him, and caring for nothing else: and so will I doe, and will not stand racking it to the vtmost, but presently desist from all administration, and liue merrily vpon my rent like a yong Duke; and so let the world wagge, and goe how it will. That friend *Sancho* is to be vnderstood quoth the Canon, of enioyning the reuenewes; but as concerning the administration of iustice, the Lord of the Signiory is bound to looke to it, in that is required a sufficiency and ability to gouerne, and aboue all, a good intention to deale iustly, and determine rightly: for if this be wanting when we beginne, our meanes and ends will alwaies be subiect to errour. And therefore is God wont as well to further the good designes of the simple, as to disfauour the bad ones of those that be wittily wicked.

I vnderstand not those Philosophies quoth *Sancho Panca*, but this I know well, that I would I had as speedily the Earldome, as I could tell how to gouerne it, for I haue as much soule as another, and as much bodie as hee that hath most, and I would be as absolute a king in my estate, as any one would be in his; and being such, I would doe what I liked, and doing what I liked, I would take my pleasure; and taking my pleasure I would be content; and when one is content, he hath no more to desire, and hauing no more to desire the matter were ended: and then come the state when it will, or farewell it, and let vs behold our selues, as one blinde man said to another. They are no bad Philosophies which thou comest out with kind *Sancho*, quoth the Canon, but yet for all that there is much to be said concerning this matter of Earledomes. To that *Don-Quixote* replied: I know not what more may be said, onely I gouerne my selfe by the the example of *Amadis de Gaule*, who made his Squire Earle of the firme Iland: and therefore I may without scruple of conscience make *Sancho Panca* an Earle; for he

Digitized by Google

he is one of the best Squires that euer knight errant had. The Canon abode amazed at the well-compacted and orderly rauings of *Don Quixote*; at the manner wherewith he had deciphered the aduenture of the Knight of the lake; at the impression which his lying bookes had made into him: and finally he wondred at the simplicitie of *Sancho Panca*, who so earnestly desired to be made Earle of the county his Lord had promised him.

By this time the Canons seruingmen, which had gone to the Inne for the sumpture Mule, were returned, and making their table of a carpet, and of the greene grasse of that meadow, they sate downe vnder the shadow of the trees, and did eate there, to the end that the waineman might not lose the commoditie of the pasture, as we haue said before, and as they sate at dinner, they suddainly heard the sound of a little bell iissing from among the briers and brambles that were at hand, and instantly after they saw come out of the thicket a very faire she-Goate, whose hide was poudered all ouer with blacke, white, and browne spots: after her followed a Goatheard crying vnto her, and in his language bidding her stay, or returne againe to the fould: but the fugitiue Goate all affrighted and fearefull ranne towards the company, and as it were seeking in her dumbe manner to be protected, strayed neere vnto them, then did the Goatheard arriue, and laying hold of her hornes (as if shee had beene capable of his reprehension) said vnto her. O yee wanton ape, ye spotted elfe, how come you to halt with me a late daies? what wolues do skarre your daughter? will you not tell me, faire, what the matter is? but what can it be other then that you are a female, and therefore can neuer be quiet, a foule euill take your conditions, and all theirs, whom you so much resemble, turne backe loue, turne backe, and though you be not so content withall, yet shall you at least be more safe in your fold, and among the rest of your fellowes: for if you that shall guide and direct them, go thus distracted, and wandering, what then must they doe, what will

will become of them? The Goatheards words did not a little delight the hearers, but principally the Canon, who said vnto him, I pray thee good fellow take thy rest heere a while, and doe not hasten that Goate so much to her fould, for seeing she is a female, as thou sayest, she will follow her naturall instinct how much soeuer thou opposest thy self vnto it: take therefore that bit, and drinke a draught wherewithall thou maist temper thy choller, and the Goate will rest her the whilst: and saying so, hee gaue him the hinder quarter of a cold Rabbet, which he receiuing, rendred him many thankes, and drinking a draught of wine, did pacifie himselfe, and said presently after: I would not haue you my masters account me simple, although I spoke to this beast in so earnest a fashion; for in truth the words which I vsed vnto her were not without some mystrie. I am indeed rustick, and yet not so much, but that I know how to conuerse with men, and with beasts. I beleeue that easily quoth the Curate, for I know already by experience, that the woods breede learned men, and sheepe coats containe Philosophers. At the least Sir replied the Goatheard, they haue among them experienced men: and that you may giue the more credite to this truth, and as it were, touch it with your owne hands, (~~although till I be bidden, I may seeme to inuite my selfe~~) I will, if you please to heare me but a while, relate vnto you a very true accident, which shall make good what this Gentleman (pointing to the Curate) and my selfe haue affirmed, to this *Don-Quixote* answered, because the Case doth seeme to haue in it some shadow of knightly aduentures, I will for my part listen vnto thee with a very good will, and I presume that all these Gentlemen will doe the like, so great is their discretion, and desire to know curious nouelty which amaze, delight, and entertaine the senses, as I doe certainly beleeue thy history will. Therefore begin it friend, and all of vs will lend our eares vnto it. Except mine quoth *Sancho*, for I will goe with this puttie vnto that little streame, where I meane to fill my selfe for three daies; for I haue heard my Lord

Lord *Don-Quixote* ſay, that a Knight errants Squire muſt eate when he can, and alwaies as much as he can, becauſe that oftentimes they enter by chance into ſome wood ſo intricare, as they cannot git out of it againe in fiue or ſixe dales: and if a mans panch be not then well ſtuffed, or his wallet well ſtored, he may there remaine, and be turned as many times it happens, into mummie. Thou art in the right of it *Sancho*, quoth *Don-Quixote*, goe therefore where thou wilt, and eate what thou maiſt; for I am alreadie ſatisfied, and onely want refection for my minde, which now I will giue it by liſtening to this good follow. The ſame will wee alſo giue vnto ours quoth the Canon, who therewithall intreated the Goatheard to keepe promiſe, and beginne his tale. Then he ſtroking once or twice his prettie Goate, (which he yet held faſt by the hornes) ſaid thus: Lye downe pide foole, by mee, for we ſhall haue time enough to returne home againe. It ſeemed that the Goat vnderſtood him; for as ſoone as her maſter ſate downe, ſhe quietly ſtretched her ſelfe along by him, and looking him in the face, did giue to vnderſtand, that ſhe was attentiue to what hee was ſaying. And then he began his hiſtory in this maener.

CHAP. XXIIII.

Relating that which the Goatheard told to thoſe that carried away Don-quixote.

THeere is a village diſtant ſome three leagues from this valley, which albeit it be little, is one of the richeſt of all this commark: therein ſometime did dwell a wealthie farmer of good reſpect, and ſo good, as although reputation and riches are commonly ioyned together, yet that which he had was rather got him by his vertue then by any wealth

wealth he poſſeſſed: But that which did moſt accumulate his happineſſe (as he himſelfe was wont to ſay) was, that he had a daughter of ſo accompliſhed beauty, ſo rare diſcretion, comlineſſe, and vertue, that as many as knew and beheld her, admired to ſee the paſſing indowments wherewith heauen, and nature had inriched her. Being a child ſhe was fayre, & increaſing daily in feature, ſhe was at the age of ſixteen moſt beautiful. The fame wherof extended it ſelfe ouer all the bordering villages, but why ſay I the bordring villages alone, if it ſpread it ſelf ouer the fartheſt cities, yea & entred into the kings Pallace, & into the eares of all kinde of people? ſo that they came from all parts to behold her as a rare thing, and patterne of miracles? her father did carefully keepe her, and ſhe likewiſe heeded her ſelfe: for there is neither guard, locke, nor bolt able to keepe a mayden better, then is her owne warineſſe, and care. The wealth of the father, and worth of the daughter moued diuers, as well of his owne village as ſtrangers, to demaund her to wife, but he (as one whom the diſpoſall of ſo rich a iewell moſt neerely concerned) was much pexplexed, and vnable to determine on whom, among ſuch an infinite number of importunate woers, he might beſtow her: among others that bore this good wil towards her, I my ſelf was one to whom gaue many, and very great hopes of good ſucceſſe, the knowledge that her father had of mee, my birth in the ſame village, my deſcent honeſt, and blood vntainted, flouriſhing in yeares, very rich in goods, and no leſſe in gifts of the mind. Another of the ſame village, and qualities was alſo a ſuiter vnto her: which was an occaſion to hold her in ſuſpence, and put his will in the ballance, deeming as he did, that ſhe might be beſtowed on either of vs two: and that he might be rid of his doubt, he reſolued to tell it to *Leandra*, (for ſo do they call the rich maids which hath brought mee to extreame miſery) noting diſcreetly, that ſeeing we both were equals, it would not be amiſſe to leaue in his deere daughters power the making choyce of whether ſhe liked beſt. *A thing worthy to be noted by all thoſe parents that would*

 haue

haue their children marry. Wherein my meaning is not that they ſhould permit them to make a bad or a baſe choyce, but that they propound certaine good ones, and referre to their liking which of them they will take. I know not what was the liking of *Leandra*, but only know this, that the father poſted vs off by alleaging the ouer greene yeares of his daughter, and vſing generall termes, which neither obliged him, nor diſcharged vs. My riuall was called *Anſelmo*, and my ſelfe *Eugenio*: that you may alſo haue ſome iuſtice of the perſons which were actors in this tragedie, whoſe concluſion is yet depending, but threatens much future diſaſter.

About the very ſame time arriued to our village one *Vincent of the Roſe*, ſonne to a poore labourer of the ſame place, which *Vincente* returned as then from *Italy*, and diuers other countries, wherin he had beene a ſouldier, for being of ſome twelue yeares of age, a certaine Captaine that with his company paſſed along by our village, did carry him away with him, and the youth after a dozen yeares more, came backe againe attired like a ſoldier, painted with a hundred colours, full of a thouſand deuiſes of Criſtall, fiue ſteele chains: to day he would put on ſome gay thing, the next day ſome other, but all of them ſlight painted, and of little waight, leſſe worth. The clowniſh people which are naturally malicious, and if they haue but euer ſo little idleneſſe or leaſure become malice it ſelfe, did note and recken vp all his braueries, and iewels, and found that he had but three ſuits of apparrell of different colours, with garters and ſtockings anſwerable to them; but he vſed ſo many diſguiſements, varieties, transformations, and inuentions, which they, as if they had not counted them all, ſome one would haue ſworne that he had made ſhew of more then tenne ſuits of apparrell, and more then twenty plumes of feathers: and let not that which I tell you of the apparrell be counted impertinent, or from the matter; for it makes a principall part in the hiſtory. He would ſit on a bench that ſtood vnder a great Poplar tree in the midſt of the market place, and there would hold vs all,

with gaping mouthes, listening to the gallant aduentures, and resolute acts he recounted vnto vs, there was no land in all the world, whose soile he had not troden on, no battell wherein he had not been present, he had slaine more *Moores*, then the kingdomes of *Marrocco*, and *Tuney* contained, and vndertaken more single combats, as he said, then euer did either *Gant*, *Luna*, or *Diego Garcia de Paredes*, and a thousand others whom he named, and yet hee still came away with the victory, without hauing euer left one drop of blood. On the other side he would shew vs signes of wounds, which although they could not be discerned, yet would he perswade vs that they were the markes of bullets, which he receiued in diuers skirmishes, and manners. Finally he would thou his equals, and those which knew him very well with maruellous arrogancy: and said, that his arme was his father, his workes his linage, and that beside his being a souldier, hee ought not a whit to the king. To these his arrogancies was annext some superficiall skill in musicke, for he could scratch a little on a Gytterne, and some would say that hee made it speake: but his many graces made not a stop there; for hee had likewise some shadowes of Poetry, and so would make a ballade of a league and a halfe long vpon euery toy that hapned in the village.

The souldier therefore, whom I haue deciphered, this *Vincente* of the Rose, this braggard, this Musician, this Poet, eyed and beheld many times by *Leandra* from a certaine window of her house that looked into the Market place; and the golden shew of his attire enamoured her: and his Ditties inchanted her; for hee would giue twentie Copies of euery one he composed: The report of his worthy acts, beautified by himselfe, came also vnto her eares, and finally (for so it is likely the Diuell had ordered the matter) shee became in Loue with him before he presumed to thinke once of soliciting her. And as in Loue aduentures no one is accomplished with more facilitie, then that which is fauoured by the womans desire; *Leandra* and *Vincente* made a short and easie

ſie ꝛgreement, and ere any one of her ſuiters could once ſuſpect her deſires, ſhee had fully ſatisfied them; abandoned her deere and louing Fathers houſe, (for her mother liues not) and running away from the Village with the Souldier, who departed with more triumph from that enterpriſe, then from all the others which he had arrogated to himſelfe. The accident amazed all the Towne, yea and all thoſe to whome the rumour thereof arriued; was aſtoniſhed, *Anſelmo* amazed, her father ſorrowfull, her kinsfolke aſhamed. The miniſters of Iuſtice carefull, and the Troupers readie to make purſuit; all the wayes were laide, and the woods, and euery other place meerely ſearched; and at the end of three dayes they found the luſtfull *Leandra* hidden in a Caue within a wood, naked in her ſmocke, and diſpoyled of a great ſumme of money, and many precious Iewels, which ſhee had brought away with her: they returned her to her dolefull fathers preſence, where asking how ſhee became ſo deſpoyled, ſhee preſently confeſſed, that *Vincent* of the Roſe had deceiued her; for hauing paſſed his word to make her his wife, he perſwaded her to leaue her fathers houſe, and made her beleeue that he would carrie her to the richeſt, and moſt delightfull Citie of the world, which was *Naples*. And that ſhee through indiſcretion, and his fraude, had giuen credit to his words, and robbing her father, ſtole away with him the very ſame night that ſhee was miſſed; and that he caried her to a very rough thicket, and ſhut her vp in that Caue wherein they found her: Shee alſo recounted how the Souldier, without touching her honour, had robd her of all that ſhee caried, and leauing her in that Caue, was fled away; which ſucceſſe ſtroke vs into greater admiration then all the reſt: for we could hardly be induced to beleeue the yong gallants continencie, but ſhee did ſo earneſtly proteſt it, as it did not a little comfort her comfortleſſe father, who made no reckoning of the riches hee had loſt, ſeeing his daughter had yet reſerued that Iewell which being once gone, could neuer againe be recouered. The ſame day that *Leandra* ap-

peared, shee also vanished out of our sights, being conueied away by her Father, and shut vp in a Nunnerie at a certaine Towne not farre off; hoping that time would illiterate some part of the bad opinion already conceiued of his daughters facilitie. *Leandra* her youth serued to excuse her errour, at least with those which gained nothing by her being good or ill; but such as knew her discretion, and great wit, did not attribute her sinne to ignorance, but rather to her too much lightnesse, and the naturall infirmitie of that sexe, which for the most part is inconsiderate, and slipperie. *Leandra* being shut vp, *Anselmos* eyes lost her light, or at least beheld not any thing that could delight them; and mine remained in darknesse without light, that could addresse them to any pleasing obiect in *Leandraes* absence. Our griefes increased, our patience diminished, wee cursed the Souldiers ornaments, and abhord her Fathers want of looking to her. To be briefe, *Anselmo* and my selfe, resolued to abandon the Village, and come to this valley, where hee feeding a great flocke of Sheepe of his owne, and I as copious a Heard of Goates of mine, we passe our liues among these trees, giuing vent to our passions, either by singing together the beautifull *Leandraes* praises, or dispraises: or by sighing alone, and alone communicating our quarrelsome complaints with heauen. Many others of *Leandras* suitors haue since, by our example, come to these intricate woods, where they vse our very exercise; & they are so many, as it seemes that this place is conuerted into the Pastoral *Arcadia*, it is ful of shepheards and sheepfolds, and there is no one part thereof wherein the name of the beautifull *Leandra* resoundeth not: There one doth curse her, and termeth her humours inconstant and dishoneſt: an other condemnes her of being so facile and light; some one absolues, and pardons him, an other condemnes and dispises her, and celebrates her beautie, an other execrates her disposition, and finally all blame, but yet adore her, and the rauing distraction of them all, doth so farre extend it selfe, as some one complaines of disdaine, that neuer

spoke word vnto her, and some one laments, and feeles the inraged fits of iealousie, though shee neuer ministred any occasion thereof; for as I haue said her sinne was knowne before her desires; There is no clift of a Rocke, no banke of a streame, nor shadow of a tree without some Shepheard or other, that breathes out his misfortunes to the silent ayre. The *Eccho* repeates *Leandras* name, whereseouer it can bee formed; the woods resound *Leandra*, the brokes doe murmur *Leandra*, and *Leandra* holds vs all perplexed and inchanted, hoping without hope, and fearing without knowledge what we feare.

And among all this flocke of franticke men none shewes more, or lesse iudgement, then my companion *Anselmo*; who hauing so many other titles vnder which hee might plaine him, onely complaines of absence, and doeth to the sound of a rebecke (which he handles admirably well) sing certaine dolefull verses, which fully discouer the excellencie of his conceit. I follow a more easie, and (in mine opinion) a more certaine way; to wit, I rayle on the lightnes of women, on their inconstancie, double dealing, dead promises, crackt trust, and the small discretion they shewe in placing of their affections, and this Sir was the occasion of the words, and reasons I lately vsed to this Goate, whom I doe esteeme but little because shee is a female, although shee be otherwise, the best of all my heard: And this is the Historie which I promised to tell you, wherein if I haue beene prolixe, I will bee altogether as large in doing you any seruice, for I haue here at hand my Cabine, and therein store of fresh milke, and sauory cheese, with many sortes of excellent fruite, no lesse agreeable to the sight then pleasing to the taste.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. XXV.

Of the falling out of Don-Quixote *and the Goateheard: with the aduenture of the disciplinants, to which the Knight gaue end to his cost.*

THE Goateheards tale bred a generall delight in all the hearers, but specially in the Canon, who did very exactly note the manner wherewithall he deliuered it, as different from the stile or discourse of a rude Goateheard, as approching to the discretion of a perfect Courtier; and therefore he said, that the Curate had spoken very iudiciously, in affirming that the woods bred learned men, all of them made bountifull tenders of their friendship and seruice to *Eugenio*, but hee that enlarged himselfe more then the rest, was *Don-Quixote*, who said vnto him: certes, friend Goateheard, if I were at this time able to vndertake any aduenture, I would presently set forward, and fall in hand with it to doe you a good turne, and I would take *Leandra* out of the Monasterie (wherein without doubt shee is restrained against her will) in despight of the Ladie Abbesse, and of all those that should take her part; and would put her into your hands, to the end you might dispose of her at your pleasure, yet still obseruing the lawes of Knighthood, which command, that no man doe any wrong, and offer violence vnto a Damzell: yet I hope in our Lord God, that the skill of a malicious inchaunter shall not be of such force, but that the science of a better meaning wisard shall preuaile against him; and whensoeuer that shal befall, I doe promise you my help and fauour, as I am bound by my profession, which chiefly consists in assisting the weake and distressed.

The Goateheard beheld him, and seeing the Knight so ill arrayed, and of so euill-fauoured a countenance, hee wondred, and questioned the Barber, who sate neare to him, thus

I pray you Sir, who is this man, of ſo ſtrange a figure, and that ſpeaks ſo odly? who elſe ſhould he be, anſwered the Barber, but the famous *Don-Quixote* of the *Mancha*, the righter of wrongs, the redreſſer of iniuries, the protector of Damzels, the affrighter of Giants, and the ouercommer of battails? that which you ſay of this man, anſwered the Goateheard, is very like that which in bookes of Chiualrie is written of Knights errant; who did all thoſe things which you apply to this man: and yet I beleeue that either you ieſt, or elſe that this Gentlemans head is voide of braines. Thou art a great villaine, ſaid *Don-Quixote*, and thou art hee whoſe pate wants braines; for mine is fuller then the very, very whoores that bore thee; and ſaying ſo, and ſnatching vp a loafe of bread that ſtoode by him, he caught the Goateheard ſo furious a blow withall, as it beate his noſe flat to his face: but the other, who was not acquainted with ſuch ieſts, and ſaw how ill hee was handled, without hauing reſpect to the Carpet, Napkins, or thoſe that were eating, he leaped vpon *Don-Quixote*, and taking hold of his collar with both the hands, would certainely haue ſtrangled him, *Sancho Panca* had not arriued at that very inſtant, and taking him faſt behinde, had not throwen him backe on the Table, cruſhing diſhes, breaking glaſſes, and ſhedding, and ouerthrowing all that did lie vpon it. *Don-Quixote* ſeeing himſelfe free returned to get vpon the Goateheard, who all beſmeered with bloud, and trampled to peeces vnder *Sanchos* feete, groped here and there groueling as hee was for ſome knife or other to take a bloudy reuenge withall, but the Canon & Curate preuented his purpoſe; and yet, by the Barbers aſſiſtance, he got vnder him *Don-Quixote*, on whome hee rained ſuch a ſhower of buffets, as hee powred as much bloud from the poore Knights face, as had done from his owne: the Canon and Curate were ready to burſt for laughter: The Troupers danced for ſport; euery one hiſſed, as men vſe to doe when Dogges fall out, and quarrell together: only *Sancho Panca* was wood, becauſe he could not get from one of the Canons

Ser-

Seruingmen, who with-held him from going to helpe his Master. In conclusion, all being very merry, saue the two buffetants, that tugged one another extremly, they heard the sound of a trumpet so dolefull, as it made them turne their faces towards that part from whence it seemed to come: but hee that was most troubled at the noise thereof was *Don-Quixote*; who although he was vnder the Goateheard, full sore against his will, and by him exceedingly bruised and battered, yet said vnto him: brother Diuell (for it is impossible that thou canst bee any other, seeing that thou hast had valour & strength to subiect my forces) I pray thee let vs make truce, for one only houre; for the dolorous sound of that trumpet which toucheth our eares, doth, mee thinks inuite me to some new aduenture. The Goatheard, who was weary of buffetting, and being beaten, left him off incontinently, and *Don-Quixote* stood vp, and turned himselfe towards the place from whence he imagined the noise to proceede, and presently he espyed descending from a certaine height many men apparelled in white like disciplinants. The matter indeed was, that the clowdes had that yeere denyed to bestow their due on the earth, and therefore they did institute Rogations, Processions, and Disciplines, throughout all that Countrey, to desire almighty God to open the hands of his mercy, and to bestow some raine vpon them: and to this effect the people of a Village, neere vnto that place, came in Procession to a deuout Eremitage builded vpon one of the hilles that inuironed that Vally.

Don-Quixote noting the strange attyre of the Disciplinants, without any calling to memorie how hee had often seen the like before, did forthwith imagine that it was some new aduenture, and that the triall thereof only appertained to him, as to a Knight errant; and this his presumption was fortified the more, by beleeuing that an Image which they carried all couered ouer with blacke, was some principall Lady whom those miscreants and discourteous Knights did beare away perforce. And as soone as this fell into his brain,

Digitized by Google

he

he leaped lightly towards *Rozinante*, that went feeding vp and downe the plaines, and dismounting from his pomell the bridle, and his target that hanged thereat, hee bridled him in a trice; and taking his sword from *Sancho*, got instantly vpon his horse, and then embracing his target, said in a loude voice to all those that were present: you shall now see, O valorous company, how important a thing it is to haue in the world such Knights as professe the order of Chiualrie errant: now I say, you shall discerne by the freeing of that good Lady, who is there carryed captiue away, whether Knights aduenturous are to be held in price; and saying so, he strucke *Rozinante* with his heeles (for spurs he had none) and making him to gallop (for it is not read in any part of this true Historie, that *Rozinante* did euer passe one formall or full carreer) he posted to encounter the disciplinants, although the Curate, Canon, and Barber did what they might to withhold him, but all was not possible; and much lesse could he be detained by these outcries of *Sancho*, saying, whether do you goe Sir *Don-Quixote*? what Diuels doe you beare in your brest that incite you to runne thus against the Catholike faith? see Sir, vnfortunate that I am, how that is a Procession of disciplinants, and that the Lady whom they beare, is the blessed Image of the immaculate Virgin, looke Sir what you doe, for at this time it may well be said, that you are not you know what. But *Sancho* laboured in vaine, for his Lord rode with so greedie a desire to encounter the white men, and deliuer the morning Ladie, as he heard not a word, and although he had, yet would he not then haue returned backe at the Kings commandement. Being come at last, neere to the Procession, and stopping *Rozinante*, (who had already a great desire to rest himselfe a while) he said with a troubled and hoarse voice: O you that couer your faces, perhaps because you are not good men, giue eare and listen to what I shall say: the first that stood at this alarme were those which carryed the Image; and one of the foure Priests which sung the Litanies, beholding the strange shape of *Don-Quixote*,

the

the leaneſſe of *Rozinante*, and other circumſtances worthy of laughter, which he noted in our Knight, returned him quickly this anſwere. Good Sir, if you would ſay any thing to vs, ſay it inſtantly; for theſe honeſt men, as you ſee, are toiled extremely; and therefore wee cannot, nor is it reaſon wee ſhould ſtand lingring to heare any thing, if it be not ſo brief, as it may be deliuered in two words; I will ſay it in one, ſaid *Don-Quixote*, and it is this, that you doe forthwith giue libertie to that beautifull Lady, whoſe teares & pittifull ſemblance cleerely denote, that you carry her away againſt her will, and haue done her ſome notable iniurie; and I, who was borne to right ſuch wrongs, will not permit her to paſſe one ſtep forward, vntill ſhee be wholly poſſeſſed of the freedome ſhee doth ſo much deſire and deſerue. All thoſe that ouerheard *Don-Quixote*, gathered by his words that he was ſome diſtracted man; and therefore beganne to laugh very hartily, which laughing ſeemed to adde gun-powder to his choler; for laying his hand on his ſword without any more words, he preſently aſſaulted the Image-carriers; one whereof leauing the charge of the burden to his fellowes, came out to encounter the Knight with a wooden forke (whereon he ſupported the beere whenſoeuer they made a ſtand) and receiuing vpon it a great blow which *Don-Quixote* diſcharged at him, it parted the forke in two; and yet hee with the peece that remained in his hand returned the Knight ſuch a thwacke vpon the ſhoulder, on the ſword ſide, as his target not being able to make reſiſtance againſt that ruſticall force, poore *Don-Quixote* was ouerthrowen to the ground, and extremely bruiſed.

Sancho Panca (who had followed him, puffing and blowing as faſt as he could) ſeeing him ouerthrowne cryed to his aduerſary that hee ſhould ſtrike him no more: for hee was a poore inchaunted Knight, that had neuer all the daies of his life done any man harme: but that which detained the ſwaine was not *Sanchos* outcries, but to ſee that *Don-Quixote* ſtirred neither hand nor foote, and therefore beleeuing

Digitized by Google

that

that he had ſlaine him, hee tucked vp his coate to his gyrdle as ſoone as he could, and fled away through the fields like a Deere. In the meane while *Don-Quixotes* companions did haſten to the place where hee lay, when thoſe of the Proceſſion ſeeing them (but principally the troupers of the holy Brotherhood with their Croſſe-bowes) runne towards them, did feare ſome diſaſtrous ſucceſſe; and therefore they gathered together in a troupe about the Image, and lifting vp their hoods, and laying faſt hold on their whips, and the Prieſtes on their Tapers, they attended the aſſault, with reſolution both to defend themſelues, and offend the aſſaylants if they might: but fortune diſpoſed the matter better then they expected; for *Sancho* did nothing elſe then throw himſelfe on his Lords body, making ouer him the moſt dolorous and ridiculous lamentation of the world, and beleeuing that hee was dead. The Curate was knowen by the other Curate that came in the proceſſion; and their acquaintance appeaſed the conceiued feare of the two ſquadrons. The firſt Curate in two words, the other with what *Don-Quixote* was, and therefore he, and all the crew of the diſciplinants went ouer to ſee, whether the poore Knight were dead or aliue; and then might heare *Sancho Panca*, with the teares in his eyes, bewayling him in this maner. O flower of Chiualrie, who haſt with one blow alone ended the Carreere of thy ſo well beſtowed Peeres? O renowme of this linage, thy honour and glorie of all the *Mancha*, yea and of all the world beſide; which ſeeing it wanteth thee, ſhall remaine full of miſcreants, ſecure from being not puniſhed for their miſdeedes. O liberall beyond all *Alexanders*, ſeeing thou haſt giuen mee, for onely for eight moneths ſeruice, the beſt Iland that the Sea doeth compaſſe or ingirt. O humble to the proude, and ſtately to the humbled, vndertaker of perils, indurer of affronts, enamoured without cauſe, imitator of good men, whip of the euill, enemie of the wicked, and in concluſion, Knight Errant, then which no greater thing may be ſaid.

Don-Quixote was called againe to himselfe by *Sancho* his out-cries, and then the first word that euer he spake was; he that liues absented from thee most sweete *Dulcinea*, is subiect to greater miseries then this: helpe me friend *Sancho* to get vp into the inchanted Chariot againe, for I am not in plight to oppresse *Rozinantes* Saddle, hauing this shoulder broken all into peeces, that will I doe with a very good wil, my deere Lord, replied the Squire; and let vs returne to my village, in companie of those Gentlemen, which desire your welfare so much; & there we will take order for some other voyage, which may bee more profitable, and famous then this hath beene, thou speakest reasonably *Sancho* replied *Don-Quixote*, and it will bee a great wisedome to let ouerpasse the crosse aspect of those Planets that raigne at this present. The Canon, Curate, and Barbour commended his resolution, and so hauing taken delight enough in *Sancho Pancas* simplicitie, they placed *Don-Quixote* as before in the Teame. The processioners returning into their former order did prosecute their way the goateheard tooke leaue of them all. The troupers would not ride any farther, and therefore the Curate satisfied them for the paines they had taken: The Canon intreated the Curate to let him vnderstand all that succeeded of *Don-Quixote*; to wit whether he amended of his frensie, or grew more distracted, and then he tooke leaue, to continue his iourney. Lastly, all of them departed, the Curate, Barber, *Don-Quixote*, *Sancho Panca*, and the good *Rozinante* onely remaining behind. Then the waineman yoked his Oxen, and accommodated the Knight on a bottle of Hay; and afterward followed on in his wonted low maner, that way which the Curate directed. At the end of two dayes they arriued to *Don-Quixotes* Village, into which they entred about noone; this befell on a Sunday, when all the people were in the Market stead, through the middle whereof *Don-Quixotes* Cart did passe: all of them drew neere to see what came in it, and when they knew their Countrie man, they were marueilously astonished:

ſtoniſhed: the whilſt a little boy ranne home before, to tell the old wife and the Knights nice, that their Lord and vncle was returned, very leane, pale, disfigured, and ſtretcht all along on a bundell of hay.

It would haue moued one to compaſsion to haue heard the lamentations, and out-cries, then raiſd by the two good women; the blowes they gaue themſelues, and the curſes and execrations which they powred out againſt all Bookes of Knighthood, all which was againe renewed, when they ſaw *Don-Quixote* himſelfe entred in at their doores. At the newes of this his arriuall, *Sancho Pancas* wife repaired alſo to get ſome tidings of her goodman; for ſhee had learned that he was gone away with the Knight, to ſerue him as his Squire, and as ſoone as euer ſhee ſaw her husband, the queſtion ſhee asked him was, whether the Aſſe were in health or no. *Sancho* anſwered that hee was come in better health then his Maſter: God be thanked quoth ſhee, who hath done me ſo great a faueur, but tell me now friend, what profit haſt thou reaped by this thy Squireſhip? What Peticote haſt thou brought me home? What ſhooes for thy little boyes? I bring none of theſe things good wife, quoth *Sancho*, although I bring other things of more moment, eſtimation: I am very glad of that, quoth his wife; ſhew me thoſe things of more moment & eſtimation good friend, for I would faine ſee them, to the end that this heart of mine may be cheered, which hath beene ſo ſwollen and ſorrowfull, all the time of thine abſence? Thou ſhalt ſee them at home quoth *Sancho*, and therfore reſt ſatisfied for this time; for and it pleaſe God, that we trauaile once againe to ſeeke aduentures, thou ſhalt ſee me ſhortly after an Earle, or Gouernour of an Iland, and that, not euery ordinarie one neither, but of one of the beſt in the world. I pray God huſband it may be ſo, (replied ſhee) for wee haue very great needs of it. But what meanes that Iland, for I vnderſtand not the word. Honny is not made for the Aſſes mouth, quoth *Sancho*: wife thou ſhalt know it in good time, yea, &

Digitized by Google

ſhalt wonder, to heare the title of Ladiſhip giuen thee by all thy vaſſalles, what is that thou ſpeakeſt, *Sancho*, of Lordſhips, Ilands, and vaſſalles? Anſwered *Ioan Panca* (for ſo was ſhee called, although her husband and ſhee were not kinsfolke; but by reaſon that in the *Mancha* the wiues are vſually called after their husbands ſurname) doe not buſie thy ſelfe *Ioan*, quoth *Sancho* to know thoſe things on ſuch a ſuddaine; let it ſuffice that I tell thee the truth, and therewithall ſow vp thy mouth. I will onely ſay thus much vnto thee, as it were by the way, that there is nothing in the world ſo pleaſant as for an honeſt man to be the Squire of a Knight Errant, that ſeeke aduentures, it is very true, that the greateſt number of aduenturers found out, ſucceeded not to a mans ſatisfactions ſo much as he would deſire: for of a hundred that are incountred, the ninetie and nine are wont to be croſſe and vntoward ones; I know it by experience, for I haue come away my ſelfe out of ſome of thē well canuaſſed, and out of others well beaten. But yet for all that it is a fine thing to expect euents, trauerſe groues, ſearch woods, treade on rockes, viſite Caſtles, and lodge in Innes at a mans pleaſure, without paying the diuell a croſſe.

All theſe diſcourſes paſſed betweene *Sancho Panca*, and his wife *Ioan Panca*, whilſt the old woman, and *Don-Quixotes* Niece did receiue him, put off his clothes, and lay him downe in his ancient bed: hee looked vpon them very earneſtly, and could not coniecture where he was. The Curate charged the Niece to cheriſh her Vncle very carefully, and that they ſhould look wel that he made not the third eſcape; relating at large all the adoe that they had had to bring him home. Here both the women renewed their exclamations: their execrations of all bookes of Knighthood here came to be reiterated: here they beſought heauen to throw downe into the very Center of the bottomleſſe pit, the outcries of ſo many lies and rauings. Finally, they remained perplexed and timerous, that they ſhould looſe againe their Maſter and Vncle, as ſoone as he was any thing recouered; and it befell iuſt

as

as they ſuſpected: but the Authour of this hiſtorie, although he haue with all diligence and curioſitie inquired after the Acts atchieued by *Don-Quixote* in his third ſallie to ſeeke aduentures, yet could he neuer attaine (at leaſt by authenticall writings) to any notice of them: Only fame hath left in the memories of the *Mancha*, that *Don-Quixote*, after his third eſcape, was at *Saragoca*; and preſent at certaine famous iuſts made in that Cittie; and that therein befell him euents moſt worthy of his valour and good wit. But of his end hee could finde nothing, nor euer ſhould haue knowne ought, if good fortune had not offered to his view an old Phiſition, who had in his cuſtodie a leaden box, which as he affirmed, was found in the ruines of an old Eremitage, as it was a repairing; in which box were certaine ſerolles of Parchement written in with *Gothicall* Characters, but containing *Caſtilian* Verſes, which comprehended many of his Acts, and ſpecified *Dulcinea of Toboſo* her beautie, decyphered *Rozinante*, and intreated of *Sancho Pancas* fidelity; as alſo of *Don-Quixotes* Sepulchre, with ſundry Epitaphes, and Elogies, of his life and manners, and thoſe that could bee read and copied out throughly, were thoſe that are here ſet downe by the faithfull Authour of this new and vnmatched relation. Which Authour demaunds of the Readers no other guerdon, in regard of his huge trauaile ſpent in the ſearch of all the old records of the *Mancha*, for the bringing thereof vnto light, but that they will deigne to afford it as much credit as diſcreet men are wont to giue vnto bookes of Knighthood, which are of ſo great reputation now a daies in the world; for herewith he will reſt moſt fully contented, and ſatisfied; and withall incouraged to publiſh and ſeeke out for other diſcourſes, if not altogether ſo true as this, at leaſt of as great, both inuention, and recreation. The firſt words written in the Scrowle of Parchement, that was found in the leaden box, were theſe.

Digitized by Google

The

The Academikes of Argamisilla, a Towne of the Mancha, on the life and death of the valorous *Don-Quixote* of the Mancha, *hoc scripserunt.*

An Epitaphe of Monioongo the Academike of Argamasilla, to *Don-Quixotes* SEPVLCHER.

THe clattring thunderbolt that did adorne
The Mancha, *with more spoiles then* Iason, Creete:
The wit whose wether-cocke, was sharpe as Thorne,
When somewhat flatter it to be was meete.
The arme which did his power so much dilate,
As it Gaeta *and* Cathay *did retch.*
The dreadfulst Muse, and eke discreeteſt, that
In brazen sheetes, did praises euer stretch.
He that the Amadises *left behinde,*
And held the Gataors *but in small esteeme:*
Both for his brauerie and his louing minde.
He dumbe that made Don Belianis *to seeme:*
And he that farre on Rozinante *erde,*
Vnder this frozen stone doth lye interde.

Paniagando an Academike of Argamasilla in praise of *Dulcinea* of *Toboso.*

SONNET.

SHe which you view with triple face and sheene
Hse brested and courragious like a man,

Digitized by Google

Is tall Dulcinea *of* Toboso *Queene,*
Of great Quixote *welbeloued than.*
He for her sake, tread th'one and th'other side,
Of the browne mountaine, and the famus fields,
Of Montiel *and* Aran Iuez *so wide*
On foote all tyrde, loaden with speare and shield.
(*The fault was* Rozinantes:) *O hard starre!*
That this Manchegan *Dame and worthy Knight,*
In tender yeares when people strongest are,
She lost by death the glimse of beautie bright:
And he although in Marble *richly done:*
Yet loues wrath, and deceits, she could not shunne.

Caprichiolo the most ingenious Academicke of Argamasilla, in praise of *Rozinante*, *Don-Quixote* his steede.

SONNET.

INto the proud, erected Diamond *stocke*
VVhich Mars *with bloudie plants, so often boared,*
Halfe wood with valour, the Manchegan *stucke:*
His wau'ring standard: and his armes restored.
For them, thereon he hung, and his bright sword,
VVherewith he hacks, rents, parts, and ouerthrowes;
(*New prowesses,*) *to which art must affoord*
New stiles on this new Palatine *to gloze.*
And if Gaule, *much her* Amadis *does prize*
VVhose brane discendants, haue illustred Greece,
And fild it full of Tropheis *and of* Fame:
Much more Bellonas *Court doth solemnize*
Quixote: *whose like in* Gaule, *nor* Grecia *is*
So honourd's none, as in Mancha, *his name.*
Let no oblivion his glory staine,
Seeing in swiftnesse Rozinant *his steede*
Euen Bayarde *doth, and* Briliador *exceede.*

Digitized by Google

Burla-

Burlador Academicke of Argamasilla, to SANCHO PANCA.

SONNET.

THis Sancho Panca *is, of body little*
But yet, O miracle! in valour great,
The simplest Squire, and sooth to say, lest suttle
That in this world I sweare, lived euer yet.
From being an Earle, he scarce was a threeds bread,
Had not at once conspir'd to crosse his guerdon,
The malice of the times, and men misled
VVhich scarce an Asse incountring, would him pardon.
Upon the like he rode, O give me leave
To tell how this meeke Squire after the horse
Mild Rozinante, *and his Lord did drive!*
O! then vaine hopes of men, what thing is worse?
VVhich proues vs, desired ease to lend,
Yet doe at last in smokes our glories end.

Cachidiablo Academicke of Argamasilla, on *Don-Quixote* his Tombe.

AN EPITAPH.

The worthy Knight lies there
VVell bruisde, but euil-andant
VVho borne on Rozinante
Rode waies both farre and neere.
Sancho *his faithfull Squire*
Panca *ycleep'd also*
Lieth besides him too:
In his trade without peere.

Digitized by Google

Ti-

Tiquitoc Academicke of Argamasilla, on *Dulcinea of Toboſos* Sepulcher.

AN EPITAPH.

DVlcinea here beneath
Lies, though of fleſh ſo round
To duſt and aſhes ground,
By fowle and ougly death.
Shee was of gentle breath,
And ſomewhat like a Dame,
Being great Quixotes *flame.*
And her Townes glorie, eath.

Theſe were the Verſes that could be read, as for the reſt, in reſpect that they were halfe conſumed and eaten away by time, they were deliuered to a Scholler, that hee might by coniectures declare their meaning: and we haue had intelligence that hee hath done it with the coſt of many nights watching, and other great paines, and that he meanes to publiſh them, and alſo giues hope of a third ſallie made by DON-QVIXOTE.

(*)

FINIS.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

BIBLIOTECA DE CATALUNYA
1001977758
31.064
Digitized by Google